WITHDRAWN

LIBRARY
Perkins School of Theology
Southern Methodist University

THE REFORMATION OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND

A.D. 1547—1662.

WITHDRAWN
Perkins School of Theology
Southern Methodist University

By the same Author

Demy 8vo. 16*s.*

THE REFORMATION OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND

Its History, Principles, and Results

VOL. I.

A.D. 1514—1547

LONGMANS, GREEN, AND CO.

LONDON, NEW YORK, AND BOMBAY

THE REFORMATION OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND

Its History, Principles, and Results

BY THE

REV. JOHN HENRY BLUNT, D.D.

EDITOR OF THE "ANNOTATED BOOK OF COMMON PRAYER," AUTHOR OF "DIRECTORIUM PASTORALE," "HOUSEHOLD THEOLOGY," ETC. ETC.

"... *Boni medici est ab infirmo morbum tollere et non infirmum corpus destruere.*"

VOL. II. A.D. 1547–1662

LONGMANS, GREEN, AND CO.

LONDON, NEW YORK, AND BOMBAY

1896

[*New Edition*]

1/1892

ADVERTISEMENT.

The First Part of this History, dealing with the antecedents of the Reformation, and with the period from 1514 to 1547, was published in the year 1869, and has since passed through several editions. During the twelve years which have intervened, the writer has been so constantly called to the fulfilment of other literary engagements that he has only recently found time for putting into shape the materials which he had long ago collected for this second volume. The delay has, however, enabled him to go on adding to those materials, and he has thus been able to present the work to the reader in a more complete form, and as the result of more mature consideration.

Dec. 1, 1881.

186560

CONTENTS

CHAPTER I

THE GOVERNMENT OF ENGLAND DURING THE REIGN OF EDWARD VI.

[A.D. 1547—1553]

	PAGE
Henry VIII. arranged for the Government after his death	1
His plans not carried out	2
Counter-plans of Lord Hertford, his brother-in-law	3
Hertford is appointed Protector	7
The Protector and his friends take Titles and Church Estates	9
His chief opponent is disposed of	10
He is endowed with supreme authority	12
Lord Seymour's fall and execution	15
The Duke of Somerset's fall	23
The Duke of Northumberland becomes supreme	27
His plans for bringing the Crown into his family	29

CHAPTER II

THE PRIVY COUNCIL, THE PARLIAMENT, AND THE CHURCH IN THE BEGINNING OF EDWARD VI.'s REIGN

[A.D. 1547—1548]

Tendency to make the Church a department of the State	32
The Privy Council overstrained the authority of the Crown	33
Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction assumed for the Crown	34
Episcopal Jurisdiction not changed in principle	36
New mode of appointing Bishops	40

PAGE

General Visitation of the Church by the Crown 43
The Commissioners and their proceedings 48
The Injunctions of Edward VI. 52
Edwardian Confiscation of Church Property 59
Appropriation of Chantry Endowments 60
Spoliation of Churches 66
Illustrations of Privy Council Government 69

CHAPTER III

THE REFORMATION OF THE CHURCH RESUMED BY THE CLERGY

[A.D. 1547—1553]

Suppression and revival of Convocation 73
Silent changes in Mediæval Devotional System 75
Protestant Innovations of the young Clergy 78
Cautious Conservatism of the authorities 80
The Injunctions as they affected Divine Service . . . 82
Innovations strictly forbidden 84
The Order of Communion of 1548 86
The Prayer Book of 1549 90
The Prayer Book of 1552 94
The Forty-two Articles of Religion 108
Attempted codification of Ecclesiastical Law 112

CHAPTER IV

THE FORMATION OF A REACTIONARY PARTY

Severe treatment of Clergy by the Government . . . 117
Bishops Tunstal, Heath, Day, and Bonner imprisoned till Queen Mary's Accession 118
Bishop Gardiner at Edward's Accession 124
His disapproval of changing during the King's minority . . 127
He is sent to the Fleet Prison 130
After a short liberation, is again summoned before the Council . . 132
His Catholic Protestant Sermon 134
He is imprisoned in the Tower till Queen Mary's Accession . . 142
Reaction caused by growing irreligion 150
Reaction caused by influence of foreign Protestants . . . 162
Treatment of the Princess Mary 170

PAGE
Her preference for the old rites 173
She disputes the authority of the Privy Council . . . 174
She is brought before the King and Council 176
Her household meddled with 177
Commissioners sent to control her 180
Her contemptuous treatment of them and the Council . . . 182
Her reconciliation with Edward VI. 184

CHAPTER V

FIVE YEARS OF ULTRAMONTANISM UNDER QUEEN MARY

[A.D. 1553—1558]

The Duke of Northumberland's Rebellion 185
The Usurpation of Lady Jane Grey 186
The popularity of the Queen at her Accession 190
Mild beginning of her reign 192
The Fall of Archbishop Cranmer 193
Queen Mary's earlier attitude towards Rome 199
Her later attitude towards Rome 205
The influences which changed her 206
The Reconciliation of England to the Pope 211
The Persecuting Statutes revived by Parliament . . . 215
Form of Procedure against accused persons 217
Statistics of the Marian Persecution 220
The Centres and Chief Localities of the Persecution . . . 222
Bishop Gardiner and the Persecution 229
Bishop Bonner and the Persecution 230
The Spaniards and the Persecution 245
Cardinal Pole and the Persecution 258
Queen Mary and the Persecution 261
The Spirit of the Times and the Persecution 267
The last days and death of John Rogers 279
The last days and death of Bishop Hooper 284
The last days and death of Rowland Taylor 288
The last days and death of Bishop Ferrar 292
The last days and death of John Bradford 293
The last days and death of Bishop Ridley 297
The last days and death of Bishop Latimer 306
The last days and death of Archdeacon Philpot 312
The last days and death of Archbishop Cranmer 316
The end of the Marian Persecution 332

CHAPTER VI

THE REVIVAL OF THE REFORMATION UNDER QUEEN ELIZABETH

[A.D. 1558—1603]

PAGE

Different trainings of Queens Mary and Elizabeth 333
Queen Elizabeth's early Ecclesiastical Policy 334
Restoration of the Royal Supremacy 340
Restoration of the Prayer Book 345
Establishment of the Court of High Commission 351
The Injunctions of Queen Elizabeth 354
General Visitation of the Church by the Crown 365
The Canons compiled by Convocation 368
Attempt to reconcile the Marian Party 374
The statutory definition of Heresy 378
The Thirty-nine Articles of Religion 381
The Resettlement of the Episcopate 385

CHAPTER VII

THE PURITANS OF THE REFORMATION AGE

[A.D. 1547—1603]

Growth of the Puritans in the reign of Edward VI. 391
Their anti-Sacramentalism 394
The Puritan attack upon the Altar 397
The Puritan attack upon Episcopacy 414
Puritan "Prophesyings" 416
Puritan Organization 420
Puritan "Discipline" 423
Relation of the Puritans to the Reformation 424

CHAPTER VIII

THE ORIGIN AND DEVELOPEMENT OF THE ROMAN CATHOLIC SECT

[A.D. 1559—1606]

The schismatical aggressiveness of Rome 427
The Papal Court and Queen Elizabeth 428

PAGE
Attempts to recover Papal authority 432
Catena's account of the Papal plans 438
Separation of the Roman Party from the Church of England . . 445
Excommunication and Deposition of the Queen by the Pope . . 447
Formation of the Separatists into an Episcopal sect 454

CHAPTER IX

THE LOSS AND RECOVERY OF THE REFORMATION SETTLEMENT

[A.D. 1603—1662]

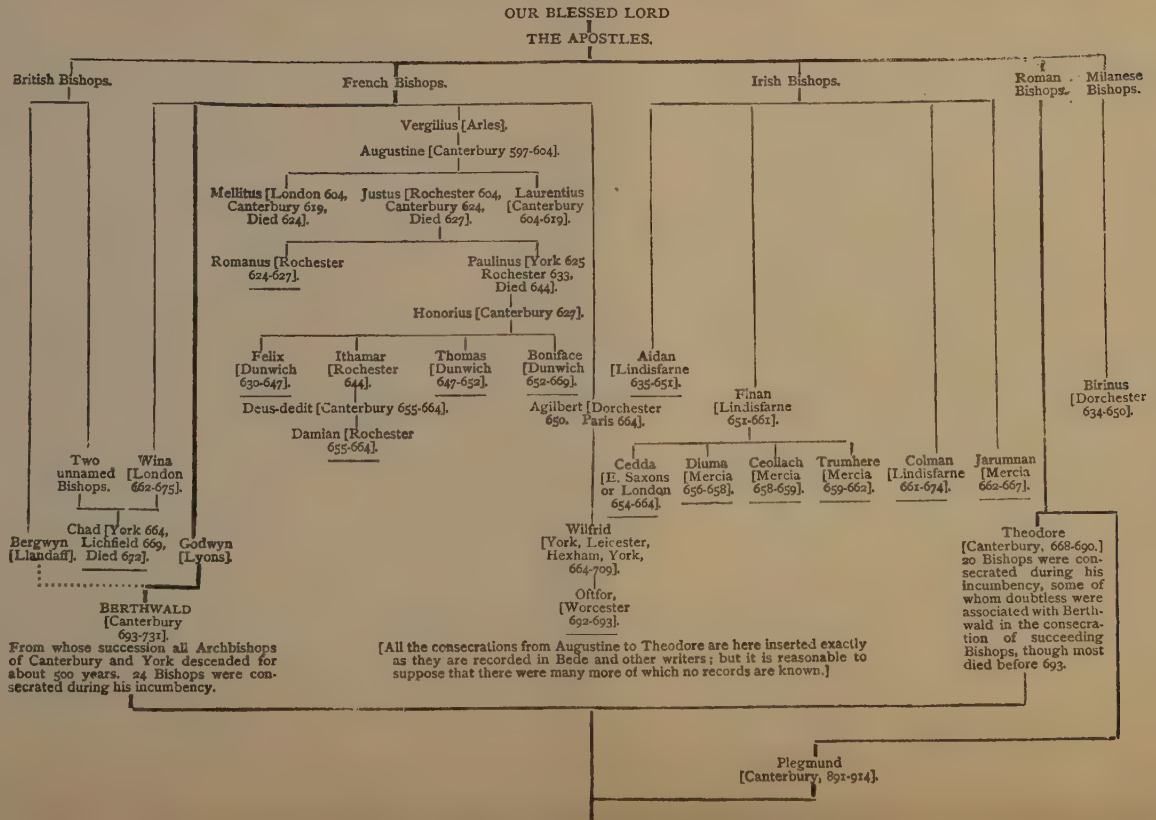
The Accession of James I. encouraged the Puritans . . . 463
The Millenary Petition 465
The Hampton Court Conference 467
The Revision of the English Bible 472
The Primacy of Archbishop Abbott 478
Charles I. and his disadvantages 485
The Laudian movement 489
Attempt to revive Episcopacy in Scotland 508
The Long Parliament and Lord Strafford 513
The Long Parliament and Archbishop Laud 515
The Long Parliament putting down Ritualism 517
The Lords' Committee for reconciliation of religious parties . . 519
The Long Parliament putting down Episcopacy 528
The Prayer Book suppressed 541
The Restoration of Episcopacy 549
The Savoy Conference between the Bishops and the Puritans . . 556
The Revision of the Prayer Book 566
The Secession of the Nonconformists 578

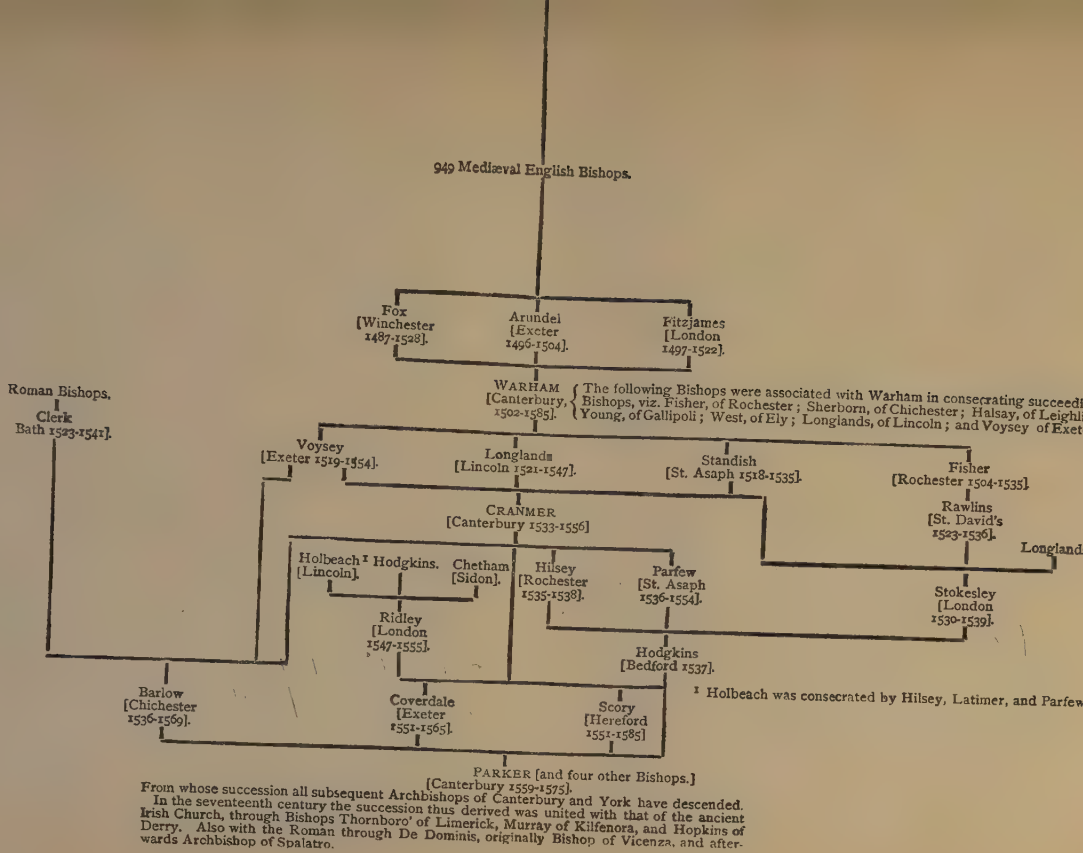
CHAPTER X

THE PRINCIPLES OF THE REFORMED CHURCH OF ENGLAND

The National Independence and Catholic Unity of the Church . 583
The Organic Continuity of the Church 587
The Doctrine and Worship of the Church 595
The Relations between the Church and the State 598

CHART OF THE MINISTERIAL SUCCESSION OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND


OUR BLESSED LORD
THE APOSTLES.
British Bishops.
French Bishops.
Irish Bishops.
Roman Bishops.
Milanese Bishops.
Vergilius [Arles].
Augustine [Canterbury 597-604].
Mellitus [London 604, Canterbury 619, Died 624].
Justus [Rochester 604, Canterbury 624, Died 627].
Laurentius [Canterbury 604-619].
Romanus [Rochester 624-627].
Paulinus [York 625 Rochester 633, Died 644].
Honorius [Canterbury 627].
Felix [Dunwich 630-647].
Ithamar [Rochester 644].
Thomas [Dunwich 647-652].
Boniface [Dunwich 652-669].
Deus-dedit [Canterbury 655-664].
Damian [Rochester 655-664].
Aidan [Lindisfarne 635-651].
Agilbert [Dorchester 650. Paris 664].
Finan [Lindisfarne 651-661].
Birinus [Dorchester 634-650].
Two unnamed Bishops.
Wina [London 662-675].
Chad [York 664, Lichfield 669, Died 672].
Bergwyn [Llandaff].
Godwyn [Lyons].
Cedda [E. Saxons or London 654-664].
Diuma [Mercia 656-658].
Ceollach [Mercia 658-659].
Trumhere [Mercia 659-662].
Colman [Lindisfarne 661-674].
Jarumnan [Mercia 662-667].
Wilfrid [York, Leicester, Hexham, York, 664-709].
Oftfor, [Worcester 692-693].
Theodore [Canterbury, 668-690.] 20 Bishops were consecrated during his incumbency, some of whom doubtless were associated with Berthwald in the consecration of succeeding Bishops, though most died before 693.
BERTHWALD [Canterbury 693-731].
From whose succession all Archbishops of Canterbury and York descended for about 500 years. 24 Bishops were consecrated during his incumbency.
[All the consecrations from Augustine to Theodore are here inserted exactly as they are recorded in Bede and other writers; but it is reasonable to suppose that there were many more of which no records are known.]
Plegmund [Canterbury, 891-914].


949 Mediæval English Bishops.
Fox [Winchester 1487-1528].
Arundel [Exeter 1496-1504].
Fitzjames [London 1497-1522].
WARHAM [Canterbury, 1502-1585].
The following Bishops were associated with Warham in consecrating succeeding Bishops, viz. Fisher, of Rochester; Sherborn, of Chichester; Halsay, of Leighlin; Young, of Gallipoli; West, of Ely; Longlands, of Lincoln; and Voysey of Exeter.
Roman Bishops.
Clerk Bath 1523-1541].
Voysey [Exeter 1519-1554].
Longland [Lincoln 1521-1547].
Standish [St. Asaph 1518-1535].
Fisher [Rochester 1504-1535].
Rawlins [St. David's 1523-1536].
Longlands.
CRANMER [Canterbury 1533-1556]
Holbeach[1] Hodgkins. [Lincoln].
Chetham [Sidon].
Hilsey [Rochester 1535-1538].
Parfew [St. Asaph 1536-1554].
Stokesley [London 1530-1539].
Ridley [London 1547-1555].
Hodgkins [Bedford 1537].
Barlow [Chichester 1536-1569].
Coverdale [Exeter 1551-1565].
Scory [Hereford 1551-1585]
PARKER [and four other Bishops.] [Canterbury 1559-1575].

[1] Holbeach was consecrated by Hilsey, Latimer, and Parfew.

From whose succession all subsequent Archbishops of Canterbury and York have descended.

In the seventeenth century the succession thus derived was united with that of the ancient Irish Church, through Bishops Thornboro' of Limerick, Murray of Kilfenora, and Hopkins of Derry. Also with the Roman through De Dominis, originally Bishop of Vicenza, and afterwards Archbishop of Spalatro.

CHAPTER I

THE GOVERNMENT OF ENGLAND DURING THE REIGN OF EDWARD THE SIXTH

[A.D. 1547—1553]

THE death of Henry VIII., on January 28, 1547, marks a definite epoch in the Reformation of the Church of England. From the fall of Cardinal Wolsey until that moment, the whole governmental policy of England had, for about eighteen years, been coloured by the strong will of the King; and even his last hours were occupied in a vigorous endeavour to extend his personal influence far beyond his death, by making his testament the supreme authority under which government was to be carried on during the minority of his son Edward VI. The great object which the King had in view appears to have been that of continuing for nine years longer, until Edward was of age, the order of affairs in Church and State which had been established on a comparatively settled footing during the last six years of his reign. As to Church matters, the King had grown very conservative during his latter years, and he saw no necessity for any further changes; unless, indeed, they could be made useful for once more replenishing an exhausted treasury. His own intellectual power was so much greater than

CHAP I
A.D. 1547

Henry VIII. arranged for the government after his death

CHAP I

A.D. 1547

His intention for things to remain as they were

that of his later ministers and agents, that he had been easily able to keep the reins of government under his own personal control. It had become his habit to use his agents as mere secretaries for working out the details of measures which he himself had already traced in clear outline with a vigorous tongue or pen; and, making little allowance for the ambition and interests which he had so easily controlled, he evidently expected that his plans and wishes would be carried out as exactly after his death as they would have been if he had left the country for a few weeks on temporary business or pleasure. What really happened was, that immediately after the death of the individual tyrant, an oligarchical tyranny took his place, and some of his most abject tools became the haughty governors of England. For six and a half years from that time the government lapsed into the hands of a few working members of the Privy Council; two noblemen, best known in history as the Dukes of Somerset and Northumberland, exercising successively the authority and power recognised in later times as that of Regent.[1] During those six and a half years

His plans not carried out

[1] The Duke of Somerset belonged to an ancient but poor family of commoners, the St. Maurs, or Seymours, of no particular note until Jane, eldest daughter of Sir John Seymour, and maid-of-honour to Anne Boleyn, attracted (as her mistress had done) the attention of Henry VIII. On her marriage to the King, her eldest brother was ennobled by the title of Viscount Beauchamp, and in the following year, 1537, he was created Earl of Hertford, holding that title at the death of Henry.

The Duke of Northumberland was the eldest son of Edmund Dudley, a barrister, who (after having attained some importance as Speaker, and as a financier, under Henry VII.) was, with his colleague Sir Richard Empson, beheaded on Tower Hill for his alleged extortions in the beginning of the reign of Henry VIII. The future Duke became a retainer of Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk, and after the death of Edward IV.'s illegitimate son, Arthur Plantagenet, was created Viscount Lisle, by which title he was known until he was made Earl of Warwick at the beginning of Edward VI.'s reign. He received this title as a descendant of Sir John

the men who governed England were practically irresponsible, both as regarded the Sovereign and the Parliament.

§ 1. Under the Duke of Somerset and the Privy Council

[Jan. 28, 1547—Oct. 13, 1549]

Counter plans of Henry's brother-in law

Somerset, then Earl of Hertford, had been laying his plans during the last illness of Henry VIII., his object being to assume the supreme power, and to hold it during the nine years' minority of the child-king by whom that strong-handed sovereign was to be succeeded. He, as the King's nearest connection, Sir William Paget, as Secretary of State, and Cranmer, as the King's spiritual adviser, attended Henry in his latest hours; and, while the Archbishop was endeavouring to support the dying monarch in his terrible exit from this world, Hertford took Paget into the gallery out of which the death-chamber opened, and began to unfold a plan for the future, of which the chief feature was that he should be "Protector" of the young King's person and kingdom.[2] The King died between two and three o'clock

Hertford arranges with the Secretary of State about future Protectorship

Sutton, fourth Baron Dudley of the Sutton line, whose second son by Elizabeth Berkeley of Beverston, John Sutton, assumed the name of Dudley, and was the grandfather of the Duke of Northumberland.

[2] "Remember what you promised me in the gallery at Westminster, before the breath was out of the body of the King that dead is; remember what you promised immediately after, devising with me concerning the place which you now occupy, I trust, in the end to good purpose, howsoever things thwart now. And that was, to follow mine advice in all your proceedings more than any other man's." [Paget to Somerset, July 7, 1549. Strype's *Eccl. Mem.*, II. ii. 430, ed. 1822.]

CHAP I

A.D. 1547

on the morning of Friday, January 28, 1546-7,[3] and immediately afterwards Lord Hertford started for Hertford, in company with Sir Anthony Browne and a proper guard, to take charge of the young King. A messenger from Sir William Paget followed him in the course of the next day, to enquire what steps should be taken as to making the death of Henry public, and proclaiming his successor. Hertford replied assenting to the proclamation, but desiring that the contents of the Will (of the repository of which he sent the key) might not be made known until some further consideration had been given to it, evidently wishing to avoid any step which might lead to the thwarting of his plans.[4]

Gets the King into his power

From Hertford the young King was taken to Enfield, where the Princess Elizabeth was then living, and there the death of their father was first made known to Edward and herself. Leaving the two children to cry their trouble down, the King's plotting uncle walked with Sir Anthony Browne into the

Wins over the commander of the troops

[3] Letter of Privy Council ordering proclamation of Edward VI. [Bodl. Tanner MS. 90, f. 143.]

[4] "This morning, between one and two, I received your letter. The first part thereof I like very well; marry, that the Will should not be opened till a farther consultation, and that it might be well considered how much thereof were necessary to be published; for divers respects, I think it not convenient to satisfy the world. In the meantime I think it sufficient, when ye publish the King's death, in the places and times as ye have appointed, to have the Will presently with you, and to show that this is the Will, naming unto them severally who be executors that the King did specially trust, and who be councillors; the contents at the breaking up thereof, as before, shall be declared unto them on Wednesday, in the morning, at the Parliament House; and in the meantime, we to meet and agree therein, as there may be no controversy hereafter. For the rest of your appointments, for the keeping of the Tower and the King's person, it shall be well done ye be not too hasty therein; and so I bid you heartily farewell.

"From Hertford, the 29th Jan., between three and four in the morning.—Your assured loving friend, E. HERTFORD.

"I have sent you the key of the Will."

[Hertford to Paget. MS. State Papers, Edw. VI., Dom. i.]

CHAP I

garden, and, taking him into his confidence, won his consent to support him (as he had won that of Paget the night before) in assuming the post of Protector.[5] A.D. 1547 He also wrote to the Privy Council, who had sent to consult him about the proclamation of a general pardon, expressing doubts as to the sufficiency of any authority at present existing, and thus preparing their minds for the suggestion to be offered them at their first meeting after the King's arrival in London; and this time the communication was signed by his new ally as well as by himself.[6]

Prepares the Privy Council

As soon as the young King and his uncle arrived at the Tower on the Monday afternoon, Hertford and twelve other Privy Councillors (including Paget and Browne) assembled in the Council Chamber, and took

Arrival in London

[5] This is stated by William Wightman, the attendant of Sir Anthony Browne, in a letter which he wrote to Cecil on May 10, 1549. [MS. State Papers, Edw. VI., Dom., and Tytler's Edw. VI. and Mary, i. 168.]

[6] "Your Lordships shall understand that I, the Earl of Hertford, have received your letter concerning a pardon to be granted in such form as in the schedule ye have sent, and that ye desire to know our opinion therein.

"For answer thereunto, ye shall understand we be in some doubt whether our power be sufficient to answer unto the King's Majesty that now is, when it shall please him to call us to account for the same. And in case we have authority so to do it, in our opinions the time will serve much better at the coronation than at this present. For if it should now be granted, his Highness can show no such gratuity unto his subjects when the time is most proper for the same; and his father, who we doubt not to be in heaven, having no need thereof, shall take the praise and thank from him that hath more need thereof than he.

"We do very well like your devise for the matter; marry, we would wish it to be done when the time serveth most proper for the same.

"We intend the King's Majesty shall be a-horseback to-morrow by xi. of the clock, so that by iii. we trust his Grace shall be at the Tower. So, if ye have not already advertised my Lady Anne of Cleves of the King's death, it shall be well done ye send some express person for the same.

"And so, with our right hearty commendation, we bid you farewell.

"From Enfield, this Sunday night, at xi. of the clock.

"Your good Lordships' assured loving friends,

"E. Hertford.

"Anthony Browne."

[MS. State Papers, Edw. VI., Dom.]

CHAP I

A.D. 1547

Partly secures the Privy Council and Executors

the Will of Henry VIII. into consideration, passing a resolution that the whole of the Privy Council, whether present or absent, should be bound by its provisions. The Will was, in fact, a very doubtful sort of document, for, instead of the King's signature being affixed to it, his name had been first outlined by means of a dry stamp, and the outline then filled up with a pen. This Lord Paget was said by Maitland, Secretary to Mary Queen of Scots, to have positively declared to have been done when the King was either dead or at the last extremity.[7] Doubtful or not, however, the Will of Henry VIII. was to be made to serve the turn of his brother-in-law as far as it would go, and no further; and it had no sooner been accepted as a legal testament than it was at once thrust aside as regarded one of its most important provisions. Sixteen executors had been appointed, to whom the Government of the kingdom and the control of the young King's person were to be committed during the minority; and twelve Privy Councillors were also named, who might be added to the sixteen in consultation on any matter that required their advice. Notwithstanding this provision of the Will, a resolution was immediately passed, stating that much inconvenience had been found in transacting business, especially foreign despatches, on account of the number of the executors, and that it was consequently determined "that some special man of the number and company should be preferred in name and place before others, to whom, as to the State and Head of the rest, all strangers and others might have access." They[8] therefore appoint the Earl of

and is nominated Protector, with limited power

[7] The stamp was also used for signing the Duke of Norfolk's attainder, but Parliament ruled that the instrument was void.

[8] Those who were present when the Protectorship was thus resolved on, and who signed the minute, were Archbishop Cranmer, Lord

Hertford under the name of "Protector of all the realms and dominions of the King's Majesty, with this special and express condition, that he shall not do any act but with the advice and consent of the rest of the executors," according to the tenor of the Will. "Which the said Earl of Hertford promised to perform accordingly." [9]

CHAP I

A.D. 1547

On the following day the Council met again, confirmed the resolution which they had passed on the preceding day, and took the oaths. The executors then went to the King, and asked his consent to the appointment of the Protector, which was at once given, but there is no sign whatever that the King, a child

The nomination confirmed

Lisle, Sir W. Herbert, Sir Ed. Mountague, Lord Chancellor Wriothesley, Bishop Tunstal, Sir Edward North, Sir John Russell, Sir W. St. John, Sir Anthony Browne, Sir Wm. Paget, and Sir Anthony Denny. The Earl of Hertford signed his name by itself at the head of the rest.

[9] The extracts given in the text are taken, when not otherwise noticed, from three large folio volumes in the British Museum [Add. MSS. 14,024, 14,025, 14,026], which consist of a transcript made from the original Privy Council Register of Edward VI. by Gregory King, Rouge Dragon in the time of Charles II., and the first volume is dated by him "168½."

The first entry is dated at the Tower on January 31, 1546-7, the last on June 16, 1553, three weeks before the day of Edward's death.

On April 19, 1550, there is an order respecting the keeping of this Register, W. Thomas being appointed as clerk, "to write, enter, and register all such decrees," &c. &c. On the next day he is discharged of all other business, "that he may have nothing else to attend to"—to the end that "he may the better apply his charge to see what is worth registering, and what be left unwritten."

These valuable volumes formerly belonged to Mr. George Chalmers, the Scottish Antiquary, and came into the possession of the British Museum at the dispersion of his library about the year 1840.

There are also three full-sized quarto pages in the Lambeth Library [MS. 582, fol. 122-124], which are entitled, "Large extracts from the original Register of the Acts of the Privy Council of K. Ed. VI. in the years 1550, 1551, 1552, 1553." Another volume consists of extracts from a Privy Council book made by Ralph Starkey in August 1620 [Br. Mus. Harl. MS. 352]. The extracts begin with an entry dated Feb. 6, 1546, and thence to folio 80, June 31, 1548, they are copied from a letter-book. Folio 89 begins with an entry dated May 1, 1550, at Baynard's Castle; and thence to the end, June 15, 1553, the extracts are taken from a Privy Council Register

LIBRARY
Perkins School of Theology

CHAP I

A.D. 1547

little more than nine years old, took any personal interest in the matter; and probably, on this and other occasions, he simply said and did as he was prompted.

The King's consent

So soon as the formal consent of Edward had been obtained, the Lord Chancellor declared it, first, to those of the Council who were not executors, and secondly, to the other Lords who were present at Court, and their consent was given unanimously. It was then determined that the Temporal Lords should all take the oaths before the Lord Chancellor on the Thursday, and the Bishops on the Friday following, after which the letters to foreign Sovereigns announcing the death of Henry VIII. were despatched, "under the hand and subscription only of the Lord Protector."[1]

But although this was a great step gained towards the accomplishment of his plans, a limited authority, such as was now conferred upon Hertford, did not place him in the supreme position which he intended to occupy. For the purpose of securing the more influential of the Privy Councillors to his side, therefore, Sir William Paget was put forward to make a declaration respecting a conversation which he once had with the late King, in which the latter expressed his determination of conferring titles and estates upon them. There is a long account of this conversation in the Privy Council Register, but the substance of it all is that the King meant to divide the Duke of Norfolk's lands (forfeited by his attainder) among some half-dozen of the courtiers, that the Earl of Hertford was

Further support purchased with titles and lands

[1] There is an amusing and characteristic memorandum in the Council Register of letters being sent to Calais, Boulogne, and Newhaven, informing them of "the sorrowful chance" of the late King's death, and bidding them "*have a good eye to their neighbours, and to such seditious persons as would attempt any business.*" So also to Ireland and Wales.

CHAP I

to have had a deanery, a cathedral treasurership, and four prebends, and that those who received the land were also to receive new titles. Some doubt is thrown upon the authenticity of this alleged conversation,[2] by an odd excuse for disposing of land in this manner which is entered in the Register. Money, it is said, could not always perhaps be found for the King's service by these devoted nobles, but their lands could at any time be given. Thus, Lord Hertford became Duke of Somerset; Essex was made Marquess of North- ampton; Lisle, Earl of Warwick; Wriothesley, Earl of Southampton; Sir Thomas Seymour (the Protector's brother), Sir Richard Rich, Sir William Willoughby, and Sir Edward Sheffield, all being made barons. Strype says that the estates given to these, and to many others (whom he names to the number of more than thirty, and including Cranmer), were those of monasteries, religious foundations, and bishoprics.[3] Thus the first act of the late King's executors in executing their office was that of raining coronets upon their heads and wealth into their coffers.

A.D. 1547

Feb. 18

The Protector and his friends sharing the Church plunder

A formidable opponent to the Protector's plans, however, arose in the person of the new Earl of Southampton, who was Lord Chancellor, and had the

[2] Paget's character did not stand high. He turned on his old master and patron, Gardiner; and, some years after the transactions mentioned above, he was imprisoned, with a fine of £6000, for embezzling public money. [Hayward's *Life of Edw. VI.*]

[3] *Eccl. Mem.*, II. i. 123, ed. 1822. This is confirmed by a speech of Lord Seymour, which is reported by Wightman in a letter to Cecil, previously referred to. "'Well, well,' said he, 'they are at this point now, that there can neither bishoprick, deanery, nor prebend fall void, but one or other of them will have a fleece of it.' Indeed I did, in this point, both grant his saying to be true, and aggravate the matter, to confirm his opinion, with naming the Deanery of Wells, the Bishoprick of Lincoln, and others, which I told him had been sore plucked at." There is a covetous letter of Warwick to Paget extant, dated in March, asking for a grant of more land than had been assigned to him. [State Papers, MS., Ed. VI., Dom.]

CHAP I A.D. 1547

official custody of the late King's Will. He had been one of the two Secretaries of State during part of the time that Sir William Paget had held office as the other, and was also a friend of that shrewd and experienced politician Bishop Gardiner, under whose training Paget had learned his duties as a Secretary. But the two coadjutors of a former day were now leaders of two opposite parties in the Privy Council, Paget committing himself unreservedly to the Protector's interests—so long at least as the Protector would follow the Secretary's advice—and the Chancellor endeavouring to maintain the *status quo*, in accordance with the Will which he had in his custody, and with the wishes of a large party in the nation.

Two parties in the Privy Council

The Chancellor, however, made a singularly impolitic move at a very early period of this contest for power, which enabled the Protector and his allies in the Privy Council to checkmate their dangerous rival instantly, and with the greatest ease. In order to gain more time for his political duties, Southampton appointed four Vice-Chancellors (Sir Robert Southwell, Master of the Rolls, John Tregonnel, John Oliver, and Anthony Bellasis, Masters of Chancery), who were commissioned, under Letters Patent dated February 18, 1547, to hear causes in the Court of Chancery and to grant decrees; which latter, however, had no force until (as in the case of ordinary decisions by the Master of the Rolls) they were countersigned by the Lord Chancellor himself.[4] These Letters Patent were probably founded on precedent, the office of Vice-Chancellor having been known as long as from the time of Henry II., though it had fallen into disuse.

The Lord Chancellor's misuse of the Great Seal

[4] The commission itself is copied into the Privy Council Register. See also Burnet, v. 137, Pocock's Ed.

CHAP I

A.D. 1547

But in this case the Great Seal was affixed to the Letters Patent without the customary authority of a Royal Warrant under the Privy Seal, and therefore on the sole responsibility of the Chancellor. Two days afterwards, certain "Students of the Common Law" presented a memorial to the Privy Council, "referring to the consideration of the Protector and Council what the granting out of the said commission without warrant did weigh." The Judges were required to give their opinion, and on March 6th they declared that the Chancellor had forfeited his office, and had also incurred danger of fine and imprisonment at the King's pleasure. On the same day Southampton was called before the Council, when, after contesting the point for some time, he acknowledged his act to be technically wrong, but claimed pardon on account of long service, and asked for dismissal from his office with as little scandal as possible. The Council, "considering how great his misdeeds were, and how dangerous it was for the Seal to continue in the hands of so stout and arrogant a person," ordered him to remain in his house at Ely Place, "as in prison," during pleasure, and to pay such fine as should be determined. The Will of Henry VIII. was taken out of his custody and deposited in the Exchequer, while the Great Seal was placed temporarily in the charge of Lord St. John, Master of the Household, who was appointed Keeper for fourteen days, or for such less time as should be necessary.[5] Instead of

Opinion of the Judges on the subject

The Chancellor's fall

[5] On June 29, 1547, Lord Southampton prayed for an end of his fine and imprisonment, when the Council, "not having leisure to consider it, and yet wishing to deal gently with him," took his own recognizance to appear when called for. On January 28th following he was summoned for marrying Elizabeth Cobham while his first wife was living. He pleaded the adultery of the latter, but the Council sent Elizabeth Cobham to the Queen until the case was decided.

CHAP I

A.D. 1547

a fortnight, however, Lord St. John held the Seal for nine months. He was that Marquess of Winchester who boasted that he had held the office of Lord High Treasurer during the reigns of Edward, Mary, and Elizabeth, by bending as a willow, instead of standing firm like an oak; and it was doubtless for his capacities as a willow-courtier that Somerset placed the important power attached to the possession of the Great Seal in his pliable hands, instead of appointing a proper Chancellor. Certain it is that the Protector took immediate advantage of the situation to secure for himself a much less limited position than that which had been assigned to him under Wriothesley's influence.

A more pliable Chancellor appointed

This was done a week later, on March 12th, by means of a Commission, to which the Great Seal was affixed by Lord St. John, under a warrant signed by the King and the Privy Council. The Commission was very carefully and comprehensively drawn up, so as to ratify all that the Protector had done hitherto since he had been "appointed and ordained by Word . . . or otherwise any time before, since the death of our late father," and also to endow him with plenary authority until the King should "accomplish the age of eighteen years." The sixteen executors who, by the late King's Will, were to have governed the Kingdom during those nine years are not even mentioned as executors, but (with their twelve assistant Councillors) are entirely set aside and superseded by the appointment of the Protector. They are, however, with ten others, formed into a Council of twenty-six,[6]

A fuller Commission issued

The Protector's Council

[6] The Council so named in the Protector's Commission consisted of the following members :—"The most Reverend Father in God, Thomas, Archbishop of Canterbury, and our right Trusty and well-

CHAP I

A.D. 1547

to which the Protector is to have the power of adding any persons whom he may at any time please, and from among whom he may "choose, name, appoint, use, and swear of Privy Council, such and so many as he from time to time shall think convenient." This Commission was countersigned by the Duke of Somerset, Archbishop Cranmer, Lord St. John, Lord Russel, the Marquess of Northampton, Sir Thomas Cheyne, Sir William Paget, and Sir Anthony Browne; the young King being, of course, a mere cypher in the business.[7] Thus these eight men, who had been so obsequious to Henry VIII. during his lifetime, kicked aside the authority of the dead lion, without hesitation, before three weeks had passed since the day when they had deposited him out of sight in the royal tomb-house at Windsor. By taking shrewd advantage of

Authority of Henry VIII. entirely disregarded

beloved William, Lord St. John, Great Master of our Houshold, and President of our Council; John, Lord Russel, Keeper of our Privy Seal; and our Trusty and right well-beloved Cousins, William, Marquess of Northampton; John, Earl of Warwick, Great Chamberlain of England; Henry, Earl of Arundel, our Lord Chamberlain; Thomas, Lord Seymour of Sudley, High Admiral of England; the Reverend Father in God, Cuthbert, Bishop of Duresme, and our right Trusty and well-beloved Richard, Lord Rich; Sir Thomas Cheney, Knight of our Order, and Treasurer of our Houshold; Sir John Gage, Knight of our Order, and Comptroller of our Houshold; Sir Anthony Brown, Knight of our Order, Master of our Horse; Sir Anthony Wingfield, Knight of our Order, our Vicechamberlain; Sir William Paget, Knight of our Order, our chief Secretary; Sir William Petre, Knight, one of our two principal Secretaries; Sir Ralph Sadler, Knight, Master of our Great Wardrobe; Sir John Baker, Knight; Dr. Wotton, Dean of Canterbury and York; Sir Anthony Denny, and Sir William Herbert, Kts., Gentlemen of our Privy Chamber; Sir Edward North, Kt., Chancellor of our Court of Augmentations and Revenues of our Crown; Sir Edward Montague, Kt., Chief Justice of our Common Pleas; Sir Edward Wotton, Kt.; Sir Edmund Pekham, Kt., Cofferer of our Houshold; Sir Thomas Bromley, Kt., one of the Justices for Pleas before us to be holden; and Sir Richard Southwell, Kt." Somerset himself and the discarded Lord Chancellor make up the twenty-eight appointed in the Will.

[7] The Letters Patent are printed in Pocock's Edition of Burnet's *History of the Reformation*, v. 140.

CHAP I

A.D. 1547

the Lord Chancellor's unlucky mistake, Somerset was thus enabled to accomplish what a later age calls a *coup d'état*, and became as absolutely Sovereign for a time as one with no royal blood in his veins could, in that age, hope to be—that is, Sovereign in all but the name. Such he remained for two years and a half, when his extravagant haughtiness and tyranny brought about that first fall of 1549 from which he was never able to recover.

Provoking haughtiness of Somerset

During his Protectorate Somerset assumed a tone that was found utterly unbearable. His own brother resented it bitterly. The Queen, Katharine Parr, said it provoked her so much she thought she should have bitten him. Some men he drove even to tears. It became at last so outrageously haughty, that his friend and accomplice Paget wrote a long remonstrance, in the course of which he indicates his anticipation that such conduct would bring ruin upon the Protector. "A *King*," he writes, "who shall give men discouragement to say their opinions frankly, receiveth thereby great hurt and peril to his realm; but a *subject* in great authority, as your Grace is, using such fashion, is like to fall into great danger and peril of his own person, beside that to the Commonwealth, which, for the very love I bear to your Grace, I beseech you, and for God's sake, consider and weigh well."[8]

[8] Strype's *Eccl. Mem.*, II. ii. 427. In the Lansd. MS., 2022, fol. 228, is a copy (from the original MS.) of some similar advice sent to Somerset by Bishop Gardiner while in the Tower. It seems to have been in a New Year's letter, and is cast into nine "admonitions." These are wise rules about his position, without a trace of unfriendliness, and such as a shrewd-minded and pious old man might well write. The first is—"Take not all that you can, nor do all that you may: for there is no greater danger in a nobleman than to let slip the reins of his lust, and not to be able to refrain them with the strong bit of reason." There are warnings against false friends and flatterers, and of the danger of sudden fall. One maxim is particularly pithy and good—"Be more careful of conscience than of honour."

CHAP I
A.D. 1547

In the summer of 1547 Somerset was obliged, by the importunity of the Privy Council, to put himself at the head of an army which was sent to invade Scotland; and, for the purpose of checking any adverse influence on the part of the other Councillors, he appointed his brother, Lord Seymour, Lord Lieutenant of the South of England. But, immediately after the battle of Pinkey or Musselburg, which was successfully fought on September 10, 1547, the Protector posted back to London under the apprehension that Seymour was plotting against him; and so quickly did he travel, that, by the 29th of the month, he was again at the head of the Council table. This fear of his brother was henceforth continually in Somerset's mind. Seymour had become the fourth husband of Queen Katharine Parr within an indecently short time of the King's death,[9] and, having charge of the Princess Elizabeth, he appears to have formed designs for marrying her, even before the death of the Queen, which occurred either in child-birth, or, as many thought, by poison, in September 1548. He does not, however, seem to have had any wish to supplant his brother altogether, much less to have seized the Crown, but only to depress Somerset's power by reducing him to the position of chief of the Privy

The invasion of Scotland

Seymour's marriage to the Queen Dowager

[9] Under the month of May Edward VI. enters in his journal, "The Lord Seymour of Sudeley married the Queen, whose name was Katharine, with which marriage the Lord Protector was much offended."—[Burnet's *Hist. Ref.*, page 5, Pocock's Ed.] They were old lovers, and their wooing was doubtless a short one. The Queen was living at the old palace by the waterside, in Cheyne Walk, Chelsea, where it is probable that they were secretly married within a few weeks after the King's death. For while the nights were yet long, the Queen wrote to Seymour, asking him to visit her early in the morning, that he might leave secretly before seven o'clock, she promising to be his "porteress" at the field gate, and signing herself "Her that is and shall be your humble, true, and loving wife during her life."—[Ellis' *Orig. Lett.*, 1st ser., ii. 152.]

CHAP I A.D. 1547

Council, while he himself became governor of the young King.[1] No doubt Seymour tried to influence Edward in stolen interviews[2] through John Fowler, one of the King's attendants, and especially by gifts of money. Edward confessed to much of this in a sharp cross-examination which he underwent while Seymour was on his trial, and the substance of which (reading like a child's answers spoken in the midst of tears) still remains, signed with his own hand.

The young King's confession

"The Lord Admiral came to me," he says, "in the time of the last Parliament at Westminster, and desired me to write a thing for him. I asked him what. He said it was none ill thing; it is for the Queen's Majesty. I said, if it were good, the Lords would allow it; if it were ill, I would not write in it. Then he said they would take it in better part if I would write. I desired him to let me alone in that matter. Cheke said afterwards to me, Ye were not best to write. At another time, within this two years at least (he said), ye must take upon you yourself to rule, for ye shall be able enough as well as other kings, and then ye may give your men somewhat; for your uncle is old, and I trust will not live long. *I answered, it were better that he should die.* Then he said, Ye are but even a very beggarly King now; ye have not to play, or to give to your servants. I said, Mr. Stanhope had for me. Then he said he would give Fowler money for me; and so he did, as Fowler told me. And he gave Cheke

[1] Sir William Sherrington accused him of saying "that he thought it was not the King's will, that dead is, that any one man should have both the government of the King, that now is, and also of the realm; and that in time past, if there were two males by the mother's side, the one should have the one, the other the other." He had also said to Lord Dorset, "Marry, he thought it meet the Lord Protector might be chief of the Council."—[Hayne's State Papers, pages 90, 76.]

[2] Fowler writes to Seymour on July 19, 1548, giving messages from Edward, and says that the King would write himself, but that he is never "half a quarter of an hour alone." The correspondence was kept up with great secrecy, Fowler requesting that Seymour would burn his letters.

money, as I bade him;[3] and also to a bookbinder, as Belmayn can tell; and to divers others at that time, I remember not to whom. The Lord Admiral told me these things before at divers times, twice or thrice. Fowler oftentimes said to me, Ye must thank my Lord Admiral for gentleness that he shewed you, and for his money, and was always praising of him. EDWARD."[4]

CHAP I A.D. 1548

The discovery of these secret dealings with the young King put Seymour completely into the power of his brother the Protector, and he was committed to the Tower on January 17, 1548-9, under charges which are given at length in the Register of the Privy Council. The *first* is that "last year . . . . in the Parliament time, his Majesty being then but of the age of ten years, newly entered into his kingdom, being at open war with Scotland, at some grudge with France, not in the most certainty with the Emperor, the people at home in some contention for religion, the said Admiral, as appeared by information given to the Lord Protector," had intended to get the King into his hands, and that he was prevented by God's grace and wisdom. He was charged, *secondly*, that he had induced the King, without the advice and knowledge of the Protector and the Privy Council, to write letters to the Parliament of his devising, intending to have set up sedition in the kingdom, and, according to his own words to his friends, "to have

Accusations made against Seymour

[3] Edward wrote to Seymour for money, through Fowler, on June 26, 1548, but would not say for whom he wanted it, though he said it was to give away. [Haynes' State Papers, page 75.] For the remittance sent, he replied, "My Lord, I thank you, and pray you to have me recommended to the Queen.—EDWARD." [State Papers, Edw. VI., Dom. iv. 31.] On another occasion he wrote on a torn scrap of paper, "My Lord, send me for Latimer as much as ye think good, and deliver it to Fowler.—EDWARD. To my Lord Admiral."

[4] Haynes' State Papers, page 74.

CHAP I A.D. 1548

made the blackest Parliament that ever was in England." It was then charged against him, *thirdly*, that he meant to have deposed the Protector and the Council, and to have disposed of the King's person at his will and pleasure, especially as to the appointment of a Council and the marriage of the King. "And, finally, notwithstanding good advice given to the contrary, as well by the said Lord Protector as others his friends of the Council, he practised to have in marriage the Lady Elizabeth, one of his Majesty's sisters, and the second inheritor, after his Majesty, to the Crown."

Accusations against Seymour

These accusations were followed up on later days by others, such as that of endeavouring to secure the Mint at Bristol, and the encouragement of piracy, the examinations occupying many pages in the Council books. Then follows a graphic narrative of the manner in which the young King's consent to his uncle's death was obtained. There was a morning meeting of the Privy Council on February 24, 1549, at which it was determined to ask Edward, after dinner, if he would have the laws carried out, and especially if he would leave the Admiral's case to the Parliament. There was not much difficulty with the boy Tudor. After he had dined the Protector made a long speech, enumerating his brother's crimes to his brother's nephew; declaring himself very sorry, but the whole Council asked for condemnation, and he would not go against them. If he did similar things, he should expect similar punishment. "Upon all this the King's Majesty answered these words—We do perceive that there is great things which be objected and laid to my Lord Admiral, mine uncle, and they tend to treason; and we perceive that you require but justice

Would the King consent to his uncle's execution?

to be done ; we think it reasonable, and we will well that you proceed according to your request.

CHAP I

A.D. 1549

"With these words coming so suddenly from his Grace's mouth of his own motion, as the Lords might well perceive, the said Lords and the rest of the Council were marvellously rejoiced, and gave his Highness most hearty praise and thanks."

The Council's joy at his readiness to do so

The next day a Bill of Attainder against Seymour was submitted to Parliament, and passed on March 5th—"the Lord Protector only for natural pity's sake," the Council Book entry recording, "desiring license at the passing of the said bill to be away." In the Lower House there was much debate, the House being "marvellously full, almost to the number of 400 persons." Further proceedings took place in the Privy Council[5] on March 15th ; the Bishop of Ely was ordered to go "to the Admiral, to prepare his soul for death,"

Seymour at once attainted by Parliament

[5] On March 10th it was determined to present the Bill of Attainder to the King, with fresh statements of the Admiral's misdoings, for the Royal Assent, which was at once given, the young King being as ready to send his uncles to the block as his father was to send his wives thither. But the Council thought it decent that the warrant for his uncle's execution should not be signed by him, and the responsibility of putting the Act of Attainder in force was therefore accepted by the Privy Council. The following is the entry on this subject :—

"And forasmuch as they did perceive that the case was so heavy and lamentable to the Lord Protector, his Majesty's uncle. If his Highness were so pleased and so commanded them (although the thing itself (but only that for his Majesty's surety it would not be omitted) were also to them sorrowful), yet they would further proceed to justice herein as appertained, without further troubling or molesting in this heavy case either his Highness or the Lord Protector." After dinner, therefore, the Lord Chancellor, "the Lord Protector being also there present," put the matter before the King, "to the which his Highness answered, that he well perceived their proceedings herein, and gave them his hearty thanks for their pains and travails, and the great care his Highness perceived they had for his surety, willing and commanding them that they should proceed as they required without further molestation of his Highness or the Lord Protector. And at the end said—And I pray you, my Lords, so do. With the which answer they took their leave, and departed."

CHAP I

A.D. 1549

and on March 17th "they condescended and agreed that the said Lord Admiral should be executed the Wednesday following," Somerset and Cranmer both signing the Minute of Council in which this is recorded.[6] On March 20th, therefore, Seymour was beheaded on Tower Hill. "Whether he be saved or no," said Latimer, when preaching before his royal nephew on the 29th, "I leave it to God; but surely he was a wicked man, and the realm is well rid of him;"[7] and perhaps the popular preacher was not far wrong in his judgment, whatever we may think of his tenderness and charity.

Latimer to Edward VI. about his uncle's salvation

From the time of his brother's execution the shadow of a coming cloud fell upon Somerset's own fortunes. Having no open rival to fear, he became more and more arrogant, affecting a royal state only second to that of a sovereign, occupying a seat by himself, and using the style "by the grace of God" before his title. He accumulated vast treasures into his hands, and began to build a magnificent palace in the Strand, between the Savoy and the Temple, just outside the city of London, probably with the ulterior purpose of dominating the city whose influence so often turned the scale in political or dynastic revolutions. For this great palace he cleared an area considerably larger than that covered by the Somerset House of our day,

Somerset's growing arrogance

[6] A letter written by the Princess Elizabeth to her sister Mary represents that Somerset was unwilling for his brother to be executed. This is not borne out by the official documents, but Elizabeth's words may be added to the above extracts from the latter:—"I have heard in my time of many cast away for want of coming to the presence of their Prince; and in late days I heard my Lord Somerset say that, if his brother had been suffered to speak with him, he had never suffered; but the persuasions were made to him so great that he was brought in belief that he could not live safely if the Admiral lived; and that made him give his consent to his death." [Ellis' *Orig. Lett.*, II. ii. 256].

[7] Latimer's Fourth Sermon before the King, 1st ed. Strype's *Eccl. Mem.*, II. i. 199, ed. 1822.

taking from four bishops their London houses, Bath Inn, Strand Inn, Chester Inn, and Worcester Inn, with all the other houses on that side of the Strand, and demolishing the Church of St. Mary. He appears also to have intended annexing the palace of the Savoy, then occupied as an hospital, since he removed all its beds and other furniture to the Bridewell in Blackfriars, and to St. Thomas' Hospital. For the building materials necessary to erect the palace which Somerset designed for this splendid site, he depended partly on the bishops' palaces and the parish church which he had thus pulled down; but these not supplying nearly enough, he set to work upon St. Margaret's Church,[8] by Westminster Abbey, where the sight of the scaffolding excited such vigorous opposition from the parishioners, that this part of his scheme had to be given up. With more success he attacked the outlying buildings of St. Paul's Cathedral, pulling down its stately cloisters, and two chapels which were enclosed within their area. The great and magnificent Church of the Knights of St. John, near Smithfield, was also demolished by means of gunpowder; and, as in the case of all the other buildings named, the stone, timber, and lead were carted off to the Strand.[9] When a portion of the building was completed the Protector began to occupy it,[1] and to provide himself with a

CHAP I

A.D. 1549

His sacrilegious way of building Somerset House

[8] He proposed to appropriate part of Westminster Abbey itself as the parish church in its place, as he had substituted the Royal Chapel of the Savoy, or part of it, for the Church of St. Mary.

[9] These particulars are recorded in Stowe's *Survey of London*, and in Hayward's *Life of Edward VI.* In the *Grey Friars' Chronicle* there is also an entry on April 10, 1549: "Was pulled down the cloister in Paul's that was called the Pardon Churchyard, with the chapel that stood in the midst, to build the Protector's place withal." [*Grey Friars' Chron.*, page 58, Camd. Soc.]

[1] The Preface which he wrote for a Puritan book, entitled "The Spiritual Pearl," is dated "From our house at Somerset Place."

CHAP I

A.D. 1549

library he took possession of and removed a large collection of books belonging to the city of London, and forming the Guildhall Library of that day.[2]

Somerset alienates the higher classes,

All the arrogance, high-handedness, and self-aggrandisement thus indicated alienated the new-made nobles of the Privy Council from the Protector, making them jealous of his position and afraid of his power. To counterbalance this alienation of his own class he endeavoured to secure the support of the lower classes in the counties, by posing as their champion and benefactor in the matter of common lands, large tracts which had been allowed to be used as such when they were in the hands of the monastic bodies being now enclosed and let out as farms by those to whom the confiscated possessions of the monasteries had been granted. The only result of this pretended anxiety for the welfare of the labouring classes was to make them discontented, no practical measures beyond the appointment of a Royal Commission being attempted. There were consequently insurrectionary movements throughout the country, which had to be put down by force of arms. A Royal Visitation of the land was then undertaken, which was somewhat similar in its character to that by means of which the Church had been despoiled in the beginning of Edward's reign.[3] This was naturally opposed by the landowners, class was set against class, and insurrections of a more organized character arose in Devonshire, Norfolk, and Yorkshire, which were only suppressed after much fighting and slaughter: the objects of the revolutionary party being now proclaimed in a number of articles, the substance of which was a demand for the restoration of the "old

pretends to be the champion of the lower,

and thus sets class against class

[2] Notes and Queries, May 1869. [3] See chap. ii.

religion," and for the imposition of sumptuary restrictions upon landowners. CHAP I A.D. 1549

During these troubles, and others arising from a weak foreign policy, the Duke of Somerset endeavoured to keep the government of the country as much as possible in his own hands, Archbishop Cranmer being his chief supporter, and being allowed that full exercise of power of which he was ever so ravenous in all ecclesiastical matters. Meanwhile a strong party was being formed against the Protector, under the secret management of a man equally ambitious with himself, Dudley, Earl of Warwick, and afterwards Duke of Northumberland. On October 6, 1549, open resistance to the Protector was declared, and within a week from that date he was deposed from his office, and imprisoned in the Tower. The course of events which brought about this rapid fall may be gathered from the Privy Council Register. On the day above mentioned an entry is made that the Council were about to repair to the King at Hampton Court, to represent to his Majesty the bad government of the Protector, and his habit of acting without them; but that, when booted and spurred, they received information that Somerset had collected together a force "to have destroyed them."[4] So they determined to stay

A party formed against the Protector

[4] That the apprehensions of the Privy Councillors were not without reason is shown by a broadside which Somerset prepared for circulation, and probably did actually circulate, the contents of which are as follows:—

"Good people—In the name of God and King Edward, let us rise with all our power to defend him and the Lord Protector against certain lords and gentlemen and chief masters which would depose the Lord Protector, and so endanger the King's royal person; because we, the poor commons, being injured by the extortions of gentlemen, had our pardon this year by the mercy of the King and the goodness of the Lord Protector; for whom let us fight, for he loveth all just and true gentlemen which do no extortion, and also the poor commonalty of England.

"God save the King and my Lord Protector, and all true lords and

CHAP I A.D. 1549

in London. They then summoned the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, and forbade them to obey any mandates sent them by the Lord Protector, unless they were subscribed by the Council. They also issued a similar direction by letters to the principal nobility and gentry, certain of whom they enjoined to repair to London with some force to suppress any attempts that might be made by the Protector. For further security they took the Tower out of the Protector's hands into their own.[5]

London secured by his opponents

The letter of the Council was answered by one signed by Somerset and Cranmer, dated October 7, 1549, which was written from Windsor, whither the Protector had immediately removed the King, and by another on the following day. In these the writers profess that they do not know what the London members of the Council seek, unless it be the life of the Protector; but there are becoming expressions of a desire that no blood of the King's subjects may be shed, and that the contest may be brought to a peaceful end. This was crossed by letters from the Council in London to the King, and to the Archbishop and Sir William Paget, the latter stating that if the Duke of Somerset will absent himself from the Council board, and be amenable to justice, they will gladly commune with the Archbishop about the custody of the King's person. But if the Archbishop and Comptroller care more for

Negotiations between him and them

gentlemen, and us, the poor commonalty."

A copy of this paper which is preserved in the Record Office is endorsed "The copy of the bill sowed amongst the commons;" and in the twenty-first Article of the accusation against the Duke of Somerset it is said to have been prepared on October 5, 1549. [Burnet's *Hist. Ref.*, v. 285, Pocock's Ed.]

[5] There were present on this occasion Lord St. John, the Earls of Warwick, Arundel, and Southampton, Secretary Petre, Sir Edward North, Sir Richard Southwell, Sir Edmund Peckham, Sir Edward Wooton, and Dr. Wooton, Dean of Canterbury.

CHAP I
A.D. 1549

that one man, the Duke, than for the execution of his Majesty's laws, "we must make other account of you than we trust we shall have cause." They add their assurance that the dangers which are imminent are known to the Archbishop and Sir William Paget. It is probable that the dangers were known, as alleged; for the Archbishop, Paget, and Sir Thomas Smith wrote at once to the Councillors in London, desiring to know "whether the King's Majesty shall come forthwith thither, or remain still here, and that some of your Lordships would take pain to come hither forthwith."[6] This resolution was doubtless hastened also by a letter which the Council wrote to the King himself from the "house of Mr. Yorke, Sheriff of London," in which they declare that, with one or two exceptions, they are the whole Council to whom the Will of his father committed the care of himself and the kingdom; and that, if the Duke of Somerset has any regard to his duty as a subject and an executor, he will restore them to the King's presence, submit himself to the Council and the laws, and dismiss his forces. In another entry in their book the Council assert that they had received credible information of Somerset having said that, if the Lords intended his death, the King should die before him; and that, if they meant to famish him, they should famish his Majesty. They thought it necessary, therefore, to communicate with the two Princesses, and to declare their proceedings to the whole nation.

Imminent dangers referred to

Alleged that Somerset contemplated the death of Edward

On October 11th the Council went to Windsor, having ordered the Duke, who had already been

[6] Strype's *Life of Cranmer*, ii. 567-577. Eccl. Hist. Soc. Ed. Ellis' *Orig. Lett.*, II. ii. 166. Burnet's *Hist. Ref.*, v. 273-282, Pocock's Ed.

CHAP I

A.D. 1549

"sequestered from the King" by Cranmer and Paget, to await their coming. The next day, being Sunday, they sent Sir Thomas Smith, Sir Michael Stanhope, Sir John Thynne, Edward Wolf, and William Gray to the Tower, as the chief abettors and adherents of Somerset. On the 13th, the Duke himself, who had been proclaimed a traitor on the 7th,[7] was sent for and committed to the Tower, and thus his Protectorate or Regency came to an end. On December 28, 1549, an Act of Parliament was passed condemning him to imprisonment during the King's pleasure.[8] He was enlarged on his recognizance of £10,000, on February 6, 1550, a special condition of his release being that he should reside at Shene or at Syon, and not go more than four miles from either house.[9] On April 10th he was restored in some degree to his position, there being an entry in the Council Book, "This day was the Duke of Somerset sworn and admitted one of the King's Majesty's Privy Council;" but by that time the power of the Earl of Warwick was firmly established, although he did not take the title of Duke of Northumberland until the autumn of the following year, when Somerset was again apprehended, and in three months afterwards sent to his doom.

His Protectorate comes to an end

Partly in favour for a time still

The Protectorate of Somerset was an eventful period in the history of the Reformation; for it was during the two years and a half of his power that Convocation

[7] *Grey Friars' Chron.*, Camd. Soc., page 14. By his own desire he was taken by St. Giles'-in-the-Fields, says the chronicler, that he might not pass by the churches he had ruined in the Strand.

[8] A copy of this Act is inserted in the Harleian MS., 353, fol. 78; and, at the end, there is a "Memorandum that this Act was signed by the King, and subscribed by the whole Council," the signatures, headed by "T. Cant.," following.

[9] The *Grey Friars' Chronicle* [page 66] says that the Duke came out of the Tower on February 6th "to the Savoy," from which it seems evident that at present his new house in the Strand was looked upon as an extension of the Savoy Palace.

CHAP I

A.D. 1550

and Parliament carried out and enforced the revision of the devotional system of the Church of England which had been contemplated and prepared for during the reign of Henry VIII. Towards the close of his rule, in 1549, the "First Prayer Book of Edward VI.," that which may for convenience be called the High Church Prayer Book, was brought into use under the authority of the Act of Uniformity; and this is the great ecclesiastical monument of his Protectorate. But it does not appear that the Duke of Somerset exercised any personal influence over the work of the Reformation, the chief direction of it at that time being in the hands of Archbishop Cranmer, who had not yet succumbed to the counsels of Presbyterian and Puritan foreigners. No doubt the Archbishop received the authoritative support of the Protector, but, beyond this, the latter does not seem to have interfered in ecclesiastical affairs.[1]

He supported Cranmer in his reforms

§ 2. Government under the Duke of Northumberland

[Oct. 13, 1549—July 6, 1553]

Although the names of many of the Privy Councillors were subscribed to the documents connected

[1] A lengthy correspondence between Bishop Gardiner and the Protector is preserved by Foxe; but the style of the letters to which the name of Somerset is subscribed makes it all but certain that his replies to the Bishop were written by Cranmer.

Calvin wrote five letters to the Duke of Somerset between 1549 and 1551, in the first of which he exhorts the Protector to reform the new Prayer Book, by doing away with the Commemoration of the Departed at the Eucharist, with the Chrisom at Baptism, and with Extreme Unction. But if the letters had any influence at all on Somerset, it was probably only in respect to the characteristically cruel admonition that he should "restrain by the sword" all, whether Papist reactionaries or Protestant fanatics, who should oppose the Protector in any plans that he might form for the reformation of religion. [State Papers, Edw. VI., Dom. v. 9. Gorham's *Ref. Glean.*, 55.]

CHAP I A.D. 1550

with the deposition of the Duke of Somerset from the Protectorate, his fall was in reality brought about by Dudley, Earl of Warwick, best known in history as the Duke of Northumberland, and as the father-in-law of Lady Jane Grey, the "nine days' Queen." He had been sent into Norfolk to suppress the rebellion raised there by Robert Kett; and, having defeated the insurrectionary forces at the end of August, he soon afterwards returned to London, where he drew the majority of the Privy Council to his side, and having taken possession of the Tower, and secured the City, was soon able, as has already been narrated, to bring Somerset and Cranmer to terms, and to obtain possession of the young King's person.

Rise of the Duke of Northumberland

The conduct of this most ambitious and unscrupulous man leads to the inference that a deliberate plan for the seizure of the Crown, either on his own account,[2] or, if that could not be accomplished, on behalf of one of his family, occupied his mind from the moment when he had succeeded in overthrowing his rival. With this object in view he secured the person of the

His design upon the Crown

[2] About the time of the Duke of Somerset's second arrest and execution the Privy Council Register contains very frequent charges against persons who declared that they had seen coins with a bear and ragged staff, the badge of the Earl of Warwick, upon them. One such case occurs the very day after Somerset's death, when Thomas Long of Bath, baker, deposed that Matthew Colthurst had made bonfires, and caused the bells of the Abbey to be rung on December 3rd, for the Duke's supposed acquittal. "Further, that Thomas Holland showed him a shilling alleged to have a ragged staff on it, which this deponent could not perceive to be other than a lion, and so told him; whereupon Holland replied, "Tush, tush! hold thy peace, fool, thou shalt see another world ere Candlemas; the Duke of Somerset shall come forth of the Tower, and the Duke of Northumberland shall go in." On January 28, 1552, a few days later, there is a Council order, "Nicolas Route to be pilloried, and lose an ear for lewd words about a sixpence." The *Grey Friars' Chronicle* also contains a note that, "Item, the xvi. day was a proclamation for the new qwyne, that no man should speak ill of it, for because that pepulle sayd dyvers that ther was the ragyd staff." [*Grey Friars' Chron.*, page 72.]

young King, filled the great offices of State with his friends, gained complete authority over the members of the Privy Council by working on their fears, and thrust out of the way all who were likely to oppose his scheme. Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, the uncompromising supporter of the young King's rights, and of the dispositions made by Henry VIII. for the government of the country during his minority, was kept safely in the Tower without pen, ink, or paper, during the whole of Northumberland's reign.[3] The Duke of Somerset became harmless for a time by his captivity in the Tower, and the submission which accompanied his subsequent release. But when he began again to become dangerous through his popularity, he was once more arrested—on October 16, 1551; accused of treason against the King, and of a felonious intention to imprison Northumberland; and having been condemned to be hanged as a felon, the high treason not being proved against him, was finally got rid of by decapitation on January 22, 1552. The Princesses Mary and Elizabeth were only recognised as illegitimate daughters of Henry VIII., who had no claims to the Crown; but vigorous attempts were made to bring the former within reach of the law, that she might be destroyed, and the latter it was endeavoured to expatriate by arranging for her marriage with the Prince of Denmark.

CHAP I
A.D. 1551

Sweeping obstacles out of his way

At last the time came when the Duke of Northumberland saw his way to the final accomplishment of his plans, or at least of the first part of them. A great-granddaughter of Henry VII., Lady Jane Grey, who was fifth in the line of succession—coming in after the two Princesses, the Queen of Scots and her

Marriage of his son into the line of succession

[3] See chap. v

CHAP I

A.D. 1553

own mother, the Duchess of Suffolk—had now arrived at the age of sixteen; and, child as she was, her parents consented to her marriage. On May 25, 1553, therefore, she was married to Lord Guildford Dudley, the fourth and only unmarried son of the Duke of Northumberland. Pressure was brought to bear upon the young King, who was beginning to suffer from an unaccountable sickness, and, under a fanatical desire to forward the interests of Puritanism, Edward was made to insist on declaring Lady Jane his successor to the Crown. This act was accomplished on June 21st, within less than a month after her marriage to the Duke's son. In a fortnight, on July 6th, the King was dead;[4] and Northumberland, who was not himself of royal blood, was so far nearer to the Crown that it was placed upon the head of his son's wife, a child no older than the deceased King. At this crisis of his fortunes, however, the conscience of the country turned against him; the Princess Mary was almost universally recognised as the true successor to her brother, and the downfall of Northumberland was so rapid, that, six weeks after the death of the young King, on August 22, 1553, he was executed as a traitor.

His daughter-in-law declared next heir to the Crown

His rapid fall

During the time of the Duke of Northumberland's government there was a very distinct alteration in the

[4] It was the general opinion of the time that he had been killed by a slow poison. Thus the Grey Friars' Chronicler enters, "Item, the vj. day of July died King Edward the vj. at Greenwich, as they say, and some say he was poisoned, as it shall appear hereafter." [*Grey Friars' Chron.*, page 78.] So also Machyn in his Diary, "The vj. day of July, as they say, deceased the noble King Edward the vj., and the vij. year of his reign, and son and heir to the noble King Henry the viij., and he was poisoned, as everybody says, where now, thanks be to God, there be many of the false traitors brought to their end, and I trust in God that more shall follow, as they may be spied out." [Machyn's *Diary*, page 35.]

tone of the Reformation movement. In the earlier part of Edward's reign, probably on account of Cranmer's great influence with the Protector, this movement had been carried on, as in Henry VIII.'s time, with a careful regard to the preservation of old Catholic doctrines and customs: in the later part of the reign Cranmer's influence was much lessened, there being no friendship between him and Northumberland, and the ecclesiastical movement of those years had a strong tendency to break away from the line hitherto taken, and run in the direction of Puritanism. It was towards the close of this period, November 1, 1552, that the "Second Prayer Book of Edward VI." was brought into use, under the authority of the Second Act of Uniformity; and as the first book has for convenience been called the High Church, so this second may be called the Low Church Prayer Book.

Advance of Puritanism under his rule

CHAPTER II

THE PRIVY COUNCIL, THE PARLIAMENT, AND THE CHURCH IN THE BEGINNING OF EDWARD THE SIXTH'S REIGN

[A.D. 1547—1548]

CHAP II

A.D. 1547

DURING the whole of Edward VI.'s reign there was a great disposition on the part of the Government to make the Church as far as possible a department of the State. The political and personal interests of the governing men stimulated this disposition; the developing opinions and inclinations of the young King leaned towards it in its most extreme form; Archbishop Cranmer and Bishop Ridley were willing to go great lengths in the same direction; while the Puritans among the clergy and laity looked to such a change as the great means for suppressing those sacerdotal claims of the Church which they so much abhorred, and for giving it a Presbyterian constitution.

Erastian tendencies

It is possible that this unconstitutional tendency might have ended in more decided results than it did, if there had been a settled and strong Government. A popular King, able Ministers of State, compliant Archbishops and Bishops, and a reforming Parliament, might easily have combined together to destroy all the

Their action hindered

old landmarks, and to originate a new form of constitution and administration, in which the Church would only be a name for the State in its religious aspect, and its officers, from the highest to the lowest, only ecclesiastical servants of the Crown. There was especial danger of this great constitutional innovation during the first nine months of Edward's reign, when there was no Parliament or Convocation, when the government of the country was carried on entirely by the Privy Council, and when the poverty of the Exchequer made the remaining property of the Church a tempting source of revenue.

Chief danger from Privy Council,

But, arbitrary and tyrannical as the Privy Council Government was—and there was never any more so in England—it was never quite strong enough to accomplish this change, and the danger almost passed away on the meeting of Parliament and Convocation. The course of affairs did indeed tend in that direction alike during the Protectorate of Somerset and the supremacy of Northumberland; but, happily, there were counterbalancing constitutional influences, and in the end the relations of the Church and the State were nearly the same at the end of Edward's reign that they had been at the beginning.

There were, however, several cases in which the Privy Council, acting in the name of the Crown, adopted a strong line of action in ecclesiastical matters which strained the functions of the Sovereign to their very utmost constitutional limits, and perhaps beyond them. These cases form an important element in the history of the Reformation, and must be examined in detail.

which over-strained authority of Crown

CHAP II

A.D. 1547

§ 1. Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction assumed for the Crown

The first ecclesiastical business which came before the Privy Council was closely associated with the re-establishment of the royal supremacy, in the form which it had assumed in the previous reign.[1]

Effort to secure Royal Supremacy

In all subsequent reigns the enforcement of the supremacy was left entirely to the ordinary course of law, no special steps being taken to re-assert it beyond the ordinary homage and oath of allegiance by which each bishop acknowledged the sovereign jurisdiction of the new King or Queen. But after the Lord Chancellor had given up the seals, and received them again at Edward's hands (which took place in the presence of all the late King's executors on February 1, 1547), he was directed to make out new patents for all the judges as soon as possible; and this seems to have suggested the making out of new patents for the bishops also.[2]

[1] Arrangements were made by the Privy Council for the burial of Henry VIII., and for the coronation of his successor; but the religious portions of these ceremonials were put entirely into the hands of the Archbishop of Canterbury. No doctrinal or ritual changes were thought of in either case, and a few modifications in the coronation ceremonies were made solely on account of the King's youth, and his inability to bear much fatigue.

So also, on June 19, 1547, a solemn mass of requiem was sung in St. Paul's for Francis I., the late King of France. Cranmer and eight other bishops officiated in their richest pontifical habits, and Ridley preached the sermon. At the same time a dirge was sung in all the churches of London. [Stow's *Ann.*, 594.]

[2] It has been assumed by former writers, following Strype [Strype's *Mem. Cranmer*, ii. 2, ed. 1848], that Cranmer petitioned the Crown for his own Letters Patent. There is no evidence whatever that he did so beyond the form of the document (dated, it must be remembered, on the day after the above determination of the Council), in which the expression is used, "nos tuis in hac parte supplicationibus humilibus inclinati." It is highly probable that this is a mere form; and the dates certainly go against the statement of Burnet that the idea of the "Commissions" originated with the Archbishop.

CHAP II
A.D. 1547

Thus, on February 6th, the Privy Council resolved that all the bishops "had authority of spiritual jurisdiction by force of instruments under the seal appointed *ad res ecclesiasticas*" in the last reign, and that the authority so given had determined by the death of the King. They ordained, therefore, that these instruments should be renewed under the charge of Sir William Paget, who, as Chief Secretary to Henry VIII., had the custody of that seal. Paget was directed first, however, to give up this seal (at the same time that he and the other Secretary, Sir William Petre, gave up their other official seals) into the hands of the King, from whose hands he again received it.[3]

by issuing Letters Patent to the bishops

These Letters Patent were issued accordingly, that of Archbishop Cranmer being dated the 7th of February, although we find Gardiner complaining to Paget so late as March 1st of the delay which there had been in executing them.[4] The nature of the jurisdiction which they professed to confer may be seen by the contents of Cranmer's, which is entitled "Commissio regia archiæpiscopo Cantuar. ad exercendam suam jurisdictionem."[5] It may be summarized under the following heads:—

granting them jurisdiction as from the Crown

1. All authority of jurisdiction, and all kinds of

[3] Privy Council Register. This seal is continually referred to in these minutes under the name of the seal *ad res* or *ad causas ecclesiasticas*. In the time of Henry VIII. it was used only for Letters Patent concerning ecclesiastical matters, the bishops still using their own seals, as of old, and as in all subsequent reigns, for documents issued under their authority. Some beautiful engravings of Archbishop Cranmer's seals in 1534, 1535, 1538, 1539, and 1540, of Archbishop Parker's in 1560 and 1563, and of Bishop Jewel's in 1560, will be found in Gorham's *Reformation Gleanings*, 1857.

[4] MS. State Papers, Edw. VI., Dom. vol. i.

[5] Wilkins' *Concil.*, iv. 2. A document of a similar nature, authorizing the Dean and Chapter of St. Paul's to exercise ecclesiastical jurisdiction within places to them appertaining, exists among the MS. State Papers of this reign in the Record Office, and is dated March 1st.

CHAP II A.D. 1547

jurisdiction, as well ecclesiastical as secular, are stated to proceed from the King as supreme head of the Church.

2. With the consent of the Council, the King grants the prayer of Cranmer's petition for the commission.

3. The Archbishop is licensed to ordain within the diocese of Canterbury.

4. Also to institute to benefices.

5. Also to grant probates and administrations.

6. Also to hear such causes as belong to Ecclesiastical Courts.

The bishops exercised jurisdiction independently of them

But the documents were mere surplusage, the bishops exercising jurisdiction without them, just as they exercised it after receiving them, and merely regarding them as instruments by which they were secured against intrusion and tyranny on the part of the ruling power. They are often spoken of as if they indicated a vital change in the principles of the bishops and the civil power as to the source of episcopal authority. But it is certain that there was no such change on the part of Gardiner, nor is it probable that men like him, who could spend their years in prison rather than give up their principles, or, like the Bishop of Chichester, who in another matter told the Privy Council they might do what they pleased with him, for it was "a less evil to suffer the body to perish than to corrupt the soul with that thing which his conscience would not bear," would have accepted "commissions" from the Crown on such terms. Bonnor might not have been scrupulous on such a point, but Tunstal of Durham, Day of Chichester, and Goodrich of Ely, were men of the highest honour, and theologians who would not for a moment have recognized the Crown as the source of episcopal authority. Although, therefore, it may be alleged that Cranmer

could do so *ex animo* (which is much to be doubted), that Gardiner would have done so as a matter of policy, and that Bonnor had no principles to speak of, it is still to be explained why the other "Popish" bishops conformed to the new practice, and received these Letters Patent without remonstrance, if they are to be taken as indicating a change of principle.

Principles of spiritual jurisdiction obscured by Papal usurpations

The fact is, these instruments were a piece of clumsy and ill-considered machinery, by which it was endeavoured to replace the old usurpations of the Pope by the authority of the Crown. It was not at once evident how far the Church had authority within itself, and in particular how far the bishops had spiritual jurisdiction without receiving it from some source external to their own body. The false theory that all ecclesiastical authority flows from the Pope had been so long admitted, that, when it came to be denied and repudiated, many hankered after some new fountain, and the statesmen of the day thought they had found it in the Crown. When the principles of an independent Church came to be better defined, the functions of the Crown were restricted to the nomination of bishops (guarded by the *congé d'élire*) and to the control of their "temporalities" or endowments; while spiritual jurisdiction was understood to flow generally from Consecration, and particularly (that is, as to the diocese to which the bishop is appointed) by Confirmation. The latter ceremony is performed under the authority of the Metropolitan, acting for the whole Province or Church, and in the course of the "definitive sentence" he commits to the elected and confirmed bishop "the care, government, and administration of the spirituals" of the diocese to which he is appointed, ordering at the same time that

How jurisdiction is conferred

CHAP II A.D. 1547

he shall be inducted into corporal possession of the see, and all rights, honours, and dignities, privileges, &c., belonging to it, by installation. It may be added that, although Consecration gives to the consecrated person spiritual powers which are valid wherever they are exercised, it is also (by the English rite) Consecration *to a particular see*, as is shown by the oath of canonical obedience. Where a bishop is translated from one see to another, a new jurisdiction is conferred by the new election and confirmation.[6]

Jurisdiction a limitation of powers given by Consecration

No doubt there was a great want of clear-sightedness as to ecclesiastical questions among the statesmen and lawyers of this reign, but we must remember that it was no light mist which they had to look through in times when the atmosphere of the constitution was so disturbed by contending elements. In discussing this question, many modern writers are, however, in as dense a fog as were the statesmen and lawyers of King Edward VI. For they very commonly speak of spiritual "jurisdiction" as if it were a bestowal of some new power and authority. In reality, it is the limitation and restriction within certain geographical bounds of spiritual powers which are exercisable in all parts of the world. A bishop is by consecration a bishop wherever he may be, but his *right* to exercise his office is restricted to the diocese over which he is appointed. It is practically a question of administration, depending ultimately on the supreme authority of the country, which can parcel out the land into dioceses and parishes as it will. A missionary bishop is as much a bishop as the Archbishop of Canterbury or the Pope, and yet he has no "jurisdiction" what-

[6] Bishop Gibson says that canonists were never agreed as to whether elections did or did not confer jurisdiction. [Gibson's *Cod. Jur. Eccl. Ang.*, Tit. v. c. 2.]

ever: exercising his spiritual gifts *in partibus infidelium* at his own discretion, and in a Christian land only by permission, given or implied, of the particular bishop in whose diocese he is ministering.

The Letters Patent of no real importance

Thus it will be seen that, however inexact the language may have been in which the Letters Patent of Edward VI.'s bishops were expressed, they were in truth very innocuous documents, having no real importance except in the eyes of those who are of opinion that all spiritual authority in the Church flows from the See of Rome.[7]

§ 2. The Act for giving the Crown absolute Power in the appointment of Bishops

The line taken towards the existing bishops by the Privy Council on behalf of the Crown was followed up

[7] Bishop Burnet says that the *new* bishops of Edward VI. did not take out these "Commissions," because, their duration being limited to the "King's pleasure," the yoke was found too heavy, and that they were appointed for life. [Burnet, ii. 41, Pocock's Ed.] It is more probable that they were looked upon as being superseded by the Statute for the direct appointment of bishops by the Crown, of which an account is given in the subsequent pages. But the following entry in the Privy Council Book, under the date August 18, 1547, shows that strict provision was made for granting these commissions:—

"Where the seal appointed *ad causas ecclesiasticas* by special order of the Lord Protector's Grace, committed to the custody of Sir William Petre, Knight, the King's Majesty's Principal Secretary, because some of the archbishops, bishops, cathedral churches, archdeacons, deans, prebendaries, and others having heretofore exercised spiritual jurisdiction, may be authorized to exercise the same by force of his Highness' License under that seal. It is ordered by the said Lord Protector's Grace, and the rest of his Majesty's Privy Council, that the said Sir William Petre shall and may, by virtue of this order and decree, and without any other or further warrant, set the same seal unto all such instruments as shall be brought to him in form accustomed, for the enabling of any archbishop, bishop, cathedral and collegiate church, archdeacon, dean, prebendary, or other having heretofore used spiritual jurisdiction. The same instruments to be made in like form as they have been made to the same persons or others of like sort in the time of our late Sovereign Lord deceased."

This is signed by "Somerset, Cranmer, St. John, Northampton, Ant. Browne, Antony Wyngfield, Edward North."

CHAP II A.D. 1547

in Parliament by another very serious innovation, that of making the Crown absolute in the appointment of new bishops. The Act which effected this [1 Edw. VI., ch. 2] begins with a ring of honest intention, as follows:—

Abolition of the *congé d'élire*,

"Forasmuch as the elections of archbishops and bishops by the deans and chapters within the King's Majesty's realms of England and Ireland at the present time be as well to the long delay as to the great cost and charges of such persons as the King's Majesty giveth any archbishoprick or bishoprick unto; and whereas the said elections be in very deed no elections, but only by a writ of congé d'élire have colours, shadows, or pretence of elections, serving, nevertheless, to no purpose, and seeming also derogatory and prejudicial to the King's prerogative royal, to whom only appertaineth the collation and gift of all archbishopricks and bishopricks, and suffragan bishops within his Highness' said realms of England and Ireland, Wales, and other his dominions and marches; for a due reformation thereof, be it therefore enacted by the King's Highness, with the assent of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and the Commons, in this present Parliament assembled, and by the authority of the same—

and direct nomination by the Crown substituted

"That from henceforth no congé d'élire be granted, nor election of any archbishop or bishop by the dean and chapter made, but that the King may, by his Letters Patent, at all times when any archbishoprick or bishoprick is void, confer the same to any person whom the King shall think meet. The which collation so by the King's Letters Patent made, and delivered to the person to whom the King shall confer the same archbishoprick or bishoprick, or to his sufficient proctor and attorney, shall stand to all intents, constructions, and purposes, to as much and the same effect as though congé d'élire had been given, the election duly made, and the same confirmed. And thereupon the said person to whom the said archbishoprick or bishoprick, or suffraganship is so conferred, collated, or given, may be consecrated, and sue his livery or *ouster le main*, and do other things, as well as if the said ceremonies and elections had been done and made."

CHAP II
A.D. 1547

The third clause of this Act enacted that the bishops should no longer "make and send out summonses, citations, and other processes in their own names," but that all such processes ecclesiastical, "in all suits and causes of instance betwixt party and party, and all causes of correction, and all causes of bastardy, or bigamy, or enquiry *de jure patronatus*, probates of testaments, and commissions of administrations of persons deceased," shall be made in the name and with the style of the King as in Common Law writs, the *Teste* of the document being in the name of the bishop. The fourth clause also enacted that the seals used in such processes should have the Royal Arms and the name of the diocese upon them; the Archbishop of Canterbury, however, being allowed to use a seal with his own name and arms for faculties and dispensations.[8]

Episcopal Courts to act in name of King, not of bishop,

A most important proviso, however, formed the fourth clause of this Act, by which it was enacted that the bishops should issue in their own names, with their own seals, all documents connected with the appointment of their subordinate officers, all documents connected with collations, institutions, and

except in respect to Orders and Benefices

[8] About a century ago one of the seals made under this Act was discovered in taking down an old house at Oxford. It came into the possession of Sir William Blackstone, who presented it to the Royal Society of Antiquaries, and wrote an essay on it, which is printed (with an engraving) in the Archæologia for 1775 [iii. 414]. The seal is the shape and size of such seals as are used by archdeacons for their instruments of induction, or by bishops for marriage licenses. On the upper part of the oval are the Royal Arms of Edward VI., and on the lower third, the words "Pro: decanatu: de: Sonnyng." Around the margin is the inscription, "Sigillu : regiæ : majestatis : ad : causas : ecclesiasticas." As the Deanery of Sunning, near Reading, was a peculiar and not under episcopal jurisdiction, this seal was doubtless that of the clergyman or other officer who exercised jurisdiction within the Deanery; and if so, it was also, doubtless, identical in character with those used by the bishops themselves for the purposes defined in the Act.

CHAP II A.D. 1547

inductions, and all letters of orders or letters dimissory, in the same manner as before the passing of the Act.

The effect of this famous Act was therefore—

1. To do away with the *congé d'élire*, and substitute *direct* nomination of bishops by the Crown.

2. To make judicial processes in ecclesiastical causes, probates of wills, &c., to be carried on by the usual ecclesiastical judges, in the name of the King, instead of in their own names.

It cannot be said that either of these innovations was calculated to do much or any practical harm, or really to infringe upon any rights of the Church. The Statute was repealed by 1 Mary, stat. ii. cap. 2, and was never revived. Consequently the constitutional form of the *congé d'élire* was in abeyance only for about five years; and although an attempt was made to get rid of it[9] in the reigns of James I. and Charles

The *congé d'élire* soon revived

[9] The history of these attempts may be just glanced at here. The Statute of Edward was, as is stated above, wholly repealed by 1 Mary, stat. ii. cap. 2. The latter Act, which also repealed the Act of Uniformity, was repealed as far as regarded the Act of Uniformity, but not in other particulars, by 1 Eliz., cap. 2. Thus the Act of Edward still stood repealed, and the *congé d'élire*, &c. were revived.

But in King James the First's reign the Statute of Mary was declared to "stand repealed and void," for the purpose of reviving some Acts of Edward; and although there was no intention of reviving this particular Act, it was thought by some lawyers that it was in effect revived, and that thus the bishops could again hold office only under Letters Patent. In the Parliament of 1606 there was great agitation on the subject, and Sir Edward Coke, the Attorney-General, declared that the bishops "were all at the King's mercy." The judges gave their opinion that 1 Edw. VI., cap. 2, was not in force, having been virtually repealed by several Acts, and expressly by Stat. 1 Mary. [Coke's Reports, xii. 7.] Thirty years later the question was revived by Prynne and his adherents, who maintained that it was contrary to law for bishops to use their own style and arms, instead of those of the King, in Ecclesiastical Courts. Prynne urged that the Statute of Edward had been revived by that of James, and took no notice of the opinion of the judges which had been given in 1606. [Breviate of Prelates' Intolerable Usurpations, pp. 91-100, 115, &c.] There was much bitter controversy on the subject, and Laud asked the King to require the judges to give their opinion, which they did, declaring

I., it still remains in use, perhaps to become a useful survival, as many such survivals are useful, by becoming the basis of a reform in the present mode of appointing bishops. The other changes made by the Act were also, of course, repealed, but recent legislation has taken an exactly similar course in the matter of wills. CHAP II A.D. 1547

The bishops nominated under this Act were Ferrar of St. David's, Poynet, first of Rochester, and then of Winchester, Hooper of Gloucester and Worcester, Coverdale of Exeter, Scory of Rochester, Taylor of Lincoln, and Harley of Hereford. Of these seven only two survived to the following reigns, viz. Coverdale and Scory. It is singular to find that, although sixty-six bishops were consecrated between 1547 and 1585 (the latter being the date of Scory's death), Coverdale assisted in the consecration of only one, viz. Parker; and Scory in the consecration of only four, viz. Grindal, Cox, Meyrick, and Sands. Two other bishops joined with Coverdale and Scory in the consecration of Parker, and three other bishops joined with Scory in the consecration of the other four that have been named. So little influence had the Episcopate peculiarly belonging to the reign of Edward VI. in the future succession of the Church of England. Bishops appointed under this Act

§ 3. General Visitation of the Church by the Crown

One of the constitutional difficulties which had arisen from the repudiation of Papal authority was

that the King's arms were not necessary on ecclesiastical seals, the Statute of Edw. VI. being no longer in force. The matter was revived by Pym, when presenting the articles against Laud to the peers on February 26, 1640. But further details may be reserved for a future chapter.

CHAP II

A.D. 1547

that of the jurisdiction under which abuses in the Church were to be enquired into and reformed, and which is known in ecclesiastical law by the name of "Visitation." Up to the time of the Reformation it was the received opinion that the authority of visitation, although it was ordinarily exercised over the secular clergy by the bishops,[1] came, like all other ecclesiastical authority, from the Pope; and, accordingly, it was sometimes exercised by Papal legates, when that of the ordinaries or bishops was suspended and superseded. There can be no doubt, however, that this was a mediæval theory, and that when the power of visitation was vested in the Crown by Act of Parliament, the State was but reclaiming for the Crown that authority which earlier sovereigns had claimed and exercised on the principle asserted by King Edgar: "It appertaineth unto us to enquire into the lives" of the clergy. . . . "I have the sword of Constantine, ye of Peter; . . . the royal authority shall not fail you. You, Dunstan, have with you the venerable fathers Ethelwald, Bishop of Winchester, and Oswald, Bishop of Worcester. To you I commit the matter, that both by episcopal censure and royal authority evil livers may be cast out of the churches, and others living by rule brought in."[2] The first exercise of this revived authority was in the visitation of the monasteries. The earliest visitation in the reign of Henry VIII. had been made by Wolsey, under the authority of a bill which appointed him legate *a latere;* but the great general visitations, which ended in their confiscation and destruction, were accomplished under that of an Act

Authority of ecclesiastical visitation usurped by Popes,

but anciently in the Crown

[1] See vol. i. page 55, for a Papal acknowledgment of the jurisdiction of the ordinaries over the secular clergy.

[2] Spelman's *Concil.*, i. 417.

CHAP II
A.D. 1547

of Parliament [25 Henry VIII., c. 21, § 20]. A subsequent Act of A.D. 1534 enacted that the Crown "shall have full power and authority from time to time to visit, repress, redress, reform, order, correct, restrain, and amend all such errors, heresies, abuses, offences, contempts, and enormities, whatsoever they be, which by any manner, spiritual authority, or jurisdiction ought or may lawfully be reformed, repressed, ordered, redressed, corrected, restrained, or amended, most to the pleasure of Almighty God, the increase of virtue in Christ's religion, and for the conservation of the peace, unity, and tranquillity of this realm: any usage, custom, foreign laws, foreign authority, prescription, or any thing or things to the contrary hereof notwithstanding" [26 Henry VIII., c. 1]. This Act was repealed by 1 and 2 Phil. and Mary, c. 8, § 13, but the visitorial portion of it was re-enacted by 1 Eliz., c. 1, § 17, and has ever since been in force.

Recovered for the Crown under Henry VIII

A general visitation of the Church had been intended to have been made immediately after the passing of this Act, and the ordinary visitations of the bishops had been suspended by an inhibition, dated September 18, 1535,[3] in preparation for it. But it was not carried out, and the Privy Council Register records on October 12, 1535, that the King issued a commission to the Bishop of Lincoln, similar commissions being probably issued to other bishops at the same time, empowering him to exercise ecclesiastical jurisdiction within his diocese, "by reason that his Vicegerent and Vicar-General, Thomas Cromwell, was not yet able to perfect his intended visitation of all England in person." It does not appear that the

A visitation intended in Henry's time

[3] Wilkins' *Concil.*, iii. 797. See also a letter of Dr. Legh and Ap Rice, written to Cromwell, respecting these inhibitions. [Strype's *Eccl. Mem.*, I. ii. 216, ed. 1822.]

CHAP II

A.D. 1547

intention was ever carried out; but two sets of royal Injunctions were issued in 1536 and 1538,[4] and these were circulated in some other manner, probably through the bishops, into whose registers they were copied.

Since 1538 little had been done by the Crown towards assisting Convocation in the Reformation of the Church, and when the power of the Crown passed into the hands of the Privy Council, the minds of leading men were divided as to the expediency of making any further progress during the minority of the young King. Some, and not a few, thought with Bishop Gardiner that it would be highly imprudent to do so while the constitution was, in a manner, in abeyance. Others thought, as Hooper did, that the minority of the King offered a good opportunity for introducing important innovations of doctrine and ritual which would bring the Church of England into keeping with the Calvinistic communities that had sprung up abroad. Cranmer wished to hold a middle course, and to complete the work which had been left half finished by Convocation on account of his old master's obstructiveness. And as Somerset's policy would not permit of Parliament sitting for some time to come, Convocation, of course, could not assemble; so that, under the circumstances, Cranmer may have acted prudently and in the interests of the Church in assenting to a visitation by the Crown. Certainly men's minds were in an extremely unsettled state as regarded the Church, and an official settlement of some kind seemed absolutely necessary.[5]

A visitation during the King's minority deprecated by Gardiner,

but advocated by Cranmer

[4] Burnet's *Hist. Ref.*, iv. 308, 341, Pocock's Ed.

[5] As early, for instance, as within a few days of Henry VIII.'s death, some of the clergy and others began to deface the churches,

CHAP II A.D. 1547

Commission for the visitation

On May 4, 1547, therefore, a Commission for a general visitation was issued under the "seal *ad causas ecclesiasticas*;"[6] and at the same time a Privy Council mandate was sent to the Archbishops of Canterbury and York, ordering them to inhibit their suffragans and themselves to abstain from exercising their ordinary jurisdiction until they should receive license from the Privy Council to resume it. The same document also prohibited every clergyman from preaching except under a special license from the Crown.[7] It was signed by the Protector, Lord Sey-

under the notion that an entirely new order of things had set in; and on February 10th the matter came before the Privy Council. On that day the Council sat at "the Lord Protector's place by the Strand," when the curate and churchwardens of St. Martin's, Ironmonger Lane, were brought before them, on information of the Bishop and Lord Mayor of London, for taking down images, for substituting the King's arms in the place of the altar cross, and for painting on the walls of their church texts of Holy Scripture from a perverse translation. They made the characteristic excuses that the repairs of the church roof had caused the crucifix and other images to rot to powder, and that some committed idolatry to the images. These offences were stated to be "partly mitigated" by such excuses, and the punishment of imprisonment was remitted; but they were bound over in recognizances of £20 each, gravely admonished, required to provide a new crucifix before the First Sunday in Lent, and to set up a picture of one within two days. [Privy Council Register.] On May 24th a proclamation was issued against "divers lewd and light tales, whispered and secretly spread abroad by uncertain authors, of innovations in the religion and ceremonies of the Church." [Lansdowne MS., 2022, fol. 216.]

[6] Privy Council Register; Cardw. *Doc. Ann.*, i. 24.

[7] Wilkins' *Concil.*, iv. 10. Archbishop Cranmer suspended the Bishop of London's jurisdiction on May 15th, and issued a "relaxatio" of the suspension on June 3rd. [Wilkins' *Concil.*, iv. 14.]

The confusion in which the question of ecclesiastical jurisdiction was involved is illustrated by the fact that although the archbishops had authority given to inhibit, and Archbishop Cranmer considered himself authorized to remove the inhibition, yet the Privy Council issued a special order of their own on the subject some months later. The entry in the Council Register is dated Dec. 1, 1547, and is to the following effect: "Whereas during the last visitation the jurisdiction of the bishops did cease, it is this day ordered by the Lord Protector and the Council that the same jurisdiction be restored to them in so large and entire a manner as they had the same before the visitation began." And Sir Wm. Petre is ordered to seal all writings concerning such jurisdiction with the seal "ad

CHAP II A.D. 1547

mour his brother, Archbishop Cranmer, Paulet Marquess of Winchester, Secretary Sir William Petre, Lord Russel, Sir John Baker, and Sir John Gage; the last two being decided opponents of innovation.

In the case of the visitation of the monasteries, it was shown that some at least of the visitors chosen were men of disreputable character, and that there was a strong presumption of all being selected as mere instruments of tyranny, persecution, and robbery. There is no reason to think that the visitation of the Church in Edward VI.'s reign was conducted by men of so evil a stamp, and the list of them can be reproduced without shame. The following are the names, as given in a manuscript of Archbishop Parker, together with the dioceses which they respectively visited :—[8]

The Commissioners appointed

Dean of Westminster. Sir John Herseley. Dr. Nicolas Ridley, *preacher.* Edward Plankney, *registrar.*	York, Durham, Carlisle, Chester.
Sir Anthony Coke. Sir John Godsalve. Dr. Christopher Newinson [D.C.L.] John Gosnold, Esq. Dr. Madewe [D.D.], *preacher.* Peter Lylly, *registrar.*	Westminster, London, Norwich, Ely.
Sir John Hales. Sir John Mason. Sir Anthony Coke. Dr. Cave. Mr. Briggs, *preacher.* Ralph Morice, *registrar.*	Rochester, Canterbury, Chichester, Winchester.

causas ecclesiasticas." Yet there is no doubt that some of the bishops had been exercising their jurisdiction ever since Cranmer's "relaxatio" or removal of the inhibition, without waiting for this long subsequent Order of Council.

[8] Corpus Christi Coll. Camb. MS. cxxi. p. 448.

May, Dean of St. Paul's. Heynes, Dean of Exeter. Sir Walter Buckler. Mr. Cottesford, *preacher.* John Redman, *registrar.*	Salisbury, Exeter, Bath, Bristol, Gloucester.[9]
Taylor, Dean of Lincoln. Dr. Rowland Taylor. Mr. John Joseph, *preacher.* John Old, *registrar.*	Peterborough, Lincoln, Oxford, Coventry, Lichfield.
Mr. Morison. Mr. Sydel. Mr. Ferrar, *preacher.* George Constantine, *registrar.* Hugh Rawlins, *Welsh preacher.*	Worcester, Hereford, Llandaff, St. David's, Bangor, St. Asaph.

Character of the Commissioners

Some of these—as, for instance, Ridley, Taylor, Ferrar, and Constantine—were strong party men, but the list is otherwise unimpeachable, and offers a favourable contrast to that selected in the previous reign for visiting the monasteries.

Probable course of their proceedings

Of the details of their proceedings very little is known, but the visitors may be considered, according to modern ideas, as a roving commission, armed with coercive authority as well as with powers of enquiry. They appear to have sat for several weeks in each cathedral city, summoning to their presence the bishops, the deans and chapters, the archdeacons, some of the parochial clergy and some of the laity, and examining them on the lines laid down in seventy-four "Articles of Enquiry" with which they were provided.[1] Whatever information they obtained has

[9] The jurisdiction of these dioceses was inhibited to the respective bishops of them on August 30th. [Wilkins' *Concil.*, iv. 17.]

[1] These Articles of Enquiry consisted of thirteen for bishops, archdeacons, and ecclesiastical officers; thirty-five for parsons, vicars, and

CHAP II
A.D. 1547

either been lost or has hitherto escaped the eyes of our industrious record searchers; and, excepting through a glimpse which we get here and there of the manner in which they were received by some of the bishops, we can judge of the character of their proceedings only by that of the Injunctions with which they were provided, and which they enforced upon the various persons indicated in the Articles of Enquiry. They also added, as occasion called for them, supplementary Injunctions of their own, founded, it is to be presumed, on the circumstances disclosed during the enquiries which they made.

Their Articles of Enquiry,

The Injunctions given them to issue to the bishops were only five in number: [1.] That they should enforce all the King's Injunctions given, or to be given, throughout their dioceses. [2.] That each of them should preach once a year in the cathedral of his diocese, and three times in some other of his churches. [3.] That they should have no chaplains but those who were learned and able to preach. [4.] That they should require candidates for Orders to be learned in Holy Scripture, and not refuse any who were so, if they were of honest conversation and living. [5.] That they should not preach or set forth any doctrine repugnant to the Homilies[2] now issued, nor license others

and their Injunctions to the bishops

curates; twenty-one for lay people; and five for chantry priests. [Strype's *Eccl. Mem.*, II. i. 75-83.] Most of them related to the observance or neglect of the Injunctions which had been issued by Henry VIII., great stress being laid upon the due celebration of "Matin Mass" and Evensong, upon the singing or saying of the English Litany, upon preaching against "the usurped power of the Bishop of Rome," and upon the morals of the clergy and laity.

[2] These were twelve Homilies which had been prepared some years before by Cranmer, Bonnor, Harpsfield, and others, for Convocation, but had never been published. They now form the first part or "former book" of the Homilies authorized by the 35th of the Thirty Nine Articles of Religion. Some of them were republished by Bishop Bonnor for the use of the Diocese of London in 1555, and he then affixed his initials to that contributed by himself, the

to preach unless they could be assured of their conformity; and if any of their clergy should preach to the contrary, they were at once to inhibit them from preaching any more.[3]

Their Injunctions respecting Divine Service

The other injunctions given to bishops and deans and chapters, on the authority of the visitors, related to the details of preaching and Divine Service. At Westminster, for instance, the bishop was required to order that the Divine Service should end in every parish church of that city before nine o'clock in the morning, "that the priests and laity of the city may resort to the sermon to be made in your cathedral church, except they have a sermon made and preached in your own parish churches;" also, that the clergy being too ignorant to gain the respect of the laity, they were to be made to attend "every lecture of Divinity to be made within the College of St. Stephen,"[4] unless lawfully hindered. At York some injunctions were given by the visitors to the archbishop, dean, and chapter, which have much interest as indicating the first steps towards the changes which were to be made in the mode of conducting Divine Service. They will be found printed at length in a note in the next chapter, and it is enough here to say that they forbade all masses except High Mass, which was to be celebrated at nine o'clock in the morning every day; that

one on "Christian Love and Charity." On Sept. 23, 1548, the Council issued a Proclamation forbidding all sermons "till one uniform order be made for preaching." Meantime the clergy and people are to betake themselves to prayer, "and patient hearing of the godly Homilies"!! [Lansdowne MS., 2022.]

The Paraphrase of Erasmus upon the books of the New Testament, partly translated by the Princess Mary, was also largely distributed by the visitors, being placed in the churches for the laity to read.

[3] The copy from which the above summary is made is that given to the Bishop of Westminster on August 29th, in the Chapter House of Westminster; it is printed in Wilkins' *Concilia*, iv. 8.

[4] *Ibid.*, but dated September 3d.

CHAP II A.D. 1547

they reduced the number of Lessons at Mattins from nine to six; that they required Mattins and Evensong to be sung at six in the morning and three in the afternoon, the lesser hours of Tierce, Sexts, and Nones being to be said privately in future; and that they ordered all sermons or divinity lectures to be in English. These rules were made to apply to all churches throughout the diocese, and were to be published for that purpose by the archbishop and his officials.

The Injunctions of Edward VI.

[A.D. 1547]

Injunctions of Henry VIII. reissued

We now come to the general Injunctions which were issued to the clergy and laity as the basis of the Edwardian Visitation of the Church. These were thirty-seven in number, the first twenty being a reenforcement, with some modifications here and there, of Henry VIII.'s eleven Injunctions of 1536, and seventeen Injunctions of 1538, and the remainder being new. As these indicate the line taken by the Privy Council before Parliament and Convocation had met, a summary of these Injunctions will be useful. Although not arranged in any order, they may be conveniently classified under five heads, relating to the Papal Supremacy, to Superstitious Practices, to matters connected with Divine Service, and to the Duties and Discipline of the Clergy and Laity.

1. The Papal Supremacy.—In the first Injunction the clergy are required faithfully to keep and observe all the laws made for abolishing the pretended and usurped power and jurisdiction of the Bishop of Rome, and for the confirmation of "the King's authority, jurisdiction, and supremacy of the Church of England and Ireland," these being made the

Reassertion of the Royal Supremacy

subjects of sermons at least four times a year [1]. Another Injunction requires the clergy to report to the King, the Council, or the Justice of the Peace next adjoining any "fautor of the Bishop of Rome's pretended power" [13]. These two Injunctions are borrowed verbatim from those of 1536 and 1538, but with this important alteration in the first, that the words put in inverted commas above are substituted for "and jurisdiction within the same as of the supreme head of the Church of England." CHAP II A.D. 1547

2. SUPERSTITIOUS PRACTICES.—Five of the Injunctions relate to these, chiefly in connection with shrines and venerated images. Those images to which pilgrimages have been made, or before which lights have been burned and offerings made, are to be taken down and destroyed by the authority of the clergy, "and none other private persons," and the parishioners are to be warned by the clergy against such practices [2, 3, 4]. Shrines, sculptures, paintings on walls and in windows, "and all other monuments of feigned miracles, pilgrimages, idolatry, and superstition" are also to be destroyed, if in churches by the clergy, if in private houses by the owners [29]. Ceremonies are not to be superstitiously abused by any one, "as in casting holy water upon his bed, upon images, and other dead things, or bearing about him holy bread or St. John's Gospel, or making crosses of wood upon Palm Sunday in time of reading the Passion, or keeping of private holy-days, as bakers, brewers, smiths, shoemakers, and such others do, or ringing of holy bells, or blessing with the holy candle to the intent thereby to be discharged of the burden of sin or to drive away devils, or in putting trust and confidence of health and salvation in the same ceremonies, when

Images and shrines to be taken down

Superstitious ceremonies abolished

CHAP II A.D. 1547

they be only ordained, instituted, and made to put us in remembrance of the benefits which we have received by Christ. And if he use them for any other purpose, he grievously offendeth God" [28].

Lights before images abolished

3. MATTERS CONNECTED WITH DIVINE SERVICE AND CHURCHES.—Instead of having many lights burning before images and pictures in the churches, the clergy are to have "only two lights upon the high altar before the Sacrament;" which, for the signification that Christ is the very true Light of the world, they shall suffer to remain still[5] [4]. The Bible of the largest volume in English, and the Paraphrase of Erasmus upon the Gospels, are to be set up in some convenient place in every church, so that the parishioners may resort thither and read them. "And they shall discourage no man (authorized and licensed thereto) from the reading any part of the Bible, either in Latin or in English." This Injunction is one of those issued in 1536, but, strange to say, the words in the parenthesis were added in 1547, this addition being the only change made [8]. No person shall alter "the order and manner of any fasting-day that is commanded, or of Common Prayer or Divine Service otherwise than is specified in these Injunctions, until such time as the same shall be otherwise ordered and transposed by the King's authority" [20]. The Epistle and Gospel at High Mass shall be read in English by him that saith or singeth the same; and on every Sunday and Holy-day a chapter of the New Testament shall be read at Matins, after the Latin Lessons, and a chapter of the Old Testament at Evensong, after the Magnificat. Three of the Latin Lessons are also to be left out, with their responds, when

The Bible and Erasmus' paraphrase to be set up in churches

[5] See page 82.

the number is nine, and at Evensong the responds and memories shall be left off, so as to make room for the English Lesson. This custom dated from 1542, or perhaps from 1536, as has been shown before[6] [22]. CHAP II A.D. 1547

The English Litany is no longer to be said in procession, but by the priests and other of the quire kneeling in the midst of the church, and none are to depart out of the church during the singing of it, or during mass, or sermon, or the reading of Scripture, without a just and urgent cause [24]. A pulpit is to be set up by the churchwardens, at the charge of the parishioners, in every church for the preaching of God's Word [29]. Priests are not to go to women lying in childbed, except in time of dangerous sickness, nor to fetch any corpse from the house, the proper services being to be said in church only, and the clergy left free for their duties there [31]. One of the homilies shall be read in every parish church on every Sunday [33]; and when any homily is read, the Prime and lesser Hours are to be omitted [37]. The form of Bidding Prayers, set forth in the reign of Henry VIII., is also appended to the last Injunction, with such alterations in respect to the royal family as had become necessary. The vernacular to be used in parts of Divine Service. Homilies to be read.

4. The Duties and Discipline of the Clergy are made the subject of thirteen Injunctions, nine of which come from those of Henry VIII. The clergy with cure of souls are to provide that the Sacraments—the earlier Injunction added, "and Sacramentals"—shall be duly and reverently ministered in their parishes; and if they are licensed for non-residence, "they shall leave their cure not to a rude and unlearned person, but to an honest, well-learned, and expert curate" [7]. They shall not, "for any other cause than for their Curates.

[6] See vol. i. p. 496.

CHAP II A.D. 1547

honest necessity, haunt or resort to any taverns or alehouses," nor spend their time idly after dinner or supper "at dice, cards, or tables, playing, or any other unlawful game," but read somewhat of Holy Scripture, or occupy themselves with some other honest exercise [9]. When they hear confessions every Lent they shall examine those who come to them whether they can recite the Creed, the Lord's Prayer, and the Ten Commandments in English, and enjoin those who do not know them to learn them "before they should receive the Blessed Sacrament of the Altar" [10.] They are not to admit any man to preach within their cures except those who are licensed by proper authority [11]. They are to recant their errors openly if they have hitherto declared "anything to the extolling or setting forth of pilgrimages, relics, or images, or lighting of candles, kissing, kneeling, decking of the same images, or any such superstition" [12]. They are to "learn and have always in a readiness such comfortable places and sentences of Scripture" as may counteract the despair of God's mercy with which persons in peril of death are often afflicted by the craft and subtilty of the devil [23]. Proper registers are to be provided, and weddings, christenings, and burials are to be registered: this Injunction being, like many others, identical with one issued ten years before [14]. Those non-resident clergy whose clerical incomes amount to forty pounds a year are to give away a fortieth part thereof to the poor, in the presence of the churchwardens, or some other honest men of the parish [15]. All clergy who have incomes of one hundred pounds or more shall give a competent exhibition to some poor scholar at Oxford or Cambridge for every hundred pounds [16] And all impropriators, as well

Confessions in Lent

Parish registers to be provided

laity as clergy, shall expend yearly the fifth part of their benefices on the chancels and mansions of those benefices, until they are put in proper repair [17]. Deans, archdeacons, masters of collegiate churches and of hospitals, are required to preach at least twice every year [27]. Chantry priests are to employ themselves in teaching youth to read and write, in bringing them up in good manners and other virtuous exercises [36]. All clergy under the degree of Bachelor of Divinity are to have the New Testament, both in Latin and English, with the Paraphrase of Erasmus, and are diligently to study the same, conferring the one with the other. And the bishops and other ordinaries, by themselves or their officers, in their synods and visitations, shall examine the said ecclesiastical persons how they have profited in the study of Holy Scripture [21]. Those who "buy any benefices, or come to them by fraud or deceit, shall be deprived of such benefices, and be made unable at any time after to receive any other spiritual promotion"[7] [32]. Once every quarter these Injunctions are to be read aloud by the clergy, in the presence of their parishioners [18].

Dignitaries and chantry priests

Clergy to be examined at visitations

5. The Duties and Discipline of the Laity were the subject of nine Injunctions. The laity are to learn by heart the Creed, the Lord's Prayer, and the Ten Commandments, which they are also to teach to their children and servants [5], and they are not to receive the Blessed Sacrament of the Altar until they have learned them [10]. They are "to bestow their children and servants, even from their childhood, either to learning or to some honest exercise, occupation, or husbandry;" and to take care they do not grow up in

The Laity to learn creed, &c.

[7] This Injunction and the corresponding one respecting patrons are still in force in the Fortieth Canon of the Church of England.

CHAP. II
A.D. 1547

idleness, which might drive them "to fall to begging, stealing, or some other unthriftiness" [6]. They are not to wrong the clergy by neglecting to pay their tithes [19], nor are they to "contemn and abuse priests and ministers of the Church, because some of them (having small learning) have of long time favoured fancies rather than God's truth," but are to "use them charitably and reverently for their office and administration sake" [34]. Lay patrons are to be deprived of their patronage for one turn if they sell their benefices, or by any colour do bestow them for their own gain and profit, the patronage for that turn being vested in the Crown [32]. The laity are to keep the holy-days "in hearing the Word of God read and taught, in private and public prayers, in acknowledging their offences to God, and amendment of the same, in reconciling themselves charitably to their neighbours, where displeasure hath been, in oftentimes receiving the Communion of the very Body and Blood of Christ, in visiting of the poor and sick, in using all soberness and godly conversation." But in time of harvest they may with safe and quiet consciences "labour upon the holy and festival days, and save that thing which God hath sent" [25]. None are to be admitted to receive the most blessed Communion of the Body and Blood of our Saviour Christ who have maliciously and openly contended with their neighbour, unless they are first reconciled to him [26]. All are to put "their oblation and alms for their poor neighbours" into the alms chest provided for the purpose "near unto the high altar;" and when men make their wills they are "to confer and give as they may well spare to the said chest," instead of leaving their money for superstitious purposes. "The money which riseth of fraternities,

Benefices not to be sold

Holy-days to be kept

Alms to be given to the poor

guilds, and other stocks of the church," together with "the rents and lands, the profit of cattle, and money given or bequeathed to the finding of torches, lights, tapers, and lamps," is also to be converted to the use of the poor, unless otherwise appointed by the Crown; but if the parish is very poor, some of it may be used in the repair of the church [30]. All those lay persons who do not understand the Latin of the services are to use the English Primer of Henry VIII.; and none other shall be used by them. Those who read Latin shall also use the Latin Primer set forth in the same reign. Graces at dinner and supper shall always be said in English. No other grammar shall be taught in any school but that which was set forth in the reign of Henry VIII., and only his English Primer shall be used for the teaching of youth [35].

CHAP II
A.D. 1547

One primer only to be used,

and only one Latin grammar

These Injunctions were embodied twelve years afterwards [A.D. 1559] in those which were promulgated by Queen Elizabeth, and many of them were either reproduced in, or made the basis of, the Canons Ecclesiastical of 1604. They are of great historical value in determining what was the course taken by the Crown in ecclesiastical matters at the beginning of the reign of Edward VI.; but it is obvious that as they were only of force in the reign of Queen Elizabeth so far as they were incorporated into her own Injunctions, so they are now only of force so far as they are incorporated into the permanent law of the Church of England.

How far these Injunctions continued in force

§ 4. The Confiscation of Church Property during the Reign of Edward VI.

The expenses of government were so insufficiently provided for by Parliament during this reign, and the

CHAP II A.D. 1547

public property appropriated for their own use by the members of the Privy Council was so large, that recourse was had to the endowments and possessions of the Church as a source of supply. The lands of the monasteries had long been made away with; the lead which had covered the roofs of their buildings, and the bells which had rung in their towers, had long been melted down; the gold and silver vessels which had been used in their services had been sent to the mint; and the jewels which had adorned vessels and books had found their way into and out of the King's treasury; in short, the monasteries had been utterly spoiled of all that could be turned into money. But there still remained the cathedrals and parish churches to despoil, and the ruling powers soon turned their eyes upon these, to see what could be made out of them.

Rapacity of the Privy Council

The Appropriation of Chantry Endowments.

The first attack was shrewdly made on what may be called an outlying portion of the endowments of the Church, the assault on which had been prepared for at the end of the preceding reign. All large churches, especially town churches, gave shelter to a number of altars at which the Holy Eucharist was celebrated on behalf of the departed, or on behalf of guilds and brotherhoods. Sometimes these altars were placed in chapels built around the choir, forming a beautiful chevet or radiating crown, such as still exists at Westminster and Tewkesbury Abbeys, but mostly, as is also the case at these two abbeys, the chapels were built up within the church, between the pillars and along the side walls. If the church was a monastic foundation, these chantry altars were served by some of the clerical monks; but if it was not

What the chantries were

CHAP II
A.D. 1547

monastic, then one or more endowed curates were attached to it for this duty, who were called chantry priests. When there were many of these they lived together in colleges, one of which still remains at Higham Ferrers, and the chantry priest was often required to act as grammar-school master or to assist the parish priest in his duties. The endowments of chantries ran alongside of those which had been made to monasteries, although not nearly so large, and consisted, to quote the words of the Act for confiscating them, of "manors, mansions, houses, meases, lands, tenements, pastures, woods, waters, rents, reversions, services, possessions, and other hereditaments," of which traces are to be found in the history of almost every parish in the kingdom; and it was these endowments which were now about to be confiscated.

Chantry priests often school-masters

An Act had been passed for this purpose during the last Parliament of Henry VIII., and commissioners were appointed for the purpose of enquiring into and certifying the Crown respecting the tithes and value of the chantry lands and other possessions [37 Hen. VIII. cap. 4], but the King's death prevented this Act from coming into operation. The Privy Council of Edward VI., finding in this Act, however, an easy way of providing the funds necessary for carrying out their liberal plans of self-endowment, determined to disestablish the chantries by another Act [1 Edw. VI. cap. 14] of a sweeping character, in which the former one was recited; and this being introduced into the House of Lords on December 6, 1547, was pressed through with such rapidity that it was read a second and third time on the twelfth and thirteenth of the month, and passed on the fourteenth—Cranmer, Bonner, and other bishops opposing it strongly, but in vain.

Proposed abolition by Henry VIII

New Act hurried through Parliament

CHAP II
A.D. 1547

The ground taken in the preamble of this Act was that the chantries, guilds, brotherhoods, &c. were all foundations of a superstitious character; and those who covet the endowments of a religious system will soon find reasons for picking holes in its principles. No doubt the system of masses for the departed had been greatly abused;[8] but it was maintained by Cranmer that, however much abuse had been associated with these endowments, they were distinctly ecclesiastical funds, and ought not to be diverted from ecclesiastical purposes. The clergy had been greatly impoverished by the alienation of tithes to laymen at the dissolution of the monasteries, and the numbers of the working clergy had also been greatly diminished at the same time, so that very many parishes were now left altogether without pastoral care. It was only right that when the chantries were abolished their endowments should still be used for the maintenance of parochial clergy, and by the use of them the number of those clergy might be sufficently increased. But these arguments were not likely to prevail with the House of Lords,[9] so largely influenced as it was by the Protector and other peers who were members of the Privy Council, nor with the House of Commons, which simply saw in this Act of Disendowment a way of providing for "the King's occasions," without voting

Cranmer wished to retain the endowments for the Church,

but his plans opposed and thwarted

[8] See vol. i. pp. 29-32.

[9] There was also much opposition in the House of Commons, but chiefly on behalf of the trade guilds. In the Privy Council Register, under date of May 6, 1548, there is a long and curious entry showing how the burgesses of Coventry and Lynn had so opposed the bill, on account of the guild lands of those towns being included among those to be confiscated, that there was imminent danger of the bill being lost in the House of Commons. It was determined, therefore, by the Privy Council to save the bill by buying off the opposition. Consequently, the guild lands of the two churches at Coventry were granted "to them of the city" for ever, and the same with those of Lynn.

CHAP II
A.D. 1547

any supplies by means of taxation.[1] The Act was therefore passed, the Commissioners were appointed, and very shortly all the endowments were placed at the disposal of the Crown.

In the preamble to this Act it was pretended that the funds of the chantries were eventually to be applied "to good and godly uses," but that this could not conveniently be done at present. In fact, the convenient time never did come, and, with some small exception, the endowments of the chantries were dispersed and wasted, as those of the monasteries had been, and as all such confiscated endowments ever will be.

Dishonest pretence of the Act

"And further considering and understanding," the Act says, "that the alteration, change, and amendment of the same, and converting to good and godly uses, as in erecting grammar schools to the education of youth in virtue and godliness, the further augmenting of the universities, and better provision for the poor and needy, cannot in this present Parliament be provided and conveniently done, nor cannot nor ought to any other manner person be committed than to the King's Highness, whose Majesty, with and by the advice of his Highness' most prudent Council, can and will most wisely and beneficially, both for the honour of God and the weal of this his Majesty's realm, order, alter, convert, and dispose the same. . . ."

The number of grammar-schools which were founded by Edward VI. was, however, very small in proportion

[1] "The Protector and Council were now" [A.D. 1548] "in much trouble. The war with Scotland was like to grow chargeable, since they saw it was supported from France. There was a rebellion also broke out in Ireland, and the King was much indebted; nor could they expect any subsidies from the Parliament, in which it had been said that they gave the chantry lands, that they might be delivered from all subsidies. Therefore, the Parliament was prorogued till winter. Upon this the whole Council did, on the seventeenth of April, unanimously resolve that it was necessary to sell five thousand pounds a year of chantry lands, for raising such a sum as the King's occasions required." [Burnet's *Ref.*, ii. 137, Pocock's Ed.]

CHAP II A.D. 1547

to the enormous capital value of the lands and other property thus placed in his hands. Strype gives a list of eighteen, of which the most important are Shrewsbury School, endowed with a small quantity of tithes from three parishes and the Abbey of Haughmond, and Birmingham School, endowed with a "barn and four messuages lying in Dalend," to the value of £21 a year.[2] But so many of the chantry endowments were associated with educational endowments, that it may be doubted whether the new schools more than compensated for those which were destroyed. Fuller expresses an opinion very much to this effect in the following passage of his Church History. A certain Thomasin Bonaventure, who had been "a keeper of sheep" in Cornwall, "came at last to be the wife of Sir John Percival, Lord Mayor of London. In her widowhood she laid out her estate, which was very great, in charitable uses, and, among the rest, founded a chantry and a free school at St. Mary Week in Cornwall (the place of her nativity), with fair lodgings for the schoolmasters, scholars, and officers, and twenty pounds a year (beside their salaries) to support incident charges. And here the best gentlemen's sons in Devon and Cornwall were virtuously trained up under one Cholwell, a religious teacher, until the said school was suppressed in the reign of Edward VI. only for a smack of Popery, the chantry being annexed thereto; and I suspect the like happened in other places.[3]

Chantry endowments often school endowments

Schools ruined by confiscation of chantries

What was the number of chantries, and what their value, cannot be ascertained. In St. Paul's Cathedral there were forty-seven, with average endowments of

[2] Strype's *Eccl. Mem.*, II. ii. 278, 503, ed. 1822.

[3] Fuller's *Church Hist.*, ii. 272, ed. 1837.

CHAP II
A.D. 1547

£25 a year, and with a vast quantity of gold and silver altar plate and vestments.[4] The modern value of the forty-seven stipends would probably be about £12,000 a year, and the value of the "ornaments" would certainly amount to several thousand pounds. In a parish church in Gloucestershire, to take the other extreme of the scale, there were four chantries, the annual value of three of which was £20 13s. 2d., a portion of which was given to the poor. In 1546 the Commissioners valued the ornaments of two of these chantries at £3 16s. 8d., in 1548 at £1, and at the latter date the "plate and jewels" of these two alone weighed forty ounces, and was valued at £8 18s. 2d. If the spoil obtained from the chantries of an inconsiderable parish church was of so much value, it may be concluded that what was obtained from the whole body of cathedrals, collegiate churches, and parish churches throughout England and Wales would amount to a sum which, in modern money, would have to be reckoned by millions. The way in which a great part of that spoil was dealt with may be described in the words of Fuller :—

Value of chantries very great

"How much the yearly revenue of all these chantries, free chapels, and colleges amounted to, God knows, for the King knew as little as some in our age. Indeed, some of his officers did, but would not know,—as wilfully concealing their knowledge herein. Yea, some of these chantries may be said in a double sense to be suppressed, as not only put down, but also concealed, never coming into the exchequer,

[4] On Oct. 17, 1547, there was an Order of Council to make inquiry as to the sale of Church goods [Wilkins' *Concil.*, iv. 17]; on Feb. 15, 1548, a similar Order to the Commissioners appointed to take inventories of all vestments, ornaments, plate, and other Church goods [Wharton's *Collectan.*, i. 74]; and among the State Papers for January 1548 there is a letter from John Bird, Bishop of Chester, giving an account of the sale of Church ornaments, plate, jewels, bells, &c. within his diocese. [Edw. VI., State Papers, Dom., p. 6.]

CHAP II A.D. 1547

being silently pocketed by private (but potent) persons. True it is, the courtiers were more rapacious to catch and voracious to swallow these chantries than abbey lands. For, at the first, many were scrupulous in mind or modest in manners, doubting the acceptance of abbey land, though offered unto them, till profit and custom, two very able confessors, had by degrees satisfied their consciences, and absolved them from any fault therein. Now, all scruples removed, chantry land went down without any regret. Yea, such who mannerly expected till the King carved for them out of abbey lands, scrambled for themselves out of chantry revenues, as knowing this was the last dish of the last course, and after chantries, as after cheese, nothing to be expected. As for those who fairly purchased them of the King, they had such good bargains therein, that thereby all enriched, and some ennobled, both themselves and posterity." [5]

Chantries the last dish of the land hungerers

But although the chantry lands were "the last dish of the course," as far as grants of land were concerned, there was another very profitable dish which was yet to be served up at the hungry Tudor table, in the shape of plate and vestments.

The Spoliation of Churches.

There is a memorandum of Sir Robert Cecil, who was now Clerk of the Council, which throws some instructive light upon the proceedings of that body in its financial operations upon Church property. Among other arrangements which were in progress are these: "*Item*, to move the King's contestation for the sale of certain Tenths and other Quillets, being no man's. . . . *Item*, to make some bargains about buying up lead at reasonable prices.[6] *Item*, to continue the

More pickings to be found yet

[5] Fuller's *Ch. Hist.*, ii. 275, ed. 1837.

[6] "Such was their thirst after lead," says Sir John Harington, "(I would they had drunk it scalding), that they took the dead bodies of bishops out of their leaden coffins, and cast abroad the

Commission for the further sale of the chantrys. *Item*, to proceed for the collection of the church plate to the King's use."[7] CHAP II A.D. 1550

The work of spoliation began again, therefore, and constant entries are found on the subject in the Privy Council Register. On January 16, 1550, there is an order "to the Dean and Chapter of Canterbury to deliver the silver table that stood upon their high altar, by indenture containing the weight of the same, to Sir Antony Archer;" and this was followed by another on January 29th, "to deliver up all the plate and the jewels that were left in the possession of the Dean and Chapter by the late King." Sometimes the custodians of these church goods tried to save them, and on August 11, 1550, the Privy Council received "intelligence from Sir R. Bowes and Sir T. Hilton, that there was a great quantity of treasure conveyed into the Dean of Durham's chamber;"[8] and notwithstanding the care enjoined upon "the Commissioners for the church plate . . . . to be more diligent about their charge, and to send their certificates with speed," and to be sure to "remove all superfluities," the Council heard that much had been concealed, and issued a new and more stringent order not long before the King died, the Dean and Canons of Chester being even sent to the Fleet on February 14, 1553, for "disorderly doings" of this kind.

Cathedral altar plate at Canterbury,

Durham, Chester, and elsewhere

Meanwhile, the spoliation went on with ruthless vigour. On August 22, 1550, an order was sent to

carcases, scarce throughly putrified." [Harington's *Brief View*, p. 110.] He is speaking of Wells Cathedral. He adds that a ship went down in the Bristol Channel with brass statues on board, and that the London alderman to whom they had been sold began thenceforth to decay.

[7] Haynes' State Papers, 127.

[8] There is reason to think that this "treasure" never fell into the hands of the Crown, but is still concealed in some part of the Cathedral.

CHAP II A.D. 1551

the Lord Treasurer "to weigh and cause to be molten down into wedges all such crosses, images, and church or chapel plate of gold as remain in the Tower, to be further employed as shall be thought good." On March 3, 1551, is the entry, "This day it was decreed that forasmuch as the King's Majesty had need presently of a mass of money, therefore commissions should be addressed into all shires of England to take into the King's hands such church plate as remaineth to be employed unto his Highness' use." To sum up all, without giving any more of the great body of evidence which exists on the subject, the Privy Council, and those who were emboldened by their acts to enrich themselves without any regard to the needs of the Government, left little standing beyond the fabrics of the churches. They tore off the lead from the roofs, and wrenched out the brasses from the floors. The books they despoiled of their costly covers, and then sold them for waste paper. The gold and silver plate they melted down with copper and lead, to make a coinage so shamefully debased as was never known before or since in England. The vestments of altars and priests they turned into table-covers, carpets, and hangings, when not very costly; and when worth more money than usual, they sold them to foreigners, not caring who used them for "superstitious" purposes, but caring to make the best "bargains" they could of their spoil.[9] Even the very surplices and altar linen

Church plate used instead of taxation

Church vestments sold to foreigners

[9] In Ford's *Handbook of Spain* he refers to an altar-frontal of St. Paul's Cathedral which is still in use at Valencia, and a cope from the same church which is preserved at Zaragoza: "Inquire also particularly in the *Sacristia* to see the *Terno* and complete set of three *frontales*, or coverings for the altar, which were purchased in London by two Valencian merchants, named Andrea and Pedro de Medina, at the sale by Henry VIII. of the Romish decorations of St. Paul's. They are embroidered in gold and silver, are

would fetch something, and that too was seized by their covetous hands.[1] No thanks to these pseudo-reformers that the churches of England were not left utterly bare and naked; but there is a Providence that rules over all, and that Providence happily preserved to them some survivals at least of her ancient dignity, beauty, and grandeur, when the death of Edward VI. brought the spoliation to an end.

CHAP II

A.D. 1551

§ 5. Illustrations of Privy Council Government

It may interest the reader to conclude this chapter with a few illustrations of the manner in which the Privy Council exercised its authority in the reign of Edward VI.

First, may be given a letter sent by the Council to Holgate, Archbishop of York, as showing how its arbitrary jurisdiction was extended far and wide over individual persons.

Wide range of its inquisitions

"After right hearty commendations to your good Lordship, being desirous for certain purposes to speak with Wm. Craforth, a priest, we have thought good to require

about 12 feet long by 4, and represent subjects from the life of the Saviour. In one—Christ in Limbo—are introduced turrets, evidently taken from those of the Tower of London. They are placed on the high altar from Saturday to Wednesday in the Holy-Week. Visit next the *Sacristia*, and observe the plateresque door. Here are some fine Ternos—one a *Pontifical*, cost 14,000 dollars; also a *delante de cena Capa*, embroidered with Adam and Eve, which was bought at our Reformation from the old Cathedral of St. Paul's, London." [Ford's *Handbook of Spain*, i. 440, ii. 959.]

[1] The Duke of Northumberland wrote to the "two principal Secretaries of State: . . . I have also been oftentimes moved by sundry honest men to be a suitor to the King's Majesty, that it might please his Highness to give the linen that appertained to the churches in London, as surplices and altar cloths, unto the help of the poor, but other matters have always put it out of my mind; praying you to be means to cause it to be moved to His Majesty.

"From Chelsey, the 23d of November 1552." [Haynes' State Papers, p. 136.]

CHAP II A.D. 1547-50

you on the King's Highness' behalf to make enquiry for him and address him unto us with surety; whereof we pray you not to fail, for his Majesty's affairs and the matter touching him doth so specially require. Thus fare your good Lordship right heartily well. From London, y^e 26 of May, 1547.

"Y^r assured friends,

"E. SOMERSET, T. CANTUARIEN., &c. &c.

"*Postscript.*—We require you to devise first to get the priest into your hands, and thereupon, and not before, prohibit the reading in churches of the book called Exornatorium Curatorum, and likewise to call in all the said books in places where the same be within your rule."[2]

Secondly, an extract from the Privy Council Register will illustrate the manner in which subjects of private interest were solemnly dealt with and decided, as if they had been matters of State and of the highest importance. This is a Minute of Council which occupies more than a folio page, and is dated October 18, 1550. The Dowager Duchess of Somerset being dead, the Duke had written to the Council, asking their opinion about the "wearing of doole," and other similar observances of respect for departed friends, he being very anxious to follow and apply himself to the King's "most godly proceedings." The Council actually debated the subject, and eventually "weighed

Privy Council decision against black clothes for mourning

[2] Bodl. Lib., Tanner MS., xc. 150. In the same library [Rawl. 276] is to be found a copy of the book referred to in the above letter, the "Exornatorium Curatorum," a small quarto volume of thirty-two pages, printed in 1519. It consists of two parts: [1.] A short exposition of the Creed, the Commandments, the vii. works of mercy, vii. deadly sins, vii. principal virtues, and vii. sacraments. This occupies eighteen pages. The exposition of the seven deadly sins is a preparation for daily and weekly self-examination, for special confession at any time, and for yearly confession. [2.] An instruction how to prepare one's self or one's friend for death. A very clear and beautiful treatise, occupying about ten pages. The last page is the only one which contains anything like Romanism, except one explanation of "ghostly father," which is, "The Pope, thy bishop, thy curate." But at the last is a direction always to trust in our Lord's Passion, and to invoke the Blessed Virgin Mary and the Saints.

CHAP II
A.D. 1550-51

with themselves that the wearing of doole, and such outward demonstrations of mourning, not only did not any ways profit the dead, but rather (used as they be) served to induce the living to have a diffidence of the better life. Yea, and divers other ways did move, cause, and scruple of coldness of faith unto the weak." Besides, "black cloth and other instruments of those funeral pomps" were very expensive, especially as the time of mourning is growing much shorter than formerly. Moreover, the late King often dispensed with it in those about him, "and plucked off the black apparell from such mourners' backs," for private men should not bring their private sorrows into the royal presence. So they dispense with the Duke for mourning, either for himself or any of his family; as also for the other funeral pomps which were not to edifying. And to be entered in the Council book as a precedent.

as a snare to weak brethren, and expensive

Thirdly, some few instances out of many may be given of the arbitrary severity with which the Privy Council punished persons for comparatively slight offences. On January 26, 1550-1, Upchard of Bocking and many others were ordered to be sent to the Marshalsea for holding a conventicle in his house at Christmas. Also orders were sent into Essex and Kent to apprehend others "that are accounted chief of that practice." A number of them were brought up on February 3d who had "refused the Communion for ij. years on superstitious grounds," some of whom were sent to prison, and others liberated on recognizances of £40 each, about £500 of modern money. On January 28, 1551-2, letters are sent to the Mayor of Northampton, ordering him to put Francis Morgan in the pillory, and cut off both his ears, for singing a certain song of his own making. On March 27, 1552, Henry

Religious intolerance of Privy Council

CHAP II A.D.

Brabon is ordered to be set in the pillory, and otherwise further punished, for saying "poor child" of the King. On April 5, 1552, Clerk, sometime servant and secretary to the Duke of Norfolk, is ordered to be sent to the Tower for lewd prophecies respecting the King and noblemen, and for necromancy. On November 16, 1552, the Lieutenant of the Tower is ordered to examine Holland, putting him to the torment in Little-ease. On January 7, 1552-3, Wilson and Warren are ordered "to be put to the tortures." On January 30, 1552-3, Allen Hudson is ordered to be pilloried, and have his ears cut off, and then to be set at liberty, "with a good lesson to beware of the like hereafter," for speaking slanderous words against the Duke of Northumberland. On May 5, 1553, a man and woman are sent to the Compter, because they had spread false reports of the King's death, and they are to have their ears nailed to the pillory, "&c." On May 27, 1553, John Sanders' ears are ordered to be cut off in the pillory for slanders against his Majesty.

Privy Council imprisons, tortures, and cuts off ears,

The government of the country by means of the Privy Council was indeed during this reign most dangerous to the liberty of the subject and to the principles of the Constitution. Its duties and jurisdiction were in no way defined by law, its acts were under no control, and the result was that an irresponsible oligarchy usurped the power of the Crown, and often that of Parliament also. With a combination of legislative and executive functions from which there was no appeal, it became, so long as a majority of its members could agree, a terrible engine of tyrannical government, both in Church and State: an engine for whose operations nothing was too great, nothing too small, and whose crushing power was irresistible.

when in supreme power

CHAPTER III

THE REFORMATION OF THE CHURCH RESUMED BY THE CLERGY

[A.D. 1547—1553]

CHAP III
A.D. 1547

THE work of reformation which the Convocation of the clergy had so effectively commenced, with the concurrence of the Crown, during the reign of Henry VIII., was summarily stopped by him in the year 1544; when, having previously contrived to shelve their attempts to provide a trustworthy "Authorized version" of the Bible,[1] he also compelled them to put an end to their labours in revising the Service Books.[2] For the rest of his reign Convocation was practically silenced, the King setting an example to later rulers in that trick of state-craft which consists in stopping the mouths of the clergy so soon as their zeal becomes inconvenient or distasteful.

Clerical zeal long suppressed under Henry VIII.,

When, however, there seemed a prospect of greater freedom to act on the accession of Edward VI., an attempt was made by Convocation to take up the thread of its work exactly where it had been dropped three years before. Parliament meeting nine months after the King's accession, on November 9, 1547, Convocation met on the following day, and after two

but recovers power under Edward VI.

[1] Vol. i. p. 520.

[2] Vol. i. p. 499.

CHAP III

A.D. 1547

formal sessions, on the day of meeting and on the 18th, the two Houses met for business on November 22d. By this time it was known that the Act of the Six Articles was about to be repealed, and that ecclesiastical reforms could thus be discussed without danger;[3] and the clergy of the Lower House had therefore no hesitation in sending up a petition to the Archbishop in the following terms, requesting that the work of the Reformation might be resumed:—[4]

Petition for continued reformation in Church

"First, that ecclesiastical laws may be made and established in this realm by thirty-two persons, or so many as shall please the King's Majesty to name or appoint, according to the effect of a late Statute made in the thirty-fifth year of the most noble King, and of the most famous memory, King Henry VIII.; so that all judges ecclesiastical, proceeding after those laws, may be without danger or peril.

"Also, that according to the ancient custom of this realm, and the tenor of the King's writs for the summoning of the Parliament, which be now, and ever have been, directed to the bishops of every diocese, the clergy of the Lower House of Convocation may be adjoined and associated with the Lower House of Parliament; or else that all such statutes and ordinances as shall be made concerning all matters of religion and causes ecclesiastical may not pass without the sight and assent of the said clergy.

"Also, that whereas by the commandment of King Henry

[3] When the archbishop in the Convocation had made a speech to the clergy, "exhorting them to give themselves to the study of the Scriptures, and to consider what things in the Church needed reformation, that so the Church might be discharged of all Popish trash not yet thrown out, some told him that as long as the Six Articles remained it was not safe for them to deliver their opinions. This he reported to the Council, upon which they ordered this Act of Repeal." [Strype's Cranmer, ii. 40, ed. 1848.] The Act of Six Articles was repealed by 1 Edw. VI. cap. 12.

[4] The Acts of Convocation of this period have been lost, but the words of the petition are given from a MS. in Archbishop Cranmer's handwriting, and they are confirmed by a short Latin entry in his Register. [Wilkins' *Concil.*, iv. 15; Stillingfleet's *Irenicon*, p. 387; Cardwell's *Synodalia*, ii. 420.]

VIII., certain prelates and other learned men were appointed to alter the Service in the Church, and to devise other convenient and uniform order therein; who, according to the same appointment, did make certain books, as they be informed: their request is, that the said books may be seen and perused by them, for a better expedition of Divine Service, to be set forth accordingly. CHAP III A.D. 1547

"Also that men being called to spiritual promotions or benefices may have some allowance for their necessary living and other charges, to be sustained and borne concerning the said benefices in the first year, wherein they pay the first fruits."[5]

This petition was immediately acted upon, and the first steps taken towards the completion of the work which had been begun several years before.

§ 1. The Developement of the English Prayer Book

The reformation of the Anglican Rite was a subject which began to occupy the attention of ecclesiastical statesmen very soon after the cessation of civil war, the rise of commerce, and the intellectual developement stimulated by the printing press, had opened out to the nation an epoch of transition. The devotional system of the Church of England had, in mediæval times, become like an old early English abbey overloaded with crocketted pinnacles, flying buttresses, and extravagant ornaments; and men who entered into the spirit of the transition age craved after a

Overgrowth of mediæval forms and ceremonies

[5] Cardwell's *Synodalia*, ii. 420. The "first fruits" were the whole of the first year's income of a benefice, which was taken by the Crown. They are still paid, but as they are computed by the value of the benefice in Henry VIII.'s time, and as the benefices have risen in value, they are not generally more than about six or eight per cent. on the present value.

CHAP III

A.D. 1547

system in which these novelties should either be abolished or be made less conspicuous, and in which the true fabric should be restored to its proper pre-eminence. The first movement in this direction took place under Archbishop Warham, and during the ministry of Cardinal Wolsey, when, in the year 1516, the Breviary of the old Sarum use underwent a considerable castigation. The gradual introduction of the vernacular by means of English Primers, English Psalters, the English Litany, and tables by which the Gospels and Epistles could be found in English Bibles or New Testaments, all tended in the same direction; and in 1542 Henry VIII. sent a message to Convocation to the effect that all the Service Books used "in the Church of England should be newly examined, corrected, reformed, ... and that the service should be made out of the Scripture and other authentic doctors," a message which led to the construction of the Book of Common Prayer.[6]

Introduction of vernacular services

The devotional customs of the country, moreover, underwent a silent but momentous change during the latter years of Henry VIII.'s reign. The full beauty and grandeur of Divine Service under the mediæval system could only be developed by means of a large staff of clergy and assistants, much money, and a great array of ritual accessories. While the monasteries existed, this grand system was carried out in many hundred great monastic churches in town and country. When the monasteries were dissolved, Divine Service altogether ceased in ninety out of every hundred of these great churches, and the remaining ten were left, like St. Alban's, Tewkesbury, and Tynemouth, without any provision whatever for Divine Service, except

Changes through dissolution of monasteries

[6] See vol. i. ch. ix.

such as the people of the places in which they were situated chose to subscribe for. The twenty-six cathedrals which existed in the latter part of Henry's reign still retained some of the ancient grandeur which had belonged to them, but thirteen of them had been monastic churches, and when these were turned into "New Foundations," with "Secular" canons in the place of monks, they were razeed to the smallest possible dimensions as to numbers and endowments. It must also be added that in some cathedrals one great source of that wealth which had ministered to the mediæval grandeur of Divine Service was entirely cut off when such shrines as those of St. Thomas of Canterbury, St. Edward the Confessor at Westminster, and St. Cuthbert at Durham, were destroyed. Thus Oxford, which had possessed large churches belonging to Oseney Abbey, St. Frideswide's, Rewley Abbey, the Dominicans, the Franciscans, and the Bernardines, was left with St. Frideswide's alone, and that not the largest of the six. Bristol, where St. Austin's Canons, the Austin Friars, the Carmelites, the Benedictines, the Dominicans, and the Franciscans each had a foundation, was in a similar manner reduced from seven large churches to two, that of St. Mary Redcliffe and that of the Austin Canons, which is the present cathedral. Towns in which the services of the Church had been performed with much grandeur by six large staffs of monastic clergy and their assistants, must have had those services presented before them in a very much more meagre aspect when only one small staff of impoverished canons and choir assistants performed them.

Diminution in endowments of churches

Destruction of many great churches

But much as this vast change in the external aspect of the Church must have affected the minds of the

CHAP III

A.D. 1547

people, especially of the rising generation, who were only children when its glories were eclipsed, there were other circumstances which had unsettled the old system of Divine Service. For the changes which had been enforced by authority, chiefly the use of the Litany, Gospels, Epistles, and Lessons in English, were generally known to be only an instalment of a vernacular service, which was felt by the bishops and clergy generally to be an inevitable necessity for the times.[7] Yet this service in the vulgar tongue was held back for several years; and, inevitable as it was felt to be, no one knew whether it would exactly represent the Latin Service then in use, or whether it would be one of a much altered character. Thus it happened that the hold of the ancient Service Books was being weakened by the general acknowledgement of the fact that they were more or less obsolete, while no authorized substitute was provided in their place.

Uncertainty of transition period

Hence it was that, at the opening of Edward VI.'s reign, if not before, many novelties were introduced into the services of the Church by those younger clergy who had known little of the old English system of devotion, and had received strong impressions from the new fashions of Germany and

The older system not known to young clergy

[7] Archbishop Cranmer wrote to Queen Mary, in September 1555: "When a good number of the best learned men reputed in this realm, some favouring the old, some the new learning, ... were gathered together at Windsor for the reformation of the service of the Church, it was agreed by both, without controversy (not one saying contrary), that the service of the Church ought to be in the mother tongue." [Jenkyns' *Rem. Cranmer*, i. 375.]

Bishop Ridley also wrote to his chaplain: "When I was in office, all that were esteemed learned in God's Word agreed this to be a truth in God's Word written, that the common prayer of the Church should be had in the common tongue. You know I have conferred with many, and I ensure you I never found man (so far as I do remember), neither old nor new, gospeller nor papist, of what judgment soever he was, in this thing to be of a contrary opinion." [Ridley's Works, 340.]

Switzerland.[8] In the grave words of an Act of Parliament— CHAP III A.D. 1547

"Where of long time there hath been had in this realm of England and in Wales divers forms of common prayer, commonly called the Service of the Church—that is to say, the use of Sarum, of York, of Bangor, and of Lincoln; and besides the same, now of late much more diverse and sundry forms and fashions[9] have been used in the cathedral and parish churches of England and Wales, as well concerning the Mattens or Morning Prayer and the Evensong, as also concerning the Holy Communion, commonly called the Mass; and as the doers and executors of the said rites and ceremonies in other form than of late years they have been used were pleased therewith, so other, not using the same rites and ceremonies, were thereby greatly offended." [2 and 3 Edw. VI. ch. 1.]

Great diversities of devotional forms arising

[8] In 1543 the Privy Council had complained to the King that the foreigners whom Cranmer kept at Lambeth Palace were spreading opinions which caused dissension in the Church.

[9] Three printed relics of these diverse and sundry forms and fashions are known. The first is in the Bodleian Library, and is entitled "The Order Bok of Matrimony," imprinted at London by Anthony Scoloker, dwelling in the Savoy Rentes. *Cum Privilegio*, &c. Imprinted at London. It appears to have been intended for use as a supplement to the ordinary Latin Marriage Service, and was printed in 1547-8. The second is a little volume, with the following title-page:—

[] A Newe boke conteyninge
□ o □ an exhortaciō to the sycke,
[] the sycke man's prayer, a prayer with thankes at the purificatiō of womē, a consolatiō at buriall.
Coloss. 3. Whatsoever ye, &c.

MDXLVIII
Imprynted at Ippeswiche by me, John Oswen.
Cum privilegio ad imprimendum solum.

This volume was until 1855 in the possession of the late Mr. Fitch, postmaster at Ipswich; but his admirable collection of books has since been dispersed, and it has been lost sight of. The third is in the British Museum Library [c. 25, b], and bears this title: "The Psalter or Book of the Psalms, whereunto is added the Litany and certain other devout Prayers, set forth with the King's most gracious license. Anno Domini 1548. *Mensis Julii.* Imprinted at London by me, Roger Car, for Anthony Smith, dwelling in Paul's Churchyard."

Strype says that Compline was said in English in the Royal Chapel in 1547, but gives no authority or reference. [Strype's *Eccl. Mem.*, II. i.]

CHAP III

A.D. 1547

Causes of cautious action

It must have appeared very evident to the leading men of the Church, as they looked around on this confusion, that it would grow worse and worse the longer it was allowed to continue; and as the preparation of an English Prayer Book on the lines of the ancient Latin ones had long ago been undertaken, it must have seemed the most obvious course to resume that undertaking at the point at which it had been laid down, through the change which took place in Henry VIII.'s mind during his later years. Their action was, however, slow and cautious during the early days of Edward VI. On the one hand, there was a strong party represented by Gardiner, which was averse to any new legislation in Church or State while the King was a minor; on the other hand, there were those who felt with Archbishop Cranmer that it was by no means sure that the nation at large would accept any great change. Thus it also happened that, when an official movement was made, it was happily made not in a destructive but a conservative spirit.

Funeral of Henry VIII

No change whatever was adopted in the first two public religious ceremonies of the reign. The funeral of Henry VIII. was performed with all the accustomed pomp, and with the ancient service of the Sarum use, Bishop Gardiner officiating. At the coronation of Edward VI. on Shrove Sunday, February 13, 1547, the young King was directed by the ceremonial, as it stands in the Privy Council Register, to "make a solemn oath upon the Sacrament laid upon the Altar;" to "put on a tabert of tarteron, white, shaped in manner of a dalmatic;" to say at the end of his coronation oath, "So help us God and all-hallows," and then to "be led to the traverse to hear the High Mass," the service being all in Latin.

Coronation of Edward VI

CHAP III A.D. 1547

Again, on Ash Wednesday, three days afterwards, the usual ceremony of the day, the Benediction of the Ashes from which it derives its name was performed in the King's presence, Ridley preaching, and the King having the blessed ashes placed upon his head.[1]

Masses for soul of Henry VIII

So also on February 24th, when the Protector and Archbishop Cranmer were both present, the Privy Council sat at Westminster to receive the opinions of the judges respecting the lawfulness of carrying out the King's Will as to the Masses which the Dean and Canons of St. George's, Windsor, were directed to say for his soul. A long entry in the Privy Council Register recites the opinion of the judges, and gives all their names, and it is decided to carry out this part of the Will to the letter.

Mass for soul of Francis I.

Four months later, on June 20th, a Requiem Mass was celebrated with great pomp in St. Paul's Cathedral for the late King of France, Francis I., who had died on March 31st. Stow records that Archbishop Cranmer was the celebrant, and that he and the eight other bishops assisting him were in the full pontifical attire of the ancient rite, Ridley again preaching the sermon.

Changes cautiously made

This cautious line of conduct was so strictly observed that, during the whole of the first year of Edward VI.'s reign, that is, until March 1548, only three variations from the order of Divine Service, established in the last years of Henry VIII.'s reign, were recognized by authority. These variations may be

[1] The bearing of candles on Candlemas Day, the Benediction of Ashes on Ash Wednesday, and the Benediction of Palms on Palm Sunday were forbidden by "my Lord Protector's grace, with advice of others of the King's Majesty's Council," on January 27, 1548. [Wilkins' *Concil.*, iv. 22.]

LIBRARY

CHAP III A.D. 1547

best seen by placing side by side the respective customs as established in the two reigns :—

1. Altar Lights.

From the 7th of Henry VIII.'s Injunctions of A.D. 1538.

"Ye . . . shall suffer from henceforth no candles, tapers, or images of wax to be set before any images or picture, but only the light that commonly goeth about the cross of the Church by the roodloft, *the lights before the sacrament of the altar*, and the light about the sepulchre, which, for the adorning of the Church and Divine Service, ye shall suffer to remain still."

No lights to be allowed before images

From the 4th of Edward VI.'s Injunctions of A.D. 1547.

"They . . . shall suffer from henceforth no torches nor candles, tapers or images of wax, to be set afore any image or picture, but only *two lights upon the high altar before the sacrament*,[2] which, for the signification that Christ is the very true light of the world, they shall suffer to remain still."

2. The Latin and English Lessons at Mattins and Evensong.

Canon of Canterbury Convocation, Feb. 21, 1543.

"Every Sunday and Holy Day throughout the year, the curate of every parish church, after the Te Deum and Magnificat, shall openly read unto the people one chapter of the New Testament in English, without exposition, and when

Vernacular Lessons ordered

From the 22d of Edward VI.'s Injunctions of A.D. 1547.

"Every Sunday and Holy Day they shall plainly and distinctly read, or cause to be read, one chapter of the New Testament in English, in the said place at Mattins, immediately after the Lessons; and at Evensong, after Mag-

[2] On December 27, 1549, Hooper wrote to Bullinger respecting the clergy in England, "They still retain their vestments and the *candles before the altars*." [*Orig. Lett.*, Park. Soc., i. 72.]

the New Testament is read over, then to begin the Old."

nificat, one chapter of the Old Testament. And to the intent the premises may be more conveniently done, the King's Majesty's pleasure is, that when ix. lessons should be read in the Church, three of them shall be omitted and left out with the responds; and at Evensong time the responds, with all the memories, shall be left off for that purpose." [3]

CHAP III
A.D. 1547

Latin Lessons to be fewer

[3] The 22d Injunction, as above given, was expanded by the visitors in the Diocese of York into five "Injunctions given by the King's Majesty's visitors in his Highness' visitation to Robert Holdgate, Ld. A.B., the Dn., Chapter, and all other the ecclesiastical ministers of and in the Cathedral Church of York, 26 8bris An. 1547."

[1.] "Ye shall at all days and times when nine lessons ought or were accustomed to be sung, sing Mattins only of six Lessons and six Psalms with the song of Te Deum Laudamus or Miserere, as the time requireth, after the six Lessons: and that dayly from the Annunciation of our Lady to the first day of October ye shall begin Mattins at six of the clock in the morning, and residue of the year at seven of the clock.

[2.] "*Item.* Ye shall sing and celebrate in note or song within the said Church but only one Mass, that is to say, High Mass only, and none other, and daily begin the same at nine of the clock before noon.

[3.] "*Item.* Ye shall daily from the said feast of the Annunciation to the said first day of October, sing the Evensong and Complin without any responds: and begin the same at three of the clock in the afternoon. The residue of the year to begin at two of the clock, or half an hour after.

[4.] "*Item.* Ye shall hereafter omit, and not use the singing of any hours, prime, dirige, or commendations; but every man to say the same as him sufficeth or he is disposed.

[5.] "*Item.* Ye shall sing, say, use, or suffer none other Anthems in the Church but these hereafter following, and such as by the King's Majesty and his most Honourable Council hereafter shall be set forth."

The "Anthems" referred to in this last Injunction will be found at length in the *Annotated Book of Common Prayer*, p. 13. They form a very short service with Collect and Versicles, and were perhaps intended for use after a sermon, as the Bidding of Bedes was used before it.

The visitors order these Injunctions to be sent to every church, college, hospital, and other ecclesiastical places within the Diocese of York.

CHAP III
A.D. 1547

3. Processional Litanies.

From the 24th of Edward VI.'s Injunctions of 1547.

"Also to avoid all contention and strife which heretofore hath arisen among the King's Majesty's subjects in sundry places of his realms and dominions, by reason of fond courtesy, and challenging of places in procession, and also that they may the more quietly hear that which is said or sung to their edifying, they shall not from henceforth, in any parish church at any time, use any procession about the church or churchyard or other place; but immediately before the High Mass the priests with other of the quire shall kneel in the midst of the church and sing or say plainly and distinctly the Litany which is set forth in English, with all the suffrages following. . . . And in the time of the Litany, of the Mass, of the Sermon, and when the priest readeth the Scripture to the parishioners, no manner of persons without a just and urgent cause shall depart out of the Church."

Quarrelling about places in processions

But although no other alterations in the mode of celebrating Divine Service were made by authority during the first twelve months of Edward's reign, there were many among the younger clergy who were too impatient to wait for authority; and thus it was considered necessary to issue "a proclamation against those that do innovate, alter, or leave done any rite or ceremony in the Church of their private authority." This proclamation was dated February 6, 1548; and after stating that "certain private curates, preachers, and other laymen [!], contrary to their bounden duties of obedience, do rashly attempt of their own and singular wit and mind, in some parish churches and otherwise, not only to persuade the people from the old accustomed rites and ceremonies, but also themselves bring in new orders, every one in their church according to their fantasies" in it, commands "that no manner of person, of what estate, order, or degree

Proclamation against innovators

soever he be, of his private mind, will, or fantasy, do omit, leave done, change, alter, or innovate any order, rite, or ceremony commonly used and frequented in the Church of England, and not commanded to be left done at any time in the reign of our late sovereign lord, his highness' father," other than such as have been already changed by the Injunctions, Statutes, or Proclamations set forth.[4] Even after this the Privy Council found it necessary to write to the licensed preachers on May 13th, "That in nowise you do stir and provoke the people to any alteration or innovation other than is already set forth by the King's Majesty's Injunctions, Homilies, and Proclamations," and rebuked those " who, of an arrogancy and proud hastiness will take upon them to run before they be sent, to go before the rulers, to alter and change things in religion without authority."[5] And on September 23d another proclamation was sent out, declaring that even the select and licensed preachers had so stirred up innovations, that his Majesty, "minding to see very shortly one uniform order throughout this his realm, and to put an end to all controversies in religion, so far as God should give grace (for which cause at this time certain bishops and notable learned men, by his Highness' commandment, are congregate), hath" thought good to inhibit all preachers whatever until the forthcoming uniform order is brought out.

CHAP III
A.D. 1548

Changes not to be made without authority

The Prayer Book promised

Such was the strong-handed determination with which Archbishop Cranmer and the rest of the young King's advisers and representatives maintained the old Sarum use, as it had been reformed in the preceding reign, until the Book of Common Prayer in English was ready to be substituted in its place. For two years

The Sarum use retained for a long time

[4] Wilkins' *Concil.*, iv. 21. [5] *Ibid.*, 27.

CHAP III A.D. 1547

and a quarter of Edward VI.'s reign, Cranmer, not less than Gardiner, stood firmly to the ancient Mass, Mattins, and Evensong of the Church of England, supplemented by the English Litany, English Gospels and Epistles, and English Lessons, and, for part of the time, by an English "Order of Communion." However expedient and even necessary he may have considered the changes about to be made, he could not have had any opinion that the theology and customs of the old rite were seriously wrong.

The clergy petition for a revision

The first we hear of the coming Prayer Book, after its temporary suppression by Henry VIII. in 1544, is in the Convocation which met on November 5, 1547, when the petition printed at the beginning of this section was sent up to the President of Convocation by the Lower House. The portion of that petition which immediately concerns our present subject was that in which the clergy request that the books which had been prepared by the Committee of Convocation of 1543 "may be seen and perused by them for a better expedition of Divine Service, to be set forth accordingly." It was more than a year before the "perusal" or revision of these "books" ended in the publication of the Book of Common Prayer; but the clergy had already so far made up their minds about one great principle of that book—the restoration of Communion in both kinds—that the authorities were able to complete this act of reformation with great promptitude, by means of a Canon of Convocation and an Act of Parliament.

The Order of Communion of 1548.

On November 20, 1547, the fifth session of this first Convocation of Edward VI., the Prolocutor of the

CHAP III
A.D. 1547

Lower House of Convocation "exhibited, and caused to be read publicly, a form of a certain ordinance, delivered by the Most Reverend the Archbishop of Canterbury, for the receiving of the body of our Lord under both kinds, viz. of bread and wine." This canon did not raise any debate, but its adoption was postponed until the next session, December 2d, when the whole of those present, "in number sixty-four, by their mouths did approve the proposition made in the last session of taking the Lord's body in both kinds, nullo reclamante."[6]

The clergy pass a canon for Communion in both kinds

Meanwhile, the Archbishop had introduced two Bills into the House of Lords "against such as shall unreverently speak against the Sacrament of the Altar, and of the receiving thereof under both kinds," and during the session these Bills were consolidated into an Act, which, after repeal and revival, is still in force. The first six clauses of this Act [1 Edw. VI. ch. i.] provide for the imprisonment of those who "contemn, despise, or revile the said most blessed Sacrament." The seventh clause, after reciting that it was in accordance with Christ's institution, and with "the common use and practice both of the Apostles and of the Primitive Church, by the space of 500 years and more after Christ's ascension, that the said blessed Sacrament should be ministered to all Christian people under both the kinds of bread and wine, than under the form of bread only, and also it is more agreeable to the first institution of Christ, and to the usage of the Apostles and the Primitive Church, that the people being present should receive the same with the priest, than that the priest should receive it alone," enacts

Their decision confirmed by Parliament

[6] Strype's *Mem. Cranmer*, ii. 37, Eccl. Hist. Soc. Ed.; Wilkins' *Concil.*, iv. 16.

CHAP III
A.D. 1547

that such shall be the custom of "the Church of England and Ireland, ... not condemning hereby the usage of any church out of the King's Majesty's dominions." This Act was followed up on December 27th by a proclamation, setting forth in painful detail some of the irreverent controversy which was current respecting the presence of Christ in "the Sacrament of the Body and Blood of our Lord, commonly called 'the Sacrament of the Altar.'" It enjoins that such controversies should cease, and "that every of" the King's "loving subjects shall devoutly and reverently affirm and take that holy Bread to be Christ's Body, and that Cup to be the Cup of His holy Blood, according to the purport and effect of the Holy Scripture, contained in the Act before expressed, and accommodate himself rather to take the same Sacrament worthily, than rashly to enter into the discussing of the high mystery thereof." [7]

An English form for administration of Communion in both kinds

This revival of a custom which had once been universal, and had never been entirely dropped in the Church of England, did not require any alteration in the old service of the Mass, for that service contains no recognition of Communion in one kind only; but it was soon found expedient that the principle of a vernacular service should be at once applied to the communion of the laity, and an "Order of Communion" was prepared in such a form that it could be used in connection with the unaltered Latin Service of the Missal. This contained several of the hortatory and rubrical parts of our present Communion Service; and there is reason to think it was constructed or adopted as their own by the Episcopal and other Divines who were selected from the Convocation of

[7] Cardw. *Docum. Ann.*, i. 26.

CHAP III

A.D. 1548

Canterbury for the full review and reconstruction of the Service Books.[8] The new service, thus taking the form of a Canon of Convocation, was (according to the settlement of 1534) promulgated by the Crown, this being done by a proclamation dated March 8, 1548. From that day, therefore, until the Prayer Book was brought into use on June 9, 1549, the authorized Communion Service of the Church of England was the ancient Latin Mass of the Salisbury Missal, supplemented by a short service in English (which was introduced after the Communion of the priest), for administration of the Sacrament to the laity. Our attention is thus again drawn to the conservative character of the course taken by the authoritative Reformation of the Church of England. We may also observe that, as it would be extremely unjust to charge Cranmer and his coadjutors with using forms of prayer solemnly before God which were at variance with their conscientious belief, we must conclude that, up to 1549 at least, they regarded the ancient Service of the Mass as one to which there could be no objection on the ground of reverence towards God, or as a means of grace for Christian people.

Cranmer and other Reformers used the Latin Mass still, with this addition

[8] Foxe says, "The King, being no less desirous to have the form of administration of the Sacrament truly reduced to the right rule of the Scriptures and first use of the Primitive Church, than he was to establish the same by the authority of his own regal laws, appointed certain of the most grave and best learned bishops and others of his realm to assemble together at his Castle of Windsor, there to argue and entreat this matter, and conclude upon and set forth one perfect and uniform order, according to the rule and use aforesaid." [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, v. 716, ed. 1837.] Edward VI., in his journal, says, "A Parliament was called, where an uniform order of prayer was institute, before made by a number of bishops and learned men gathered together in Windsor . . and there was a notable disputation of the Sacrament in the Parliament House." [Burnet's *Ref.*, v. 7, Pocock's ed.] Strype alleges that in 1546, shortly before his death, Henry VIII. commanded Archbishop Cranmer "to pen a form for the alteration of the Mass into a Communion." [Strype's *Mem. Cranmer*, i. 311.]

CHAP III

A.D. 1548

§ 2. The Prayer Book of 1549

The Divines to whom was entrusted the "perusal," or "revision," as we should now say, of the "books made by the prelates and other learned men appointed to alter the service in the Church" during the previous reign, were thirteen in number, their names being as follows:[9]—

From the Upper House of Convocation.

Thomas Cranmer, . . Archbishop of Canterbury.
Thomas Goodrich, . Bishop of Ely [afterwards Lord Chancellor].
Henry Holbech (or Randes), ... Bishop of Lincoln.
George Day, . . . Bishop of Chichester.
John Skip, ... Bishop of Hereford.
Thomas Thirlby, . . Bishop of Westminster.
Nicholas Ridley, . . Bishop of Rochester [afterwards of London].

From the Lower House of Convocation.

William May, . . . Dean of St. Paul's.
Richard Cox, . . . Dean of Ch. Ch. and Chancellor of Oxford Univ. [afterwards Bishop of Ely].

[9] This list of names is given from a contemporary entry of a "Parson of Petworth" in a Prayer Book of 1632, in the Bodleian Library, full of manuscript notes by Bishop Gandy and Bishop Andrewes. [Rawl., 241.] Heylin makes a quotation from "The Register book of the parish of Petworth," which bears upon the subject of the change of service, in his *History of the Reformation.* [Heylin's *Reform.*, 64, fol. ed., i. 132; Eccl. Hist. Soc. Ed.] No information can now be obtained respecting this register. The same list, omitting the name of May, occurs on a printed broadside within the cover of MS. 44, in Cosin's Library, Durham. It is corrected in the hand of Bishop Cosin; who adds against Redmain's name the word "dubito," and before Cox's, "Deest Decanus Sti Pauli quisquis erat max. opinor."

John Taylor, . . .	Dean of Lincoln [afterwards Bishop of Lincoln], Prolocutor.	CHAP III
Simon Heynes, . .	Dean of Exeter.	A.D. 1548
Thomas Robertson, .	Archdeacon of Leicester [afterwards Dean of Durham].	
John Redmayne, . .	Master of Trin. Coll. Camb.	

It is evident that these thirteen Divines formed a Committee of Convocation; and as they were probably the body "of bishops and learned men gathered together in Windsor" which is mentioned in the Journal of Edward VI., there is little doubt that they acted under a Royal Commission. No records of their meetings remain, but they are found together on one occasion afterwards, Sunday, September 9, 1548, when Farrar was consecrated Bishop of St. David's by Cranmer, Holbeach, and Ridley, at the Archbishop's house at Chertsey. On that occasion the Archbishop celebrated Mass by the old ritual, and used English words of administration; and the Archiepiscopal Register records that "there communicated the Reverend Fathers, Thomas, Bishop of Ely, Thomas, Bishop of Westminster, Henry, Bishop of Lincoln, Nicholas, Bishop of Rochester, and Farrar, the new Bishop; together with William May, Dean of St. Paul's, Simon Hains, Dean of Exon., Thomas Robertson and John Redman, Professors of Divinity, and others."[1] But, beyond these two slight glimpses of them, we know nothing whatever of their movements. Nor have we any means of ascertaining to what extent they used the labours of their predecessors in the work of revision.

Communion of the revisers at Chertsey

Their work was completed in time to be presented

[1] Strype's *Cranmer*, ii. 105. Eccl. Hist. Soc. In his Memorials Strype says that they met at Windsor in May. [Strype's *Mem. Eccl.*, II. i. 133.] Heylin says that they met at Windsor on September 1st.

CHAP III
A.D. 1548

to Convocation at the session which began on November 24, 1548. Archbishop Abbott says that "the more material points were disputed and debated in the Convocation House by men of both parties," and that "it was afterwards confirmed by the Upper and Lower Houses."[2] The work of its Committee being thus adopted by the Convocation, was submitted to the King in Council; and on December 9, 1548, it was laid on the table of the House of Lords for the purpose of being incorporated in the Act of Uniformity, as the standard to which uniformity was required. This Act [2d and 3d Edw. VI. ch. 1.], the Prayer Book forming a part of it (or what is now called a schedule), was passed through the House of Lords on January 15th, and through the House of Commons on January 21st, in the year 1549; and it enacted that the Prayer

Co-operation of clergy, Crown, and Parliament

[2] Abbott against Hill, p. 104. Archbishop Bancroft, who was for many years chaplain to Cox, Bishop of Ely, one of the Committee of Revision, writes that "the first liturgy set forth in the beginning of King Edward's reign was carefully compiled, and confirmed by a synod. [Collier's *Eccl. Hist.*, vi. 277.] Contemporary evidence respecting the confirmation of the book by Convocation is also found in letters of the Privy Council and the King.

[1.] The Privy Council of Edward VI. instructed Dr. Hopton, the Princess Mary's chaplain, to say to her, "The fault is great in any subject to disallow a law of the King; a law of the realm by long study, free disputation, and *uniform determination of the whole clergy*, consulted, debated, concluded." [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 8, ed. 1838.]

[2.] In the reply of the King to the demands of the Devonshire rebels, he is made to say, "Whatsoever is contained in our book, either for Baptism, Sacrament, Mass, Confirmation, and service in the Church, is by our Parliament established, *by the whole clergy agreed*, yea by the Bishops of the realm devised, by God's Word confirmed." [*Ibid.*, v. 734.]

[3.] The King and Council, writing to Bonner on July 23, 1549, say, "One uniform order for Common Prayers and administration of the Sacraments hath been and is most godly set forth, not only by the common agreement and full assent of the Nobility and Commons of the late session of our late Parliament, but also by the like assent of the Bishops in the same Parliament, *and of all other the learned men of this our realm in their Synods and Convocations provincial.*" [*Ibid.*, v. 726.]

No doubt the Convocation of York co-operated in some way with that of Canterbury.

CHAP III
A.D. 1549

Book should be taken into use throughout the Church of England on July 9, 1549, that day being Whitsunday. But the Act provided that, in churches where it could be procured at an earlier date, it might be taken into use "within three weeks next after the said books so attained and gotten;" and as the first edition was published on March 7th, it was generally used in the churches of London at Easter, which was on April 21st, though not at St. Paul's until Whitsunday.[3]

Prayer Book taken into use

The Book of Common Prayer, thus set forth with the full authority of Church and State, may very fairly be called an expurgated and condensed English version of the ancient Missal, Breviary, and Manual,[4] by which the services of the Church of England had been conducted during mediæval times, and which were themselves elaborated forms of much more ancient Service Books. Following the directions given to the Commission in 1542, the books had been "castigated from all . . . feigned legends, superstitions, orations, collects, versicles, and responses," the services provided for "all saints which be not mentioned in the Scripture or authentical doctors" were "abolished and put out of the same books," and what was retained was "the service . . . made out of the Scripture and other

Its relation to the old Service Books

[3] Stow's *Chron.*, 1033; Bullinger in *Orig. Lett.*, Park. Soc., 535.

[4] The Ordination Services were not at first bound up with the Prayer Book, and were not perhaps ready when the Prayer Book was published. On September 9, 1548, as stated above, Bishop Farrar was consecrated with the service of the old Pontifical in the presence of the Prayer Book Committee. Some months afterwards Cranmer held an Ordination, at which he used the new Ordinal or Pontifical as it now stands. [Strype's *Cranmer*, ii. 130, Eccl. Hist. Soc.] The early printed copies are dated 1549, with the title, 'The forme and maner of makyng and consecratyng of Archbishoppes, Bishoppes, Priestes, and Deacons;" and doubts having arisen as to its legality, it was established by Act of Parliament [3 and 4 Edw. VI. ch. 12] in November of that year.

CHAP III

A.D. 1549

authentic doctors."[5] The seven daily offices were condensed into two; the system for the use of Psalms and Lessons was greatly simplified; and although the ritual system in general was retained, the rubrics were condensed throughout, and many details of ritual omitted.[6] When all the changes are taken into account, it may still be said that about nine-tenths of what is contained in the Prayer Book of 1542-1549 came from the old Latin Service Books of the Church of England; and that the principal change after the excision of mediæval novelties was that of adapting the services to general use by the clergy and laity together, instead of leaving them in the complex form which was only suitable for the use of the clergy and of monastic communities.[7]

Adaptation of Services for general use

This "First Prayer Book of Edward the Sixth" was the book established by the law of the Church and of the State for the use of the Church of England for three years and a half, namely, from July 9, 1549, to November 1, 1552; but it need hardly be added that it is also substantially the book which has now been in use for three centuries and a quarter.

§ 3. The Prayer Book of 1552

There is no reason to think that any general opposition was offered to the new English Services by the clergy

[5] See vol. i. p. 497.

[6] For details of the relation between the modern vernacular services and the ancient Latin services of the Church of England, the reader is referred to the author's *Annotated Book of Common Prayer*. The Prayer Book of 1549, with the Order of Communion of 1548, and the Ordinal, were republished by Walton in 1869.

[7] The revival of religious communities in connection with the Church of England has naturally brought with it a revival of the seven "Hours" system of Divine Service for their use. But devotional books containing them—books similar to the "Hours" of earlier times, and the "Primers" of Henry VIII. and Edward VI.—have been common enough always. Bishop Cosin's *Devotions* may be named as one of the best known of such modern books of "Hours." It was printed in 1627

CHAP III

A.D. 1549

or laity of the Church of England, although here and there the old Latin Services were still maintained until the Service Books were called in by an Order of Council, issued on the following Christmas Day in consequence of reports that the Duke of Somerset's fall was the prelude to their restoration.[8] But a virulent and persevering attack was soon commenced by a Protestant party which crystallized around the nucleus of anti-sacerdotalists whose advent into England is spoken of at large in another chapter.

The Prayer Book attacked by the Protestants

The leader in this attack upon the Prayer Book was John Hooper, afterwards Bishop of Gloucester and Worcester. Up to the time of the dissolution of the monasteries he had been a monk of the Cistercian order—a very austere order—at Cleeve, in Somersetshire; but when he was thrown upon the world, he was converted to the opinions of the anti-sacerdotalist school by the writings of Zwingli and Bullinger.[9]

Bishop Hooper leading the assault

[8] The chief opponents were the Devonshire and Cornish rebels. Their objections were certainly not of a very reasonable character, as may be seen from their "demands," and Archbishop Cranmer's answer to them. [Strype's *Cranmer*, ii. 502, Eccl. Hist. Soc.] They, however, received on June 20, 1549, a promise of pardon for not accepting the Prayer Book, on condition of returning to their allegiance [State Papers, Edw. VI., Dom.]; and the tradition of Cornwall is, that the old Breviary and Missal were used there long after the Reformation. On the other hand, Bishop Gardiner wrote to the Privy Council that "He had deliberately considered of all the offices contained in the Common Prayer Book, and all the several branches of it; that though he could not have made it in that manner, had the matter been referred unto him, yet that he found such things therein as did very well satisfy his conscience; and therefore, that he would not only execute it in his own person, but cause the same to be officiated by all those of his diocese." [Heylin's *Reformation*, i. 209, Eccl. Hist. Soc.]

The Privy Council, however, had thought it necessary to disclaim any intention of reviving the "old religion," as was reported, in the presence of the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Councillors, which they did on October 8, 1549. [Privy Counc. Reg.]

[9] ZWINGLIAN OPINIONS.—"Zwingli was persuaded that the grace of God is always given to man *immediately*, without the intervention of church or priest or sacrament. He therefore held that baptism was no means of

CHAP III

A.D. 1549

About 1545 he left England, went to live at Strasburg, and married, being then about fifty years of age. From March 1547 to March 1549 he lived at Zurich, in constant intercourse with Bullinger himself. In May 1549 he arrived in England again, and was appointed chaplain, first to the Duke of Somerset, and then to the King.

Hooper idolized

Hooper at once became a very popular preacher, delivering his discourses with the energy of a Wesley as often as twice a day; and contemporaries said that the Londoners not only looked on him as a prophet, but even worshipped him as a deity.[1] In these lectures he is reported to Bullinger to be "very busy in con-

grace, but merely the external badge of membership in a community, the sign that he was formally devoted to the service of Christ, or the certificate of spiritual life, which, if at all imparted, was imparted independently of the material element. . . . . The same conception of the sacraments was even more explicitly avowed when Zwingli turned to the examination of the Eucharist. As he dissociated all idea of spiritual blessing from the act of baptism, so the consecrated Bread and Wine had, in his theory, no more than a mnemonic office, putting him in mind of Christ, and of his union with a Christian body, but inoperative altogether beyond the province of the intellect. This theory, at first elaborated by the criticism of the sacred text, was afterwards supported by recondite speculations on the nature of the Saviour's glorified humanity. Like Carlstad, he contended that the Body of Christ being now locally in Heaven, cannot be 'really' distributed to faithful souls on earth, which drew from Luther, now become the furious enemy of both, the counter argument, that the humanity of Christ, in virtue of its union with the Godhead, is exalted far above all natural existences, and being thus no longer fettered by the sublunary conditions of time and space, may be communicated in and by the Eucharistic elements." [Hardwicke's *Ch. Hist. during Reform.*, 121.] Zwingli, who was a priest, was killed in battle near Zurich in 1531, and his place there was taken by Henry Bullinger, who was the great authority of the English Puritanic school until the spread of Calvinism in the days of Queen Elizabeth.

[1] The same curious statement is made respecting Foxe by his own son. Many, he says in his life of his father, "believed that he could not be devoid of some Divine inspiration, and now some began, not as a good man, to honour him, but, as one sent from Heaven, *even to adore him*, through the folly of mankind, madly doting upon anything whatsoever their own will hath set to be worshipped." [Foxe's *Acts and Mon. Life*, ed. 1684.]

futing the Lutherans and the Bucerians," and to be "a constant defender and promoter of the true faith."[2] But Peter Martyr "cautioned him against his unseasonable and too bitter sermons."[3] His opposition was in fact raised against everything that countenanced the doctrine of the Real Presence of Christ in the Eucharist, and of grace given by the Sacrament of Baptism, and he thus necessarily set his face against the Prayer Book that had just been brought into use. The tone which he took respecting it is illustrated by one of his letters to Bullinger, written as early as December 27, 1549, in which he says, "The public celebration of the Lord's Supper is very far from the order and institution of our Lord. Although it is administered in both kinds, yet in some places the Supper is celebrated three times a day. . . . . They still retain their vestments[4] and the candles before the altars; in the churches they always chant the hours and other hymns relating to the Lord's Supper, but in our own language. And that Popery may not be lost, the mass priests, although they are compelled to discontinue the use of the Latin language, yet most carefully observe the same tone and manner of chanting to which they were heretofore accustomed in the Papacy."[5] Preaching before Edward VI. in Lent (the observance of which he deprecated except "as a civil policy"[6]), he spoke of the Prayer Book which had just been brought into general use as containing "tolerable things, to be borne with for the

CHAP III

A.D. 1549

Hooper opposes the Catholic doctrines

and Catholic customs retained

[2] *Orig. Lett.*, Park. Soc., 659, 662.

[3] Hooper's Works, II. xiv.

[4] So also on February 16, 1550, John Butler writes to Thomas Blaurer that some blemishes in the Church of England, "such, for instance, as the splendour of the vestments, have not yet been done away with." [*Orig. Lett.*, 635.]

[5] *Orig. Lett.*, Park. Soc., 72.

[6] Hooper's Works, i. 554.

CHAP III

A.D. 1549

weak's sake awhile,"[7] and urged immediate revision; the Ordinal he considered especially framed for the promotion of the kingdom of Antichrist;[8] and he told the King and Council that it was "great shame for a noble King, Emperor, or Magistrate, contrary unto God's word, to detain and *keep from the devil* or his minister any of their goods or treasure, as the candles, vestments, crosses, altars."[9] Further, he desired the King to do away with kneeling at the Holy Communion. "The outward behaviour and gesture of the receiver," was his argument, "should want all kind of suspicion, shew, or inclination of idolatry. Wherefore, seeing kneeling is a shew and external sign of honouring and worshipping, and heretofore hath grievous and damnable idolatry been committed by the honouring of the Sacrament, I would wish it were commanded by the magistrate that the communicators and receivers should do it standing or sitting. But sitting in mine opinion were best, for many considerations."[1]

Hooper's profane language

He advocates sitting at Communion

It was after the violent Lent sermons which were spiced with this abuse of the Prayer Book that Hooper was—by the interest of Somerset, and against the wish of the other bishops, who considered his teaching heretical,—nominated to the bishopric of Gloucester.[2] But when he was required by the Council to subscribe to certain articles proposed by them, he refused to accept three. "One is, that the Sacraments *confer* grace. He wished the word *confer* to be changed into

Becomes Bishop of Gloucester

[7] Hooper's Works, 479. This phrase is curiously like Calvin's, "In Anglicana Liturgia, qualem describitis, multas video fuisse *tolerabiles ineptias*." [Calvin. Epp., p. 98.]

[8] *Orig. Lett.*, 81.

[9] Works, i. 534. Alasco, the superintendent of the foreign congregations in London, a great supporter of Hooper, and a friend of Edward VI., was a great agitator for the change from kneeling to sitting; and the Puritans of Elizabeth's reign quoted "Johannes Alasco and M. Hooper" as their authorities for the custom. [Whitgift's Works, iii. 94.]

[1] Hooper's Works, 536.

[2] *Orig. Lett.*, 81, 410, 675, 676.

seal or testify to. The second is, that the book set forth by the bishops must be diligently observed in every particular, without any alteration whatever. The last is, wherein he is required to approve the book of ordination of ministers of the Church."[3] Refusing also to be consecrated in the usual Episcopal vestments, and according to the form of the Ordinal, he was forbidden to preach; disregarding this order, he was committed to the charge of Cranmer; and the Archbishop reporting that he could make no impression upon him, he was at last committed to the Fleet on February 27, 1551. Finding that he was thus prevented from preaching, he gave way, and was consecrated with the ceremonies he abhorred, and in the "Aaronic habits" which he loathed, on March 8, 1551, a week afterwards.[4]

CHAP III
A.D. 1550

Will not wear Episcopal vestments,

but gives way for the sake of being a bishop,

Hooper came in this manner to be looked upon by the foreign Zwinglians as the leader of the anti-sacerdotalist party in England. Hence Bullinger was informed, on November 12, 1550, that "Master Hooper is planning great and noble designs, especially against the power and luxury and ceremonies of the priests and bishops, nor have his godly endeavours hitherto been without success, for you will soon hear from himself, perhaps, the great progress he has made."[5] Six weeks later, a further report is sent, "Hooper is striving to effect an entire purification of the Church from the very foundation. Other bishops, on the contrary, who nevertheless are men of learning and professors of the

and is the Episcopal leader of the anti-Church party

[3] *Orig. Lett.*, 563.

[4] Foxe describes his dress when he preached before the King shortly afterwards. "His upper garment was a long scarlet chimere down to the foot, and under that a white linen rochet that covered all his shoulders. Upon his head he had a geometrical, that is, a four-squared cap, albeit that his head was round." [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 641.]

[5] *Orig. Lett.*, 468.

CHAP III

A.D. 1551

truth, are ashamed of this, because they will not open their eyes to their own errors." [6]

It was probably on account of this agitation against the Prayer Book that the two foreigners, Peter Martyr and Martin Bucer, who occupied respectively the position of Regius Professor of Divinity at Oxford and Cambridge, were required by Archbishop Cranmer to give their opinions respecting it. Neither of them could read a word of its contents, but Bucer had it translated into Latin *viva voce*, and Martyr used some sort of version of parts of it which was given to him by Sir John Cheke, the King's tutor. Eventually Martyr assented to Bucer's review of the book, which was contained in a treatise of twenty-eight chapters, known as his "Censure," and which was completed on January 5, 1551, two months before his death. In this work Bucer expressed his disapproval of all ceremonies and customs that were derived from the ancient services of the Church of England. In the Holy Communion he condemns the use of vestments, wafer-bread, definite acts of consecration, the sign of the cross, prayers for the departed, the presence of non-communicants, and the kneeling of communicants. The service for Baptism he would have pared down to a similar bald ideal as that of the Holy Communion. The practice of anointing the sick, and that of commending the soul of the departed to God in burial, as also all forms of prayer for souls departed, he wished to see rejected. And lastly, with the want of imagination and musical ear so common among the extreme Reformers, he expresses his utter abhorrence of the

Opinions of Martyr and Bucer on the Prayer Book

Bucer's Censure

Its anti-sacerdotal character

[6] *Orig. Lett.*, 674. Hooper was exceedingly distasteful to Cranmer [*Ibid.*, 557], and also to Ridley [*Ibid.*, 573, 675], who was only reconciled to him while they were both in prison waiting for death [Ridley's Works, 355.]

superstition of bell ringing, which he desired to see altogether discontinued.[7] CHAP III

Meanwhile the Prayer Book had been brought under discussion in Convocation towards the end of the year 1550. A.D. 1551 Hooper's arrogant and persevering attacks upon it had influenced the mind of the King, who, although only a little over twelve years of age, was already developing a large amount of Tudor confidence in himself; and as Cranmer and other courtiers pretended to pay great deference to the child's opinions,[8] there can be little doubt that the boy King had forced this discussion on Convocation with a view to the revision of the book in the direction indicated by Hooper. The bishops in the Upper House were disposed, as bishops generally are, to swim with the tide, and to make many of the changes demanded; but the clergy of the Lower House desired more time for the consideration of them, and requested that the matter might be postponed until the next session.[9] The young King, however, who had already, when Hooper was doing homage, dashed his pen excitedly through some words of the oath which referred to the saints,[1] declared that, if Convocation would not make the changes, he would make them himself; and further resistance to revision thus seemed likely to be dangerous to the Church.[2]

Personal influence of the boy King

His threat to revise the Prayer Book himself

[7] On September 4, 1552, Cranmer sent an order to the Dean of St. Paul's "to forbid playing of organs at Divine Service." [*Grey Friars' Chron.*, 75.]

[8] Cranmer's own son was about the same age, so he must have known what such a child's opinions on theological questions were worth. The descendants of that son are still to be traced, and have all become Roman Catholics; some after taking orders in the Church of England.

[9] Heylin's *Hist. Reform.*, i. 227, Eccl. Hist. Soc.

[1] *Orig. Lett.*, 416.

[2] On January 10, 1551, Peter Martyr wrote from Lambeth Palace to Bucer as follows: "In all the particulars which you considered should be amended, I have supported your opinions, and I thank God for giving us an occasion of

CHAP III
A.D. 1551

No records remain to show how or by whom the revision was made, but the young King's threat of breaking through precedent if his wishes were disregarded, pretty clearly indicates that precedent would not be thrown aside except under extreme circumstances. It is contrary to all we know of the times to suppose that he would be opposed after such a threat, and we may therefore conclude that everything then went on smoothly according to precedent. Thus there would be a Committee of Convocation, composed of bishops from the Upper House and clergy from the Lower, and special authority would be added to the Committee by its constitution as a Royal Commission. These divines, most of them being perhaps members of the former committee, carried on their work during the year 1551, that it might be ready for Convocation and Parliament at the winter session.

The process of revision would follow precedent

In whatever manner the revised Prayer Book passed through these several stages, it was finally scheduled on to a new Act of Uniformity [5 and 6 Edw. VI. ch. 1] on April 6, 1552, and the Feast of All Saints following, November 1st, was fixed as the day on which it was to be taken into use instead of the book of 1549. Almost at the last moment, however, an attempt was made to carry the revision much further. Three editions of the book had been printed, when, on September 27, 1552, an Order of Council was passed forbidding any further issue of them, ostensibly on

The printing suddenly stopped

admonishing the Bishops. It has been determined in this Convocation, so I am informed by the Archbishop, that many things shall be changed, though what things they are he did not tell me, nor did I venture to ask him. But I have been not a little refreshed by what Sir John Cheke has acquainted me with, that if the Convocation refused to make these changes, the King would make them himself, using his royal authority in Parliament for the purpose." [Strype's *Cranmer*, ii. 663, Eccl. Hist. Soc.]

CHAP III
A.D. 1552

the ground that many printer's errors had crept in.[3] But the real reason for arresting the press is shown by the Privy Council Register. For on the same day a letter was written to Archbishop Cranmer, requesting him to correct the printer's errors, and directing him to call to him several divines to peruse the book again, his attention being specially drawn to the rubric on kneeling at Communion. The letter of the Privy Council is not preserved, but only the order directing the secretary what to write. The Archbishop's indignant reply is, however, preserved among the State Papers, and throws so much light on the circumstances under which the second Prayer Book was issued that it is here given at length :—

Endeavour to abolish kneeling at Communion

"After my right humble commendations unto your good Lordships.

"Where I understand by your Lordships' letters that the King's Majesty his pleasure is that the Book of Common Service should be diligently perused, and therein the printers' errors to be amended. I shall travail therein to the uttermost of my power—albeit I had need first to have had the book written which was past by Act of Parliament, and sealed with the great seal, which remaineth in the hands of Mr. Spilman, clerk of the Parliament, who is not in London, nor I cannot learn where he is. Nevertheless, I have gotten the copy which Mr. Spilman delivered to the printers to print by, which I think shall serve well enough. And where I understand further by your Lordships' letters that some be offended with kneeling at the time of the receiving of the Sacrament, and would that I (calling to me the Bishop of London, and some other learned men as Mr. Peter Martyr or such like), should with them expend, and weigh the said

The sealed [? MS.] copy referred to

The printers' copy not the same

[3] "A letter to Grafton, the printer, to stay in any wise from uttering any of the books of the New Service, and if he have distributed any of them amongst his company, that then he give straight commandment to every of them not to put any of them abroad until certain faults therein be corrected."

CHAP III
A.D. 1552

prescription of kneeling, whether it be fit to remain as a commandment, or to be left out of the book. I shall accomplish the King's Majesty his commandment herein:—albeit I trust that we *with just balance weighed this at the making of the book, and not only we, but a great many Bishops and others of the best learned within this realm appointed for that purpose.* And now the book being read and approved by the whole State of the Realm, in the High Court of Parliament, with the King's Majesty his royal assent—that this should be now altered again without Parliament—of what importance this matter is, I refer to your Lordships' wisdom to consider. I know your Lordships' wisdom to be such, that I trust ye will not be moved with these *glorious*[4] *and unquiet spirits which can like nothing but that is after their own fancy; and cease not to make trouble when things be most quiet and in good order. If such men should be heard —although the book were made every year anew, yet it should not lack faults in their opinion.* 'But,' say they, 'it is not commanded in the Scripture to kneel, and whatsoever is not commanded in the Scripture is against the Scripture, and utterly unlawful and ungodly.' But this saying is the chief foundation of the Anabaptists and of divers other sects. This saying is a subversion of all order as well in religion as in common policy. If this saying be true, take away the whole Book of Service; for what should men travail to set in order in the form of service, if no order can be got but that is already prescribed by Scripture? And because I will not trouble your Lordships with reciting of many Scriptures or proof in this matter, whosoever teacheth any such doctrine (if your Lordships will give me leave) *I will set my foot by his, to be tried by fire, that his doctrine is untrue;* and not only untrue, but also seditious and perilous to be heard of any subjects, as a thing breaking their bridle of obedience and loosing from the bond of all Princes' laws.

Cranmer's estimate of Hooper

His challenge to Hooper and his party

"My good Lordships, I pray you to consider that there be

[4] This plainly refers to Bishop Hooper. In the order for the Bishop of Gloucester's execution, a similar expression is used, "forasmuch as the said Hooper is, as heretics be, a *vain-glorious* person, and delighteth in his tongue," &c. [Hooper's Works, II. xxvii.]

two prayers which go before the receiving of the Sacrament, and two immediately follow—all which time the people praying and giving thanks do kneel. And what inconvenience there is that it may not be thus ordered, I know not. If the kneeling of the people should be discontinued for the time of the receiving of the Sacrament, so that at the receipt thereof they should rise up and stand or sit, and then immediately kneel down again—it should *rather import a contemptuous than a reverent receiving of the Sacrament.* 'But it is not expressly contained in the Scripture' (say they) 'that Christ ministered the Sacrament to his apostles kneeling.' Nor they find it not expressly in Scripture that he ministered it standing or sitting. But if we will follow the plain words of the Scripture *we should rather receive it lying down on the ground*—as the custom of the world at that time almost everywhere, and as the Tartars and Turks use yet at this day, to eat their meat lying upon the ground. And the words of the Evangelist import the same, which be ἀνακεῖμαι and ἀναπίπτω, which signify, properly, to lie down upon the floor or ground, and not to sit upon a form or stool. And the same speech use the Evangelists where they show that Christ fed five thousand with five loaves, where it is plainly expressed that they sat down upon the ground and not upon stools.

CHAP III A.D. 1552

Standing to receive is a contempt of the Holy Communion,

and unscriptural

"I beseech your Lordships take in good part this my long babbling, *which I write as of myself only.* The Bishop of London is not yet come, and your Lordships required answer with speed, and therefore am I constrained to make some answer to your Lordships afore his coming. And thus I pray God long to preserve your Lordships, and to increase the same in all prosperity and godliness.

"At Lambeth, this 7th of October, 1552,

"Your Lordships' to command,

"T. CANTR." [5]

What debates there may have been on this subject is not known, but the ultimate result is shown by an entry in the Privy Council Register, dated October 27,

The Council debate on the question

[5] State Papers, Domestic, Edw. VI., xv. 15.

CHAP III
A.D. 1552

1552, which orders "a letter to the Lord Chancellor to cause to be signed unto the Book of Common Prayer, lately set forth, a certain declaration signed by the King's Majesty, and sent unto his Lordship, touching the kneeling at the receiving of the Communion."[6] The "Declaration," which has been commonly known as the "Black Rubric," was then printed on a fly-leaf, and inserted in some of the printed copies of the Prayer Book, the intention being no doubt to insert it in all. But this delay must have prevented the book from being circulated through the country in time for use on All Saints' Day; and, as Edward VI. died within a few months, on July 6, 1553, it may be doubted whether it ever superseded to any great extent the earlier Prayer Book of 1549. It was, however, by law the Prayer Book of the Church of England from November 1, 1552, until October 1553, when the Act of Uniformity, under the authority of which it became so, was repealed by another Act of Parliament [1 Mary, sess. 2, ch. 2]. That it was used at once in London is shown by an entry in Stow's Chronicle for the sixth year of Edward VI.:—

Insertion of the declaration on kneeling

This revised Prayer Book little used

"The first of November being the feast of All Saints, the new Service Book, called of Common Prayer, begun in St. Paul's Church, and the like through the whole city. The Bishop of London, doctor Ridley, executing the service in his rochet only, without cope or vestment, preached in the quire, and at afternoon he preached at Paul's Cross, the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Crafts, in their best liveries, being present, which sermon tending to the setting forth the late made Book of Common Prayer, continued till almost five of the clock at night, so that the Mayor, Aldermen, and Companies entered not into Paul's Church, as had been accustomed, but departed home by torch-light. By this Book of Common

Ridley's long sermon at its introduction

[6] Burnet's *Hist. Reform.*, iii. 368; Pocock's note, 76.

Prayer, all copes and vestments were forbidden throughout England, and Prebends of Paul's left off their hoods, the Bishops left their crosses, &c., as by an Act of Parliament more at large is set out." [7]

CHAP III
A.D. 1552

The results of the revision show considerable traces of the influences under which it had been put forward, and chiefly in the Communion Service. The principal subject of attack by the anti-sacerdotalist party was the sacrificial character of the Service as framed in 1549; and in association with this, they had also agitated for the disuse of altars, vestments, and the kneeling of communicants. They were so far successful, that in many churches the old altars were destroyed, nothing but boards on tressels being in many cases substituted for them; that the law for eight months forbade the use of the old vestments appointed for bishops, priests, and deacons; and that alterations were made in the Communion Service which went a good way towards destroying that family likeness to the Liturgies of the universal Church which had been so happy a feature in its first construction. But a merciful Providence prevented the evil work of these self-willed and arrogant agitators from being carried out to its full extent; and the early close of Edward VI.'s reign was the means of putting an end to that descent towards the negations of Zwinglianism, which would inevitably have taken place under the pressure of his influence had the boy survived much longer.

The Eucharistic Sacrifice depraved in this revision,

but Zwinglianism arrested by Edward's death

[7] "On Allhallow Day began the book of the new Service of Bread and Wine in Paul's, with all London, and the Bishop did the service himself, and preached in the quire at the morning service, and did it in a rochet, and nothing else on him. And the Dean, with all the residue of the prebends, went but in their surplices, and left off their habit of the University." [*Grey Friars' Chron.*, 76.] "After Allhallows Day was no more communion in no place but on the Sunday." [*Ibid.*]

CHAP III
A.D. 1552

§ 4. The Articles of Religion

In the general upheaval of doctrine which occurred at home and abroad during the Reformation cataclysm, attempts were made to put an end to controversy, and to secure uniformity of opinion, by means of formularies which defined one by one the theological questions at issue. This was done by the Lutherans in 1530 in the "Confession of Augsburg," by the Calvinists in 1530 and 1536 in the "Confession of Basle," and by the Continental Churches in decrees which were passed during the twenty-three years [A.D. 1546-1563] that were occupied from first to last by the sessions of the Council of Trent. The Church of England entered upon a similar course of definitions in the year 1536, and completed it in the year 1571.

Various foreign formularies

The first formulary of the kind adopted by the Church of England has been spoken of at large in the former volume of this history.[8] It consisted of Ten Articles, and was entitled, "Articles about Religion set out by the Convocation, and published by the King's authority;" or "Articles devised by the King's Highness' Majesty, to establish Christian quietness and unity among us, and to avoid contentious opinions; which Articles be also approved by the consent and determination of the whole clergy of this realm. Anno MDXXXVI." This was followed by the "Institution of a Christian Man"—a noble monument of Anglican theology, which was carefully compiled by a large commission of bishops and clergy similar to that which produced the Book of Common Prayer, and which was again issued in a revised form by the Convocation of 1543. Of this work also a full account

Various English formularies

[8] Vol. i. pp. 436-444.

will be found in the former volume of the present history.[9]

CHAP III

A.D. 1552

In 1551 the subject of Articles "for the avoiding of controversy in opinions and the establishment of a godly concord in certain matters of religion," was again revived, and its revival ended in the adoption of the "Forty-two Articles of Religion" of 1552-3, of which the "Thirty-nine Articles of Religion" of 1562-71 are a revised edition. The first we hear of the matter is that a communication was made by "the King and his Privy Council" to Archbishop Cranmer, ordering him "to frame a book of Articles of Religion for the preserving and maintaining peace and unity of doctrine in this Church; that being finished, they might be set forth by public authority."[1] This document does not appear to be now extant, but no doubt it was what is known as "Letters of Business" addressed to the Archbishop as President of the Convocation of Canterbury, and for which the Convocation had probably applied to the Crown through him. It would be in the form of a licence, based on the Act of Submission, granting leave to the clergy in their Convocations to "confer, treat, debate, consider, consult, and agree of and upon and concerning the making" of "a book of Articles of Religion for the preserving and maintaining peace and unity of doctrine in this Church; that being finished, the said book may be exhibited to us to be allowed, approved, ratified, and promulged."[2] A draft of this "Book of Articles" was laid before the bishops of the Upper House of Convocation by Archbishop Cranmer in the session of 1552, and were

Letters of business to the President of Convocation

for framing the Articles of Religion

[9] Vol. i. pp. 444-469.

[1] Strype's *Cranmer*, ii. 366, ed. 1848.

[2] This is substantially the form in which such licences are given by the Crown.

CHAP III
A.D. 1552

doubtless fully discussed by it and the Lower House also at the many meetings which are known to have taken place during that session, but of which no details are extant since the records of Convocation have perished.

Three weeks after Parliament and Convocation had risen, the Privy Council Register contains an order, dated May 8, 1552, for a "Letter to the Archbishop of Canterbury to send hither the Articles that he delivered the last year," that is, the preceding January, which was "last year" according to the Old Style, "to the bishops, and to signify whether the same were set forth by any public authority or no, according to the Minutes." Cranmer then placed the work of Convocation before the King in Council, but the book was returned to him in September for the purpose of being put "in a better order, and of having titles prefixed to the several Articles. On October 21st directions were given by the King in Council for the King's chaplains, Mr. Harley, Mr. Bill, Mr. Horne, Mr. Grindall, Mr. Perne, and Mr. Knox, "to consider certain Articles exhibited to the King's Majesty, to be subscribed by all such as shall be admitted to be preachers or ministers in any part of the realm, and to make report of their opinions touching the same." And on November 20th there is an order for "a letter to the Archbishop of Canterbury, with the Articles heretofore drawn and delivered by him to the King's Majesty, which, having been since considered by certain of his chaplains and others, are in some part altered, and therefore returned to him for further consideration, so as, after the perfecting of them, order may be given for putting the same in execution." The Archbishop returned them the next day,[3] and

The Articles submitted to the King in Council

"In some part altered" by their direction

[3] See his letter in Strype's *Cranmer*, ii. 669, ed. 1848.

CHAP III

A.D. 1553

nothing further appears to have been done with them until the meeting of Convocation on March 2, 1553, or 1552 Old Style, when they were finally passed and subscribed by the bishops and the rest of the clergy assembled on that occasion.

Promulgation of the Articles by the Crown

The Forty-two Articles thus carefully considered, revised, and accepted by the clergy were promulgated by the Crown shortly afterwards, being "published by the King's Majesty's commandment in the month of May, Anno Domini 1553," under the title of "Articles agreed on by the bishops and other learned men in the Synod at London,[4] in the year of our Lord God MDLII., for the avoiding of controversy in opinions and the establishment of a godly concord in certain matters of religion."

Their association with the Thirty-nine Articles.

These Forty-two Articles, thus set forth by the authority of the Church and the Crown, were substantially identical with the Thirty-nine Articles so familiar to modern times. But they were revised by the Convocations in 1562,[5] and again promulgated by the Crown in 1563. They underwent another slight

[4] That is, in a Synod formed of the two Convocations of Canterbury and York, meeting in London.

[5] The following seven were omitted at this revision :—

X. Of Grace.
XVI. Blasphemy against the Holy Ghost.
XIX. All men are bound to keep the moral commandments of the Law.
XXXIX. The resurrection of the dead is not yet brought to pass.
XL. The souls of them that depart this life do neither die with the bodies nor sleep idle.
XLI. Heretics called Millenarii.
XLII. All men shall not be saved at the length.

At the same time, four new ones were added to those which remained—

V. Of the Holy Ghost.
XII. Of good works.
XXIX. Of the wicked which do not eat the Body of Christ in the use of the Lord's Supper.
XXX. Of both kinds.

Authentic copies of the Articles in their successive forms are to be found in Cardwell's *Synodalia*, i. 1-107, and in Hardwicke's *History of the Thirty-nine Articles*.

CHAP III A.D. 1549

revision by Convocation, and were again promulgated by the Crown in 1571, and since that time no alterations have been made in them.

§ 5. Attempted Codification of Ecclesiastical Law

Projected revision of Common, Statute, and Ecclesiastical Laws

One of the grand schemes to which Wolsey looked forward was that of following up his foundations at Ipswich and Christ Church by establishing an University of London, in which the chief subject of study should be Law. It was another sign of the tendency towards more exact methods of legislation which was then springing up, that there were projects for the codification of both the Common and Statute, and also the Ecclesiastical Laws of England. The first fell through on account of its stupendous difficulty,[6] the second had been provided for in the "Act of Submission" [A.D. 1533], and in two subsequent Acts of Parliament in 1535 [27 Hen. VIII. cap. 15] and 1544 [35 Hen. VIII. cap. 16], but nothing was done to carry out the provisions so made before the death of Henry VIII.

Petition of the clergy respecting it

Immediately on the meeting of Convocation, however, toward the end of Edward VI.'s first year, a petition was sent up to the President by the Lower House, desiring, among other things, "that Ecclesiastical Laws may be made and established in this realm by thirty-two persons, or so many as shall please the King's Majesty to name or appoint, according to the effect of a late Statute made in the thirty-fifth year of the most noble King, and of the most

[6] See Journals of House of Commons, February 15, 1549.

famous memory, King Henry VIII.; so that all judges ecclesiastical, proceeding after these laws, may be without danger or peril."[7] The meaning of the last words of this petition was that a considerable uncertainty had arisen as to what were and were not the ecclesiastical laws or canons which remained in force since the passing of the Act of Submission in 1533, there being a clause in that Act which enacted that all the old canons should continue in force until further legislation abolished them, provided they did not clash with the laws of the realm or with the Royal Prerogative.[8]

CHAP III
A.D. 1549

The petition of the clergy was responded to slowly. In November 1549 an Act was passed [3 and 4 Edw. VI. cap. 11] empowering the King to appoint a Commission, in the same manner as his father had been empowered; but it was nearly two years before any such Commission was nominated. On October 6, 1551, the Privy Council Register contains an order for a "Letter to my Lord Chancellor to make out the King's Letters of Commission to the thirty-two persons hereunder written, authorizing them to assemble together, and resolve upon the reformation of the Canon Laws, as by the minute of the said letter at better length appeareth :—

A Commission authorized by Parliament

Persons nominated two years later

Bishops.		*Divines.*
Canterbury.		Taylor of Lincoln.
London.		Cox, Almoner.
Winchester.		Parker of Cambridge.
Ely.	Mr.	Latimer.
Exeter.		Cooke.
Gloucester.		Petrus Martyr.
Bath.		Cheke.
Rochester.	8	Joannes Alasco.
of 8		

[7] See also page 74; and the 1st of Queen Mary's Injunctions, beyond.

[8] See vol. i. p. 220.

CHAP III
A.D. 1552

Civilians.	*Lawyers.*
Mr. Petre.	Justice Hale.
Mr. Cecill.	Justice Broomley.
Sir Thomas Smithe.	Goodrike.
Taylour of Hadley.	Gosnald.
Doctor May.	Stamford.
Mr. Traheron.	Carrell.
Doctor Lyell.	Lucas.
8 Mr. Skynner.	8 Brooke, Recorder of London

viii. of these to rough-hew the Canon Law, the rest to conclude it afterwards." This Commission was never issued, however, being for some reason delayed, and being then superseded by another, which was ordered on November 9th, and issued on November 11th, and in which only eight persons were appointed, namely:—

But the Commission never received authority

The Archbishop of Canterbury.	Doctor Taylor of Hadley.
The Bishop of Ely.	Doctor May.
Doctor Cox.	John Lucas.
Peter Martyr.	Richard Goodrick.

their duties being defined as that of "the first drawing and ordering of the Canon Laws." Again, on February 2, 1552, there is an order for "a letter to the Lord Chancellor to make out a Commission to the Archbishop of Canterbury and other bishops, learned men, civilians, and lawyers of the realm, for the establishment of the Ecclesiastical Laws, according to the Act of Parliament made the last sessions."

The "Reformatio Legum"

The labours of this Commission, of which Peter Martyr was the most active member, are extant in a manuscript volume in Latin, which is preserved in the British Museum [Harl. MS., 426], and which has been twice printed, by Foxe in 1571, and by Cardwell in 1850, with additions made in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, under the title of "The Reformation of the

CHAP III
A.D. 1552

Ecclesiastical Laws." But instead of being, as the title implies, and as the original intention was that it should be, a code of Canon Law as it existed before the Act of Submission, and so far as it still remained in force, the volume consisted of a brand new set of Ecclesiastical Laws, written in a most narrow and bigoted spirit, and enjoining such severe penalties, including death for obstinate heretics, as were worthy of the Inquisition. The work had passed beyond the purview of Convocation, and the principles on which the Prayer Book had been constructed, those of Catholic conservation, had been recklessly departed from, and it became an utter failure. Had Convocation, or a competent commission selected from that body and acting for it, been entrusted with that which had been originally intended, a real Digest or Codification of the ancient Canons of the Church of England, it would probably have accomplished a work which would have been as generally and as permanently accepted as the Book of Common Prayer has been. As it was, the "Reformation of Ecclesiastical Laws" fell to the ground dead as soon as it was born, for the attempt to resuscitate it in 1571 was a total failure, and is unknown except to antiquaries. The Church of England, by its representative body, had desired to reform and simplify its ancient laws, but was not permitted to do so; and the bad statesmanship which thus distrusted the clergy in Convocation, and placed the work in the hands of a few court or ministerial favourites, resulted in a laborious *fiasco*, which stands out as an historical warning.

A bigoted and severe code of new laws

It proved a total failure,

and offers a warning

CHAPTER IV

FORMATION OF A REACTIONARY PARTY

CHAP IV

A.D. 1547

AT the opening of the reign of Edward VI. there was a strong Church party, composed of those who had acquiesced in the Reformation movements which had been made under his father, and were ready to accept such further developements as the vernacular Prayer Book for which preparations had been made, but who objected to those movements being carried on any further while the authority of the Crown was put in commission. They considered it due to the young King that no constitutional changes should be made until he could legally give his assent to them; and they foresaw that the temporary rulers of the country, the leading members of the Privy Council, would be much more open to the growing influence of the Puritan party during the time of their absolute power than the ordinary constitutional Government was likely to be. Those who were thus opposed to immediate changes in the Church may fairly be called the Conservatives of the Reformation; but, being treated with the greatest tyranny and severity by the Government, they became reactionaries.

The Conservatives of the Reformation

driven to become reactionaries

§ 1. The Ecclesiastical Tyranny of the Government

It is surprising to see from the Privy Council Registers with what minute research and persevering

CHAP IV

A.D. 1547

hostility these clergy of the old school were hunted down, and brought to London for inquisitorial examination and punishment. Soon after Edward VI. had come to the Crown, on April 4, 1547, there is an order for the payment to Lord Wentworth of £2 6s. 8d. for bringing and sending back a priest of Suffolk who had been speaking certain lewd words. On June 24th another order for forty shillings reward, to be paid to a servant of Sir William Godolphin who had the bringing up of a "lewd priest out of Cornwall" for the Privy Council and Protector to examine. Later on, Dr Hugh Weston, Archdeacon of Colchester and Margaret Professor, was bound in £200 to appear when called for; and meanwhile he is ordered to remain with the Archbishop of Canterbury, and is not to preach without licence from the Council. Then the Chancellor of Winchester is brought up to recant certain words and acts against the King's "proceedings," and on his refusal, is sent to the Marshalsea, to be removed to the Tower in nine or ten days if he still refuses. Dr. Chedsey, Archdeacon of Middlesex, was accused of preaching a seditious sermon in Oxford in the beginning of Lent 1550; and although he denied having done so, he was packed off to the Marshalsea, there to remain in prison for six months. Dr. White, Warden of Winchester, was about the same time sent to the Tower for receiving books from abroad, especially from "one Marteni, a scholar there, who repugneth the King's Majesty's proceedings." With one short interval, in the summer of 1551, during which he was ordered into the custody of Cranmer, Dr. White remained in the Tower during the rest of the reign; and he was only one of many clergymen, simple parish priests, or deans and canons, and heads of colleges, who

Punishment of priests

Their long imprisonments

CHAP IV
A.D. 1550

suffered imprisonment in that lordly fortress, or among the degraded criminals of the Fleet and the Marshalsea.

In the Tower also lay the pious and venerable Tunstal, till recently Bishop of London, but now Bishop of Durham, who was sent into close confinement there that he might be no longer able to protect the lands and possessions of his see from the rapacious hands of the Duke of Northumberland.

Bishop Tunstal imprisoned in the Tower

Heath, Bishop of Worcester, had been one of the bishops appointed to revise the Ordinal; but refusing to assent to all Cranmer's dictatorial suggestions of change, or to subscribe to the book when it was completed, although he agreed to use it, he was sent to the Fleet on March 4, 1550, and remained there during the rest of Edward's reign, Hooper being sent to Worcester to supplant him.

Bishop Heath imprisoned in the Fleet

Bishop Day imprisoned in the Fleet

Day, Bishop of Chichester, had been one of the Committee of Convocation for preparing the Prayer Book of 1549, but when an order was issued by the Council to take down all altars and substitute tables, he refused to impose this order upon the clergy of his diocese. "I sticked not at the *alteration*," he afterwards wrote to Cecil, "either of *the matter* (as *stone* or *wood*) whereof the altar was made, but I then took, as I now take, those things to be *indifferent*, and to be ordered by them that have authority. But the commandment which was given to me to take down all altars within my diocese, and in the lieu of them *to set up a table*, implying in itself (as I take it) a plain *abolishment of the altar* (*both the name and the thing*) from the use and administration of the Holy Communion, I could not with my conscience then execute."[1] When before the Council he thanked them for their courtesy (the Minute says), but his conscience

for refusing to abolish the altar

[1] Ellis' *Orig. Lett.*. III. iii. 303.

still prevented him from complying, "wherefore he prayed them to do with him what they thought requisite, for he would never obey to this thing, thinking it a less evil to suffer the body to perish than to corrupt the soul with that thing which his conscience would not bear." What the Lords of the Privy Council did was to deprive Day, as they had deprived other bishops, with all the authority of so many Popes, and to send him back to the Fleet, there to remain till the young King's death.

The Conservative Bishops deprived

Bonner, Bishop of London, is a person upon whose memory so much contumely and objurgation, original and second-hand, have been cast, that it would perhaps be impossible to win any great sympathy for him in his similar troubles, nor was he a man of such high character as to make it worth while to attempt to do so. Yet something may be said for justice at least even in his case, and a short account of the hard measure which he received from Cranmer, and the men of his school, may help to supply some explanation of the indifference with which he allowed himself to be made the instrument of their hard treatment in the next reign.

When Edward VI. came to the throne, Edmund Bonner—who had been employed for many years by Henry VIII. on foreign affairs, and was generally known as Dr. Edmund—had been Bishop of London for seven years, and had frankly complied with the ecclesiastical changes which had been made during the later years of Henry VIII. He also accepted the earlier measures of Edward VI.'s reign, and only began to show any opposition to the proceedings of the Privy Council when they went beyond what he considered to be their constitutional authority, and when they usurped over the Church, in the name of the child who was on the throne, the full authority of the Crown, as

Bonner complies with all legalized changes

CHAP IV

A.D. 1547

it had been exercised by Henry VIII. himself. This was at the time when a Commission was issued to Sir Anthony Cook and other laymen for the visitation of the Diocese of London. On September 12, 1547, he was brought before the Privy Council on the charge that, when these Commissioners presented his Highness' Injunctions and Homilies he had received them with "protestation in such words as follow, to the evil example of all such as should hear of it, and to the contempt of the authority which his Majesty hath justly in earth of this Church of England and Ireland." The Bishop only answers that his words were not exactly reported; but the Council find "in effect no variety in the same." When asked if he would stand to his protestation or refuse and revoke the same, he "was content to renounce, but began to couch it in such words as should have impaired the credit of the visitors, if his quiddities had not been found out and tried in the same." In the end he agreed "frankly" to set his hand to the following:—

He is brought before the Privy Council

His protestation and its "quiddities"

"The Protestation of the Bishop of London, made to the Visitors when he received the King's Majesty's Injunctions and Homilies.

"'I do receive these Injunctions and Homilies with this protestation, that I will observe them if they be not contrary and repugnant to God's laws and the statutes and ordinances of this Church.

"'The substantial part of the revocation of this is, I have thought it my bounden duty not only to declare before your Lordships that I do now, upon better consideration of my duty, renounce and revoke my said protestation, but also most humbly beseech your Lordships that this my revocation of the same may be likewise put in the same record for a perpetual memory of the truth. . . . .

"'EDMUND LONDON.'"

CHAP IV
A.D. 1547

Bonner was committed to the Fleet, but remained there only for a few weeks, being set free under the general pardon, and appearing in the House of Lords in the Parliament of the same year. During the next year, 1548, and part of 1549, he was engaged in his diocesan work, and complied with the changes that were made by Convocation and sanctioned by the Crown, opposing innovations until they became law, and then conforming to them "so obediently that it was not easy to find any matter against him."[2] All this while, however, Cranmer and the other leading men of the Privy Council were endeavouring to "find matter against him." On July 23, 1549, a letter was at last sent to him, accusing him of remissness in enforcing the King's laws and Injunctions, and ordering him to enforce them. He at once delivered a charge, printing it on the 26th, in which this order was obeyed; but a week afterwards, on August 2d, he was remonstrated with on the same grounds by the King;[3] and on the 11th he was again called before the Council—the same charge was repeated against him, with the addition that adultery was practised in the Diocese of London, which the Bishop of London ought to prevent: a curious accusation to bring against a bishop, in whose see lived the profligate courtiers of Henry VIII.'s and Edward VI.'s reigns, including some far from immaculate members of the body which was thus lecturing the Bishop. But as no ground could be discovered for proceeding to deprive Bonnor, that Ridley might be placed in his see instead, a plan had to be devised for making him commit himself, cautious as he was, and thus furnish a ground. Accordingly, he was ordered

Set free by general pardon

Charges trumped up against him

[2] Burnet's *Reform.*, ii. 218, Pocock's Ed.

[3] Edw. VI., State Papers, Dom., p. 21.

CHAP. IV. A.D. 1549

to preach a sermon at Paul's Cross on September 1st, the heads of which were placed in his hands by this strangely overbearing body of Councillors, those heads being, it can hardly be doubted, written by Cranmer, their principal ecclesiastical adviser and agent. On the Sunday appointed the sermon was preached, but it was beyond all probability that any bishop with a spark of independent feeling should slavishly clothe with his own words the "skeleton sermon" provided for him by the political theologians, or theological politicians, of whom the Privy Council was constituted, and accordingly the sermon proved unsatisfactory. John Hooper, soon afterwards made Bishop of Gloucester and Worcester, sat at the foot of the pulpit stairs to catch every word that fell from the obnoxious preacher's lips, and with him was William Latimer, late Provost of the College of St. Lawrence Pountney, and afterwards Dean of Peterborough.[4] They had both been censured by Bonner for teaching erroneous doctrine respecting the Blessed Sacrament, and now they were about to have their revenge. They informed against him to the Privy Council, having no doubt been sent as official spies. A commission was appointed within the week, consisting of Cranmer, Sharton, Sir William Petre, Sir Thomas Smith, and May, Dean of St. Paul's, with authority to "suspend, excommunicate, commit to prison, and deprive" the Bishop of London.

Commissioned to preach [sic] an official skeleton sermon

The revenge of Hooper and William Latimer

[4] In some editions of Foxe, and in later writers, the name given is that of Hugh Latimer, who had once been Bishop of Worcester: and so high an authority as Cooper, in his *Athenæ Cantabrigienses*, supposes that it was he, and not William Latimer, who thus acted as spy upon Bonner; but the nearly contemporary *Grey Friars' Chronicle* distinctly says that the two persons were William Latimer, afterwards Dean of Peterborough, and then parson of Lawrence Pountney, and John Hooper, sometime a white monk. [*Grey Friars' Chron.*, p. 66.] The college had been dissolved, but Latimer was made rector of its church, which then became parochial.

The commission was originally dated September 6th,[1] but the hearing took before it could take place at Chancellor's palace at Lambeth seven days between September 14th and October 1st. He was of course unaware — the occasion at which the commission was intended to serve having been determined on before it met. But for a time Bonner's law proved no enemy for the commissioners, and a new commission had to be issued which should enable them to do the work more speedily. The plain-spoken Bishop did not use smooth words when standing on his defence, and was treated to a remarkably overbearing and insulting manner by Lord Chancellor. In the end he said to them, "I have a few words to say to you, and my end. The two things you may take away, the last a use of your power. And to let you see that I acknowledge the King's power during his minority, I protest against the jurisdiction of your Court, and appeal immediately to his Majesty's royal authority and person." The appeal came to nothing, and on October 1, 1549, Bonner was deprived of his bishopric, and sent to the Marshalsea "to his great hurt and his mother upon it," says the Grey Friars Chronicle, there to remain until he was liberated by Queen Mary. It is noteworthy to find that on January 7th it was ordered by the Privy Council that his goods should be taken away, and that he should be made to be in ward by eight days. What men who were so recently invested and so lately possessed came into power again, after but a year or two's detention, only the very highest Christian principles could prevent them from using it about prejudice to their dealings with their persecutors.

Under 1549

Commencement of Bishop Bonner

He is imprisoned and his goods taken away

[1] Remembrancia, vol. iii., No. 112.

CHAP IV
A.D. 1547

§ 2. The Suppression of Bishop Gardiner

But the person who became most prominent in this struggle between the Churchmen of the old school and those who were introducing so many innovations was Stephen Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester. No public man's reputation ever suffered more from slipshod history than his. The traditional idea respecting him is that he was a selfish, scheming, cruel, partisan—one who was ready to go all lengths in support of the Papal authority and of abuses in the Church, and one who was only a shade less repulsive in character than "bloody Bonnor" himself. Poynet, who supplanted him in the see of Winchester during the reign of Edward VI., had the gracelessness to say of his predecessor, "This Doctor hath a swart colour. He hath a hanging look, frowning brows, eyes an inch within his head, a nose hooked like a buzzard, nostrils like a horse, ever snuffing in the wind, a sparrow mouth, and great paws like the devil, talons on his feet like a gripe, two inches longer than the natural toes, and so tied to with sinews that he cannot abide to be touched, nor scarce suffer them to touch the stones." Foxe's critico-historical acumen made him not quite sure about the latter peculiarity, but he more than half believed it. "I will not speak," he says, "of that which hath been constantly reported to me touching the monstrous making and mis-shaped fashion of his feet and toes, the nails whereof were said not to be like to other men's feet, but to crook downwards, and to be sharp like the claws of ravenous beasts."[6] It is true, he says, in another place, that we must number Gardiner

Gardiner greatly misrepresented

Foxe not quite sure about his clawed feet

[6] Poynet's *Treat. of Polit. Power*; Foxe, vii. 586, ed. 1838.

"amongst good lawyers," but then he is also "to be reckoned amongst ignorant and gross divines, proud prelates, and bloody persecutors, as both by his cruel life and pharisaical doctrine may appear, especially in the article of the Sacrament, and of our justification, and images, and also in crying out of the Paraphrase."[7]

Foxe not sure whether he was a Protestant or a Papist

"What learning or cunning soever he had, so it fared in him, as it doth in butchers, which use to blow up their flesh; even so he with boldness and stoutness, and specially with authority, made those gifts that he had to appear much greater than they were in very deed. . . . . If his doings and writings were according to his conscience, no man can rightly say whether he was a right Protestant or Papist."[8] There is no corroboration of Poynet's description in the portrait by Holbein, or in the monumental effigy at Winchester, and the writings of Gardiner give abundant evidence that he was a man of solid learning. Sir John Harrington, writing in Queen Elizabeth's days, says that he had heard much of Gardiner's clemency; and Persons hands down the tradition that he was a mild and gentle man.[9] Harrington speaks of his theology

Better traditions respecting him

[7] Foxe, vi. 266.

[8] *Ibid.*, vii., 586, ed. 1838.

[9] Persons' *Warning Word*, p. 34. This is confirmed by the evidence given by many of the witnesses examined by the Commissioners. Bishop Tunstal and several others say that Gardiner was "a true and just man" [Foxe, vi. 185, 189, 190, 202]. Dr. Weston "loveth him for his learning, virtue, and wit" [*Ibid.*, 222]. Another says he is "a man of great learning, virtue, and wisdom" [*Ibid.*, 224]. Another that he was "always a man of quietness, peace, and quiet behaviour" *Ibid.*, 244]. His attendants speak of him with affection, and say how gentle and courteous he was even to the two chaplains whom the Privy Council sent down to annoy him [*Ibid.*, 253, 254], and that he "ever hath been counted and taken for a person of quietness" [*Ibid.*, 253]. Another, who knew his life and his affairs intimately, testifies that "the said Bishop hath been always and is commonly taken and reputed for a man just of promise; and if he promiseth a little, he will perform that with more;" that he never was summoned in any suit, and would not permit any to be brought against any of his tenants, or against any who had done him wrong [*Ibid.*, 230].

CHAP IV
A.D. 1547

in the same tone as Foxe, saying that the Bishop was a "Catholic Protestant or protesting Catholic." But Foxe, whose evidence is often one way and his assertions the other, has given us a large body of documents respecting Gardiner, and in these we may find many traces of a keen and witty intellect, a genial disposition, and a distinctly "Anglican" theology. Perhaps no two ecclesiastics were ever much more nearly alike than Stephen Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, in the sixteenth, and Henry Phillpotts, Bishop of Exeter, in the nineteenth century.

His true character

When Edward VI. came to the throne, the Bishop of Winchester was sixty-four years of age, and had been incumbent of that see for sixteen years, being, with the exception of Tunstal, the senior Bishop of the Church of England. He had served a long apprenticeship in statesmanship and diplomacy—first under Wolsey, and then under Henry VIII. himself; but the influence of Queen Katherine Parr and the Seymours had prejudiced the King against him in the later years of his reign, and Gardiner had for some time been living in comparative privacy, engaged on the administration of his diocese.[1] But rumours of "innovations" soon reached him, and before the King had been dead a month he was in correspondence with his old friend and companion in embassies, Lord Hertford, now Duke of Somerset—at the Duke's own desire—respecting them.

Now an old man, and long a bishop

[1] So late as October 6, 1546, Gardiner's name appears in commissions for using the King's stamp as a substitute for his signature; the Commission of that date being issued "until Easter next." [Rymer, xv. 102.] The King's Will was dated December 30, 1546, and was stamped then, or when the King was dying, under this very Commission. But the lapse of this Commission put an end to his official influence; he was excluded from the executorship, and never appears as a Privy Councillor.

CHAP IV
A.D. 1547

The subject of this correspondence in the first instance was a sermon preached before the Court by Barlow, Bishop of St. David's. This sermon was evidently preached with the intention of persuading the Protector to take strong measures for promoting the Puritan view of the Reformation, for which he was well known to have an inclination. "If my Lord of St. David's," wrote Gardiner on February 28th, "or such others, have their head incumbered with any new platform, I would wish they were commanded, between this and the King's Majesty's full age, to draw the plat, diligently to hew the stones, dig the sand, and chop the chalk in the unseasonable time of building; and, when the King's Majesty cometh to full age, to present their labours to him; and, in the meantime, not to disturb the state of the realm whereof your grace is Protector, but that you may, in every part of religion, laws, lands, and decrees (which four contain the State), deliver the same unto our sovereign lord according unto the trust you be put in; which shall be much to your honour, and as all honest men wish and desire; to which desired effect there can be nothing so noisome and contrarious as trouble and disquiet."[2]

He wishes to maintain the *status quo* till Edward's majority

At the same time, he consistently deprecates the contemplated invasion of Scotland, saying, 'Let Scots be Scots," until the King is of age, then, if invasion is determined on, let him have the honour of conquest.

Disapproves of the invasion of Scotland

To this letter Somerset did not at once reply. But on May 3d Gardiner wrote to the Mayor of Portsmouth and to Captain Vaughan, who was in command of the garrison, respecting some unauthorized destruction of images. He afterwards visited the town, and found that an alabaster reredos had been broken down,

[2] Foxe, vi. 25, ed. 1838.

CHAP IV

A.D. 1547

"and in it an image of Christ crucified, so contemptuously handled as was in my heart terrible—to have the one eye bored out, and the side pierced, wherewith men were wondrously offended; for it is a very persecution beyond the sea used in that form where the person cannot be apprehended."[3] Gardiner pacified the people, but his letter, together with another written to Ridley on the subject of images and holy water, came to the hands of the Protector, who, or Cranmer for him, wrote a very able reply on the use and abuse of images.[4] Meanwhile Gardiner had again written to Somerset respecting the attacks which were being made on the observance of Lent, and also about some ribald tracts of Bale. Somerset replied in a half bantering tone, telling the Bishop that he was too easily alarmed about reports of innovations, and that his own most hearty wish was to hand over the kingdom to the King when he came of age, "rather more flourishing in men, possessions, wealth, learning, wisdom, and God's religion and doctrine, if it were possible, and God's will, than we found it."[5] The old Bishop replied that he cared little for Somerset's scolding. It reminded him of his old master, who, "when he gave me the Bishopric of Winchester, said he had often squared with me, but he loved me never the worse." And so, when the Protector enclosed in his scolding letter a copy of a Proclamation against lawless innovations, he could read his Grace's letters with great composure. As for his own style of writing, "in a good honest matter I follow rather mine own inclination than to take the pains to speak as if butter would not melt in my mouth."[6]

His disgust at the profane treatment of a Crucifix

His plain-spokenness

Gardiner was, however, looked upon as so danger-

[3] Foxe, vi. 37. [4] *Ibid.*, 28. [5] *Ibid.*, 36. [6] *Ibid.*, 37.

ous a rival by the extreme movement party, that every step he took was watched for the purpose of entrapping him into some mistake that would give them an advantage over him.

The course which he followed respecting the visitation was one of which no one ought ever to have complained. Before it took place he used his influence to prevent it from being carried out, remonstrating with the Protector, and with the Privy Council in his absence, against the haste with which they were pressing on innovations. On the other hand, when he was summoned up to London by the Council, he left strict orders at Winchester that if the visitors arrived during his absence they were to be received with the greatest respect, directing his registrar to go to meet them at Chichester, and to conduct them honourably to Winchester. There one of his chaplains was to act under his commission as his representative, his acts to be binding upon the Bishop himself. All this was done, the Oath of the Royal Supremacy taken on his behalf, and also the Oath by which the Papal Supremacy was abjured; and no opposition whatever was offered to the visitors. What more could Gardiner have done, since the Privy Council peremptorily required him to be in London himself while the visitation was going on?

His submission to authority

But the Protector, Archbishop Cranmer, and the majority of the Privy Councillors were determined to crush so formidable an opponent, and they followed him up with a most relentless persecution, till they had deprived him of his bishopric, and sent him to prison for nearly all the rest of his days.

Necessary to crush him

The visitation was to reach Winchester in October, and a report of some words which were alleged to have

CHAP IV A.D. 1547

been used by Gardiner respecting it was laid hold of by the Privy Council as a reason for summoning him to London, and placing him under arrest. On September 21, 1547, the Council Register records that Philip Paris, *generosus*, was brought before that dreaded tribunal, "for that, with certain others sitting before the door of Antoney Bouvise, he said that the Bishop of Winchester had declared to him that there was both heresy and treason in the King's Majesty's Homilies." His answer was that, to the best of his recollection, these words were his own and not the Bishop's. It would appear as if he had been summoned as a witness against Gardiner, for on the same day, according to another Privy Council book,[7] the Bishop was ordered to appear before the Council on the following "Sunday, in the morning, for such matters as shall be declared to him at his coming hither." On that day he appeared at Hampton Court with his "sleeves and bosom trussed full of books"[8] to support the allegations of his letter against the orthodoxy of the Homilies, which he had been required to set forth as the standard of faith in his diocese. But the Council would not listen to arguments, and gave him the option of either obeying their orders or going to the Fleet. Of course Gardiner chose the latter, and the Register further records that on that day—Sunday, September 25, 1547—"the Bishop of Winchester, having written to the Lords of his Majesty's Council, and, besides that, having spoken to others impertinent things of the King's Majesty's visitation, and refused to set forth and receive the Injunctions and Homilies; for that, as he said, being examined by their Lordships

Gardiner summoned before the Council

He is sent to prison

[7] That among the Harleian MSS., p. 352.

[8] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 44, ed. 1838.

thereupon, they contained things dissident with the Word of God, so as his conscience would not suffer him to accept them, was sent under the safe leading of Sir Antony Wingfield to the Fleet." CHAP IV A.D. 1547

But when Gardiner was once safely lodged in gaol the Privy Council took no further trouble about him, and he remained there without any trial, and without any further communication respecting the charges against him, during the rest of that year. In the middle of November he wrote to Somerset that he had spoken with no one but the prison warders since his committal, that he was not allowed the attendance of a barber or a tailor, and that, although he was in bad health, he was not permitted to see a physician. But although he was in such miserable circumstances, and felt them bitterly, the genial old Bishop could not avoid a "merry word" about them. He charged Archbishop Cranmer with borrowing the Protector's authority to use the Fleet, the Marshalsea, and the King's Bench, "wherewith to cause men to agree to that it pleaseth him to call truth in religion." The time would come, he thought, when the Archbishop would "percase have some agree unto it, as poor men kneel at Rome when the Bishop there goeth by; that is to say, are knocked on the head with a halbert if they kneel not; for that is one piece of the office of the Bishop of Rome's guard."[9] Complains of his treatment in the Fleet

In the beginning of the year a general pardon was proclaimed, and as Gardiner could not be excepted from it, not being even accused of transgressing any law, he was set free—for a fortnight. On Saturday, January 7, 1548, he was sent for from the Fleet to Is set free by the General pardon

[9] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 48, 50.

CHAP IV

A.D. 1548

Hampton Court; and on the Sunday morning[1] he was called in before Somerset, Cranmer, and other members of the Privy Council, and told that he was included in the general pardon. "Whereupon," says the Register, "having ministered to him a good lesson and admonition, he was discharged of imprisonment." "Whereunto I answered," says Gardiner himself, "that I was learned never to refuse the King's Majesty's pardon, and in strength as that was; and I would and did humbly thank his Majesty there-for."[2] But he soon saw that he had not escaped altogether; for he was then asked whether he would conform himself to the Injunctions and Homilies, "and such other doctrine as should be set forth from time to time by the King's Highness and clergy of the realm. Articles of part whereof touching justification[3] were then exhibited to him to declare in the same his opinion. He made answer that he would conform himself accordingly as other bishops did; and touching the Article delivered to him, he desired respite of answer for four or five days, which was accorded him." On the following Thursday, January 12th, he went to the Duke of Somerset, at Sheen, and gave in his opinion in writing. On the next Thursday he was actually committed by the Privy Council again, this time to be imprisoned in his own house, because he would not subscribe to this Article on Justification.

Not allowed to continue free,

but imprisoned in his own house

[1] There seem always to have been meetings of the Privy Council for business on Sundays during Edward VI.'s reign.

[2] Foxe, vi. 65, ed. 1838.

[3] This was probably the following, which is the eleventh of the Forty-two Articles afterwards published in 1552: "Justification by onely faith in Jesus Christ, in that sence as it is declared in the homilie of Justification, is a moste certaine and holesome doctrine for Christian menne." It is considerably modified in our present Articles of Religion by the twelfth, which was added in 1562. It may be doubted whether one in a thousand of "Christian men" have any real notion as to what the doctrine here called "wholesome" to them means.

CHAP IV
A.D. 1548

The popes of the Privy Council, with Cranmer for their leader, were "knocking him on the head to make him kneel" to them and their fanatical notions about "justification;" Ridley, nearly twenty years his junior, being sent to convert him to their creed, but in vain.

Allowed to go to his diocese,

When Lent began, Gardiner was permitted to go down to Winchester, and as he halted at Farnham on the way he preached a sermon in the parish church, at the request of the vicar, in whose house he was staying, on February 24th, in which he exhorted people to obedience, and to conformity in ceremonies to the orders of the authorities.[4] While at Winchester he lived perfectly quiet, carrying out himself the obedience he enjoined on others;[5] but on April 1st the Council Letter-Book shows that a message was sent to him from Greenwich, to say that there had been complaints of disturbances at Winchester, which had been chiefly caused by his Lordship's dependents kindling up people's minds at the things lately set forth by the King's authority. He is ordered to dismiss such stirrers up of tumults, and to come up himself to Greenwich within fourteen days, "there to remain."[6] He was ill at the time, and unable to ride from Winchester to Greenwich—no strange thing for a man at sixty-five years of age; but pressing orders were sent down by the Council, and just before Whitsuntide Gardiner made the journey in a horse litter. On his arrival he was charged by Somerset with disobedience in not coming up at the first, to which he replied that after the first order he had been "respited by other letters" on account of his sickness. He was then charged with having kept up old ceremonies, to

but is summoned before the Council again

[4] Foxe, vi. 206, 208, 211, 213, 214, ed. 1838.

[5] *Ibid.*, 208-210, 212, 216.

[6] Harl. MS., 352.

CHAP IV
A.D. 1548

which he replied that he had kept up none but those which were ordered by the laws. Then he was charged with having preached the doctrine of the Real Presence of Christ in the Sacrament, but he denied using the word "real," declaring his dislike of it as not being scriptural, and the words of Scripture being amply enough to state the doctrine of Christ's Presence. Lastly, he was charged with obstructing two of the royal chaplains whom the Council had sent down to preach in the cathedral by preaching himself, to prevent them from using the pulpit; and it was true enough that he had done so.

Charges brought against him

These charges were but colourable pretexts, however, for carrying out the determination of the Council to silence the most formidable opponent of innovation.[7] When they were found insufficient a new trap was laid, Somerset ordering the Bishop to preach a written sermon before the King on St. Peter's Day, June 29th, and giving him written instructions as to the subjects of his sermon, and the mode in which he was to deal with them, a most marvellous piece of arrogance and tyranny. Gardiner refused to write down his sermon, saying that to preach in that manner would be to proclaim himself "an offender," which he was not; but

He is required to preach a sermon to order

[7] This is shown by the tone in which its leading members spoke of Gardiner. Thus Warwick, afterwards the Duke of Northumberland and Regent, wrote to Cecil on June 14th, "Being desirous to hear whether my Lord hath proceeded with the arrogant Bishop according to his deserving, is the chief occasion of my writing to you at this time. I did hear that his day to be before my Lords and the Council was appointed as yesterday; but if it had been so, I suppose it would have been more spoken of; but I rather fear that his accustomed wiliness, with the persuasions of some of his dear friends and assured brethren, shall be the cause that the Fox shall yet again deceive the Lion." [Cal. State Papers, Edw. VI., vol. iv.; Tytler, i. 108.]

Sir Thomas Smith also wrote on July 1st, "I long now to hear tell of my Lord of Winchester's summons, and how he hath demeaned himself therein and after it." [*Ibid.*]

CHAP IV
A.D. 1548

though he would not preach from dictation, he was willing to deal with the subjects named in his own way. Upon this, Somerset and the Council did their utmost to make him speak as they wished, and so give them his countenance and support for what they called "his Majesty's proceedings." Somerset sent for him to a private interview, at which, says Gardiner, "I came in at a back door to himself alone, saving he took to him as witness (he said) the Lord, now of Wiltshire. The Protector had in his hand the written opinion of lawyers as to how far a bishop should be bound by the King's orders, and what punishment should be awarded to any bishop disobeying them. These opinions, however, had little influence with Gardiner, who was probably a better lawyer than any of those who had written them. The upshot of the interview was that "my Lord said I should speak with no man, and I should do as I was bidden, or do worse, and bade me advise me till dinner was done. And then I was conveyed by the Lord Great Master to his chamber, and there left alone to dine, as was indeed honourably prepared. But I took myself to be in the nature of a prisoner, and a restrained man." At two o'clock in the afternoon Sir Thomas Smith, the Secretary of the Council, was sent to him to see whether dinner had softened the "arrogant Bishop's" determination, but all the concession to be got out of him was that he would speak of the matters suggested, and that he would speak only the truth, and if he spake the truth, then they would have their desire. He did not wish to preach, but if they required him still to do so, he would preach according to his conscience. Another interview with Somerset followed, and the Protector at last gave up the point of the written sermon,

His private interview with Somerset

His bold independence

CHAP IV
A.D. 1548

consenting to one preached extempore, if the required subjects were dealt with.[8] But twice more was Cecil sent to him with fresh threats and persuasions, and at the last moment a peremptory letter was written by Somerset, much in the tone of Balak to Balaam, "Neither curse them at all, nor bless them at all," forbidding the Bishop to say anything whatever about the Holy Sacrament.[9]

His anticipations of death

The following hours were passed by Gardiner in great agitation, and he had probably made up his mind that his death on the scaffold would be the end of the persecution which he was enduring. He neither ate nor drank until he had ended his sermon the next day, and walked up and down his study in great trouble all the night.[1] But no want of self-possession showed itself when the critical time had arrived, and he bravely mounted the pulpit in the King's Privy Garden at New Hall, Westminster, now Whitehall, in the presence of his Majesty, his Grace, and their Lordships," says the Privy Council Register, "and of such an audience as the like whereof hath not lightly been seen." What he said on the occasion has been preserved for us in the pages of Foxe, for Nicolas Udall, a late head-master of Eton, and a man of very unsavoury reputation,[2] "was there in the pulpit, diligently noting and marking the said sermon," as he himself tells us, "at the request of a noble personage of this realm."[3]

He preaches, but not to order

That famous sermon, which led its author into five years' of very dreary imprisonment, exactly confirms the character of a "Catholic Protestant," given him by Sir John Harrington; and as Gardiner was taken to be

[8] Foxe, vi. 67-70.
[9] *Ibid.*, 86.
[1] *Ibid.*, 197, 232.
[2] See vol. i. p. 541, *n.*
[3] Foxe, vi. 157, ed. 1838.

CHAP IV
A.D. 1548

the representative of the anti-Puritan party by his contemporaries, and has been so taken by most subsequent writers, it may be as well to reproduce some portions of it, for the purpose of showing how different the principles of that old Anglican party were from those of the Ultramontanes who subsequently sprang up under the influence of the Spanish advisers of Queen Mary, and the Jesuit "mission" of Queen Elizabeth's time.[4]

The Bishop took his text from the Gospel of the day, which was the same as that afterwards used in the English Prayer-Book, and narrates the Confession of St. Peter. In his Bidding Prayer he commenced, "To Almighty God, your most excellent Majesty, our sovereign Lord, King of England, France, and Ireland, and of the Church of England and Ireland, next and immediately under God, here on earth the Supreme Head." There was no shrinking here from a full declaration of the Royal Supremacy, and that on St. Peter's Day, when, if at any time, the Papal Supremacy is usually flaunted before the world. But in the body of the sermon he distinctly repudiated the Papal Supremacy in the following language—language which is that of a clear-headed and self-possessed theologian, and which offers a great contrast to the abusive and exaggerated tone taken by less learned and judicious men among his contemporaries:—

Gardiner's loyal Bidding Prayer

"But now for a further declaration. It is a marvellous thing that upon these words the Bishop of Rome should found his supremacy; for whether it be 'super petram' or 'Petrum,' all is one matter. It maketh nothing at all for our purpose to make a foundation of any such supremacy.

His declaration on the Pope's Supremacy

[4] Foxe, vi. 87-93, ed. 1838. In all other editions of Foxe, from 1563 till 1838, all but the first and the last, this important illustration of his History was part of the suppressed portions.

CHAP IV
A.D. 1548

For otherwise, when Peter spake carnally to Christ (as in the same chapter a little following), Satan was his name: where Christ said, 'Go after Me, Satan.' So that the name of Peter is no foundation for the supremacy; but, as it is said in Scripture, 'Fundati estis super fundamentum apostolorum et prophetarum;' that is, by participation (for godly participation giveth names of things) he might be called 'the head of the Church,' as the head of the river is called the head; because he was the first that made this confession of Christ, which is not an argument for dignity, but for the quality that was in the man—for the first man is not evermore the best. The head man of a quest is not always the best man in the quest, but is chosen to be the head man for some other quality that is in him. Virtue may allure many, so that the inferior person in dignity may be the better in place, as the King sometimes chooseth a mean man to be of his Council, of whom he hath a good opinion; yet is the King the King still. And in some case the King of England might send to Rome; and if the Bishop of Rome were a man of such wisdom, virtue, and learning, that he were able, in matters of controversy concerning religion, to set a unity in the Church of England, the King might well enough send unto him for his counsel and help; and yet should not in so doing give the Bishop of Rome any superiority over the King. For if a King be sick he will have the best physician; if he hath war he will have the best captain; and yet are not these the superiors, but the inferiors. A schoolmaster is a subject, a physician is a subject, a captain is a subject, councillors are subjects; yet do these order and direct the King. Wherefore, leaving the Bishop of Rome, this I say, to declare of what opinion I am. I do not now speak what I could say. I have spoken beyond the seas; I have written; my books be abroad; but this is not the place here. I say that this place maketh nothing for the Bishop of Rome, but for Christ only; for none can put 'aliud fundamentum nisi id quod positum est, qui est Christus Jesus.'"

In what sense St. Peter was head of the Church

How the Pope might be useful to England

Christ the one true Head of the Church

Notwithstanding also the warnings he had received, Gardiner spoke at some length respecting the Holy

Sacrament. Having explained the words of St. Peter, he introduced the subject of the Sacrament by saying— CHAP IV A.D. 1548

"But now we must consider what Christ is. Christ was a sacrifice. He was sent from the Trinity to be our Mediator between God and us, and to reconcile us to the favour of God the Father. He was the Bishop that offered for our sins, and the sacrifice that was offered. And as He is our Bishop, so He is our mean to pacify God for us, for that was the office of a bishop 'to sacrifice for the sins of the people, and to make intercession for the people.' And as He was our sacrifice, so was He our reconciliation to God again. But we must confess and believe Him thoroughly, I say, for as He was our Bishop then, so is it He that still keepeth us in favour with God. And like as His sacrifice then made was sufficient for us to deliver us from our sins, and to bring us in favour with God, so, to continue us in the same favour of God, He ordained a perpetual remembrance of Himself. He ordained Himself as a memory of Himself at His Last Supper, when He instituted the Sacrament of the Altar. Not for another redemption, as though the first had not been sufficient, nor as though the world needed a new redemption from sin; but that ye might thoroughly remember His Passion, He instituted this Sacrament by His most Holy Word, saying, 'This is My Body;' which word is sufficient to prove the Sacrament, and maketh sufficiently for the substance thereof. And this daily sacrifice He instituted, to be continued amongst Christian men, not for need of another redemption or satisfaction for the sins of the world (for that was sufficiently performed by His sacrifice of His Body and Blood done upon the Cross), neither that He be now our Bishop, for need of any further sacrifice to be made for sin, but to continue us in the remembrance of His Passion suffered for us; to make us strong in believing the fruit of His Passion; to make us diligent in thanksgiving for the benefit of His Passion; to establish our faith, and to make it strong in acknowledging the efficacy of His Death and Passion suffered for us. And this is the true understanding of the Mass; not for another redemption, but that we may be strong in believing the

The Eucharistic sacrifice

Memorial not Satisfactory

CHAP IV A.D. 1548

benefit of Christ's Death and bloodshedding for us upon the Cross."

He then went on to speak very strongly respecting the restoration of the cup to the laity:—

"The Parliament very well ordained Mass to be kept; and because we should be the more strong in faith and devotion towards God, it was well done of the Parliament for moving the people more and more with devotion, to ordain that this Sacrament should be received in both kinds. Therefore I say that the Act of Parliament for receiving the Sacrament of the Altar in both kinds was well made. . . . I have now declared what I think of the Act of Parliament made for the receiving of the Sacrament of the Body and Blood of our Saviour Jesus Christ in both kinds. Ye have my mind and opinion concerning the proclamation that came forth for the same Act;[5] and I have shown my mind therein even as plainly as I think. And I have ever been agreeable to this precinct. I have oftentimes reasoned in it. I have spoken and also written in it, both beyond the seas and on this side the seas. My books be abroad, which I cannot unwrite again. I was ever of this opinion, that it might be received in both kinds; and it was a constitution provincial scarce two hundred years ago, made by Peckham, the Archbishop of Canterbury, that it should be received in both kinds; at leastwise, 'in ecclesiis majoribus'—that is, in the greater churches, for in the smaller churches it was not thought to be so expedient. This have I ever thought of this matter. I have never been of other mind, nor I have not changed my conscience; but I have obeyed and followed the order of the realm; and I pray you to obey orders as I have obeyed, that we may all be the children of obedience. . . . I like well the Communion,[6] because it provoketh men more and more to devotion. I like well the proclamation, because

Communion in both kinds

the ancient English practice

[5] This was the Proclamation prefixed to the "Order of Communion" of 1548.

[6] That is, the "Order of Communion" of 1548. The First Prayer-Book of Edward VI. was not yet compiled.

it stoppeth the mouths of all such as unreverently speak or rail against the Sacrament. I like well the rest of the King's Majesty's proceedings concerning the Sacrament." CHAP IV A.D. 1548

In another part of the sermon he says, respecting the Act for the Abolition of Chantries :—

"If chantries were abused by applying the Mass for the satisfaction of sin, or to bring men to heaven, or to take away sin, or to make men of wicked just—I like the Act well; and they might well be dissolved, for the Mass was not instituted for any such purpose. . . . When men add unto the Mass an opinion of satisfaction, or of a new redemption, then do they put it to another use than it was ordained for. I, that allow Mass so well, and I, that allow praying for the dead (as indeed the dead are of Christian charity to be prayed for),[7] yet can agree with the realm in that matter of putting down chantries." Masses no satisfaction for sin

He ended his sermon by a personal appeal to the boy King :—

"Thus have I showed my opinion in orders proceeding from the inferiors, and in orders proceeding from the higher powers; and thus I have, as I trust, plainly declared myself, without any covering or counterfeiting. And I beseech your most excellent Majesty to esteem and take me as I am, and not to be slandered in me; for I have told you the plain truth as it is, and I have opened my conscience unto you. I have not played the post with you, to carry truth in my letters and lies in my mouth; for I would not for all the Gardiner addresses the King

[7] These words of Gardiner may be compared with some in one of Latimer's Sermons. "This, to pray for dead folks, this is not found, for it never was lost. How can that be found that was not lost?" [Latimer's *Serm.*, i. 48, ed. 1824.] In another he says, that where the "devil is resident," there "down with Christ's cross, up with purgatory pickpurse, up with him—the Popish purgatory, I mean" [*Ibid.*, 66], evidently using the same cautious distinction as was afterwards used in the 22d Article of Religion, which condemns "the *Romish* doctrine concerning purgatory," leaving other doctrine concerning it an "open question." In another sermon he indignantly contradicted the report that he had denied purgatory.

CHAP IV
A.D. 1548

world make a lie in this place; but I have disclosed the plain truth as it lieth in my mind. And thus I commit your most excellent Majesty, and all your most honourable councillors, with the rest of the devout audience here present, unto God. To Whom be all honour, laud, and glory, world without end."

The Privy Council's criticism of the sermon

This sermon of Bishop Gardiner, which might now be preached in any pulpit of England without being thought otherwise than "High Church," is thus described in the records of the Privy Council in an entry dated the following day. After alleging that the Bishop had promised to declare in a sermon how much he was pleased with the King's proceedings, the entry goes on to state that when the time for doing so came "he did not only most arrogantly and disobediently, and that in the presence of his Majesty, their Grace and Lordships, and of such an audience as the like whereof hath not been seen, speak of certain matters contrary to an express commandment given to him on his Majesty's behalf, both by mouth and by letters; but also in the rest of the articles whereunto he had agreed before used such a manner of utterance as was very likely, even there presently, to have stirred a great tumult;" although many witnesses afterwards declared that no sign of disturbance showed itself, and that the audience quietly dispersed.[8]

Gardiner arrested

In the afternoon of that day—Saturday, June 30, 1548—when Gardiner thought the danger of the crisis was over, Sir Anthony Wingfield and Sir Ralph Sadler, "accompanied by a great number of the guard," arrested him, and carried him to the Tower. There the old Bishop remained for more than five

[8] This entry is signed by Somerset, Cranmer, St. John, J. Russell, and T. Cheyne.

CHAP IV
A.D. 1548-50

years—until he was past seventy years of age—without trial, and without any definite accusation being brought against him, except that of failing to preach the above sermon exactly according to the orders given him![9] At first he was confined very strictly in the Garden Tower, not being allowed to go outside the door of his chamber, and being treated with the same severity as if he had been charged with high treason—a charge the Council never dared even to hint at. But a prisoner in that Tower having died of the plague, Gardiner was removed for a short time to the King's lodgings, with similar strictness as to his seclusion;[1] and though he was suffering from one of the complaints incident to old age, and of which he ultimately died, it was long before even his request to see a physician was granted. He wrote respectful but manly letters to the Privy Council and to Somerset, complaining of the gross injustice with which, as an Englishman and as a Peer of Parliament, he was being treated, saying that month after month he was kept in that miserable prison "with want of air to relieve my body, want of books to relieve my mind, want of good company—the only solace in this world—and finally,

His strict confinement,

and his appeal against the injustice

[9] As Foxe puts it, "Among other divers and sundry crimes and accusations deduced against this bishop, the especial and chiefest matter wherewith he was charged depended upon his sermon made before the King's Majesty in not satisfying and discharging his duty therein; partly in omitting that which he was required to do, partly in speaking of those things which he was forbid to entreat of" [Foxe, vi. 86, ed. 1838]. Burnet calmly suggests that the reason why the Privy Council dealt such hard measure to him was, "that they knew Gardiner's haughty temper, and that it was necessary to mortify him a little, though the pretence on which they did it seemed too slight for such severities." [Burnet's *Hist. of Ref.*, ii. 91, Pocock's ed.] In a later volume Burnet says more justly, "Here was severity upon severity, which as it raised him to be depended on as the head of the Popish party, so it must have recommended him to the compassions of all equitable people." [Burnet's *Hist. of Ref.*, iii. 346, Pocock's ed.]

[1] Foxe, vi. 194, ed. 1838.

CHAP IV

A.D. 1550

want of a just cause why I should have come hither at all."[2]

At last the general discontent which Gardiner's imprisonment without trial caused, made it necessary for the Privy Council to do something. On June 8, 1550, when he had been two years all but a few days in the Tower, the Council resolved that the Bishop of Winchester, having been so long imprisoned, if he would repent and reform, he should be received into the King's favour again. If not, the King would proceed against him. The event showed that there was no intention of allowing his energetic voice to be heard in Parliament, or of permitting him any longer to govern his see, and that this was only the first step in the formalities which were to end in his deprivation by Cranmer. The following day Gardiner was visited by the Duke of Somerset (who had himself been recently released from imprisonment in the same place), the Lord Chancellor Rich, and several other members of the Privy Council, who required him to subscribe to the Act of Uniformity. This he declined to do while he was kept in prison without trial or law. Would he desire of the King to be his good Lord? "Alas! my Lord, quoth I, do you think that I have so forgotten myself? My duty, quoth I, requireth so; and I will on my knees desire him to be my good Lord, and my Lord Protector also, quoth I. That is well said, quoth my Lord Chancellor. And what will ye say further? quoth my Lord Chancellor. In good faith, quoth I, this—That I thought when I had preached that I had not offended at all, and I think so still;

Proposals made to him

Asserts his constant loyalty to the Crown

[2] Stow's *Annals*, p. 600. See also a similar letter, evidently from Gardiner, though it has no name attached, in the Egerton Papers, p. 25.

and had it not been for the Article of the Supremacy, I would have rather feigned myself sick than be occasion of this that hath followed; but going to the pulpit, I must needs say as I said. Well, quoth my Lord Chancellor, let us go to our purpose again. Ye will, quoth he, desire the King's Majesty to be your good Lord, and the Lord Protector also; and ye say, ye thought not to have offended. All this I will say, quoth I. And ye will, quoth my Lord Chancellor, submit yourself to be ordered by my Lord Protector. Nay, quoth I, by the law; for my Lord Protector, quoth I, hath scourged me over sore this year to put my matter in his hands now."[3] The Commission gave him hopes of immediate release, and on the strength of it the old man invited the Lieutenant of the Tower and his wife to a farewell supper. But a month passed away, and the only favour shown him was permission to walk in the gallery when the Duke of Norfolk was not there. On July 8th it was determined "that particular articles should be drawn, to see whether he would subscribe them or not," and a letter sent to him from the King, requiring him to subscribe them "upon pain of incurring such punishment and penalties as by our laws may be put upon you for doing the same."

CHAP IV

A.D. 155

Will not be order by the Pr tector, bu by the la

These "Articles" were six in number, and related to the Royal Supremacy, to the King's authority in abrogating holy-days, to the Book of Common Prayer, to the King's authority during his minority, to the repeal of the Act of the Six Articles, and to the King's authority in reforming ecclesiastical abuses. Gardiner readily subscribed the whole of the Articles, but refused

Six Articles offer for his signature

[3] Foxe, vi. 73, ed. 1838.

CHAP IV
A.D. 1550

to subscribe the preamble, in which he was made to acknowledge the justice of his punishment, writing against this in the margin, "I cannot in my conscience confess the preface, knowing myself to be of that sort I am indeed, and ever have been."[4] But this preface

[4] The following is a copy of these articles as they appear in the Council Register. Foxe has printed the first article relating to the King's Supremacy before the preamble, and has omitted the Bishop's marginal note. They are called in the Council book "The Articles appointed unto all:"—

"The Bishop's answer to this article—

'I cannot in my conscience confess the preface, knowing myself to be of that sort I am indeed, and ever have been.'"

"Whereas I, Stephen, Bishop of Winchester, have been suspected as one much favouring the Bishop of Rome's authority, decrees, and adjunctions, and as one that did not approve or allow the King's Majesty's proceedings in alteration of certain rites in religion, and was convented before the King's Council and admonished thereof; and having certain things appointed for me to do and preach for my declaration, have not done that as I ought to do, although I promised to do the same; whereby I have not only incurred the King's Majesty's indignation, but also divers of his Highness's subjects have, by mine example, taken encouragement (as his Grace's Council is certainly informed) to repine at his Majesty's most godly proceedings, I am right sorry there-for, and acknowledge myself condignly to have been punished; and do most heartily thank his Majesty, that of his great clemency it hath pleased his Highness to deal with me, not according to rigour, but mercy. And to the intent it may appear to the world how little I do repine at his Highness's doings, which be in religion most godly, and to the commonwealth most profitable, I do affirm and say freely of mine own will, without any compulsion, as ensueth.

"1. First, That by the Law of God and authority of Scripture the King's Majesty and his successors are the Supreme Heads of the Churches of England and Ireland.

"2. Item, That the appointing of Holy-days and fasting-days, as Lent, Ember-days, or any such like, or to dispense therewith, is in the King's Majesty's authority and power; and his Highness, as Supreme Head of the said Churches of England and Ireland, and governor thereof, may appoint the manner and time of Holy-days and fasting, or dispense therewith, as to his wisdom shall seem most convenient for the honour of God, and the wealth of this realm.

"3. Item, That the King's Majesty hath most christianly and godly set forth, by and with the consent of the whole Parliament, a devout and Christian Book of Service of the Church, to be frequented in the Church, which book is so accepted and allowed of all Bishops, Pastors, Curates, and all Ministers Ecclesiastical of the realm of England, and so of them to be declared and commended in all places where they shall fortune to preach or speak to the people of it, that it is a godly and Christian book and order, and to be allowed, accepted, and observed of all the King's Majesty's subjects.

"4. I do acknowledge the King's Majesty that now is, whose life God long preserve, to be my Sovereign and Lord, and Supreme

CHAP IV

A.D. 1550

was imperatively required by the Privy Council, who decided next day that, because "he sticketh upon the submission, which is the principalest point," it should be returned to him for his signature. On the 13th the Commissioners reported that the Bishop "stood precisely in justification of himself, that he had never offended the King's Majesty, wherefore he utterly refused to make any submission at all," for the more surety of which denial it was agreed that a new book of articles should be sent to him, and that the Commissioners should have with them a divine, Bishop Ridley, and a temporal lawyer, Mr. Goderick. The new articles[5] began with the old preamble, but were twenty in number instead of six, relating to every change that had taken place in ecclesiastical matters from the dissolution of the monasteries onward. His answer on this occasion was that "to the Article of Submission he would in nowise consent, affirming, as he had done before, that he had never offended the

Twenty Articles offered for his signature

Head under Christ to me as a Bishop of his realm, and natural subject to his Majesty, and now in this his young and tender age to be my full and entire King; and that I, and all other his Highness's subjects, are bound to obey all his Majesty's Proclamations, Statutes, Laws, and Commandments, made, promulgated, and set forth in his Highness's young age, as well as though his Highness were at this present xxx. or xl. years old.

"5. Item, I confess and acknowledge that the Statute commonly called the Statute of vi. Articles, for just causes and grounds, is by authority of Parliament repealed and disannulled.

"6. Item, That his Majesty and his Successors have authority in the said Churches of England, and also of Ireland, to alter, reform, correct, and amend all errors and abuses, and all rites and ceremonies ecclesiastical, as shall seem from time to time to his Highness and his Successors most convenient for the edification of his people; so that the same alteration be not contrary or repugnant to the Scripture and law of God.

"Subscribed on this wise—
Ste. Winton.
Whereunto the Council also hath subscribed their hands—

E. Somerset.	Will[m] Paget.
J. Bedford.	Edwarde Northe.
G. Cobham.	J. Warwick.
W. Petre.	E. Clynton.
W. Wiltshire.	W. Herbert.

W. Northt."

[5] See Foxe vi. 82.

CHAP IV
A.D. 1550

King's Majesty in any such sort as should give him cause thus to submit himself." As for the twenty articles, he would have nothing to say to them while he was in prison, it being unreasonable that he should subscribe them under such circumstances.

His bishopric sequestrated

The sturdy Bishop was taken to Westminster on the fourth day afterwards—July 19, 1550—and persisting in his refusal to acknowledge himself guilty of offences which he had never committed, his bishopric was sequestrated for three months, with an intimation that if he still remained obstinate at the end of that time he would be deprived. When the time had expired a Commission was appointed, of which Archbishop Cranmer was president, Bishops Ridley of London, Goodrich of Ely, and Holbeach of Lincoln, with four laymen, being the other members, for the purpose of examining him, and, if he continued in his contempt, depriving him. The principal sittings of this Commission were held at Lambeth, and much evidence was taken in writing respecting the Bishop's obedience or disobedience to "the King's Majesty's proceedings."[6] The Commissioners began their work on December 15, 1550, and ended it on February 14, 1551, when Cranmer pronounced the sentence of deprivation; and, if one may judge from his own words, he seems to have done this with great relish.[7] On the next day

He is deprived by Cranmer

[6] Gardiner's own account of his conduct and repudiation of the charges, such as they were, which were brought against him, will be found in a valuable document of eighty-five paragraphs, called by Foxe "A Long Matter Justificatory proposed by the Bishop of Winchester." [Foxe, vi. 105-119, ed. 1838.]

[7] "The third thing to admonish the reader of is this, that when I name Doctor Stephen Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, I mean not that he is so now, but forasmuch as he was Bishop of Winchester at the time when he wrote his book against me, therefore I answer his book as written by the Bishop of Winchester, which else needed greatly none answer for any great learning or substance of matter that is in it." [Answer to Gardiner, Preface.]

Cranmer was present at the Council Board, and the report of Gardiner's conduct before the Commissioners led to a harsh and bitter Minute of Council. "Upon debating of the Bishop of Winchester's case," it said, "forasmuch as it appeared he had at all times before the judges of his cause used himself unreverently to the King's Majesty, and very sklaundfullie towards his Counsel, and especially yesterday, being the day of his judgement given against him, he called his judges hereticks and sacramentaries,[8] they being there the King's Commissioners, and of his Highness's Counsel; it was therefore concluded by the whole board that he should be removed from the lodging he hath now in Tower to a meaner lodging, and now to wait upon him but one, by the Lieutenant's appointment, in such sort as by the resort of any man to him he have not the means to send out to any man, or to hear from any man. And likewise that his books and papers be

Exceedingly harsh treatment of Gardiner in prison

[8] In his appeal to the King against the sentence pronounced on him by the Commissioners, Gardiner had said, "Moreover, my Lord of Canterbury, my Lord of London, and my Lord of Lincoln, Commissioners as pretensed aforesaid, do, contrary to the laws ecclesiastical of this realm, teach and set forth the manifest and condemned error against the very true Presence of Christ's Body and Blood in the Sacrament of the Altar." [Foxe, vi. 263, ed. 1838.] On January 26th Gardiner had presented to the Privy Council a book entitled "An explication and assertion of the true Catholic Faith, touching the most blessed Sacrament of the Altar, with confutation of a book written against the same; made by Steven, Bishop of Winchester, and exhibited by his own hand for his defence to the King's Majesty's Commissioners at Lambeth." This book was printed at Rouen. It was answered by Cranmer (when he had effectually handcuffed his adversary) in a treatise published a few months afterwards, and the book contains much abusive language. There is a copy of Cranmer's answer in the Parish Library of Broughton, Hunts., which formerly belonged to "Tho. Baker, Coll. Jo. Socius ejectus," and which contains a large number of annotations in the margin, said by Baker to be in the handwriting of Gardiner. These annotations are written in a very reverent and gentle spirit, strongly contrasting with the reckless and rude language of Cranmer. They show a thorough acquaintance with the subject, and are much more logical than the portions of Cranmer's treatise which they criticise.

CHAP IV

A.D. 1551-53

taken from him and seen; and that from henceforth he have neither pen, ink, nor paper to write his detestable purposes, but be sequestered from all conference and from all means that may serve him to practice any way." Under that order he remained until August 5, 1553, by which time the whole term of his imprisonment during the reign of Edward VI. amounted to five years and nine months.

Cranmer's expenses

The entries upon the subject in the Council Register close with a grant of £266, 13s. 4d.—upwards of £3000 in modern money—to Archbishop Cranmer for his charges in Gardiner's and other matters.

§ 3. The Growing Irreligion of the Anti-Church Party

The tendency to a reaction was, moreover, influenced very strongly by the sight and sound of a terribly irreligious spirit which was growing up throughout the length and breadth of the land during the reign of Edward VI., and which claimed for itself the sanction and shelter of the Reformation movement. The desecration of churches, the neglect of Divine Service, the contumely heaped upon the Sacraments, the lawlessness and the immorality which were becoming so conspicuous among those who opposed "the old learning"—these were making many doubt whether the Reformation had not already been carried too far, and whether the uprooting of old influences had been compensated by any sufficient planting of new ones. "The irregular and immoral lives of many of the professors of the Gospel," says Bishop Burnet, "gave their enemies great advantages

Immorality of the Puritans

CHAP IV

A.D. 1547-53

to say they ran away from confession, penance, fasting, and prayers, only that they might be under no restraint, but indulge themselves in a licentious and dissolute course of life. By these things, which were but too visible in some of the more eminent among them, the people were much alienated from them; and as much as they were formerly prejudiced against Popery, they grew to have kinder thoughts of it, and to look on all the changes that had been made as designs to enrich some vicious courtiers, and to let in an inundation of vice and wickedness upon the nation. Some of the clergy that promoted the Reformation were not without very visible blemishes; some indiscretions, both in their marriages[9] and in

Bishop Burnet on the subject

[9] Among several similar entries in the Privy Council Book, there is one on November 23, 1551, ordering "A letter to Sir Thomas Gargrave, Mr. Challonour, and Doctor Roukesbye, to examine and use such means to understand the circumstances and very truth of the matter between the Archbishop of York [Robert Holgate] and one Norman, who claimeth the same bishop's wife to be his, as they shall think may best serve for the knowledge of the same; for the easier understanding of the matter, the supplication presented by the said Norman in this behalf is sent unto them, enclosed in the said letter, with the request to certify hither what they shall have learned in the case." Holgate was sent to the Tower, it being found that Norman had not made a mistake about his wife, and, having been deprived in the beginning of Queen Mary's reign, died in 1556.

Equally iniquitous was the case of Poynet, a favourite chaplain of Cranmer, who usurped the See of Winchester by Letters Patent from the Crown after Gardiner, the rightful Bishop, had been thrust out of it by the Privy Council. On July 24, 1551, four months after his appointment, "the Byshoppe of Wynchester that was then was devorsyd from hys wyffe in Powlles; the whyche was a buchere's wyff in Nottynggam; and gave here husbande a sartyn mony a yere dureynge hys lyffe, as it was jugydde by the lawe." [*Grey Friars' Chron.*, p. 70.] On October 25th following, the Bishop married, in the presence of Archbishop Cranmer [Machyn's *Diary*, p. 320], a woman named Heymond, whom he left a widow, when he died an exile at Strasburg in 1556, at the early age of forty-two.

These shocking facts respecting the bishops are supplemented by the evidence of a contemporary writer, who says of the clergy generally who married in Edward VI.'s time, that they "cared not what women they married, common or other, so they might get them wives. For true are St. Paul's words: They enter into houses, bringing into bondage women laden with sin. The

CHAP IV
A.D. 1547-53

their behaviour, contributed not a little to raise a general aversion to them. It is true there were great and shining lights among them, . . . but they were *few* in comparison with the *many bad*. . . . That which was above all, was that God was highly dishonoured by men who pretended zeal for His glory, but with their works dishonoured Him. They talked of the purity of the Gospel, while they were wallowing in all sensuality and uncleanness, pretending to put all their confidence in the merits and sufferings of Christ, while they were crucifying Him afresh, and putting Him to open shame."

Burnet on the Puritans

All this was scarcely to be wondered at when private patrons appointed such men as they did to benefices. "But what do you patrons?" says Latimer, preaching at Stamford in 1550. "Sell your benefices, or give them to your servants for their service—for keeping of hounds or hawks, for making of your gardens. These patrons regard no souls—neither their own nor other men's. What care they for souls, so they have money, though they perish, though they go to the devil?"[1] And again in 1552, "I would every man would go diligently about his business; the priests to go to their books, not to spend their times so shamefully in hawking, hunting, and keeping of ale-houses."[2] "Many will choose now such a curate for their souls as they may

Latimer on the misuse of Church patronage

women of these married priests were such, for the most part, that either they were kept of other before, or else as common as the cart-way, . . . using their bodies with other men as well as with their supposed husbands. . . . Is it not seen now by experience that some of their women being divorced are married again to ruffians, and such other gallants, following the opinion of Sir John Hoper in his book of the ten commandments?" [Huggard's *Displaying of Protestants*, fol. 74.] Archbishop Cranmer himself was twice married, and Mrs. Cranmer married two other husbands after losing the Archbishop.

[1] Latimer's *Serm.*, i. 266, ed 1824.

[2] *Ibid.*, ii. 58.

CHAP IV
A.D. 1547-53

call fool, rather than one that shall rebuke their covetousness, ambition, unmercifulness, uncharitableness; that shall be sober, discreet, apt to reprove, and resist the gainsayers with the Word of God."[3] There is extant a petition to the Crown from one George Ainsworth, dated October 2, 1556, praying that he may be allowed to live as a layman, for that he would not have taken orders had he not been compelled to do so by Sir Thomas Griffin of Northampton, to whom he was serving-man.[4]

Lawlessness and irreverence of young people

Nor could it escape the observation of those who began to doubt the expediency of the changes which had taken place that a great social degeneracy was coming over the nation at large. "The ancient trade of this realm in education," says a writer previously quoted, "was to yoke the same with the fear of God, in teaching the same to use prayer morning and evening, to be reverent in the Church; at their first entrance into the same, to make the sign of the cross in their foreheads, to make obeisance to the magistrates, to discover their heads when they met with men of ancient years and of hoar hairs. . . . But now, clean contrary, nothing is less used than morning and evening prayer, more unreverence in the church never more frequented, nor disobedience to magistrates and aged men never more practised. And as for repairing to the church, it is counted a thing of no importance, for how can the child put that in practice which the parents themselves neglect? . . . . Here also were worthy of remembrance the correction which ought to be done to apprentices and other servants, who, being noselled in liberty, are not only odious to the world, but also unthrifty towards their masters, and in

Their independence

[3] Latimer's *Serm.*, i. 268.

[4] Harl. MS., 39, B. 6.

CHAP IV
A.D. 1547-53

manner become masters themselves. Whose bringing up is so lewd that they be grown to such insolence that no good man or priest passing by them in the streets can escape without mocks.[5] . . . Besides this, their dissolute lives are such that no regard they have at all to repair to the church upon the holy-days, but flock in clusters upon stalls, either scorning the passers-by, or with their Testaments utter some wise stuff of their own device. So that prayer is seldom seen to proceed out of their graceless mouths."[6]

Insults to the clergy

To the same effect were some of the trenchant words which Latimer used when preaching before the King and Court. "Alas!" he says, "where is this discipline in England now? The people regard no discipline; they be without all order. Where they should give place, they will not stir one inch; yea, where magistrates should determine matters, they will break into the place before they come, and, at their coming, not move a whit for them. Is this discipline? Is this good order? If a man say anything unto them, they regard it not. They that be called to answer will not answer directly, but scoff the matter out. Then, the

Want of respect for authority

[5] This was so intolerable that, on November 12, 1547, a Proclamation was issued, of which there is a copy in the Council book, setting forth that the serving men, and other young and light persons and apprentices of London, had been of late grossly maltreating "priests, and those that go about in scholars' gowns like priests, . . . both in Westminster Hall and in other places of the city of London." This ill-treatment had been so gross that it had offended many men. It was as much to be regretted that the priests had not used more discretion as that the others should commit sedition and murder. Such "inconveniences cannot be suffered," and the said serving men, &c. are ordered no more to use "such insolence and evil demeanour towards priests," as reviling, tossing of them, taking their caps and tippets away violently "without just title or cause," under pain of being punished according to their degree. [Collier's *Eccl. Hist.*, v. 250, ed. 1852.]

[6] Huggard's *Displ. of Prot.*, fol. 95; Latimer's *Serm.*, i. 208, ed. 1824.

CHAP IV
A.D. 1547-53

more they know the worse they be. . . . Surely in Popery they had a reverence, but now we have none at all. I never saw the like!" Again, "consider all estates, and ye shall find all their doings furnished with lies. Go first to men of occupations, consider their lives and conversations—there is in a manner nothing with them but lying. Go to men of authority, go to lawyers—you shall find stuff enough. For it is seen nowadays that children learn prettily of their parents to lie, for the parents are not ashamed to lie in presence of their children. The craftsman or merchantman teacheth his prentice to lie, and to utter his wares with lying and forswearing. *In summa*, there is almost nothing amongst us but lies," &c. &c.[7]

Growing tendency to untruthfulness

According to the same writer, all classes were getting into habits of fraudulent dealing in matters of business. One principal source of revenue at that time was a property tax. "Then commissions come forth, and he that in sight of men, in his cattle, corn, sheep, and other goods, is worth an hundred marks or an hundred pound, will set himself at ten pound; he will be worth no more to the King but after ten pound. . . . His cattle, corn, sheep, in every man's eyes, shall be worth two hundred pound, besides other things as money and plate; and he will marry his daughter, and give with her four or five hundred marks, and yet at the valuation he will be a twenty pound man. Doth he give to Cæsar that which is due to Cæsar?"[8] The farmers are charged with fraud in selling cattle and corn, and "these fellows commonly which use such deceitfulness and guiles can speak so finely that a man would think butter should scant melt in their mouths."[9] As for the manufacturers, "How say you, were it no wonder

Frauds on the revenue

Farmers cheating their buyers

[7] Latimer's *Serm.*, ii. 167. [8] *Ibid.*, i. 276; comp. ii. 178. [9] *Ibid.*, ii. 75.

CHAP IV
A.D. 1547-53

to hear that cloth-makers should become poticaries? Yea, and as I hear say, in such a place, whereas they have professed the Gospel and the Word of God most earnestly of a long time. See how busy the devil is to slander the Word of God. Thus the poor Gospel goeth to wrack. If his cloth be seventeen yards long, he will set him on a rack, and stretch him out with ropes, and rack him till all his sinews shrink again, while he hath brought him to eighteen yards. When they have brought him to that perfection, they have a pretty feat to thick him again. He makes me a powder for it, and plays the poticary; they call it flock-powder. They do so incorporate it to the cloth that is wonderful to consider—truly a good invention! . . . They were wont to make beds of flocks, and it was a good bed too; now they have turned their flocks to powder to play the false thieves with. O wicked devil! what can he not invent[1] to blaspheme God's Word? These mixtures come of covetousness. They are plain theft. Wo worth that these flocks should so slander the Word of God! As He said to the Jews, 'Thy wine is mingled with water,' so might He have said to us of this land, 'Thy cloth is mingled with flock-powder.'"[2]

Weavers stretching their cloth,

and manufacturing "shoddy"

Very shocking also, to all who desired a true reformation of religion, was the desecration of the churches and cathedrals by the opponents of what was blindly stigmatized as "Popery." Much of this must certainly be traced back for its origin by the candid historian

[1] We may here see, perhaps, the origin of the name "devil's dust" for a "powder" which has not been altogether unknown in modern times. Latimer spoke from his experiences as rector and bishop in Gloucestershire, then a great clothing and Puritan county.

[2] Latimer's *Serm.*, i. 122, ed. 1824.

CHAP IV

A.D. 1547-53

to the influence of Ridley, Bishop of London, and Hooper, Bishop of Worcester and Gloucester.

Ridley was translated from Rochester to London (after Bonner's deposition by the Privy Council) on April 12, 1550, and at once began the work of innovation in the diocese and cathedral of London, which he had already carried on in Rochester.[3] On the 19th he ordered the light in the quire to be put out before he came into it.[4] On St. Barnabas Day the high altar was pulled down, a curtain hung up for a reredos at the foot of the steps on which it had stood, and a table placed in front of the curtain.[5] At Christmas the "rulers of the choir" were dismissed from their office, and an order was at the same time given that copes should no longer be used in processions.[6] Shortly afterwards the parcloses on either side of the choir were blocked up to prevent people from looking in at communion time; and on Easter Eve, in 1551, the table which had been placed at the foot of the altar steps was removed still farther west, and set "beneath the veil which hung over the choir screen," that is, in the nave in front of the screen, and was set with the sides north and south, instead of east and west, or "altarwise," as it had been before.[7] On October 25,

Ridley suppressing Ritualism,

and plucking down altars

[3] Ridley was not the first, however, to begin such innovations. When Cranmer had got Bonner out of his way, it was his custom now and then to appear suddenly at St. Paul's on a Sunday morning, "to preach against Popery and priests." If he could not go himself he sent a chaplain, sometimes Hooper. [*Grey Friars' Chron.*, pp. 60, 61, 62.] As early as St. Martin's Day, in 1548, Farrer had preached there without his Episcopal robes, speaking "against all manner of things of the Church and the Sacrament of the Altar, vestments, copes, altars, and all other things" [*Ibid.*, p. 56]; and not long afterwards the canons left off wearing their grey amisses with the calober" [*Ibid.*, p. 59].

[4] *Ibid.*, p. 66.

[5] *Ibid.*, p. 67.

[6] *Ibid.*, p. 68.

[7] *Grey Friars' Chron.*, p. 69. This example was followed in many parish churches. For Ridley's Injunction on the subject see chap. vii., where other details are also given.

CHAP IV
A.D. 1547-53

1552, Ridley completed his ruin of the choir of St. Paul's by giving orders for the removal of all the altars and their beautiful screens, the sedilia, and the tombs.

Hooper's opposition to the Eucharistic Sacrifice

Hooper, who lectured two and three times a day in London for many months, argued fiercely against chancels, altars, vestments, and everything which tended to the recognition of the Eucharist as an offering to God; but his name is especially associated with the opposition which he offered to the use of the episcopal vestments. When he was appointed Bishop of Gloucester in 1550, Hooper refused to present himself for consecration in these, but Cranmer and Ridley were equally resolute in refusing to consecrate him without them, although the Duke of Northumberland wrote to the Archbishop on July 23d (as is shown by the Privy Council Register), officially requesting him to give up such ceremonies as were "offensive to" Hooper's "conscience;" and on August 5th the King and Privy Council sent a dispensation or pardon to Cranmer, to secure him against all penalties that he would incur, by giving Hooper his own way, contrary to the law. But eventually the bishop-elect alienated the Privy Council as he offended every one else,[8] and he was committed to the custody of the Archbishop.[9]

His appointment to a bishopric

[8] Sergeant Morgan told Hooper "there was never such a tyrant as he was" in punishing men in Gloucester Diocese [Strype's *Cranmer*, ii. 264, *n.*]; and he so provoked Sir Anthony Kingston, that in his passion the knight struck him, an indignity for which Hooper took care to get full revenge from the Privy Council. Even his Calvinistic friends wished that Hooper might be exhorted to unite prudence and Christian lenity to the severity of discipline; and Peter Martyr cautioned him against the extreme bitterness which he used in preaching.

[9] On October 6, 1550, there is an entry in the Privy Council Register, which orders as follows:—

"A letter to the Bishop of London, that whereas there hath been some difference betwixt him and the elect Bishop of Gloucester upon certain ceremonies belonging to the making of a bishop, wherein their Lordships desire is because they would in no wise the stirring up of controversies betwixt men of one profession, did send for him,

CHAP IV
A.D. 1547-53

On January 27, 1551, Cranmer wrote to the Council that Hooper was still obstinate, and he was then sent for a few days to the Fleet, a course of treatment which immediately converted him. On March 8, 1551, he was consecrated with the ceremonies which he abhorred, and in the "Aaronic habits" which he loathed. He then went down to his diocese to unchurch the Gloucestershire clothiers, who were well prepared for stretching and adulterating their religion by those habits of racking their cloth, and "thicking him again" with flock-powder, for which they had been so severely rebuked by their plain-spoken Bishop, "Father Latimer." Under Hooper's severe rule altars were destroyed, chancels wrecked, and Divine Service degraded in the dioceses of Gloucester and Worcester,[1] as they had been in that of London, when he had influence with the King and Council.

Hooper's wreck of sacred things

When churches were thus treated by those who should have been especially their guardians, it is not surprising that their sacred character was altogether

willing to cease the occasions hereof, who humbly required that he might for declaration of his doings present in writing such arguments as moved him to be of the opinion he held, which thing was granted, and was by their Lordships' commandment to be at the Court on Sunday next, bringing with him that he shall for answer have thought convenient, touching his old matter of denial to wear such apparel as other bishops wear. He had been before ordered to keep his house, unless to go for advice to the Archbishop, or the Bishop of Ely, London, or Lincoln, and not to preach or read without license from Court; but it appeared that he had not kept his house, and that he had printed a book with matter which he ought not to have written. He was now committed to custody of the Archbishop, to be reformed or to be punished."

Ridley wrote a rather elaborate treatise on "The use of the appointed vestments in the Church of England," the MS. of which is preserved in the Phillipps Library at Cheltenham. It was printed, oddly enough, at the end of Bradford's Letters, &c. [pp. 375-395], by the Parker Society.

[1] For, shortly after his consecration to Gloucester, this self-confident Presbyterian Bishop eagerly took upon himself the spiritual charge of Worcester diocese also, although Gloucestershire was at that time one of the most densely populated manufacturing counties in England.

CHAP IV
A.D. 1547-53

lost sight of by the multitude. "In many churches," writes Strype, "cathedral as well as other, and especially in London, many frays, quarrels, riots, bloodsheddings were committed. They used also commonly to bring horses and mules into and through churches, and shooting off hand-guns, 'making the same, which were properly appointed to God's Service and Common Prayer, like a stable or common inn, or rather a den, or sink of all unchristiness,' as it was expressed in a proclamation which the King set forth about this time, as I suppose (for I am left to conjecture the date), by reason of insolency of great numbers using the said evil demeanors, and daily more and more increasing, 'therein forbidding any such quarrelling, shooting, or bringing horses and mules into or through the churches, upon pain of his Majesty's indignation and imprisonment.'"[2] In the twelfth of some Articles for carrying out Edward VI.'s Injunctions, it was necessary to order "that the churchwardens suffer no buying nor selling, gaming, or unfitting demeanour in church or churchyards, especially during the Common Prayer, the Sermon, and reading of the Homily," and "talking and jangling in church in time of Divine Service" is also very frequently referred to in similar documents. "If there be a sermon at Paul's Cross," says a contem-

Desecration of churches by the laity

Their behaviour during Divine Service

[2] Strype's *Cranmer*, ii. 89, ed. 1848. The *Grey Friars' Chronicle* also notices that on June 14, 1550, there was a fray in the cathedral, and a man slain there; that in the same year were many frays in St. Paul's; that a man broke his neck catching pigeons in the cathedral; and that another man was slain on February 19, 1552 [*Grey Friars' Chron.*, pp. 67, 73], no notice being taken of these desecrations. Malcolm states that in Queen Elizabeth's reign a large dunghill, which would have filled four carts, had accumulated within the cathedral; that men walked about it with their hats on their heads; that butchers and water-carriers passed through it with their wares without reproof; and that drunkards and vagabonds might be found at all hours sleeping on the benches at the choir door. [Malcolm's *Londinium Redivivum*, iii. 71.]

CHAP IV
A.D. 1547-53

porary writer, "after they have tarried there awhile to hear some news and the preacher at the prayers, Lord! how they vanish away in clusters, repairing into Paul's, and either buy or sell some bargain in the body of the church, or else tell some tale of an ass' shadow."[3] So gross, indeed, did the profanation of St. Paul's become, that a few days after the spire—far the tallest ever built—had been destroyed by fire in 1561, Bishop Pilkington attributed the calamity to this cause, and says in his sermon respecting it, "God, and not man, will be glorified in God's house. God's house must be a house of prayer, and not the proud tower of Babylon, nor the Pope's market-place, nor a stewer for bawds and ruffians, nor a horse-fair for brokers, nor yet a house for merchants, nor a meeting-place for walking and talking. If a convenient place to meet for honest assemblies cannot be found nor had conveniently other where, a partition might be had to close up and shut the praters from pray-ers, the walkers and janglers from well-disposed persons, that they should not trouble the devout hearers of God's Word, so that the one should not hear nor see the other. . . . No place has been more abused than Paul's has been, nor more against the receiving of Christ's Gospel; wherefore it is more marvel that God spared it so long, rather than that He overthrew it now."

St. Paul's Cathedral profaned

The best proposal a bishop could think of

No wonder that in the Homily "On repairing and keeping clean of Churches" the writer indignantly exclaims, "Churches were formerly defiled with sinful and superstitious filthiness, but although they are scoured and swept from that, they are now defiled with rain and weather, with dung of doves and owls, stares and choughs, and other filthiness, as it is foul

Desecration of parish churches

[3] Huggard's *Displaying of Prot.*, fol. 50.

CHAP IV A.D. 1547-53

and lamentable to behold in many places of this country;" while, instead of being regarded as the house of prayer, it is used as "the house of talking, of walking, of brawling, of minstrelsy, of hawks, of dogs." Nor can we wonder either that men who had grown into mature years under a religious system which knew none of these profanations should associate them with the changes which had taken place; and while they were filled with righteous indignation on the one hand, should also have a strong reactionary feeling on the other, under the conviction that "the old was better."

The Reformation thus discredited

§ 4. The Influence of Foreigners

Another powerful cause of this reactionary tendency is to be found in the disgust which was felt by thoroughly English-minded men such as Gardiner, and there were many such, at the influential positions which were assigned to Lutheran and Calvinist foreigners, and at the slavish submission with which Cranmer and the Puritanizing party bowed to their opinions. Refugees have never been a blessing to England either in Church or State; but at the epoch of the Reformation their conspiracies against the Church of England went near to overthrowing its principles and reducing it to a spiritual ruin.

Foreign allies of the Puritans

The first mention of these foreign religionists is in an official letter from Archbishop Cranmer to the Bishop of London—extant in the Register of the Bishop—in which he directs that Bernardine Ochinus, an Italian Lutheran, shall be permitted to preach in St. Paul's Cathedral, and that forms shall be provided

"for the Italians to sit, because their manner is not long to stand." Ochinus [A.D. 1487-1564] had been a Capuchin monk, and confessor to Pope Paul III., but became a Lutheran when he was about sixty years of age, and at the beginning of Edward's reign was invited to England by Cranmer, with whom he lived for some time at Lambeth, superintending the Italian Protestants in London. But being superseded in this post, he was made Prebendary of Canterbury on May 9, 1548. On the King's death he left England, and became minister of an Italian congregation at Zurich. But in 1563 he was driven from that city by the authorities because of his advocacy of polygamy, and, flying to Moravia, he joined the Socinians there.

Bernardine Ochinus

At this time it was said that there were as many as five thousand Germans in London,[4] besides a large number of French Calvinists and Polish Zwinglians of Socinian tendencies. The leader of the Polish refugees was John Laski or A'Lasco, a very intimate friend of Cranmer, and long his guest, who had considerable influence both with the Archbishop and with the Duke of Somerset. After living at Lambeth Palace for many months he was, in 1550, appointed "superintendent," or Presbyterian Bishop, of all foreign congregations in the metropolis, the beautiful monastic church of the Austin Friars in Broad Street being assigned to him. Here he established a regular Presbyterian form of Church government, with a service book in which all the sacerdotal and sacramental principles of the Prayer Book of 1549 were carefully avoided, and in which the ritual forms, such as sitting at the Communion and the disuse of ecclesiastical vestments, were those afterwards adopted by the Puri-

John A'Lasco

[4] *Orig. Lett.*, Park. Soc., pp. 336, 352.

CHAP IV

A.D. 1547-53

tans.[5] To Bishop Hooper and his school this Alascan system was perfection, as it probably was to the young King also, with whom A'Lasco was admitted to some degree of intimacy. His influence was very great, and had much weight in the agitation which led to the revision of the Prayer Book in 1552, though happily his substitute for it was not adopted. He was also one of the Commissioners for the review of the Ecclesiastical Law of England.

The French Protestants

Similar congregations were established in the Cathedral of Canterbury and in the Monastery of Glastonbury —the former under the patronage of the Archbishop, the latter under that of the Duke of Somerset; and the Presbyterian form of worship which Cranmer thus established in his cathedral is still allowed to have a home there, although the Glastonbury congregation quickly migrated to Frankfort.[6]

Martin Bucer at Cambridge

But the influence of these Presbyterian foreigners was brought to bear most effectually by appointing some of them to important posts in the universities. Thus Martin Bucer was appointed Regius Professor of Divinity at Cambridge in 1548, and Paul Fagius first, and after his death John Emmanuel Tremellio or Tremellius, was made Regius Professor of Hebrew in the same university in 1550, Cavalier, a Frenchman,

[5] There is a good account of this book in the *British Magazine*, xv. 612, xvi. 127.

[6] The Glastonbury congregation was formed of French and Belgian cloth-weavers, and Pullain, or Valerandus Pollanus, their leader, was appointed as their ecclesiastical "superintendent." In the Privy Council Register there is an entry on October 28, 1551, ordering that certain strangers brought to Glastonbury by the Duke of Somerset shall be gently used, and have an allowance made them. On March 22, 1552, the Council sent a letter to the Bishop of Bath and others to arrange for the strangers to be accommodated in the void rooms of the monastery, which are to be furnished for them. They are also to receive £500 out of the Duke of Somerset's lands. On November 29, 1552, another order granted them land for thirty-six families, each to have enough for keeping two kine. See also Strype's *Cranmer*, ii. 286, ed. 1848.

being licensed to assist Tremellius, while Peter Martyr was also appointed Canon of Christ Church and Regius Professor of Divinity at Oxford in 1550.

John Emmanuel Tremellio was an Italian Jew, born at Ferrara in 1510, converted to Christianity by Cardinal Pole, and afterwards persuaded to become a Calvinist by Peter Martyr. In April 1549 he and his wife were living at Lambeth; shortly afterwards he was sent to Cambridge to lecture on Hebrew; in 1550 he was appointed Regius Professor of Hebrew, and in 1552 a Canonry at Carlisle was added to his emolument. He seems to have kept aloof from controversy, but the tendency of his teaching must necessarily have been in the same direction as that of the other foreign Protestants. Tremellius did not return to England after Queen Mary's death, and died at Sedan, where he taught Hebrew, on October 9, 1580.

Tremellius at Cambridge

Peter Martyr, so named after a Milanese saint, but whose real surname was Vermiglio, was born at Florence in the year 1500, and became an Augustinian monk in that city. Afterwards he was successively Abbot of Spoleto, of the Augustinian Monastery of St. Peter ad Aram at Naples, and Prior of St. Fridian's Monastery at Lucca. About 1542 he left Italy in company with Ochinus, and joined Bucer at Strasburg. There, in 1546, he married a nun, and coming to England on the death of Henry VIII. was made Regius Professor of Divinity at Oxford in 1549. This post he deserted on account of annoyances which he had to endure from the under-graduates, but consented to return to it on being also made Canon of Christ Church. Queen Mary gave him a passport to return to Strasburg, and though invited to return to England on her death, he declined to do so, remaining

Peter Martyr at Oxford

CHAP IV A.D. 1547-53

at Zurich until his death in 1562. The nun whom he had married died at Oxford, but a few years before his own death he married again. The influence of Peter Martyr upon the anti-Catholic party among the Reformers was very considerable ; and while at Oxford his pen was constantly employed against the doctrine of Christ's Presence in the Holy Eucharist as set forth in the First Prayer Book of Edward VI. He was also the principal working member of the Commission which produced the *Reformatio Legum*,[7] and appears to have used largely the hints given by Bucer in his work on the Kingdom of Christ.

Martin Bucer at Cambridge

Martin Bucer, who tried to give dignity to his paternal name of Cowhorn by turning it into Greek, was born in 1491 at Schelestadt, in Lower Alsatia, and was a Dominican Friar at Strasburg until the age of thirty, when he became a friend and follower of Luther. Ten years later he changed his theology again, and adopted the opinions of Zwingle. In 1548 he was invited to England by Archbishop Cranmer and the Duke of Somerset, and after lecturing for some time at Cambridge, was appointed Regius Professor of Divinity there in 1550. He was three times married, his first wife being a nun named Elizabeth Pallase, who bore him thirteen sons, only one of whom survived him, and that one being of weak intellect. Bucer himself died at Cambridge on February 28, 1551. His influence tended more than that of any other foreigner to turn the current of the English Reformation from the Catholic direction in which it naturally ran, into that which was taken by the Protestant communities abroad. Something of the extravagance of his teaching is indicated in the out-

[7] See p. 113.

rageous theological proposition which he maintained before the University of Cambridge, namely, "That all good works which men seem to perform before justification are really sins, and merit the Divine displeasure; but after we are justified, good actions are necessarily done by us." He also maintained strongly the doctrine of the "Divine decrees," by which one portion of mankind is supposed to be predestined and elected by God to salvation, and another portion to damnation, and opposed the doctrine of Christ's Presence in the Holy Eucharist. The use of chancels for Divine Service he declared to be anti-Christian; and that of vestments, including the surplice, highly objectionable, though not actually sinful. He was also one of the party which endeavoured to forbid kneeling at prayers and the reception of the Holy Communion.[8]

Bucer's principles

On New Year's Day, March 25, 1550, Bucer presented Edward VI. with the manuscript of a work which he had written in Latin, "Concerning the Kingdom of Christ."[9] In this work Bucer pressed the King to introduce a stern system of ecclesiastical discipline, under which punishments, especially excommunication and death, were to be dealt out broadcast. Able-bodied men and women who would not work were, for example, to be excommunicated, men and women who committed adultery were to be put to death, and all the capital punishments ordered in the Mosaic Law were to be adopted into the law of England. This book made a great impression upon the mind of the young King, and it seems to have been in consequence of studying it that he began to write

His book on the Kingdom of Christ

[8] Like so many of the Puritans, Bucer had a special aversion to the use of church bells.

[9] It was printed after the King's death, under the title *De Regno Christi libri duo.* Basle, 1557.

CHAP IV

A.D. 1547-53

"A Discourse about the Reformation of many Abuses," in the first part of which occur the words, "The ecclesiastical" governance of this realm "consisteth in setting forth the Word of God, continuing the people in prayer, and the discipline. . . . For discipline, it were very good that it went forth, and that those that did notably offend in swearing, rioting, neglecting of God's Word, or such-like vices, were duly punished, so that those that should be executors of this discipline were men of tried honesty, wisdom, and judgment."[1] The place which this so-called "discipline" afterwards assumed in the ecclesiastical plans of the Puritans is shown hereafter.[2] It was a system of religious tyranny which would have been intolerable to Englishmen, but it was supposed that Edward VI. was resolved to introduce it, and that if he had lived to come of age he would, with Tudor determination, have imposed it on the nation. Bucer's book evidently influenced the *Reformatio Legum*, of which some account has been given in a previous chapter,[3] and was probably known to Peter Martyr, who had much to do with the latter.

Bucer's theory of Church discipline

His influence on the Prayer Book

But the most permanent effect of Bucer's influence was produced by his work on the First Prayer Book of Edward VI.—that of 1549. A'Lasco, Peter Martyr, Hooper, and Bucer appear to have been continually corresponding about the Prayer Book and the usages enjoined by it, and their bitter hatred of its principles at length resulted in the publication of Bucer's "Censure,"[4] which was nominally a reply to Cranmer's

[1] Burnet's *Reform.*, v. 96, Pocock's Ed.

[2] See chap. vii.

[3] See page 115.

[4] The full title is *Censura Martini Buceri super libro Sacrorum, seu ordinationis ecclesiæ atque ministerii ecclesiastici in regno Angliæ, ad petitionem R. Archiepiscopi Cantuariensis, Thomæ Cranmeri conscripta.*

request for his opinion respecting the Prayer Book, but practically a criticism of its contents from an extreme anti-sacramental and anti-sacerdotalist point of view. It can hardly be doubted that his many objections led to the review of the book, and that although a large number of them were disregarded, yet it was in deference to them that the Communion Service was so seriously altered, and especially that the Invocation of the Holy Ghost and the Commemoration of the Departed were dropped. Under the same influence the office for baptism was altered by the disuse of exorcism, the chrisom or white robe, and the chrism, and that for the visitation of the sick by the disuse of anointing. Happily his objections to kneeling at the Communion were vigorously opposed by Archbishop Cranmer and others, notwithstanding the support which they received from the Privy Council, and the tenacity with which they were urged by Bishop Hooper. And upon the whole there is good reason to be thankful that the Prayer Book escaped so well from the severe trial to which it was subjected; the substantial principles to which Bucer and the other foreigners most objected having all survived those criticisms and assaults which good taste and feeling should have prevented such strangers to England and the Church of England from making.

Changes made in deference to him,

but the old principles survived

The last of these anti-Church foreigners who need be particularly named is the sturdy and uncompromising Presbyterian Scotchman John Knox; and of him nothing more need be said here than that he was a great favourite with Edward VI. and the Privy Council during the whole of the reign; that he was appointed a general preacher in England in December 1547; was in the Commission for framing the Articles

John Knox

CHAP IV

A.D. 1547-53

of Religion and for revising the Canon Law; that the Duke of Northumberland wished him to be made Bishop of Rochester, that he might "be a whetstone to the Archbishop of Canterbury;" and that he declined a London vicarage which was offered him by Cranmer at the request of the Privy Council.[5]

Others entertained by Cranmer

But in passing away from the subject, it should be added that the foreign influence was much strengthened by the circumstance that those here named, and many others, such as Paul Fagius, John Uttenhovius, Peter Alexander, and Francis Dryander, were intimate friends, associates, and literary assistants of Archbishop Cranmer. At the same time there was constant correspondence going on between some of them and Bullinger, Calvin, etc., on the affairs of the Church of England, and those attempts of Calvin to influence the Duke of Somerset which have already been mentioned.[6] Such a widespread conspiracy to overthrow the leading principles of the Church of England, and to mould it to those of the foreign non-episcopal communities, offers a very remarkable instance of Protestant Popery and Calvinistic Jesuitism.

§ 5. The Princess Mary and the Government of Edward VI.

From a statesman's point of view the head of the reactionary party at this time would undoubtedly be

[5] On February 2, 1553, the Privy Council Register contains an entry of "a letter to the Archbishop of Canterbury in favour of Mr. Knoks to be presented to the Vicarage or Parsonage of All Hallows in Bread Street, in his disposition by the preferment of Thomas Sampson to the Deanery of Chichester." On June 2, 1553, is another of "a letter to Lord Russel, Lord Windsor, the Justices of the Peace, and the rest of the gentlemen of the county of Buckingham, in favour of Mr. Knocks the preacher."

[6] See page 27, n.

CHAP IV

A.D. 1547-53

the Princess Mary. During the whole of her brother's reign there was an apprehension in the minds of the ruling party that she would, either by marriage or by the persuasions of her mother's relatives, bring England under subjection to Spain. Among the Burleigh papers there is a copy of a circular letter to "divers Lords in the North, Wales," etc., on this subject, of which the date is not given, but which probably was written in 1551. It warns them that several strangers have lately visited the residence of the Princess by night, that she has been suddenly changing her residences, and laying in large stocks of provisions. One passage is worth notice, though probably these suspicions were unfounded: "We shall always, as true and mere Englishmen, keep our country to be England, without putting our heads under Spainard's or Fleming's girdles as their slaves and vassals." [7]

Suspicions of the Emperor

England for the English

But the ostensible subject of contention between the Government of Edward VI. and the Princess was a religious and not a political one; and the relations between her and the Privy Council form an important element in the history of the English Reformation, because they influenced the course of events during her subsequent reign. The treatment which she received certainly established a deadly animosity between her and some of the reforming party, and filled her mind with prejudices against them as men whose religion was closely associated with treason towards herself.

Mary's early life

The life of the Princess had been spent under circumstances which were calculated to give her very unfavourable impressions of the Reformation. For nearly ten years of that life, from the time when she was eleven years old until she had reached twenty,

[7] Haynes' State Papers, p. 118.

CHAP IV

A.D. 1547-48

she was the daily witness of her mother's sorrows and humiliations, and was in no small degree a partaker of them. For another ten years of her life after Queen Catherine's death she had her own bitter humiliations to bear, being branded with the stigma of illegitimacy, set aside from her rights of succession to the Crown, attached for some time to the household of her infant half-sister Elizabeth, and treated according to the style and rank which was assigned her, namely, as "the Lady Mary, the King's natural daughter." These bitter wrongs were inflicted by a Sovereign who was regarded as the chief supporter of the Reformation; and the person who had been his principal instrument in inflicting them upon her was Cranmer, who was regarded as its ecclesiastical leader in England. If the reader will endeavour to place himself abreast of these circumstances, he will not fail to understand how entirely the Princess Mary's mind must have been fortified against any sympathy with a religious movement which was so mixed up with her mother's wrongs and her own. Women may sometimes love their enemies, but experience of human nature leads one to doubt whether any woman in the situation of Mary would have done otherwise than hate Cranmer and his allies from the very bottom of her heart.

Mary insulted and wronged by her father, Cranmer,

When her half-brother, Edward VI., succeeded to the throne at ten years of age, the Princess herself was thirty-one years old. Some kindly and even affectionate letters had passed between them during the King's childhood,[8] but when the Duke of Northumberland came into power, Edward developed a precocious intolerance, and this—after having been

and her brother

[8] Halliwell's *Letters of the Kings of England.*

thwarted by the determination of his sister—culminated in his attempt to substitute Lady Jane Grey, a girl twenty-one years younger than Mary, and four below her in the succession, as his immediate successor on the throne. CHAP IV A.D. 1549

The Princess is unlikely, from the Spanish influences under which she was brought up, to have looked favourably on the changes which had been made in the Church of England during her father's reign, but these changes still left the old Salisbury Missal and Breviary in use, and in other respects interfered little with her devotional customs. But when the use of the Missal and Breviary was forbidden, and she was required to adopt with others the customs of the English Prayer Book, the Princess resolutely refused to make any change in the services of her chapel, and was consequently brought into collision with the young King, and with those who governed in his name. A week after the Act of Uniformity, with the Book of Common Prayer annexed, came into force—that is, on June 16, 1549—we find an entry in the Privy Council Register to the following effect, several communications having already passed between her and the Council: "Upon information made to the Lord Protector's Grace and Counsel that the Lady Mary's Grace, contrary to the King's Majesty's proceedings and the laws of the realm established in that behalf by the last Act of Parliament, did use to have Mass said openly in her house, refusing to have there celebrated the Service of the Communion, ... their Lordships wrote to her Grace in that behalf, giving to her advice to be conformable and obedient to the observation of his Majesty's laws, to give order that the Mass be no more used in her house, that she would embrace

Her preference for the old rites

Her use of them forbidden

CHAP IV A.D. 1549

and cause to be celebrated in her said house the Communion and other Divine Services set forth by his Majesty."

Mary objects to Privy Council tyranny

To the order thus given Mary replied in a letter to the Council, dated June 22, 1549, declaring that she had offended no law, unless the orders of the Privy Council were to be accounted laws, and she thought them not worthy such a name. In her father's time laws were not forced upon the country by Privy Councillors, but passed in Parliament, and so given to the people with their own consent. As she had told the Duke of Somerset when she was last at court, she was quite ready to obey laws and to obey the King, but she would resist this assumption of all the authority of the Crown by the Privy Council. The executors of her father's Will were sworn to maintain the laws which were in existence when they were placed in office, but there was no authority to make new laws until the King came of age to give his free consent to them.

Claim of the Council reasserted

This letter of the Princess was answered two days afterwards by the Council in a long and wordy communication sent to her chaplain, Dr. Hopton, and which he was ordered to read to her. In this they claimed obedience to the boy King, acting under their advice, in exactly the same degree as obedience was required to a King of full age; and they tried to convince her by quoting "a saying of Solomon from the sixth chapter of the Book of Wisdom."[9] Perhaps the question was really one that admitted of both views. No regency had been appointed by Parliament, and therefore the action of the Privy Council which had been appointed Regent by the Will was not limited by

[9] Foxe, vi. 7-10; Ellis' *Orig. Lett.*, I. ii. 161, is a draft of Mary's reply.

Statute, as it would be in the present day. On the other hand, it was clear that the intention of Henry VIII. to leave everything as it stood at his death until the boy King was of age could not entirely be carried out without much inconvenience and perhaps danger to the nation. The authority of the Crown could not be suspended to such an extent as Mary maintained that it ought to have been for eight or nine years; but it would have been much more in accordance with the principles of the constitution if the Council had abstained from heroic legislation while the King was in his minority, and had contented themselves with introducing only such new laws as were actually necessary for the safe administration of Government. What they did was to use their accidental authority for furthering the progress of the Reformation in a direction which pleased the Puritan agitators, but which alienated for a time the great bulk of the people.

CHAP IV A.D. 1549

View of the question from both sides

A few weeks after this correspondence between Mary and the Privy Council—some time in August 1549—the King himself wrote her a letter in which he remonstrated with his sister for her refusal to conform to the Book of Common Prayer, but at the same time gave her permission to hold a service according to the old form for herself and her household in her own apartments.[1] Whether she dropped the service in her chapel and accepted this compromise does not appear, but nothing more seems to have been said about the matter for more than a twelvemonth.[2] On December 2, 1550, it was again revived, the Princess being now attacked through her chaplains

Edward's personal remonstrance

[1] Cal. State Papers, Dom. Mary, p. 22.

[2] Meanwhile there seems to have been some "tuning of the pulpits," for on August 31, 1550, Stephen Caston preached against the Lady Mary in St. Paul's. [*Grey Friars' Chron.*, p. 67.]

CHAP IV A.D. 1550

and other members of her household, against whom the Privy Council brought indictments for celebrating Mass, and whom they endeavoured to arrest. Further correspondence took place between the Princess, the Privy Council, and the King, the letters being all very lengthy, and those of the Privy Council very rambling. Edward's own interest in the matter was very keen, as is shown by the entries in his journal. On December 15, 1550, he notes that "there was letters sent for the taking of certain chaplains of the Lady Mary for saying Mass, which she denied."[3] On March 15, 1551, the Princess came to St. John's, Clerkenwell, her London house, for a few days, and on the 18th visited her brother at Westminster,[4] nominally to have "a goodly banquet ij. owrs," but really to be examined and admonished by the Privy Council. "The Lady Mary, my sister," writes Edward, "came to me at Westminster, where after salutations she was called, with my Council, into a chamber, where was declared how long I had suffered her Mass in hope of her reconciliation, and how now being no hope, which I perceived by her

Mary brought before the King and Council

[3] Edward VI. Journ.; Burnet's *Ref.*, v. 31.

[4] Machyn enters this visit in his *Diary*: "The xv. day the Lady Mary rode through London into St. John's her place, with fifty knights and gentlemen in velvet coats and chains of gold afore her, and after her iiij. score gentlemen and ladies, every one havyng a peyre of bedes of black. She rode through Chepe-syde and thrugh Smythfeld. The xvij. day"—Edward says the 18th—"my lade Marie rod thrugh from Saynt John's throgh Flett strett unto the court to Westmynster with many nobull men of lordes and knyghtes and gentyllmen and ladies and gentyllwomen, and at the court gatte she a-lyttyd, and M. Wingfield, the controller of the kynge's house, and mony lordes and knights, and so she was browth thrught the halle unto the chamber of pressens; and so she tared there and ade a goodly banquet ij. owrs, and sone after she toke her horse and rod unto Synt John's; and ther she laie alle nyght, and on the morowe her Grace rod to Nuw Hall in Essex, and ther byd yn grasse with honor, thanke be God and the kyng her brodur." [Machyn's *Diary*, p. 5.]

CHAP IV
A.D. 1551

letters, except I saw some short amendment, I could not bear it. She answered that her soul was God's, and her faith she would not change, nor dissemble her opinion with contrary doings. It was said, I constrained not her faith, but willed her not as a king to rule, but as a subject to obey; and that her example might breed much inconvenience." On the 19th "the Emperor's ambassador came with short message from his master of war, if I would not suffer his cousin the Princess to use her Mass. To this was no answer given at this time." On the 20th "the Bishops of Canterbury, London, Rochester, did consider to give licence to sin, was sin; to suffer and wink at it for a time might be born, so all haste possible might be used." On the 23d "the Council having the Bishops' answers," and considering the danger to trade which war would bring, "decreed to send an ambassador to the Emperor, Mr. Wotton, to deny the matter wholly, and persuade the Emperor in it, thinking by his going to win some time for a preparation for a mart, conveyance of powder, harness, etc. for the surety of the realm. In the mean season to punish the offenders, first of my servants that heard Mass, next of hers."[5]

The Emperor's demand on Mary's behalf

An ambassador sent to gain time

In accordance with the latter part of this resolution, Serjeant Morgan was sent to the Fleet on the 19th for hearing Mass at St. John's when the Princess was there, and Sir Anthony Browne also on the 22d. On April 29th Dr. Mallet, one of her chaplains, was brought before the Council and committed to the Tower, and a correspondence immediately began again between the Princess and the Council, which lasted from May 2d to June 24th. Edward notices this

Mary's officers imprisoned

[5] Edward VI.'s Journal; Burnet's *Reform.*, v. 29, 32, Pocock's Ed.

CHAP IV A.D. 1551

correspondence in entries dated June 22 and 24, 1551: "The Lady Mary letters to the Council, marvelling at the imprisonment of Dr. Mallet, her chaplain, for saying of Mass before her household, seeing it was promised the Emperor's ambassador she should not be molested in religion, but that she and her household should have the Mass said before them continually." The following entry is almost brutal, whether the Council or the Princess' brother are responsible for the substance of it: "They answered, that because of their duties to King, country, and friends, they were compelled to give her answer that they would see not only him, but also all other Mass-sayers and breakers of order, straitly punished. And that as for promise they had nor would give none to make her free from the punishment of the law in that behalf."[6]

Rude and cruel message to Mary

What was done in the meanwhile does not appear, but on August 9, 1551, the Privy Council Register begins again to be occupied with this business. On that day there is an entry directing the issue of an Order of Council, setting forth how much his Majesty has travailed with the Lady Mary to bring her to conformity in religion, and how badly his goodness has been met. Her head officers are therefore to be sent for, and charged that henceforth no other Divine Service is to be used in her house except that set forth by the laws of the realm. The chaplains are also to be strictly so commanded. At the return of these officers letters are to be sent to the same effect to the Lady Mary herself. In obedience to this order Robert Rochester, her comptroller, Edward Walgrave, one of her counsel, and Sir Francis Englefield, her Grace's

Strict orders given to her officers

[6] Edward VI.'s Journal, p. 39.

CHAP IV
A.D. 1551

servant, appeared on the 14th, and were admonished. On suggesting that the Princess would dismiss them, they were ordered not to leave her service, but to see that the Order of Council was executed. On the 22d they report that on the 15th they arrived at Copped-hall at night. On Sunday they found her Grace was going to receive the Sacrament, and so would not trouble her before noon. After dinner they delivered their letters, and offered to state what order the Council had given. She told them it was unnecessary, as she knew that it was the same as in the letters, but at last heard them. She was much offended, and charged them not to give the order to her chaplains and family. If they did, they would cease to be her servants, and she should leave the house instantly. "Upon this, the said Rochester, Inglefield, and Walgrave said to the Lords, that forasmuch as she oftentimes altered her colour, and seemed to be passioned and unquiet, they forbare to trouble her any further, fearing that the troubling of her might perchance bring her to her old disease." On the following Wednesday, the 20th, they went again to know her pleasure. They found her stedfast in her resolve; and she utterly forbade them to disturb her and her household, who were in quiet, with their commission. So they thought it better to return to the Council, bringing with them a letter from her Grace. After making this report, each of the officers was spoken to alone and admonished; and each of them declared that they would rather endure any punishment or imprisonment than go through any more interviews with the Princess on this business, and Sir Francis Englefield added that "he could neither find it in his heart nor his conscience to do it."

Mary's indignation at her treatment

Touching loyalty of her officers towards her

CHAP IV
A.D. 1551

Commissioners sent to the Princess

A commission was then sent to the Princess, consisting of the Lord Chancellor, Secretary Petre, and Sir Anthony Wingfield, Comptroller of the King's Household, with a letter to her from the King, and with long instructions containing a summary of the previous transactions, and ordering that after their interview with the Princess they shall call together all the members of her household, and forbid them to celebrate the Mass, or to be present at its celebration.

"Having thus proceeded with her Grace, as for the declarations of the causes of your coming, ye shall then cause to be called before you the chaplains and all the rest of the household there present; and in the King's Majesty's name most straitly forbid the chaplains either to say or use any mass or kind of service, other than by the law is authorized. And likewise ye shall forbid all the rest of the company to be present at any such prohibited service, upon pain to be most straitly punished, as worthily falling into the danger of the King's indignation; and a like charge to them all, that if any such offence shall be openly or secretly committed, they shall advertise some of his Majesty's Council. In the which clause ye shall use the reasons of their natural duty and allegiance that they owe as subjects to their sovereign lord, which derogateth all other earthly duties." [7]

The Privy Council Register contains a graphic report, covering four pages,[8] of the interview between these commissioners and the Princess, that interview having taken place at Copthall on the day before—Friday, August 28, 1551, in the morning. The Princess received the letters from the Lord Chancellor on her knees, and kissed them out of honour to the King's signature, specially adding that it was not for the matter of them: "For the matter (said she) I take

Her respect for the Crown

[7] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 23, ed. 1837.

[8] See also Ellis' *Orig. Lett.*, II. i. 179.

CHAP IV
A.D. 1551

to proceed not from his Majesty, but from you of the Council." In the reading of the letter, which she did read secretly to herself, she said these words in our hearing, "*Ah! good Mr. Cecill took much pain here.*" The Chancellor began a long speech, but she begged him to be short, for she was not well, and she would make them a short answer, although she had already written to the King. "After this we told her at good length," and then they offered to show her the names of the Council who were acting in the matter, but she declined, saying, "I know you to be all of one sort therein." After much more, she interrupted them again, told them she was a good subject, loved her brother, and would obey him in all reasonable things, even with her life; but rather than use any other service than that used at her father's death, "she would lay her head on a block and suffer death." But she added, as if she thought the expression too boastful, "I am unworthy to suffer death in so good a quarrel. When the King's Majesty shall come to such years that he may be able to judge these things himself, his Majesty shall find me ready to obey his orders in religion;" but now, well informed as he is for his years, he is too young to understand these things. If ships were to be sent out, or any other matter of national importance, would they trust the King's judgement? Much less in matters of divinity. If her chaplains cannot say Mass, neither she nor her poor servants can have any. If her chaplains were unwilling to incur the imprisonment, let them do as they like, "but none of your new service shall be used in my house, and if any be said in it, I will not tarry in the house."

Her short answer to the Commissioners

Reiterates her objections to Privy Council Government

Then the long-winded Lord Chancellor Goodrich,

CHAP IV
A.D. 1551

Bishop of Ely, scolded her for making her servants disobey the Council, and she retorted that it was not a very wise Council to appoint her servants to control her in her own house. But they knew her, and she knew them, and she knew that if they had spoken to her as the Council wished, they would have spoken against their own consciences.

Mary's contempt for the upstart Councillors

They then "at good length" went into the Emperor's business, and she told them the thing had once been promised; she had it under the Emperor's hand, and she believed the Emperor more than all the counsellors put together—a set of men whom her father had made, most of them, out of almost nothing. She should let the Emperor's ambassador know how she was used at their hands.

Then they presented their instructions to leave one of their number as comptroller instead of Rochester. She replied that she was old enough to appoint her own servants, and if they did so she would leave the house. "I am sickly (quoth she), and yet I would not die willingly, but will do the best I can to preserve my life; but if I shall chance to die, I will protest openly that you of the Council be the causes of my death; you give me fair words, but your deeds be always ill towards me." Then she left them, giving on her knees a ring to the Lord Chancellor for the King; and expressing her belief that they would not tell the King the message she sent him—so thoroughly did she mistrust the Council.

Her message to the Privy Council

As they were leaving she called them to a window, and made them stand in the courtyard while she sent a contemptuous message to the Council, requesting them to send back her comptroller. "For since his departing I take the account myself of my expenses, and learn how many loaves of bread be made of a

bushel of wheat. And I wis my father and mother never brought me up with baking and brewing; and, to be plain with you, I am weary of my office, and, therefore, if my Lords will send mine officer home, they shall do me pleasure; otherwise, if they will send him to prison, I beshrew him if he go not to it merely and with a good will. And I pray God to send you to do well in your souls and bodies, for some of you have but weak bodies." It was a woman's postscript.

CHAP IV A.D. 1551

Her last words to the Commissioners

After this determined reception and dismissal of the commissioners, the Princess seems to have been no more molested. Her courage in maintaining her rights as a daughter of Henry VIII. could not fail to win respect; her weak health possibly brought her some pity, and the possibility of her early succession to the Crown may have excited some apprehensions of danger to themselves in the minds of her persecutors. The Privy Councillors took their revenge by sending Rochester, Englefield, and Walgrave to the Tower on the same day that the preceding report was made, and special orders were given that they should be confined separately, without the use of pens, ink, or paper, and that they were only to be allowed to hold communication with one attendant. At the same time the coast was watched to prevent secret communication between the Princess and the Emperor, Edward entering in his journal that "certain pinnaces were prepared to see that there should be no conveyance over sea of the Lady Mary secretly done;" and for greater security it was ordered "that when I came from this progress to Hampton Court or Westminster, both my sisters should be with me till further orders were taken for this purpose."[9]

The Council's revenge

Its precautions taken against her

Although the ambassador of the Emperor interceded

[9] Edward VI.'s Journal, p. 46.

CHAP IV
A.D. 1552

on behalf of the Princess's officers, they were kept in close confinement until March 18, 1552, when the Privy Council gave orders that they should be permitted to leave the Tower, "and go to their houses in the country for air, their health being so bad." A few weeks afterwards, on April 14, 1552, there is a final entry on the subject, directing that they should "go to the Princess Mary, according to her desire."

Reconciliation of the King and Princess

It would seem as if the final fall of the Duke of Somerset, and his execution on January 22, 1552, made some difference in the treatment of the Princess Mary, for she appears now to have been ostensibly on good terms with the King and the Council up to the end of the reign. She paid a visit to her brother at Greenwich on June 13, 1552,[1] and at Westminster on February 10, 1553.[2] She was on her way to visit him again on July 7, 1553, when a courier reached her with the information that the young King had died the night before.

[1] "The xj. day of Juin cam rydyng to London my lade Mary's grase through London unto Sayent John's with a goodly company of gentyll men and gentyll women. The xiij. day of Juin rod thrugh London unto the Towre warffe my lade Mary grase, the Kynge's syster, and toke her barge to Grenwyche, the Kynge's courte, and so cam agayn at vj. a-cloke at nyght, and so landyd at the Towre, and so unto Saynt John's beyond Smyth-feld." [Machyn's *Diary*, p. 20.]

[2] "The vj. day of Feybruary cam to London and rod thrughe London my lade Mary's grasse, the Kynge's syster, with a grett nombour of lordes and knyghtes, and her grace a grett number of lades and jentyll women and jentyll men to the number of ij. honderd horsse, and thrug Chepe unto Saynt John's.

"The x. day of February rod my lade Mary's grasse from Saynt John's and thrugh Flettstrett unto the Kyng at Westmynster with a grett nombur of lords and knyghtes, and alle the great women lades, the duches of Suffoke and Northumberland, my lade marqwes of Northamptun, and lade marqwes of Wynchester, and the contes of Arundelle, my lade Clynton, my lade Browne and Browne, and many mo lades and gentyllwomen; and at the oter gatt ther mett her my lord of Suffoke and my lord of Northumberland, my lord of Wynchester, my lord of Bedfford, and therle of Shrusbery, the therle of Arundell, my lord Chamburlayn, my lord Admerolle, and a gret nomber of knyghtes and gentyllmen, and so up unto the chambur of pressens, and ther the Kynge's grace mett her and salutyd her." [Machyn's *Diary*, p. 30.]

CHAPTER V

FIVE YEARS OF ULTRAMONTANISM UNDER QUEEN MARY

[A.D. 1553—1558]

CHAP V
A.D. 1553

AS soon as it had become certain that the death of Edward VI. was approaching, the party which had supported the Duke of Northumberland prepared their measures for setting his niece and daughter-in-law upon the throne, and for reconciling the nation to this substitution of a private subject of doubtful origin for the daughter and sister of kings.[1] But although the conspirators were the most powerful personages in the kingdom, and were headed by the Archbishop of Canterbury, their well-laid plans proved utterly abortive, their treason recoiled on their own heads, and within a fortnight the nation ran wild with joy at the proclamation of the rightful heir to the Crown.

The Duke of Northumberland's rebellion

§ 1. The Circumstances attending Queen Mary's Accession

At the time of her brother's last illness the Princess Mary was residing at Kenninghall, a house which she

[1] Four days before the death of the King, on the Festival of the Visitation of the Blessed Virgin, the sermon at St. Paul's Cross was preached by Hodgkins, Suffragan Bishop of Bedford, who ostentatiously omitted the names of the Princesses Mary and Elizabeth from the Bidding Prayer.

CHAP V

A.D. 1553

had in Norfolk, not far from Thetford. There she received a letter in the name of the King and Privy Council, requiring her attendance at Court during the King's illness; and she at once started for London. She had arrived so near the end of her journey as Hodderdon, near Hatfield, when, as she rode forward early on the morning of Friday, July 7, 1553, a courier reached her from the Earl of Arundel with intelligence that her brother had died the previous evening, that he had arranged for the succession of Lady Jane Grey to the throne, and that the Council intended to conceal his death from Mary until they had her safely lodged in the Tower. It was an escape of a few hours only, for the Tower was but seventeen miles off; but Mary was prompt in action, and turning her horse's head at once, she and her friends reached Kenninghall again the next evening. A few days afterwards she retired to Framlingham Castle, in Suffolk, which was nearer the coast, and thus offered better facilities for escape to the Emperor in Flanders if necessary.

Mary informed of the conspiracy against her

From Kenninghall the Queen instantly wrote a politic letter to the Privy Council, dated July 9, 1553, expressing surprise that she had not yet received any intelligence of her brother's death from them, but not doubting that they had good reasons of state for acting as they had done. At the same time she had heard that there was a plot to deprive her of her right to the Crown, and therefore she required them upon their allegiance to proclaim her Queen in London and elsewhere, as she had already caused proclamation to be made in Norfolk. To this letter the Privy Council replied that their "Sovereign Lady Queen Jane is . . . . invested and possessed with the just and right title" to the Crown, not only by the old custom of

She orders the Council to proclaim her Queen

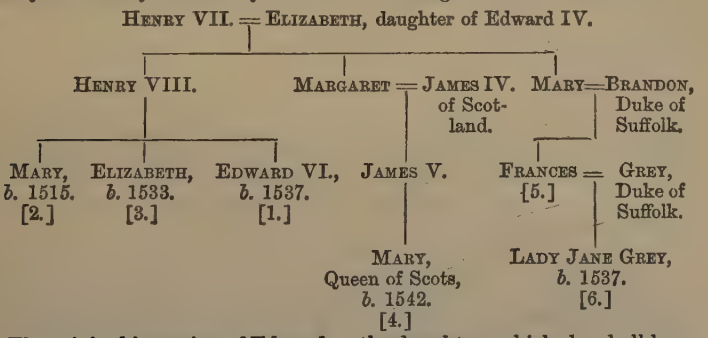
CHAP V

A.D. 1553

the realm,[2] but by the deceased King's Letters Patent under the Great Seal. They must therefore give their allegiance to Queen Jane, and no other. They add that Henry VIII. having been divorced from her mother, she herself was "justly made illegitimate and unheritable to the Crown Imperial of this realm." They therefore require her to surcease from vexing and molesting "any of our Sovereign Queen Jane's subjects from their true faith and allegiance due unto her Grace," and promise that if she will remain quiet and obedient they will be ready to show her any reasonable favour that their duty will allow them to do. This letter, signed by twenty-three Privy Councillors, the name of Archbishop Cranmer standing first, because he was

Insulting reply of the Council

[2] The actual places of Queen Mary and Lady Jane Grey in the succession may be seen by the following table :—


Henry VII. = Elizabeth, daughter of Edward IV.
Henry VIII.
Margaret = James IV. of Scotland.
Mary = Brandon, Duke of Suffolk.
Mary, b. 1515. [2.]
Elizabeth, b. 1533. [3.]
Edward VI., b. 1537. [1.]
James V.
Frances = [5.] Grey, Duke of Suffolk.
Mary, Queen of Scots, b. 1542. [4.]
Lady Jane Grey, b. 1537. [6.]

The original intention of Edward VI. was to prevent the Crown from falling to a woman, as is shown by a paper which exists in his own handwriting, entitled, "My devise for the succession." The first and most important paragraph of this is as follows :—

"For lack of issue of my body to the Lady Frances' heirs-male, if she have any such issue before my death. To the Lady Jane's heirs-male and her heirs-male. To the Lady Katharine's heirs-male. To the Lady Mary's heirs-male. To the heirs-male of the daughters which she shall have hereafter. Then to the Lady Margaret's heirs-male. For lack of such issue to the heirs-male of the Lady Jane's daughters. To the heirs-male of the Lady Katharine's daughters, and so forth till you come to the Lady Margaret's heirs-male." [Strype's *Cranmer*, iii. 447, ed. 1854.] The erasure and interlineation connected with the name of Lady Jane indicate the change produced in the young King's intentions by the influence of the Duke of Northumberland.

CHAP V

A.D. 1553

"the chief of the Council,"[3] but no other bishop except the Lord Chancellor signing the document.

Lady Jane Grey proclaimed Queen

The Dukes of Suffolk and Northumberland were now sent to Durham House to announce to Lady Jane Grey that she was made Queen, and on the next day, July 10, 1553, when she had been safely carried to the Tower with great state, she was proclaimed,[4] but "few or none said God save her."[5] On the same day a letter was written in the name of "Queen" Jane to the Marquis of Northampton, as Lord Lieutenant of Surrey, to give his allegiance to her against the "feigned and untrue claim of the Lady Mary, bastard daughter to our great-uncle Henry VIII.;"[6] and on the Sunday, the

[3] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, viii. 86, ed. 1837.

[4] "The ix. day of July was sworne unto the qwen Jane alle the hed offesers and the gard as qwen of England."

"The x. day of July was reseyvyd into the Towre the qwen Jane with a grett compeny of lords and nobulls of . . . . after the qwen, and the duches of Suffolke, her mother, bering her trayn, with mony lades, and ther was a shot of gunnes and chamburs has nott be sene oft betweyn iiij. and v. of the clock: by vj. of the cloke be-gane the proclamasyon the same afternon of qwen Jane, with ij. harolds and a trumpet blohyng that my lade Mare was unlafully begotten, and so went through Chepe to Fletstrett, proclamyng qwen Jane; and ther was a yong man taken that tym for spyking of serten wordes of qwen Mare, that she had the ryght tytle." [Machyn's *Diary*, p. 35.] The next day this young man was put in the pillory, and had his ears cut off. [*Ibid.*]

The original proclamation is preserved in the British Museum. [Lansd. 198.] It is dated from the Tower on July 10, 1553. In it Queen Jane is styled "of the Church of England, and also of Ireland, under Christ, in earth the Supreme Head." She is made to claim the Crown by right of Letters Patent, dated June 21st, in the seventh of the reign of Edward VI., which had been signed "in the presence of the most part of his nobles, his counsellors, his judges, and divers other grave and sage personages, for the profit and surety of the whole realm, thereto assenting and subscribing their names to the same." It declares Lady Mary and Lady Elizabeth to be "illegitimate and not lawfully begotten," because both Catharine and Anne had been divorced "according to the Word of God and ecclesiastical laws," both divorces having been "ratified and confirmed by authority of Parliament," and both still "remaining in force, strength, and effect." Also, that these two ladies were "of the half blood" to King Edward, and therefore by the ancient laws "not inheritable unto our said late cousin, although they had been born in lawful matrimony."

[5] *Grey Friars' Chron.*, p. 79.

[6] Lansd. MS., 1236, f. 24.

16th, Bishop Ridley preached at Paul's Cross, "and there," as the Bishop of the Metropolitan Diocese, "called both the said ladies," Mary and Elizabeth, "bastards, that all the people was sore annoyed with his words so uncharitably spoken by him in so open an audience."[7] CHAP V A.D. 1553

But the girl "Queen"—she was only sixteen years of age—who had thus for the moment taken the place of the deceased boy King, had not the slightest hold upon the hearts of the people. Cranmer, Ridley, her relations, and a few fanatical Puritans, were her only real subjects, while the bulk of the nation rallied at once round the daughter of a King whose popularity had never waned, notwithstanding all his crimes and tyrannies. So hopeless did the cause of Northumberland's puppet queen become, that, although on Wednesday, July 19th, Cranmer and sixteen others of the Privy Council wrote to Lord Rich, the Lord Lieutenant of Essex, that come what would they should remain stedfast to their Sovereign Queen Jane's service; yet, on Thursday, July 20th, they actually wrote to Queen Mary declaring that they were her true subjects, and implored her pardon; Cranmer and thirteen other Privy Councillors writing at the same time to the Duke of Northumberland, in Queen Mary's name, directing him to disarm his troops.[8] Northumberland tried to escape from the consequences of his rebellion by proclaiming Queen Mary, which he did at Cambridge on July 20th; the rest of the Council trusted to Mary's clemency. Bishop Ridley, who had preached at Paul's Cross the Sunday before that the Queen was a bastard, rushed off to Framlingham to obtain pardon as soon

Lady Jane not cared for by the nation

The bubble bursts

[7] *Grey Friars' Chron.*, p. 78; Wriothesley's *Chron.*, ii. 88.

[8] Strype's *Cranmer*, iii. 6, 7, 9, 449, 451, ed. 1854.

CHAP V

as ever he saw that the bubble had burst; but he was taken prisoner at Ipswich, and lodged in the Tower at two in the afternoon of July 26th, so quick was justice in overtaking the rebels—Northumberland having been sent there, not without danger of being lynched by the crowds in the streets, on the previous day.[9]

The unfortunate, though by no means blameless girl, Lady Jane Grey, had been proclaimed Queen on July 10th amidst the silent contempt of the people.[1] Ten days afterwards, on July 20th, Queen Mary was proclaimed amidst demonstrations of the greatest joy. "At Paul's," says a contemporary, "there was *Te Deum Laudamus* with song, and the organs playing, and all the bells ringing through London, and bonfires and tables in every street, and wine, and beer, and ale, and every street full of bonfires, and there was money cast away" in largess.[2] "Almost the whole nation," writes another contemporary, "rose to her assistance; first of all the people of Norfolk and Suffolk, and then those of Oxfordshire, Buckinghamshire, Berkshire, and Essex. . . . In these things our Oxford folk lead the van, and respecting them I must tell you something further. At the proclamation of Jane they displayed nothing but grief. At the proclamation of Mary, even before she was proclaimed in London, and while the event was yet doubtful, they gave such demonstrations of joy as to spare nothing. They first of all made so much noise all the day long with clapping their hands that it seems still to linger in my ears. Then even the poorest of them made voluntary subscriptions, and mutually exhorted each other to maintain the cause of Mary. Lastly, at night

National joy at Mary's accession

Oxford first in loyal demonstrations

[9] *Grey Friars' Chron.*, p. 81. [1] Hollinshed's *Chron.*, p. 1087.
[2] Machyn's *Diary*, p. 37.

CHAP V

A.D. 1553

they made a public feast, and threatened flames, hanging, the gallows, and drowning to all the Gospellers."[3] "Great was the triumph here at London," writes another, "for my time I never saw the like, and by the report of others the like was never seen. The number of caps that were thrown up at the proclamation were not to be told. The Earl of Pembroke threw away his cap full of angels. I saw myself money was thrown out at windows for joy. The bonfires were without number, and what with shouting and crying of the people, and ringing of bells, there could no one man hear almost what another said; besides banquetting and supping in the streets for joy." At Northampton "Sir Thomas Gresham proclaimed her with the help and aid of the town, being borne amongst them whether he would or not. Sir Nicolas Throgmorton being present, withstanding him to his power, was driven for safety of his life to take a house, and so being borne amongst divers gentlemen, escaped with much ado, the inhabitants would have killed him very fain."[4]

Loyal excitement in London

When Queen Mary halted near Hertford for the second time in that eventful three weeks, on this occasion at Hunsdon, an army of 30,000 had rallied round her, all serving without pay, for love of their Queen, but the needy being assisted as if by their officers.[5] On August 3, 1553, she entered London with a splendid train of attendants, and a royal guard of 3000 horsemen;[6] her sister, the Princess Elizabeth,

A splendid army quickly mustered

[3] *Orig. Lett.*, Park Soc., 366, 369.

[4] Madden's *Privy Purse Expenses*, p. cxv.; Wriothesley's *Chron.*, ii. 89.

[5] Haynes' State Papers, p. 157.

[6] "The iij. day of August the Queen came riding to London, and so to the Tower, making her entrance at Aldgate, and a grett nomber of stremars hanging about the said gate, and all the strett unto Ledynhalle and unto the Tower were laid with graffvel, and all the crafts of London stood in a row with their banars and

CHAP V

A.D. 1553

riding by her side. Their entrance to the Tower was signalized by a dramatic and touching incident. In anticipation of her clemency the governor had allowed the state prisoners of her brother's time to come out of their dismal chambers, and there knelt upon the green where she would assuredly have been beheaded had Northumberland got her into his power; the young Lord Courtenay, who had been in prison for thirteen years, although he was only twenty-five years of age; the old Duke of Norfolk, who, more fortunate than his son, the great Earl of Surrey, had escaped death by the skin of his teeth through the death of Henry; the Duchess of Somerset, who had been kept in prison by Edward VI. ever since the execution of her husband, his uncle; and Bishop Gardiner, emaciated and thoroughly broken in health by a very rigid confinement of five years without books, pens, ink, paper, or society. Gardiner made a short address to the Queen, who was greatly affected at the sight, and as she gave each of them her hand to kiss, she granted them their liberty, an earnest of their immediate restoration to their honours.

The Tower prisoners

They are promptly set at liberty

The Queen's treatment of those who had endeavoured to deprive her of her Crown was exceedingly merciful. A list of those who had been imprisoned on account of Lady Jane's rebellion was put into her hands, and she at once struck off sixteen, leaving only

stremars hangyd over ther heds. Her Grace cam, and a-for her a M velvet cotes and clokes in brodere, and the mar of London bare the mase, and the erle of Arundell bare the sworde, and all the trumpets blowing; and next her my lade Elisabeth, and next her the duches of Norffolke, and next her the marqwes of Exeter, and other lades; and after her the aldermen, and then the gard with bowes and gaffylens, and all the reseden departed at Aldgate in gren and whyt, and red and whyt, and bluw and gren, to the number of iij. M[1] horse and speres and gaffelyns." [Machyn's *Diary*, p. 38; see also Wriothesley's *Chron.*, ii. 93.]

CHAP V

A.D. 1553

eleven to be tried, namely, the Duke of Northumberland, the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Marquess of Northampton, the Earl of Warwick, and his brothers the Lords Ambrose and Guildford Dudley, Lady Jane Dudley, Sir Andrew Dudley, Sir John Gates, Sir Henry Gates, and Sir Thomas Palmer.[7] Of these eleven, only three—the Duke, Gates, and Palmer—were at that time tried and condemned to die, and they alone suffered the penalty of high treason, being executed on August 22d. On November 13th Cranmer, Lords Ambrose, Henry, and Guildford Dudley, and Lady Jane, were arraigned at Guildhall under an Act of Attainder [1 Mar. sess. 3, cap. 16], and "they all five were cast for to die;"[8] but it was not until after the rebellion headed by her father, the Duke of Suffolk, and Sir Thomas Wyatt, that Lady Jane Grey and her husband were, on February 12, 1554, executed.

Leniency towards the rebels

§ 2. The Fall of Archbishop Cranmer.

The lead in ecclesiastical affairs necessarily dropped from Archbishop Cranmer's hands when his partisanship had landed him in high treason. For a few weeks he was allowed to remain a prisoner at large in his palace at Lambeth.[9]

Cranmer no longer leads

[7] Haynes' State Pap., pp. 192, 193.

[8] Machyn's *Diary*, 48.

[9] He dates a letter to Cecil, "From Lambeth, this 14th day of this month of August," and speaks of having seen Cecil at Court, but not daring to speak to him. [Jenkyns' *Cranmer's Rem.*, i. 360.]

On August 27th he was summoned to appear during the next week, in company with Sir Thomas Smith and the Dean of St. Paul's, before Her Majesty's Commissioners sitting in the Consistory of St. Paul's. These were the delegates who acted for the Crown in ecclesiastical causes, and who were now appointed to hear Bonner's appeal from the sentence of deprivation pronounced upon him by Cranmer,

CHAP V

A.D. 1553

Cranmer's protest against the Mass

On the 7th of September, however, he was called before the Privy Council on account of a broadside published in his name, and really written by him, though printed without his knowledge. This production was intended to contradict a report which had been spread that he had offered to say Mass at the funeral of Edward VI., and that he had said or restored Mass at his cathedral. As he had said Mass some thousands of times during about twenty-seven of the thirty years which had elapsed since his ordination as priest, it might have been supposed that he could have answered the charge, if he answered it at all, with humility and temperance.[1] Instead of doing so, he wrote a most arrogant and combative document, beginning, "As the devil, Christ's ancient adversary, is a liar, and the father of lying, even so hath he stirred his servants and members to persecute Christ and His true word and religion, which he ceaseth not to do most earnestly at this present;" and offering that if the Queen will only give him the assistance of Peter Martyr, he will prove to everybody that she is in the wrong, and he in the right. Some of the Privy Council endeavoured to bring him to a gentler mind, and so help him to escape from his false position, but the Archbishop grew more and more testy, declaring that he had intended to expand the document and put it on the doors of all the churches in London. He was dismissed for the time, but told that he would

Is brought before the Privy Council

Ridley, Smith, and May. The Archbishop, Bishop Ridley, and Dean May appeared by their proctors, but Smith did not appear. [Strype's *Mem. Eccl.*, III. i. 35, 36, ed. 1822.]

[1] Cranmer's temper was so irritable when he was opposed, that, when the Duke of Northumberland once spoke contemptuously of his reforming measures, he "ad duellum provocaret," as his successor Parker [Parker's *Antiq. Brit.*, p. 341], or "offered to combat with the Duke," as his secretary Morris puts it. [Morris, in Strype's *Cranmer*, iii. 360, ed. 1854.]

CHAP V
A.D. 1553

hear more of the business. It seems then to have been concluded that Cranmer's personal dislike of the Queen, in association with the part which he had taken in setting up Lady Jane Grey, made it dangerous for him to be left free. He was therefore committed to the Tower a week afterwards,[2] and he never regained his liberty. A month later, Parliament passed the Act of Attainder against him, as also against Lady Jane, her husband, and the other two Dudleys, and this Act was carried into effect on November 13th, when they were all five arraigned at Guildhall and condemned for high treason. By this Act of Attainder Cranmer's life was placed at the mercy of the Crown, like the life of any other traitor. He also ceased to be Archbishop of Canterbury, and the affairs of the see were administered in the usual manner, "*sede vacante*," by the Dean and Chapter of Canterbury from that time until the appointment of his successor, Cardinal Pole, in 1556.[3] He did not, of course, cease to be a bishop, but he lost his jurisdiction, and ceased to be the bishop of any see.

Is found guilty of treason

Ceases to be Archbishop of Canterbury

Soon after his condemnation as a traitor to the Crown, Cranmer earnestly entreated the Queen to grant him an interview; but she would not see him, having a personal repugnance towards the man who

[2] The Privy Council Register contains an entry on September 14, 1553, as follows: "This present day Thomas, Archbishop of Canterbury, appearing before the Lords (as he was the day before appointed), after long and serious debating of his offence by the whole Board, it was thought convenient that, as well for the treason committed by him against the Queen's Highness as for the aggravating of the same his offence by spreading abroad seditious bills, moving tumults to the disquietness of the present State, he should be committed to the Tower, there to remain, and be referred to justice, or further ordered, as shall stand with the Queen's pleasure." [Haynes' State Papers, p. 184.]

[3] During this time a separate register was kept, entitled, "Vacatio sedis Metropoliticæ Christi Cantuariensis post depositionem Thomæ Cranmer . . . sub annis 1553, 1554, et 1555," etc.

LIBRARY
Perkins School of Theology

CHAP V A.D. 1553

had divorced her beloved mother and pronounced herself to be an illegitimate daughter. He was excepted from the general pardon issued at the coronation, and then he sent up a petition to the Crown for a separate pardon; but he petitioned for some time in vain, though his life was spared as a matter of policy—not as a matter of mercy—for two years and a half after his committal to the Tower.[4]

Reasons for not pardoning Cranmer's treason at once

And assuredly Cranmer had no special claim to mercy at that time, either as a man or a subject. Whatever good qualities he may have had, he himself knew nothing of mercy. His disposition was so harsh and unloving that he was himself unloved, and neither wife nor children nor acquaintances showed the slightest personal interest in him from the time that he was sent to the Tower to the time that he was burned in Oxford. His life had been one of ambition and haughty self-willedness. He had vaulted into the throne of Canterbury and the popedom of the English Church by assisting, with a perseverance that never hesitated, to crush the gentle and pious Queen Catharine. He assisted also with the greatest readiness in bringing Anne Boleyn, her successor, to the block on Tower Green. He backed all Cromwell's most cruel policy. He took an active part in sending Anne Askew, Lambert, Joan Butcher, and Van Parre to be burned for their religious opinions. He persecuted his dangerous suffragan, Gardiner, with rancorous hatred, and insulted him when his hands were tied behind his back. He showed no sign of forbearance when the Privy Council were hunting down Mary while she was Princess. He was one of those who endeavoured to entrap her into the Tower after her brother's death, who

[4] Strype's *Cranmer*, iii. 19, note, ed. 1854.

set up Jane as Queen instead of her, and who would undoubtedly have sent Mary to the block had she not been too quick for them. Such a man was not amenable to mercy, and it does not appear that any one pleaded for his pardon except himself.

CHAP V

A.D. 1553

Reasons for sparing Cranmer's life

But the character and previous conduct of Cranmer suggested that he might still be made useful. Queen Mary had already fallen under the influence of those who desired to go much further than the reactionary party in matters of religion; and the life of Cranmer was spared out of policy. It was hoped that since he had acknowledged his error as regarded the succession to the Crown, so also he would acknowledge that he had been mistaken in allowing himself to be made the chief instrument for the extinction of the Pope's authority over England. In a long address which was made to him by Brooks, Bishop of Gloucester, in St. Mary's Church, Oxford, on September 12, 1555, the Bishop stated that he acted under a commission "partly from the Pope's holiness, partly from the King and Queen's most excellent Majesties," and the tenour of the address shows how important an object this was considered even to the last. After showing how all his errors and all his misfortunes had arisen from his rejection of the Papal Supremacy, Brooks exhorted him again to recognize it, and "it is ten to one," he added, "that whereas you were Archbishop of Canterbury and Metropolitan of England—it is ten to one, I say, that ye shall be as well still, yea, and rather better."[5] Long affliction had now, however, brought out the better qualities of the man, the Bishop, and the Christian, and Cranmer was not to be seduced by the proffered bribe.[6]

Hopes of his recantation

[5] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, viii. 48, ed. 1838.

[6] Although the Pope had appointed Cardinal Pole to the Arch-

CHAP V A.D. 1553

But in the earlier days of his imprisonment there might have been more probability of his accepting it, and his life was undoubtedly spared in the hope that he would eventually agree to the policy of the Ultramontane party behind the throne, and facilitate the changes which they desired to make.

§ 3. The Restoration of the Papal Power

But the course taken by the Queen and her Government did not for some time indicate any intention of restoring the jurisdiction and authority of the Pope, Gardiner, her principal adviser before her marriage, being decidedly opposed to such a restoration; and if the Queen herself had any inclination towards it, her private feelings were not suffered to influence her public policy until they had been worked upon by the agents of Cardinal Pole and of her future husband.[7]

Gardiner opposed to restoration of Papal authority

The association of the leading Reformers with the rebellion of the Duke of Northumberland did indeed tend at once to bring discredit on all that had been done under their influence in the preceding reign. Their singularly impolitic short-sightedness in respect

bishopric on December 11th in the preceding year, he was not consecrated until six months after Brooks made this half-promise—on March 22, 1556, the day after Cranmer had been burned—and thus the suggested restoration was actually possible at the time when it was thus insidiously put before Cranmer.

[7] Bishop Gardiner had been sworn in a Privy Councillor on August 5th. On the following day orders were sent by the Privy Council to Lord Northampton's officers to leave the Bishop of Winchester's house in the Clink, and suffer the Bishop's folks to enter immediately. On August 23d he was appointed Lord Chancellor, and held that office until his death in 1556. Gardiner, Bonner, Tunstall, Heath, and Day were all restored to the bishoprics of which they had been deprived by suits of appeal before the Court of Delegates, which reversed the sentences of deprivation.

CHAP V

A.D. 1553

to that rebellion had also brought into power those who had regarded the legislation of Edward's reign with great disfavour, and who had suffered the loss of office and liberty at the hands of the party by which it was originated and carried out. Thus it happened that the course of government underwent one of those violent wrenches which are not altogether unknown even in modern times when one party is displaced by another. As the policy of a Wellington was succeeded by that of a Grey in 1830, or that of a Beaconsfield by that of a Gladstone in 1880, so was the policy of Cranmer succeeded by that of Gardiner in 1553.

Change of ecclesiastical policy

Earlier attitude towards Rome.

But although there was a *bouleversement* of policy in some respects, there was no immediate intention of falling back upon the mediævalism which had been discarded a quarter of a century before. This retrogression was an after-thought, and resulted in the ultramontanism which gave so ghastly a colour to the reign of Queen Mary. The first intention of the new sovereign and the new ministry was to obliterate as much as possible the reforming legislation of the previous reign, and to fall back upon that of Henry VIII., a course of action which was in exact agreement with the opinions uniformly expressed by the Queen, by Gardiner, and by the reactionary party in general, during the time of the young King.

This characteristic of the ecclesiastical policy of Queen Mary's early reign may be illustrated from three points of view.

The Queen's style at first maintained

I. The first of these is the maintenance of the Queen's style for nearly ten months in the same form in which it had been used by Henry VIII. after his

CHAP V

A.D. 1553

restoration of the Royal Supremacy. When a Parliament was called together three months after her accession, it was summoned in the name of "Mary, by the Grace of God, Queen of England, France, and Ireland, Defender of the Faith and of the Church of England, and also of Ireland, in earth Supreme Head;" and the same style was retained in the first nineteen Acts which were passed during her reign. When her marriage with Philip of Spain had been arranged, the new policy which was about to be adopted was foreshadowed by a change of the style, and on April 2, 1554, it appeared in the form, "Mary, by the Grace of God, Queen of England, France, and Ireland, Defender of the Faith," the Royal Supremacy being no longer recognized. Even in this shortened form, however, there was a defiance of the Pope's authority worthy of a Tudor. Henry VIII. had assumed the title of "King of Ireland" in the place of "Lord of Ireland" in the year 1542; but as the Pope claimed that he alone had authority to erect kingdoms, the title was considered unlawful at Rome. When it appeared in the credentials of the English ambassadors who were sent to Paul IV. to beg for the reconciliation of England to the Holy See, the Pope declined at first to receive them, but found a way out of the difficulty by privately going through the farce of erecting Ireland into a kingdom, and conferring on the Queen the title which she already held without his authority.[8] Nor was the Royal Supremacy by any means given up by Queen Mary, although she dropped the title of "Supreme Head." For an Act of Parliament was

The unaltered style

The altered style

Papal claims not all recognized

Supremacy of Crown still maintained

[8] The Bull constituting Ireland a kingdom was placed before the Privy Council on September 16, 1555, and was ordered to be laid up in the Treasury there.

passed in 1554 [1 Mar. sess. 3, cap. 9], by which she received authority to make statutes for all the cathedrals of the new foundation; and she also issued a set of Injunctions to the bishops, the supremacy being as distinctly and forcibly exercised in these two cases as in any which had occurred during the reigns of her father and her brother.

Mary declares her intention of being tolerant of others,

II. In a similar way the Queen and her advisers fell back upon the reforming policy of Henry VIII., and not on mediævalism, as regards the devotional system of the Church. A few weeks after her accession she issued a proclamation censuring, as Henry VIII. and Edward VI. had similarly done, the bitter controversial spirit which was abroad, and which led men to use "those new-found devilish terms of Papist and Heretic, and such-like," instead of "applying their whole care, study, and travail to live in the fear of God." In the course of this proclamation the Queen declares that her own personal religion is that "which God and the world knoweth she hath ever professed from her infancy hitherto; which, as her Majesty is minded to observe and maintain for herself, by God's grace, during her time, so doth her Highness much desire, and would be glad the same were of all her subjects quietly and charitably entertained." But, notwithstanding her own personal convictions, "her Highness mindeth not to compel any of her said subjects thereunto, until such time as further order, by common assent, may be taken therein."[9] This proclamation was issued on August 18, 1553, and there is no record extant which entitles us to suppose that it expresses anything else than the intention of the Queen and her ministers at that time, when there had been no talk of

though not changing her own opinions or practices

[9] Wilkins' *Concil.*, iv. 86.

CHAP V

A.D. 1553

her marriage to Philip, when no communication had been received on behalf of the Pope, and when Mary was still acting under the influence of her own good instincts and the advice of a wise and politic counsellor trained in the tolerant school of Wolsey.

Oct. 5—Dec. 6, 1553, 1st and 2d sess.

III. Even when "further order" was taken, as it was on the meeting of Parliament, the legislation which followed went upon the same principles. The second Act passed was one to legitimate the Queen [1 Mar. sess. 2, cap. 1], declaring that she had been born in a most just and lawful matrimony, and annulling the sentence of divorce which had been pronounced between her father and mother by Archbishop Cranmer, as well as all Acts of Parliament which had been made contrary to her legitimacy. In this Act there was no reference to the Pope's authority, what was done being done solely by the authority of Parliament; and the omission was afterwards complained of with much bitterness by Cardinal Pole.[1]

The Pope's authority ignored again

The next Act which was passed was one [1 Mar. sess. 2, cap. 2] repealing the Acts respecting Divine Service, the marriage of the clergy, and the appointment of bishops without election, which had been made in the reign of Edward VI.[2] In this Act, however, there was no attempt to return to the customs of the Church as they existed before the Reformation began. The "further

[1] See his instructions to Dr. Goldwell, whom he sent to the Queen, in Strype's *Cranmer*, iii. 477, 479, Eccl. Hist. Soc. Ed.

[2] The nine Acts so repealed were the Act authorizing the Administration of the Holy Communion in both kinds [1 Edw. VI. 1], the two Acts of Uniformity, and that authorizing the Ordinal [2 Edw. VI. 1, 5 Edw. VI. 1, 3 Edw. VI. 12], the Act respecting the Election of Bishops [1 Edw. VI. 2], the Act for abolishing the old Service Books [2 Edw. VI. 10], the Act for the limitation of Holy-Days [5 Edw. VI. 3], and the two Acts withdrawing the permission which had been given to priests to marry [2 Edw. VI. 21, 5 Edw. VI. 12].

order" which was taken was an express provision that, after December 20, 1553, Divine Service should be restored to the form in which it existed during the last year of Henry VIII., when the vernacular was largely used, and many modifications had taken place in the ancient ritual.[3] The words of the Act are: "Be it further enacted that all such Divine Service and administration of the Sacraments as were most commonly used in this realm of England in the last year of the reign of our late Sovereign Lord, King Henry VIII., shall be, from and after the 20th day of December 1553, used throughout the whole realm of England, and all other the Queen Majesty's dominions."

The Service restored at first

Similar words are found in the next Act which was passed, one made necessary by the murderous violence of some of the Puritans, in which penalties were enacted against any who should molest or hinder any priest "preparing, saying, doing, singing, ministering, or celebrating the Mass or other such Divine Service, Sacraments, or Sacramentals, as was most commonly frequented and used in the last year of the reign of the late Sovereign Lord, King Henry the Eighth, or that at any time hereafter shall be allowed, set forth, or authorized by the Queen's Majesty" [1 Mar.

That of Henry VIII.'s last year

[3] See vol. i. ch. ix., and vol. ii. p. 76, for an account of these modifications.

It is interesting to find from the Privy Council Register that much care was taken to replace all that could be recovered of the Church goods which had been taken away by the Church robbers of King Edward's days. On November 3, 1553, for example, an account was rendered of 3367 ounces of Church plate which had been taken from the county of Somerset; and it was ordered that all which was uninjured should be returned. Patens amounting in weight to 1078 ounces were sent to the churches and chapels whence they came, and the nineteen chalices were distributed to the nineteen largest parish churches within the county. [Haynes' State Papers, 195.] Similar orders appear respecting Dorsetshire and Wiltshire, on November 23d and December 3d. So also with what had been concealed [see page 67], as when on August 23, 1553, the Mayor and Aldermen of Canterbury were ordered to deliver up to the Dean and Chapter the keys of the places where their chief ornaments were locked up.

CHAP V

A.D. 1553

sess. 2, cap. 3]. Very few Service Books of this reign exist of an earlier date than 1555 to show in what manner and to what extent this Act was carried out; but there is one striking proof of its loyal observance for a time in a volume which contains the English Litany, in use since 1545, with the clause, "That it may please Thee to keep and strengthen in the true worshipping of Thee, in righteousness and holiness of life, Thy Servants PHILIP and MARY, our most gracious King and Queen, and Governors."[4]

English Litany used still

It is the more important to observe the date given in this Act, as it emphasizes the fact that there were two very distinctly marked stages of legislation and governmental action respecting the Reformation in the reign of the Queen. In this *first stage* the line of retrogression was drawn at "the last year of Henry the Eighth"[5] [April 22, 1546—Jan. 28, 1547], when the Papal authority had been ousted from England for eighteen years. In the *second stage* the line of retrogression was drawn at "the twentieth year of King Henry the Eighth" [April 22, 1528—April 21, 1529], which was the year before the Royal Supremacy had been reasserted and that of the Pope abrogated, this year being adopted in the Act [1 and 2 Ph. and M. cap. 8] by which the third Parliament of this reign [Nov. 11, 1554—Jan. 16, 1555] obtained pardon from the Pope for the sins of its more patriotic predecessors.

The two stages of retrogression

[4] Brit. Mus. $\frac{c\,25\,b}{3}$. The use of the English Litany was afterwards, however, forbidden, and those priests who used it were imprisoned by the Privy Council, as was the Vicar of St. Martin's in the Fields. [Nicholl's *Narr. of Reform.*, p. 290, Camd. Soc.]

[5] In the ecclesiastical legislation of Queen Elizabeth a similar line was drawn at the next year but one, the Elizabethan Act of Uniformity [1 Eliz. cap. 2] enacting that the ornaments of churches and ministers should be such as were in use "in this Church of England by authority of Parliament in the second year of the reign of King Edward the Sixth." [Jan. 28, 1548—Jan. 27, 1549.]

Later attitude towards Rome.

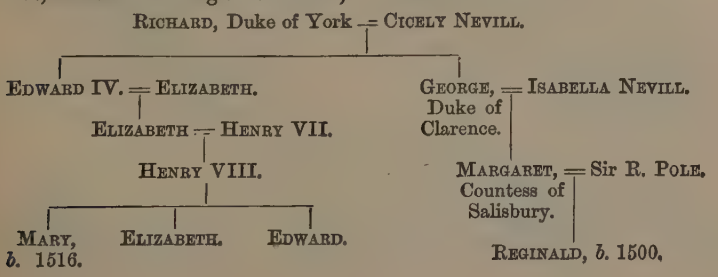
CHAP V
A.D. 1553

But at the very beginning of Queen Mary's reign, with an alacrity that as a matter of clever policy must excite a grim kind of admiration, measures were taken by the Court of Rome to win her over to an ultramontane policy. As soon as the news of King Edward's death had reached Rome, the Pope, Julius III., called together a Council of the Cardinals, and announced his intention of sending Cardinal Pole as legate to the Queen of England; and communications were at once opened with Pole, who was then at his monastery at Magguzano on the Lake of Guarda, pressing him to undertake the mission, and sending him two thousand crowns towards the expense of his journey. Although Pole had lived nearly all his life abroad, he knew more of the English character than the Italians at the Court of Rome, and was much less sanguine than the Pope respecting the return of England to the Roman obedience. He obtained some delay, therefore, that he might send a secret messenger to the Queen, who stood to him in the relationship of second cousin once removed,[6] and who was supposed to

The Pope and Cardinal Pole

Pole and the Queen

[6] Queen Mary and Reginald Pole were both descended from Edward III.—the first through Edward IV., the second through his brother, George, Duke of Clarence, who was murdered in the Tower and buried at Tewkesbury.


Richard, Duke of York = Cicely Nevill.
Edward IV. = Elizabeth.
Elizabeth = Henry VII.
Henry VIII.
Mary, b. 1516.
Elizabeth.
Edward.
George, Duke of Clarence. = Isabella Nevill.
Margaret, Countess of Salisbury. = Sir R. Pole.
Reginald, b. 1500.

CHAP V

A.D. 1553

have something more than a cousinly affection for him. The agent whom he thus despatched was a gentleman of his household named Henry Penning, and he was joined at Brussels by an agent of the Pope's nuncio at the Court of the Emperor Charles V., who was going on a similar errand. Arriving in London in disguise on August 6, 1553, they were the first of a long train of foreigners or denationalized Englishmen who endeavoured during the next half century to re-establish the Papal power on a permanent footing, and they met with more success than attended those who followed in their footsteps in the next reign. The Queen received them without the knowledge of her ministers, and having heard from them what was proposed, she eventually despatched Commendore to Rome with a private message to the Pope, and Penning to Pole with an answer to the Cardinal's letter. Her reply to each was substantially that she wished to do what she could to restore the Church of England to its ancient condition, but that extreme caution was necessary in restoring its relations to the See of Rome. All she could at present do was to request that Pole would come to Brussels, where she would be better able to communicate with him and get his advice. The Lord Chancellor, Bishop Gardiner, heard, however, of this intrigue, and succeeded in persuading the Emperor to stop the Cardinal on his road, so that he retired with the Pope's Bulls in his despatch box to Dillinghen, on the Danube, and it was more than a year before he was able to pass over to England and execute his unworthy commission.[7] But he kept up his correspondence with

Pole's agents sent to the Queen

Pole stopped on the road by the Emperor

[7] The correspondence between the Queen and the Cardinal, as well as the Pope's brieve to Pole, is printed in Cardinal Quirini's collection of Pole's letters. It is also to be found in Tierney's edition of Dodd's *Ch. Hist.*, ii. App. Many letters and other documents on

CHAP V

the Queen, and continued to urge her strongly in respect to the restoration of the Pope's authority.

A.D. 1553

The strongest influence which was brought to bear upon the Queen was doubtless, however, the prospect of her marriage with Philip, Prince of Spain, and son of the great Emperor Charles V. This was strongly opposed by Gardiner, who had not much support at Court, but was backed up by public opinion, the idea of a "Spanish match" being always unpopular, and, as events proved, justly so, in the times of the Tudors and the Stuarts. The opposition that was offered to it is said by Campana, the biographer of Philip, to have been so great that the lives of the Spanish ambassadors sent to arrange the marriage treaty were in actual danger; and he also mentions that Philip himself—a widower under twenty-seven years of age, while his proposed bride had reached the mature age of thirty-eight—was highly averse to the sacrifice he was making.[8] Notwithstanding all the opposition that was offered, and notwithstanding the rebellion of Sir Thomas Wyatt and the Duke of Suffolk,[9] which professed to have the prevention of

The Queen's marriage to Philip of Spain

Jan. 26—Feb. 7, 1544

the subject are also printed in Burnet's *Reformation*, vi. 312, 599, Pocock's Ed. Rogers charged Gardiner with moving the Queen by "his counsel" in this matter; but the Chancellor replied that "the Queen went before him, and it was her own motion," an assertion which was corroborated by Bishop Aldrich and others. [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 598.]

[8] In a very profane and absurdly florid letter to the Pope, Cardinal Pole compared Philip to our Lord, Charles V. to God the Father, and Queen Mary to the blessed Virgin Mary; and speaking of our Lord as the Spouse and Son of the Virgin, he says of Philip and Mary that the former "is become both the spouse and son of this virgin, for so he behaveth himself as though he were a son, whereas he is indeed a husband, that he might, as he hath in effect already performed, show himself an aider and helper to reconcile this people to Christ, and to His body, which is the Church." [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 574.]

[9] This second rebellion of her father led to the cruel necessity of executing the sentence passed six months before on Lady Jane Grey and her husband. The Queen had probably intended to spare them,

CHAP V A.D. 1554

the marriage for its object, the King of Spain and the Queen of England were made man and wife at Winchester Cathedral on July 25, 1554.

As soon as this alliance with the most ultramontane sovereign of Europe had been arranged and accomplished, the retrogressive policy of the Queen became much more pronounced. In March 1554 she exercised her Royal Supremacy for the last time by issuing a set of Royal Injunctions—eighteen in number—and in these the Supremacy was stretched as far as ever it had been in the days of her father and brother, but chiefly for the purpose of promoting the policy of the ultramontane party. The Injunctions ordered that all bishops, and all others having ecclesiastical jurisdiction, should, "with all speed and diligence, and all manner and ways to them possible, put in execution all such Canon and Ecclesiastical Laws" which had been used in the time of King Henry VIII., and which were not "directly and expressly contrary to the laws and statutes of the realm" [1]. No ecclesiastical proceedings were henceforth to run in the name of the Sovereign with "this clause or sentence, regiâ auctoritate fulcitus," nor was any "oath touching the primacy or succession" to be exacted from those who were admitted to benefices [2, 3]. Bishops and their officers were to "have a vigilant eye, and use special diligence and foresight, that no person be admitted to any ecclesiastical function, benefice, or office, being a Sacramentary,[1] infected or defamed with any notable kind

Injunctions issued to suppress the Royal Supremacy

but they were at last executed on February 12, 1544. In a letter to her father the unfortunate girl wrote, "It hath pleased God to hasten my death by you, by whom my life should rather have been lengthened." [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 417.]

[1] The name of Sacramentaries or Sacramentarians was given by the Lutherans to those who held the Zwinglian opinion that the

of heresy or other great crime" [4]; that all such bishops and their officers "do diligently travail for the repression of heresies and notable crimes, especially in the clergy, duly correcting and punishing the same" [5]; and also for the suppression of "corrupt and naughty opinions, unlawful books, ballads, and other pernicious and hurtful devices, engendering hatred among the people and discord among the same;" and that if schoolmasters, preachers, or teachers spread such evil or corrupt doctrine, they are to be punished and removed by the bishop and his officers [6]. All married clergy are to be proceeded against summarily by the bishops and their officers, so that they may with all celerity and speed be deprived, or declared deprived, and amoved, the profits of their benefices being sequestrated during the said process [7]. But those clergymen whose wives are dead, or who with the consent of their wives shall live as unmarried persons, are to be treated with "more lenity and clemency," and may, after penance, be admitted to minister as clergy, though not in the parishes which they had held while married [8]. Those married clergy, however, who had married after having taken vows of chastity are now to be deprived of their benefices and divorced from their wives, "and due punishment otherwise taken for the offence therein" [9]. Where there is a scarcity of beneficed clergy the bishops are to appoint temporary curates, or to order the parishioners "to repair to the next parish for Divine Service" [10], such scarcity being evidently contemplated as a result of the preceding Injunctions

Great powers given to the Bishops

Scarcity of clergy indicated

consecrated elements in the Holy Eucharist are merely sacramental symbols. A Lutheran work on heresies by Schlusselburg has a whole volume, "De secta sacramentariorum qui Cingliani seu Calvinistæ vocantur."

CHAP V
A.D. 1554

for the ejection of the married clergy. The next four Injunctions order that all processions shall be "after the old order of the Church in the Latin tongue" [11], thus abolishing the use of the English Litany, which some had continued hitherto ;[2] that such holy-days and fasting days shall be "observed as were observed and kept in the latter time of King Henry the Eighth" [12]; "that the laudable and honest ceremonies which were wont to be used, frequented, and observed in the Church be hereafter frequented, used, and observed" [13]; and "that children be christened by the priest and confirmed by the bishops as heretofore hath been accustomed and used" [14]. The remaining four Injunctions direct that the bishops "may supply that thing which wanted in them before" to those clergy who had been ordained by the Edwardian Ordinal, and "admit them to minister" [15]; that they shall set forth homilies for the purpose of securing uniformity of doctrine, and shall compel the parishioners to come to their parish churches [16]; that "all schoolmasters and teachers of children" shall be examined by the bishops, and replaced by "catholic men" if necessary, "with a special commandment to instruct their children so as they may be able to answer the priest at the Mass, and so help the priest to Mass, as hath been accustomed" [17]; and lastly, that bishops and all the other persons aforesaid shall set such good examples that they "may be seen to favour the restitution of true religion" [18].

The old Latin services restored

Children to be educated as Catholics

But although Injunctions respecting matters of religion were still issued by the Crown, they were only put forth as a temporary measure. As soon as ever the negotiations for the restoration of the Papal

[2] See p. 204.

Supremacy would permit, a Parliament was summoned, that a "reconciliation" of the kingdom to Rome might be effected with solemn formalities, and that with one great stroke of legislation all Acts of Parliament which interfered with the exercise of that supremacy should be swept away.

CHAP V

A.D. 1554

Nov. 11, 1554—Jan. 16, 1555

The opposition to Cardinal Pole's mission having been crushed down, his attainder of 1536 was reversed by Parliament, and he entered London on November 24, 1554. Parliament was then sitting, and on the 27th the two Houses waited upon him at Whitehall to hear an address on the subject of his mission—that of restoring the nation to the unity of the Catholic faith; a restoration, he had the audacity to say, which might have been effected by an invasion of England, but that the Pope wished to treat the nation as friends and not enemies. On the 29th the two Houses petitioned the King and Queen that they would intercede with "the See Apostolic," so that this most servile Parliament[3] went on to say, "We may, as children repentant, be received into the bosom and unity of Christ's Church, so as this noble realm, with all the members thereof, may, in unity and perfect obedience to the See Apostolic and Pope for the time being, serve God and your Majesties, to the furtherance and advancement of his honour and glory. Amen."

Servile submission of Parliament to Pole

This petition was graciously responded to by the Queen and her husband; they condescended to intercede with the Pope's agent for the forgiveness of their own subjects; and the next day, November 30, 1554, being the Feast of St. Andrew, the Parliament, as representatives of the nation, grovelled in the dust at the

and of the Queen

[3] It was generally asserted that the leading men among the Lords and Commons had received large bribes from Philip.

CHAP V

A.D. 1554

Cardinal's feet while he absolved them for the loyalty of their predecessors to the Church and Crown of England, the great crime which they had committed against his master. While this arrogant political ceremony, dressed up in the garb of religion, was being performed, did any of the abject Lords and Commons think of the words, "which have said to thy soul, bow down, that we may go over; and thou hast laid thy body as the ground and as the street to them that went over"?[4]

The Pope pardons the English Parliament

But when the ceremony had been performed, the purified Parliament was considered competent to proceed with its privilege of ratifying and confirming the act of the Cardinal Deacon. A comprehensive bill was therefore prepared, which was so drawn as to undo, so far as it could be undone, the whole work of Reformation which had been accomplished since 1527 —the twentieth year of Henry VIII. This bill passed the Lords on December 26, 1554, and the Commons on January 4, 1555, and by the middle of the month it was placed on the Statute-Book as "An Act repealing all Articles and Provisions made against the See Apostolick of Rome since the twentieth year of King Henry the Eighth, and for the establishment of all

The work of the Reformation undone

[4] The following was the form of absolution used by Pole :—

"Our Lord Jesus Christ, which with His most precious blood hath redeemed and washed us from all our sins and iniquities, that He might purchase unto Himself a glorious spouse without spot or wrinkle, and whom the Father hath appointed Head over all His Church, He by His mercy absolve you. And we, by apostolic authority (given unto us by the Most Holy Lord Pope Julius the Third, His Vicegerent in earth), do absolve and deliver you, and every of you, with the whole realm and dominions thereof, from all heresy and schism, and from all and every judgment, censure, and pain, for that cause incurred; and also we do restore you again unto the unity of our Mother the Holy Church (as in our letters more plainly it shall appear), in the name of the Father, of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost." [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 572, ed. 1835.]

At this time Cardinal Pole was only in deacon's orders; he was ordained priest a day or two only before he vaulted into the Archbishopric of Canterbury, and when he was fifty-five years of age.

Spiritual and Ecclesiastical Possessions and Hereditaments conveyed to the Laity" [1 and 2 Ph. and Mar. cap. 8]. It repealed all the statutes of Henry VIII.'s reign which interfered with the action of ultramontanism—eighteen in number—incorporated into itself an English Act of Parliament, a long Latin Dispensation, by which Pole formally reconciled the nation to "the See Apostolick;" and, as a compensation for the loss of spiritual liberty, secured the holders of abbey lands in the possession of their sacrilegious spoil.

CHAP V
A.D. 1555

But the spoils of the Reformation retained

Having thus restored the authority and jurisdiction of the Pope, there was nothing more for the Crown and Parliament to do as regards ecclesiastical affairs but quietly to wear the fetters which they had forged. One more Act of an ecclesiastical nature was indeed passed by this Parliament—the iniquitous Act which revived the persecuting statutes of the years 1381, 1400, and 1414; but the consideration of this and its consequences belongs to a subsequent page.

§ 4. Persecution of the Protestants

Tudor intolerance

The stern intolerance which characterized the reigns of Henry VIII. and his three children[5] reached its climax in the later years of Queen Mary, when it was aggravated and stimulated by the influence of the Spaniards and Italians who surrounded her. The

[5] The reign of Edward VI. was as prolific in severities as that of his father. Apart from all State executions, those which took place in the ordinary process of law were exceedingly numerous, judging by such incidental notices of them as occur in contemporary writers. Thus Machyn records that seven persons were hanged and two burned for the murder of a person named Arden in 1551; nine for felony on May 2, 1552; eight for theft on July 11, 1552; nine women and two men on September 12, 1552; four men on December 21, 1552; six men on April 25, 1553.

In Elizabeth's reign a vast number of priests and others were executed for Popery by the halter and the butcher's knife, and at least three persons were burned for Protestant heresies.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

earlier portion of her reign was not marked by any special severity. She showed an unexampled leniency towards those who had wantonly endeavoured to deprive her of the Crown; and although a few persons were committed to prison for "seditious preaching" and "lewd and seditious behaviour,"[6] there was no execution on account of religion during the first nineteen months [July 6, 1553—February 3, 1555] of her reign. During the subsequent part of her reign, extending over three years and nine months, no fewer than two hundred and seventy-seven persons were burned for alleged heresy, or on the average seventy-four persons in a year.[7]

Queen Mary's early leniency

A general Sketch of the Persecution.

Origin of the persecution

The beginning of the persecution may very properly be dated from the Queen's marriage and the reconciliation of England to Rome by Cardinal Pole, although the first event took place on October 25, 1554, and no

[6] For example, on November 20, 1553, Baldwin Clerke, weaver, John Careless, weaver, Thomas Wylcocks, fishmonger, and Richard Astelyn, haberdasher, were sent to the Council by the Mayor of Coventry for their lewd and seditious behaviour on Allhallow Day. Careless and Wylcocks were committed to the Gatehouse, Clerke and Astelyn to the Marshalsea till further order. On the same day there was an order for the apprehension of a seditious preacher named Huntyngdon, somewhere about Lynn and Walsingham, who is said to have made a railing rhyme against Dr. Stokes and the Blessed Sacrament. Similar orders respecting Essex appear in the Council Register on September 2d, November 27th, December 2d; and on January 11, 1554, there is an order to the Duke of Norfolk to call before him one Sir Robert, a deacon newly made of a shoemaker, who seditiously preacheth against the Queen's Highness at Stoke Nayland, in Suffolk, and to take such order as to his wisdom shall seem convenient. Many similar orders occur, and also others releasing some of the prisoners on their own recognizances.

[7] The narratives contained in Foxe's *Acts and Monuments of the Church* are the principal authority on the subject, and from these it appears that the 277 were distributed through the four years as follows:—

1555, Feb. 4th—Dec. 31st,	74
1556, Jan. 1st—Dec. 31st,	85
1557, Jan. 1st—Dec. 31st,	77
1558, Jan. 1st—Nov. 10th,	41
	277

person was actually burned before February 4, 1555. A fortnight after the marriage, on November 11th, Parliament was called together for the purpose of effecting the restoration of the Papal power; and while the Act for repealing Henry VIII.'s reforming statutes was being passed through the two Houses, another Act was also being pushed on for the revival of the mediæval statutes against heretics. This Act [1 and 2 Ph. and M. 6] was introduced into the House of Commons on December 12, 1554, was passed in that House on the 15th, and in the House of Lords on the 18th. It provided that—

Act for reviving statutes against heretics

"For the eschewing and avoiding of errors and heresies, which of late have risen and grown and much increased within this realm, for that the ordinaries have wanted authority to proceed against those which were infected therewith: Be it therefore ordained and enacted by the authority of this present Parliament, that the statute made in the fifth year of the reign of King Richard the Second concerning the arresting and apprehension of erroneous and heretical preachers, and one other statute made in the second year of King Henry the Fourth concerning repressing of heresies and punishment of heretics, and also one other statute made in the second year of the reign of King Henry the Fifth concerning the suppression of heresy and Lollardy, and every article, branch, and sentence contained in the same three several Acts, and every of them, shall from the twentieth day of January next coming be revived, and be in full force, strength, and effect, to all intents, constructions, and purposes, for ever."[8]

[8] Some particulars of these laws against heresy are given in vol. i. pp. 528-533. It may be useful here to show what was the course of legislation respecting them:—

5 R. II. 5 [A.D. 1381] confirmed by
2 H. IV. 15 [A.D. 1400], repealed by
2 H. V. 7 [A.D. 1414], confirmed by
} 25 H. VIII. 14. A.D. 1533.

The first and third of these statutes were repealed by 1 Edw. VI. 12, § 3 [A.D. 1547], all three were revived by 1 and 2 Ph. and M. 6, and were finally extinguished on the repeal of this last statute by 1 Eliz. 1, § 15. Henry VIII.'s Act of the Six Articles [31 H. VIII. 14, A.D. 1539] was also repealed by 1 Edw. VI. 12, § 3.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

The object of this revival of the old statutes was that of simplifying procedure and doing away with the necessity for a writ *de hæretico comburendo* signed by the Sovereign. What the former procedure was may be seen in the case of two heretics, Joan Butcher and George Van Parr, who were burned in the time of Edward VI. Having been sent for trial to the King's "Inquisitors, Judges, and Commissaries"—Archbishop Cranmer, Hugh Latimer, Sir Thomas Smyth, Dr. Cooke, the Dean of the Arches, and Dr. Lyall—they were convicted of heresy, and sentence of excommunication was passed upon them. Certificates were then prepared, by which the King was informed in each case that the excommunicated person was delivered over to the secular arm: "Et brachio vestro seculari dictam hæreticam et relapsam relinquimus."[9] The writ *de hæretico comburendo* was then signed by the King in Council, and under the authority of such writs Joan Butcher was burned at the stake on March 2, 1550, and Van Parr on April 24, 1551.

The Writ for burning heretics superseded

Under the revived Statutes of Heresy the procedure was as follows: [1.] An information was laid before a justice of the peace alleging that such a person was suspected of heresy, and a warrant for his apprehension was granted. [2.] The suspected person being arrested by the sheriff or his officers under this warrant, was lodged in one of the King's prisons. [3.] The sheriff certified the suspected heretic's apprehension and imprisonment to the bishop of the diocese or one of his commissaries, when the bishop was bound to act as judge, and try the prisoner in his consistory court.

The new form of procedure

[9] These particulars are to be found in Cranmer's Register, where copies of the documents were inserted. Those relating to Joan Butcher are printed in Strype's *Cranmer*, ii. 488-492, ed. 1848.

[4.] In case the suspected person was adjudged to be guilty of heresy, he was first excommunicated, and then delivered to the secular arm;[1]—that is, the bishop certified the fact to the sheriff. [5.] Then, as a judge's "*suspendatur per collum*" against a prisoner's name in the calendar was the sheriff's warrant for hanging a person convicted of capital crime, so the bishop's certificate of conviction now became the sheriff's warrant for burning a person convicted of heresy, instead of the King's writ ordering execution.

The bishop certified the heresy,

But although the ordinary course of procedure was thus provided for by Act of Parliament, there was some reason—perhaps distrust of the bishops as too lenient—for the frequent appointment of commissioners, Privy Councillors and others, whose official position appears to have been that of assessors to the bishop of the diocese. Such a commission sat with Bishop Gardiner on the only occasion when he presided at the trial of prisoners charged with heresy, which was on January 22d, 28th, 29th, and 30th, when Hooper, Rogers, Rowland Taylor, and eight others were examined in public before him and his "co-assessors." On this occasion the "definitive sentence," declaring the prisoners guilty of heresy and excommunicating them, was pronounced by the bishop alone, and it was he also who delivered them into the hands of the sheriffs of London.[2] So also when some were being tried "in the Spiritual Court" at Canter-

assisted by Royal Commissioners as assessors

[1] The "definitive sentence" in which this was recorded by Gardiner in the case of John Rogers is given in English by Foxe, and is substantially the same form as that used by Cranmer in the case of Joan Butcher. In a later page Foxe refers to this sentence as a regular form, "for the Papists in all their condemnations follow one manner of sentence of course, commonly against all that are condemned through their unmerciful tyranny." [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 601, vii. 341.]

[2] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 587, 588, 598, 599, 649; Strype's *Mem. Eccl.* III. i. 286-296.

CHAP V
A.D. 1555-58

bury, Archdeacon Harpsfield speaks of himself, sitting with others, as being placed there as judge by the Queen's Highness;[3] and on other occasions the Suffragan Bishop of Dover, with Dr. Collins, Dr. Mills, and others, are mentioned as his fellow-commissioners. Such a commission is also mentioned in London. For while Cardmaker, one of the early sufferers, was lying in Newgate about the end of May 1555, "one Beard, a promoter,[4] came to him two or three days before he was burned, and said thus unto him: *Beard.*—'Sir, I am sent unto you by the Council, to know whether ye will recant or no?' *Cardmaker.*—'From which Council are ye come? I think ye are not come, nor yet sent, from the Queen's Council, but rather from the Commissioners, unto whom (as I suppose) ye belong. . . . . I know *you* are a tailor by occupation, and have endeavoured yourself to be a cunning workman, and thereby to get your living; so *I* have been a preacher these twenty years. . . .'"[5]

The promoter or official informer

Before these Commissioners, then, or before the bishop or his commissary alone, the accused persons were brought up by the sheriff or his officers as prisoners, and were taken through the form of a trial. This was often conducted with great patience and forbearance on the part of the ecclesiastical judge, and it mostly required a large stock of patience for a judge to listen quietly to the polemics and personalities which the accused persons used instead of arguments. But soon it became the practice to place a series of propositions before the accused, which Foxe calls

The trial for heresy

[3] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 293, 296, 297, 335, 340.

[4] This Beard appears to have been an informer, like the "aggrieved parishioner" of modern times, who in the language of ecclesiastical law "promoted the office of the judge." He is mentioned by Foxe in other places.

[5] *Ibid.*, 85.

"general articles," as being a common form used in all the diocesan courts.

"First, that thou art of the Diocese of Canterbury, and so subject to the jurisdiction of the Archbishop there.

Articles offered to the accused for subscription

"II. Item, that thou art a Christian man, and dost profess the laws of God, and faith of Christ's Catholic Church, and the determination of the same.

"III. Item, that all persons which teach, preach, believe, affirm, hold, maintain, or say, within the Diocese of Canterbury, otherwise than our Holy Mother the Church doth, are excommunicate persons, and heretics, and as excommunicate and heretics ought to be named, reputed, and taken.

"IV. Item, that thou, contrary to the Catholic faith, and determination of our Mother Holy Church, within the Diocese of Canterbury, hast openly spoken, maintained, holden, affirmed, and believed, and yet dost hold, maintain, affirm, and believe, that in the Blessed Sacrament of the Altar, under the forms of bread and wine, there is not the very Body and Blood of our Saviour Jesus Christ in substance, but only a token, sign, and remembrance thereof, and that the very Body and Blood of Christ is only in Heaven, and no where else.

"V. Item, that thou, contrary to the Catholic faith, and determination of our Mother Holy Church, hast within this Diocese of Canterbury openly spoken, said, maintained, holden, affirmed, and believed, and yet dost hold, maintain, affirm, and believe, that it is against God's Word, that the Sacrament of Christ's Church should be ministered in an unknown tongue; and that no man, safely and with a safe conscience, or without peril of sin, receiveth any sacrament ministered in any tongue that he understandeth not.

"VI. Item, that thou, contrary to the Catholic faith of our Mother Holy Church, hast, and yet dost hold opinion, and say, that it is against God's Word that the Sacrament of the Altar should be ministered in one kind; and that no man may with a safe conscience so receive it.

"VII. Item, that the premises be true, and that there is a common fame upon them within the Diocese of Canterbury."[6]

[6] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 304, viii. 311.

CHAP V
A.D. 1555-58

But it is fair to the judges to say that in many cases, perhaps in most, there was a far stronger taint of heresy in the accused persons than is represented by these articles; the favourite theological tenet of their school being that our Lord did not take His Human Nature of the Blessed Virgin, the same heretical denial of the Incarnation for which Joan Butcher was burned in the time of Edward VI.

Real heresy of many of the accused

Whatever the legal formalities with which it was conducted, however, the persecution continued with unabated rigour, and with a singular uniformity as regards the annual average number of victims, from the time when the Papal authority was restored until the end of Queen Mary's reign.

Strange to say, the victims belonged almost entirely to the labouring classes, and a very large proportion of them were under thirty years of age. The number of these victims was, as has been before stated, two hundred and seventy-seven, of whom fifty were women. Of these Foxe mentions the condition of life in one hundred and thirty-five cases, there being five bishops, sixteen priests, nine gentlemen and ladies, four tradesmen, twenty-six weavers and clothworkers, and seventy-five agricultural labourers. But at a particular portion of his history he begins to mention the condition in life of the sufferers less frequently; and having done so in one hundred and five cases out of one hundred and sixty-eight, he particularizes it afterwards in only thirty instances out of one hundred and nine. Before making this change in the details of his narratives, he says, however, "The learned being at this time in a manner all despatched in this furious rage of persecution, we now have little or small matter to write touching the other silly sheep and simple

Social condition of the sufferers

lambs of Christ's flock yet remaining behind;"[7] and as only three of the thirty "silly sheep" whose condition in life is defined belonged to any other walk of life, it may be fairly supposed that the remainder were all men and women of the labouring classes, whom Foxe habitually calls "simple persons."

Few belonged to the middle classes

The general conclusion arrived at, after a careful analysis of Foxe's narratives, is that about two hundred and forty out of the whole two hundred and seventy-seven who were burned belonged to the labouring classes. Of the remaining thirty-seven there were seven tradesmen, nine village gentry of both sexes, sixteen priests, and five bishops. It is a very conspicuous fact that the middle classes of the laity throughout England and Wales are only represented by sixteen persons, and that Foxe does not record the conviction or execution for religion of a single layman or laywoman from among the higher classes.[8]

Where the persecution chiefly occurred

Another remarkable feature in the persecution is that it was principally confined to an area north-east and south-east of London, and to the metropolis itself —an area about the size of Wales. This circumstance is mentioned by Foxe, who says, "Although the rage and vehemency of this terrible persecution in Queen Mary's days did chiefly light in London, Essex, Norfolk, Suffolk, and Kent, as hath been partly already declared, yet notwithstanding, besides the same, we

[7] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, viii. 310.

[8] How it comes to pass that weavers and agricultural labourers, born and brought up in the first half of the sixteenth century, are represented as holding long and sometimes learned controversies with bishops, archdeacons, and chancellors, cannot exactly be explained. If they really did so, the theological and literary education of the labouring classes must have been in a very high condition indeed during the latter years of Henry VIII.'s reign. Modern shepherds, carters, and ploughmen, and even modern weavers, would certainly not be so fluent of speech and so extremely ready with authorities, arguments, and stinging repartees.

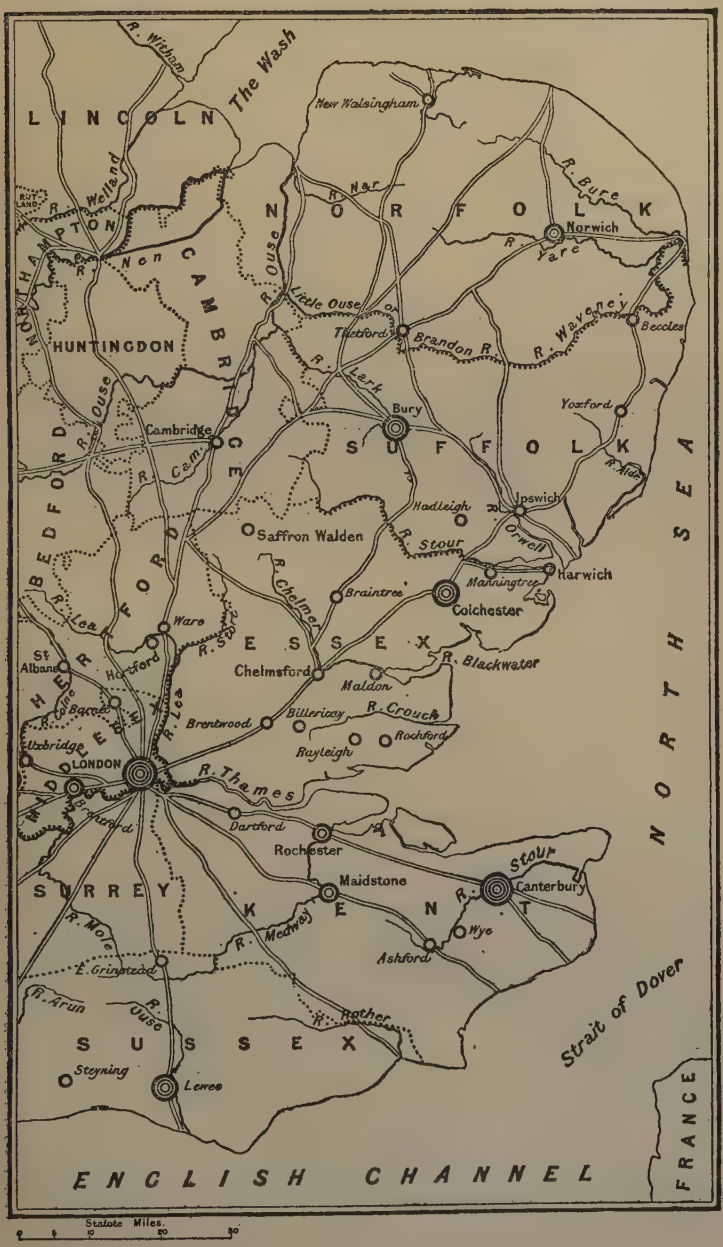
CHAP V A.D. 1555-58

find but few parts of this realm free from this fatal storm, but some good martyrs or other there shed their blood."[9] The principal centres were London and Canterbury. In London there were thirty-five burned in Smithfield, and thirty-two elsewhere, making sixty-seven in all; while in Canterbury the number reached the far higher proportion as regards population of fifty-two. In the area previously mentioned, and which is shown in the diagram map, the whole number burned was two hundred and thirty-four. Of the remaining forty-three there were twenty-four burned in Oxfordshire, Gloucestershire, and Staffordshire, and only nineteen in all the remaining counties of England and Wales. Taking every case that is recorded by Foxe, and this probably includes every case that occurred, the distribution of the victims throughout England and Wales was as follows :—

Counties in which persons were burned

Counties.	*Persons.*	*Dioceses.*
London,	67	London.
Middlesex,	11	
Essex,	39	
Kent, Canterbury,	52	Canterbury.
Kent, Rochester,	6	Rochester.
Sussex,	23	Chichester.
Suffolk,	18	Norwich.
Norfolk,	14	
Cambridgeshire,	3	Ely.
Hertfordshire,	1	Lincoln.
	234—	
Leicestershire,	2	
Gloucestershire,	10	Gloucester.
Staffordshire,	7	Lichfield and Coventry.
Warwickshire,	3	
Derbyshire,	1	

[9] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 383.


R. Witham
The Wash
LINCOLN
New Walsingham
R. Welland
RUTLAND
NORTHAMPTON
R. Nen
R. Nar
R. Bure
NORFOLK
Norwich
R. Yare
R. Ouse
CAMBRIDGE
Little Ouse
Thetford
Brandon R.
R. Waveney
Beccles
HUNTINGDON
R. Lark
Bury
Yoxford
R. Ouse
Cambridge
R. Cam
SUFFOLK
R. Alde
Ipswich
Hadleigh
Saffron Walden
R. Stour
Orwell
Harwich
Manningtree
R. Chelmer
Braintree
Colchester
BEDFORD
R. Lea
Ware
ESSEX
St Albans
Hertford
R. Stort
Chelmsford
R. Blackwater
Maldon
Epping
Billericay
R. Crouch
Brentwood
Rayleigh
Rochford
Uxbridge
LONDON
R. Thames
MIDDLESEX
R. Wandle
Dartford
Rochester
R. Stour
Canterbury
Maidstone
SURREY
KENT
R. Mole
R. Medway
Wye
Ashford
E. Grinstead
R. Arun
R. Ouse
R. Rother
SUSSEX
Steyning
Lewes
Strait of Dover
NORTH SEA
ENGLISH CHANNEL
FRANCE
Statute Miles.
0
10
20
30

CHAP V
A.D. 1555-58

Counties.	*Persons.*	*Dioceses.*
Oxfordshire,	7	Oxford.
Northamptonshire,	3	Peterborough.
Wiltshire,	3	Salisbury.
Yorkshire,	2	York.
Cheshire,	1	Chester.
Devonshire,	1	Exeter.
Glamorganshire,	1	Llandaff.
Carmarthen,	1	St. David's.
Pembrokeshire,	1	St. David's.
	43—	

Cities and towns in which persons were burned

The most notorious cities and towns were London [67], Canterbury [52], Colchester [23], Lewes [17], Bury St. Edmund's [12], Norwich [7], Maidstone [7], Rochester [6], Bristol [6], Brentford [6], and Ipswich [5]. The remaining sixty-nine persons were burned in forty-five different places, and twenty-five of these places were within the area previously indicated.

That this localization of the persecution was associated with circumstances which placed London, Kent, Sussex, and the eastern counties in a position more open to attack than other parts of England cannot be doubted; but what these circumstances were it is impossible, without further evidence, to determine with any certainty. It is clear that nearly the whole of the places where the hundred and sixty-seven persons who suffered out of London in this district were burned, were

Chiefly on the road to seaports

places which lay on the direct road to seaports.[1] Thus, in Kent, Dartford Rochester and Canterbury lay on the direct road to Deal and Dover; Maidstone and Ashford on the direct road to Hythe, Wye lying midway between Canterbury and Ashford. In Sussex, Grinstead and Lewes were on the direct road to

[1] The maps in Bishop Gibson's edition of Camden's *Britannia* have been consulted for the course of the old roads.

Seaford and Newhaven. In the eastern counties, Brentwood, Chelmsford, Braintree, Bury, Thetford, and Norwich lay on one road to Yarmouth; while Brentwood, Chelmsford, Coggeshall, Colchester, Manningtree, Harwich, Ipswich, and Beckles lay on another; Ware, Cambridge, and Ely leading straight to Lynn; and Saffron Walden and Walsingham being not far distant from this last main road. It can hardly be an accident that the course of the persecution should be capable of being thus curiously mapped out.

CHAP V
A.D. 1555-58

But it is also to be remembered that the eastern counties were predisposed to extravagance in religious opinions by the presence of many German Anabaptists, who had emigrated from their native country to the most accessible parts of England, and carried on their trade as weavers and cloth-workers in Norwich, Colchester, Braintree, Coggeshall, and other principal "clothing towns" of the England of that day. The Anabaptists of Essex gave much trouble to the Government in the days of King Edward and of Queen Elizabeth; and Hooper, who was sent by the Privy Council to preach against them, writes respecting Kent and Essex: "That district is troubled with the frenzy of the Anabaptists more than any other part of the kingdom; . . . they give me much trouble with their opinions respecting the Incarnation of the Lord, for they deny altogether that Christ was born of the Virgin Mary according to the flesh. . . . How dangerously our England is afflicted by heresies of this kind, God only knows. . . . Alas! not only are those heresies reviving among us, which were formerly dead and buried, but new ones are springing up every day."[2] Four or five years later Bishop Jewel wrote to

The Anabaptists strong in those counties and towns

[2] *Orig. Lett.*, 65, 87. For some account of the Anabaptists, see vol. i. p. 551.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

Peter Martyr saying that the Anabaptists "sprung up like mushrooms in the darkness and unhappy night of the Marian times;"[3] and in 1575 two who had been examined in the Consistory Court of London, and handed over to the secular arm by Bishop Sandys, were burned in Smithfield.[4] It is more than probable that these foreign religionists had infected their English friends in the clothing towns and other places with their opinions; and that although Foxe's one-sided narratives say little about such heresies, they were too often at the root of the wild anti-Sacramentalism of those who were sent up to the Marian bishops for examination. This therefore may perhaps prove, if ever further evidence should come to light, the true reason why the Marian persecution was so distinctly localized as has been shown in the preceding pages.

Anti-Sacramentalism mixed up with other errors

Who was responsible for the Persecution?

Notwithstanding the fact that persons were burned for heresy in the reigns of Edward VI., Elizabeth, and James I., as well as in that of Queen Mary, and the equally certain fact (as will be shown hereafter) that the execution of human beings by fire was looked upon with far less horror in the sixteenth century than in our own age, it still remains that the burning of so large a number of persons for alleged heresy during the short space of three years and seven months makes the reign of Queen Mary a phenomenal page in English history; and, apart from all the just indignation with which the subject has been treated, it is one of great interest to the patient reader of history as regards the

The persecution a phenomenon in English history

[3] Jewel's Works, iv. 1240, Parker Soc. ed.

[4] Neale's *Hist. Purit.*, i. 340, ed. 1732.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

question with which this section is headed, Who was responsible for the persecution?

At first sight one is disposed to say it could not have been Englishmen who deliberately caused nearly three hundred persons to be burned to death in little more than three years. When did Englishmen perpetrate such a kind of cruelty—whatever other forms of cruelty may lie at their door—before or since, and why should they for that short time act in such an exceptional manner? Was there anything peculiar and unprecedented among the governing class or at the headquarters of Government that was likely to have caused this lurid phenomenon in our national history? And were there any others than Englishmen to whom the original responsibility of its occurrence may be justly attributed?

Englishmen not accustomed to burn heretics in large numbers

To answer this question satisfactorily we must first examine the ordinary tradition on the subject—that which lays the cruel slaughter at the door of "Wily Winchester" and "Bloody Bonner." This dates from the time when these tragical executions were going on, or were fresh in the memory of the generation which had witnessed them; for not only does Foxe give it a permanent place in his "Acts and Monuments of the Church," but Bonner himself disclaimed in open court the epithet prefixed to his name, and Gardiner also denied the charge made against him by Rogers, that all which was taking place was done by his counsel. Foxe's account of the matter is that the persecution was begun by Gardiner, and then handed over to Bonner. When a few had been condemned, and some also burned, Gardiner, he says, "supposed now all had been cock-sure, and that Christ had been conquered for ever, so that the people, being terrified with ex-

Popular ideas on the subject

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

ample of these great learned men condemned, never would nor durst once rout against their violent religion. . . . And thus condemned they these godly learned preachers and bishops aforesaid, supposing, as I said, that all the rest would soon be quailed by their example." "But," he goes on to say, "Gardiner was deceived, for the people were not deterred from running the risk of martyrdom by maintaining the same principles which had brought others to the stake; and seeing thus his device disappointed, and that cruelty in this case would not serve to his expectation, gave over the matter as utterly discouraged, and from that day meddled no more in such kind of condemnations, but referred the whole doing thereof to Bonner, Bishop of London, who supplied that part right doughtily, as in the further process of this history hereafter evidently and too much may appear."[5] Just a century after the events, Fuller, the Church historian, improved the tradition by writing, "I may say of Gardiner"—"this butcher," as he calls him—"that he had a head, if not a hand, in the death of every eminent Protestant—plotting, though not acting, their destruction." "Cross we the Thames to come into Middlesex and Essex—the Diocese of London under Bishop Bonner, whom all generations shall call 'bloody.' St. Paul mentioneth his fighting with beasts at Ephesus after the manner of men, which some expound his encountering with people—*men* for their shape and sex, but *beasts* for their cruel minds and manners. In the same sense we may say that lion, tiger, wolf, bear, yea, a whole forest of wild beasts, met in Bonner, killing two hundred in the compass of three years. And as if his cruelty made him Metropolitan of all England, he stood

Foxe's account of the beginning of persecution

Fuller's rhetorical language on the subject

[5] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 703, 704.

not on distinction of dioceses, but martyred all wherever he met them."[6] With such a statement to build on, it could hardly be called original poetical licence for Cowper to write—

Cowper's poetical view of history

> "When persecuting zeal made royal sport
> With tortured innocence in Mary's court,
> And Bonner, blithe as shepherd at a wake,
> Enjoyed the show, and danced about the stake"[7]—

except that Bonner was never present at the stake at all.

GARDINER.—The charge against Bishop Gardiner may be soon dismissed. So long as his influence lasted, which was until the marriage of the Queen and the arrival of Cardinal Pole in England, no person was executed on the ground of heresy. During the year that he lived after these events—for he died on November 12, 1555—Gardiner only sat on one trial of "heretics,"[8] that being the trial of Bishop Hooper, Rogers, and several others who were brought before a commission of which he, as Lord Chancellor, was head, on January 22—30, 1554. This commission sat partly at his palace in Southwark, and partly in the adjoining Church of St. Mary Overie, and when it had found that the accused were guilty of heresy, Gardiner was called upon as bishop of the diocese to pronounce them excommunicated before they were delivered over to the sheriffs. But although these prisoners were within

The Southwark Commission under Gardiner's presidency

[6] Fuller's *Church Hist.*, ii. 392, 393, ed. 1837.

[7] Cowper's *Expostulation, ad fin.*

[8] On one other occasion Gardiner's name was associated with such a trial, when he examined Nicholas Sheterden at Canterbury in the following June; but he seems then to have interposed unofficially with the object of persuading the prisoner to recant, that his life might be spared. [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 310.]

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

Gardiner's jurisdiction because they were imprisoned in Southwark, none of them belonged to his diocese. No persons in his diocese were burnt for heresy until a year and a half after his death, when three suffered in St. George's Fields, Southwark, in May 1557, the only sufferers for that cause in the diocese of Winchester during the whole time of the persecution. It will thus be seen that Bishop Gardiner's name has been most unjustly associated with the persecution.

The only sufferers in Winchester diocese

BONNER.—The conspicuous position which Bonner occupies in connection with the persecution arises solely from the fact that he was Bishop of London during the time that it was going on, and that in virtue of his office he was compelled to examine in his Consistory Court all who were sent before him under the accusation of heresy, provided they were resident in the cities of London or Westminster, or the counties of Middlesex or Essex. During the three years and a half over which the persecution lasted, as many as one hundred and seventeen of those who suffered were thus sent before the Bishop of London by the civil authorities, and the three following documents relating to the Metropolis and to Essex will illustrate the manner in which his judicial office was put in action :—

Official duties imposed on Bonner

"*A Letter sent unto Bonner, Bishop of London, by the Queen's Council, dated the 11th day of November 1555, but not delivered until the 17th of the same month.*[9]

"After our right hearty commendations to your good Lordship, we send to the same herewith the body of one Bartlet Green, who hath of good time remained in the Tower for his obstinate standing in matters against the Catholic religion,

[9] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 733.

whom the King's and Queen's Majesties' pleasures are (because he is of your Lordship's diocese) ye shall cause to be ordered according to the laws in such cases provided. And thus we bid your Lordship heartily farewell.

"From St. James's, the 11th of November, 1555.

"Your good Lordship's loving friends,

"WINCHESTER. PEMBROKE. THOMAS ELY.
WILLIAM HAWARD. JOHN BOURNE. THOMAS WHARTON."

"*Postscript.*—I, Sir John Bourne, will wait upon your Lordship, and signify further the King's and Queen's Majesties' pleasure herein."

"*A Letter sent by the Commissioners to Bishop Bonner.*[1]

Prisoners sent to Bonner for trial

"After our hearty commendations to your good Lordship, we send you here John Wade, William Hale, George King, Thomas Leyes, of Thorpe in Essex; Thomas Fust, hosier; Robert Smith, painter; Stephen Harwood, brewer; George Tankerfield, cook; Elizabeth Warne, Joan Lashford of London, sacramentaries; all which we desire your Lordship to examine, and to order according to the ecclesiastical laws; praying your Lordship to appoint some of your officers to receive them at this bearer's hand. And thus most heartily fare your Lordship well.—From London this 2d of July.

"Your Lordship's loving friends,

"NICH. HARE. RICH. REDE.
WILL. ROPER. WILL. COOKE."

"*A Letter sent by certain Justices in Essex to Bonner, Bishop of London.*[2]

"After our most hearty commendations to your good Lordship, these shall be to advertise you, that at our sessions of

[1] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 342.
[2] *Ibid.*, 118. Documents of a similar character will be found in the same volume at pp. 92, 98, 139, 322, 347, 371.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

Oyer and Terminer holden at Chelmsford the 26th day of April last past, there came before us in open court one Thomas Wats of Billericay, within your diocese, by ordinary process; and then and there being examined why he refused to come to his parish church, and there to receive the Sacrament of the Altar, and hear Divine Service, according to the institution of Holy Church, he openly there answered generally, that like as the service of the Church set out in the days of the late King Edward VI. was said by us now to be abominable, heretical, schismatical, and all naught; so he said, that all that is now used and done in that church is abominable, heretical, schismatical, and all naught, with divers other erroneous and arrogant words; and therefore we have thought good to send him to your Lordship, to be further examined by you of his particular opinions, as to your pastoral office shall seem convenient; certifying you further, that in our opinion he is one of the most arrogant heretics that hath been heard speak, or ever came before you, and not meet to be kept here in any gaol, as well for fear of corrupting others as for divers and sundry other special causes hereafter to be more declared. Thus leaving to molest your good Lordship, we commit you to the Holy Ghost.—Given at Chelmsford the 27th of April, anno 1555.

An arrogant heretic sent to Bonner for trial

"Your good Lordship's most assured,

"R. Riche. Thomas Mildmay.
Henry Tyrrel. John Wiseman.
Anthony Brown. Roger Appleton.
Edmund Tyrrel. Richard Weston."

Instead, therefore, of seeking for prey like a wild beast thirsting for blood, Bonner simply received in his judicial capacity those who were sent to him as prisoners—those who had been apprehended and committed to prison by order of the Privy Council, or of Commissioners appointed by the Queen. The Bishop of London, at least as the law then stood, had no more power or authority to refuse to exercise his office as

Bonner compelled as judge to try prisoners sent to him

CHAP V
A.D. 1555-58

ecclesiastical judge than a judge of assize has to refuse to try the prisoners brought before him at a gaol delivery. It is just the same in the present day; for although the "procedure" by which a person may be brought under the judicial cognizance of his bishop is different, yet if he is so brought according to the form laid down by the law, the bishop cannot escape from the duty of trying him.

Transubstantiation or no Transubstantiation

Nor had Bonner, or any other bishop, and there were several similarly situated, the option of choosing what opinions he would and what opinions he would not regard as heretical. Just as in later times the "Test" of orthodoxy imposed by Act of Parliament consisted in the reception of the Holy Communion and the making of a declaration against Transubstantiation,[3] without which no one could hold office in the Church or under the Crown, so the Test of orthodoxy at this time was an acknowledgement of the doctrine of Transubstantiation and a reception of the Holy Communion in one kind. But there was something more than this, for the "reconciliation" with Rome had brought the Canons of the Council of Trent into force in England, and one of these expressly declared those persons to be "Anathema," or punishable with formal judicial excommunication, who held that the substance of bread and wine remained in the Holy Eucharist after consecration, instead of being wholly converted into the Body and Blood of Christ.[4] All those who were brought before Bonner

made heresy by law

[3] "I, A. B., do declare that I do believe there is not any Transubstantiation in the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, or in the elements of Bread and Wine, at or after the consecration thereof by any person whatsoever." [25 Car. II. 2, § 9.]

[4] This Canon had been passed in the year 1551 in the following words: "Si quis dixerit in sacrosancto Eucharistiæ sacramento remanere substantiam panis et vini una cum corpore et sanguine Domini nostri Jesu Christi; negaverit que mirabilem illam et

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

and the other bishops had "Articles" presented to them, which gave them the opportunity of assenting to or dissenting from the doctrine thus laid down;[5] if they assented, a return was made to the civil authorities which exonerated them from punishment; if they dissented, a return was made declaring that they were guilty of heresy, and they were excommunicated. In the one case the sheriff would receive back his prisoners only to set them free, in the other he would receive them back to execute them by fire, according to the Act *de hæreticis comburendis*, of the revival of which by Parliament an account has previously been given.[6]

Articles for subscription by the accused

Neither the ecclesiastical judges nor the sheriffs could evade such strict provisions as Parliament thus imposed upon them. And when we observe the intensely polemical spirit which pervaded a large class of the people, and the violent irreverence with which the anti-Sacramentalist Puritans opposed, not only the over-defined Roman doctrine of Transubstantiation, but the Anglican doctrine of the Real Presence also,[7] the wonder is less that so many were brought under

Duties of bishops and sheriffs imposed on them by Parliament

singularem conversionem totius substantiæ panis in corpus, et totius substantiæ vini in sanguinem, manentibus dumtaxat speciebus panis et vini, quam quidem conversionem Catholica Ecclesia aptissime Transubstantiationem appellat, Anathema sit." [*Conc. Trident. De S.S. Euch. Sacr.*, Can. i.] About the very same time the Sacred Synod of the English Church passed a Canon declaring that Transubstantiation was not to be proved by Holy Scripture: "Panis et vini Transubstantiatio in Eucharistia, ex sacris literis probari non potest, sed apertis Scripturæ verbis adversatur et multarum superstitionem dedit occasionem." [Art. XXVIII., A.D. 1552.] But unhappily the English version of this was published in an interpolated form, which seemed to justify the anti-Sacramentalists in denying the Real Presence itself, for after the word "Transubstantiation" was added, instead of "in the Eucharist," the definition "or the chaunge of the substaunce of breade and wine into the substaunce of Christe's bodie and bloude." [Art. XXIX., 1552.]

[5] See page 219.

[6] See page 215.

[7] See instances of this in chap. vii.

the operation of the law than that so many escaped scot free.

The only explanation which can be given of the latter fact is that most of those who had thrust upon them the administration of these cruel laws administered them with reluctance, and endeavoured so far as they could to avoid bringing persons under their operation. There is also historical evidence that this was the case, as will be shown by the following important documents, which also throw a strong light upon the manner in which the persecution was carried on.

Bishops and magistrates tried to lighten the operation of the laws

[I.] To begin with, there is "An Order prescribed by the King and Queen's Majesties unto the Justices of the Peace" in every county "for the good government of their Majesties' loving subjects within the same shire," which contains several injunctions respecting their administration of the laws relating to "erroneous and heretical opinions." These Letters Patent were issued on March 26, 1555, and the following paragraphs are those which immediately concern the subject under consideration :—

"PHILIP R., MARYE THE QUEEN.

. . . . . .

"*Item.* The said justices of the peace shall not only be aiding and assisting unto such preachers as be, or shall be, sent into the said county, but shall also be themselves present at sermons, and use the preachers reverently, travailling soberly with such as by abstaining from coming to the church, or by any other open doings shall appear not persuaded to conform themselves; and to use such as be wilful and obstinate more roundly, either by rebuking them or binding them to good abearing, or committing them to prison, as the quality of the persons and circumstances of their doings may seem to deserve

Magistrates ordered to deal with heretics

CHAP V
A.D. 1555-58

"*Item.* Amongst all other things, they must lay special weight upon those which be preachers and teachers of heresy, or procurers of secret meetings for that purpose.

. . . . . .

And to have spies to inform them respecting heretics

"*Item.* They shall procure to have in every parish, or part of the shire, as near as may be, some one or more honest men, secretly instructed, to give information of the behaviour of the inhabitants amongst or about them." [8]

These Injunctions were, however, inoperative to a great extent through the conduct of the bishops, who either refused to examine the prisoners sent to them by the justices of the peace or refused to excommunicate them, and thus place them again in the hands of the civil power. The bishops appear, in fact, to have temporized in the hope that something might occur to relieve them of duties which were in themselves distasteful to them; and both at this time and later on they appear to have been in the habit of keeping prisoners a long time in their own hands, endeavouring by kindness and management to get from them an actual recantation, or some "submission" which might be interpreted as such, and so enable them to dismiss the accused formally from the Consistory Courts without passing sentence of excommunication upon them.

Ways of escape provided by the bishops

Foxe grudgingly records an instance of this mercifulness in the case of twenty-two persons who were sent up to Bonner by Lord Oxford and seven other magistrates from Colchester, which was within his diocese. "The bishops," he says, "afraid belike of the number, to put so many at once to death, sought means to deliver them; and so they did, drawing out a very easy submission for them, or rather suffering them to draw it out themselves: notwithstanding divers of them

[8] Burnet's *Reform.*, v. 427, Pocock's Ed.

afterward were taken again and suffered, as hereafter ye shall hear (God willing) declared." The form of submission adopted was as follows :— CHAP V A.D. 1555-58

A form of submission

"Because our Saviour Christ at His Last Supper took bread, and when He had given thanks, He brake it, and gave it unto His disciples, and said, 'Take, eat, this is My Body which is given for you, this do in remembrance of Me;' therefore, according to the words of our Saviour Jesus Christ, we do believe in the Sacrament to be Christ's Body. And likewise He took the cup, gave thanks, and gave it to His disciples, and said, 'This is My Blood of the New Testament, which is shed for many.' Therefore likewise we do believe that it is the Blood of Christ, according as Christ's Church doth minister the same; unto the which Catholic Church of Christ we do in this like as in all other matters submit ourselves, promising therein to live as it becometh good Christian men, and here in this realm to use ourselves as it becometh faithful subjects unto our most gracious King and Queen, and to all other superiors, both spiritual and temporal, according to our bounden duties." [9]

Upon this submission these twenty-two prisoners were all returned by Bonner as not guilty of heresy, and were sent home free. Doubtless it was the same, as regards the humane attempt, in many other cases.

Bonner and the hay-making heretic

Thus, Thomas Tomkins, a weaver of Shoreditch, was sent to the custody of Bishop Bonner some time before Midsummer 1554; in July he is found "hay-making with his other work-folks" at Fulham, while the bishop talked with him in a friendly way about his case, wishing that he was as good a Catholic as he was a labourer. Such talk Bonner had with his prisoner on many other occasions, and once he tried to impress upon him what the pain of being burned alive was (for many of the fanatics believed there was no

[9] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, viii. 303, 310; Machyn's *Diary*, 118.

CHAP V
A.D. 1555-58

pain) by holding his hand over a taper that stood upon his library table;[1] but his excommunication was delayed until all persuasion had failed, and it was not until February 9, 1555, that it was pronounced by the bishop, sitting with eight assessors in his Consistory Court, and the prisoner handed over to the Sheriff of London.[2]

Bonner and a fanatic apprentice

In another case, that of William Hunter, an apprentice nineteen years old, Bonner is reported to have said as follows: "I understand, William Hunter," quoth he, "by Master Brown's letter, how that you have had certain communication with the Vicar of the Wield about the Blessed Sacrament of the Altar, and how that ye could not agree; whereupon Master Brown sent for thee, to bring thee to the Catholic faith, from the which he saith that thou art gone. Howbeit, if thou wilt be ruled by me, thou shalt have no harm for any thing that thou hast said or done in this matter." The youth refusing to take the bishop's advice, Bonner added, "I think thou art ashamed to bear a faggot and recant openly; but if thou wilt recant thy sayings, I will promise thee that thou shalt not be put to open shame: but speak the word here now between me and thee, and I will promise thee it shall go no further, and thou shalt go home again without any hurt."[3]

The case of the young Templar, Green

Another case in illustration is that of a young student of the Temple, and previously of Oxford, named Bartlet Green. When he was sent from the Fleet prison to Bonner for the purpose of being examined by his diocesan, the bishop thus treated his prisoner and the alleged heretic:—

[1] Of this incident Foxe adds, "In the time that his hand was in burning, the same Tomkins afterward reported to one James Hinse that his spirit was so rapt that he felt no pain."

[2] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 719-721.

[3] *Ibid.*, 726.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

"Then," writes Green to Archdeacon Philpot, "was I brought into my Lord's inner chamber (where you were), and there was put in a chamber with Master Dee, who entreated me very friendly. That night I supped at my Lord's table, and lay with Master Dee in the chamber you did see. On the morrow I was served at dinner from my Lord's table, and at night did eat in the hall with his gentlemen; where I have been placed ever since, and fared wonderful well. Yea, to say the truth, I had my liberty within the bounds of his Lordship's house: for my lodging and fare, scarce have I been at any time abroad in better case so long together, and have found so much gentleness of my Lord, and his chaplains and other servants, that I should easily have forgotten that I was in prison, were it not that this great cheer was often powdered with unsavoury sauces of examinations, exhortations, posings, and disputations.

Green treated as a guest by Bonner

"For, shortly after supper, the first Monday at night, I was had into my Lord's bed-chamber, and there he would know of me how I came first into these heresies. I said I was persuaded thereto by the Scriptures, and authorities of the doctors, alleged by Peter Martyr in his lectures upon 1 Cor. xi., while he entreated there on that place, 'De cœnâ Domini,' by the space of a month together. But then my Lord enforced the plainness of Christ's words, and His Almighty power, demanding of me what reason should move me from the literal sense of the words. But I, having no lust to those matters, would have alleged that there were books sufficient of that matter, as Peter Martyr, Cranmer, and Œcolampadius; nevertheless, when this shift would not serve, but I was constrained to say somewhat, I said I was moved from the literal sense by the

The bishop argues with Green

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

manner of speaking, by the circumstance, and by conference of other places of the Scriptures."

After several months of this kind treatment, Green was at last examined in the Consistory Court at St. Paul's before Bonner and his assessors, and on January 15, 1556, he was excommunicated and delivered over to the Sheriff of London.

Bonner throws responsibility on the Privy Council

It is a striking commentary on the traditional character given to Bonner that, before proceeding with Green's case, he began with these or the like words: "Honourable audience, I think it best to open unto you the conversation of this man called Bartlet Green. And because you shall not charge me that I go about to seek any man's blood, here you shall hear the Council's letters, which they sent with him unto me. The effect whereof is, that whereas he had been of long time in the Tower of London for heresy, they have now sent him unto me to be ordered according to the laws therefor provided."[4] But this evident dislike to having his office as ecclesiastical judge promoted in this manner was shown on other occasions also. In August 1555 a prisoner named Robert Smith was sent to him for examination, and for some reason the Lord Mayor was also present. After he had been baited for some time by the very polemical prisoner, Bonner turned to the Lord Mayor and said, "Well, my Lord Mayor, your Lordship hath heard somewhat what a stout heretic this is, and that his articles have deserved death; yet, nevertheless, forsomuch as they report me to seek blood, and call me 'Bloody Bonner,' whereas God knoweth I never sought any man's blood in all my life, I have stayed him from the Consistory this day, whither I might have brought him justly;

He repudiates the charge of blood-thirstiness

[4] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 736-739.

CHAP V
A.D. 1555

and yet here, before your Lordship, I desire him to turn, and I will with all speed dispatch him out of trouble; and this I profess before your Lordship and all this audience."[5] Archdeacon Philpot also leaves on record that he used similar language when about to examine himself. "I was brought into his presence," he wrote respecting Bonner, "where he sat at a table alone, with three or four of his chaplains waiting upon him, and his registrar. 'Master Philpot, you are welcome; give me your hand.' With that, because he so gently put forth his hand, I, to render courtesy for courtesy, kissed my hand, and gave him the same. 'I am right sorry for your trouble, and I promise you before it was within these two hours I knew not of your being here. I pray you tell me what was the cause of your sending hither; for I promise you I know nothing thereof as yet, neither would I you should think that I was the cause thereof. And I marvel that other men will trouble me with their matters; but I must be obedient to my betters; and I suppose men speak otherwise of me than I deserve."[6]

Archdeacon Philpot's account of Bonner

[II.] From these cases it may be very justly concluded that Bishop Bonner at least endeavoured vigorously, and at great risk to himself, to ameliorate the force of the persecution. And so conspicuously was this the case, that the King and Queen and their advisers, finding how much their injunctions to the justices of the peace were being nullified by the conduct of the bishop and his episcopal brethren, addressed the following "letters" to them on May 24, 1555, the copy which follows being the one sent to the Bishop of London, and preserved in his register :—

Bonner considered too lenient

[5] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 349. [6] *Ibid.*, 611.

CHAP V
A.D. 1555

" PHILIPPUS. MARY THE QUEEN.

By the King and Queen.

" Right Reverend Father in God, right trusty and well-beloved, we greet you well. And where of late we addressed our letters unto the justices of peace within every of the counties of this our realm, whereby, amongst other instructions given them for the good order and quiet government of the country round about them, they are willed to have a special regard unto such disordered persons as, forgetting their duties towards God and us, do lean to any erroneous and heretical opinions, refusing to show themselves conformable to the Catholic religion of Christ's Church; whom, if they cannot by good admonition and fair means reform them, they are willed to deliver unto the ordinary, to be by him charitably travailed withal, and removed (if it may be) from their naughty opinions; or else, if they continue obstinate, to be ordered according to the laws provided in that behalf: understanding now, to our no little marvel, that divers of the said disordered persons, being by the justices of peace, for their contempt and obstinacy, brought to the ordinaries to be used as is aforesaid, are either refused to be received at their hands, or, if they be received, are neither so travailed with as Christian charity requireth, nor yet proceeded withal according to the order of justice, but are suffered to continue in their errors, to the dishonour of Almighty God, and dangerous example of others. Like as we find this matter very strange, so have we thought convenient both to signify this our knowledge, and therewith also to admonish you to have in this behalf such regard henceforth to the office of a good pastor and bishop, as when any such offenders shall be by the said officers or justices of peace brought unto you, ye do use your good wisdom and discretion in procuring to remove them from their errors, if it may be; or else in proceeding against them (if they shall continue obstinate) according to the order of the laws; so as through your good furtherance, both God's glory may

Bonner and other bishops

commanded to be more strict

be better advanced, and the commonwealth more quietly governed.

"Given under our signet, at our honour of Hampton-court, the 24th of May, the first and second years of our reign." [7]

Bonner shows his indignation

This reprimand from the Crown was received with some indignation by Bonner. He caused Chedsey, one of his chaplains, to make it known at Paul's Cross on the following Sunday afternoon, and at the same time to declare on his behalf, that while he would readily endeavour to reclaim any of those whom the State charged with heresy, it was no wish of his that any of them should suffer for it; and no doubt the following portion of Dr. Chedsey's address is in the words of Bonner himself:—

"And whereas by these letters, coming from the King's and Queen's Majesties, it appeareth that their Majesties do charge my Lord Bishop of London and the rest of the bishops with remissness and negligence in instructing the people infected with heresy if they will be taught, and in punishing them if they will be obstinate and wilful, ye shall understand that my Lord Bishop of London, for his part, offereth himself ready to do therein his duty to the uttermost, giving you knowledge that he hath sent to all the prisons of the city to know what persons are there for heresy, and by whose commandment; and that he will travail and take pains with all that be of his jurisdiction for their amendment; and sorry he is that any are in prison for any such matter. And he willed me to tell you that he is not so cruel or hasty to send men to prison as some be slanderous and wilful to do naught, and lay their faults on other men's shoulders." [8]

and disclaims personal cruelty

From this documentary evidence—and much more

[7] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 86.

[8] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 286. Either by design or by a very singular accident, Foxe has inserted this disclaimer at such a distance from the royal letter to which it refers, that in the edition of 1838 it is separated by 200 pages of matter, having no reference whatever to either document.

CHAP V A.D. 1555

might be brought forward by way of confirmation and illustration—it is plain that Bishop Bonner no more sought out victims for the stake among the Puritans than Lord Penzance in later days sought out victims among the Ritualists for imprisonment. Bonner simply acted as the judge of the Consistory Court of the Diocese of London, and acted as such only when persons were accused before him by the civil magistrate. So far as it was possible for him to dismiss cases, he did dismiss them; and he persistently endeavoured, by persuasion, kind treatment, argument, and delay, to make it possible for him to do so. In how many cases he succeeded in sending the accused persons home to their friends, as he sent the twenty-two from Colchester, cannot be told, for, as a rule, Foxe records only the narratives of those who were found guilty of heresy in open court; but they were probably very numerous. To represent him as the mainspring of the persecution is utterly unhistorical; to represent him as actually condemning persons to be burned at the stake is equally so; and it would be scarcely less inconsistent with the narratives of the sufferers, even when recorded by his most bitter enemy, the venomous and unscrupulous Foxe, to represent him as using his court in an unjust manner for the purpose of forwarding the persecution.

Bonner acting in his judicial capacity

Unjust treatment of his character

It is strange beyond measure, indeed, when examining the authoritative documents, to find how much popular tradition has gone astray in respect to the responsibility of Bishop Bonner; but the strangeness passes away when the careful reader of Foxe's "Book of Martyrs" (on which Strype, Burnet, and later historians are entirely dependent) observes that his comments upon these documents are of the most recklessly

unjust character; that he couples the name of his enemy with opprobrious epithets, such as would catch the popular ear on every possible occasion; and that scarcely any trouble has ever been taken by historians to sift the real evidence which exists with respect to the duties which his office as bishop imposed upon him, and the way in which he carried them out. Of his personal character little more is known than that he was a rather rough-speaking and good-natured man.[9]

Evidence against him not sifted

THE SPANIARDS.—But any historian who observes the course of this persecution from a philosophical and not a polemical point of view, must be struck at

[9] When Bonner came out of the Marshalsea prison at the beginning of Queen Mary's reign, he was so popular "that all the people by the way bade him welcome home, both men and women; and as many of the women as might kissed him, and so" he "came to Paul's, and knelt down on the steps, and said his prayers." [*Grey Friars' Chron.*, 82.]

Sir John Harington just remembered the bishop, but says he was too young to know much about him. "He was so hated," he says, "that every ill-favoured fat fellow that went in the street they would say, That is Bonner. . . . Having twice lost his bishopric, walking with his tippet in the street, one begged it of him (in scoff) to line a coat. 'No,' saith he, 'but thou shalt have a fool's head to line thy cap.' And so to another that bade him 'Good morrow, Bishop *quondam*,' he straight replied, 'Farewell, knave *semper*.' I have been told also that one showed him his own picture in the Book of Martyrs, in the first edition, on purpose to vex him, at which he laughed, saying, 'A vengeance on the fool, how could he get my picture drawn so right?' And when one asked him if he were not ashamed to whip a man with beard, he laughed and told him 'his beard was grown since;' 'but (saith he) if thou hadst been in his case, thou wouldest have thought it a good commutation of penance to have thy bum beaten to save thy body from burning.'" [Harington's *Brief View of the Church of England*, p. 16, ed. 1653.]

Among the Lansdowne MSS. there is a curious letter from Grindal, Bishop of London, dated September 9, 1569, saying that as Bonner had been under sentence of excommunication in the Court of Arches for eight or nine years without seeking absolution, he was not entitled to Christian burial; and that to avoid riot on account of the hatred borne to him by the people of the city, he was to be buried at night. [Lansd. MS., xi. 144.]

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-57

once by the coincidence between the time of its outbreak and the arrival in England of a prince and a train of followers who came from a country where persecution was carried on to an extent far beyond anything known in other Christian lands. In Spain the punishment of burning for heresy was first invented. In Spain the Inquisition had been a firmly established national institution for more than seventy years. In Spain the great Act of Faith, in which large numbers of heretics were burnt to death in the midst of a gorgeous ceremonial, was a familiar holiday spectacle. Need we go further than to this immigration of Spaniards for an answer to the question, Who was responsible for the Marian persecution?

Spain the home of heretic burning

First there was Philip II. himself, the husband of Queen Mary, and the nominal King of England. Although a young man of twenty-eight only, he took a very deep interest in Ultramontane politics and religion, and on the very day when Cardinal Pole reconciled the country to the Roman See, the King wrote a royal report of the reconciliation to the Pope, and ended his letter with the words, "And I trust your Holiness shall always understand that the Holy See hath not had a more obedient son than I, nor more desirous to preserve and increase the authority of the same."[1] With such devotion towards the Papal authority, he was sure to have a corresponding hatred of those who repudiated it, and who, in the language of Rome, were to be accounted heretics. Moreover, he was the son of a sovereign, Charles V., who prided himself upon the care with which he had sought out heretics, and caused them to be burnt. And so well assured was the father that his son would follow his

King Philip's zeal for Rome

[1] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 573.

example, as to write to him and to the Queen soon after their marriage in terms which indicated a certainty that heretics would now be burnt in England as they were in Spain. "When I had been informed," writes the Emperor in a document which is printed by Sandoval, his biographer, "that many persons had been arrested in some provinces, and that others were to be taken as accused of Lutheranism, I wrote to the Princess, my daughter, to inform her in what manner they should be punished and the evil remedied. I also wrote afterwards to Louis Quixada, and authorized him to act in my name in the same affair; and although I am persuaded that the King, my son, the Princess, my daughter, and the ministers, have already, and will always, make every possible effort to destroy so great an evil with all the severity and promptitude which it requires, yet, considering what I owe to the service of our Lord, the triumph of His faith, the preservation of His Church and the Christian religion (in the defence of which I have performed such painful labours at the risk of my life, as every one knows), and particularly desiring, above all, to inspire my son, whose catholic sentiments I know, with the wish of imitating my conduct, and which I hope he will do. And I command him, moreover, in my quality of father, and by the obedience which he owes me, to labour with diligence as in a point which particularly interests him, that the heretics shall be prosecuted and chastised with all the severity which their crimes deserve, *without permitting any criminal to be excepted, without any respect for the entreaties, or rank, or quality of the persons;* and that my intentions may have their full and entire effect, I desire him to protect the holy office of the Inquisition,

Charles V. on English heretics.

Recommends severe dealing with them

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-57

for the great numbers of crimes which it prevents or punishes, *remembering that I have charged him to do so in my will*, that he may fulfil his duty as a prince, and render himself worthy that the Lord should make his reign prosperous, conduct his affairs, and protect him against his enemies, to my consolation." [2]

King Philip's heretic burnings in Spain

Such instructions as these fell on a kindly soil; for Philip no sooner took possession of his Spanish dominions after his father's abdication than they began to bear fruit. "On his arrival in Spain," says the historian Mezeray, "he caused a great multitude of those called Lutherans—men and women, laymen and clergy—to be burnt in his presence at Seville and at Valladolid." [3] "He would himself carry the faggots to burn his son, Don Carlos, if that son should become a Lutheran," he said at Valladolid; and "he would rather be without subjects," he replied, when remonstrated with about the persecutions of a later day, "than be a king of heretics." With what cruel instruments for the torture of English heretics he loaded the ships of the Armada is well known. In short, there was never any Christian sovereign who surpassed Philip in calm, self-possessed cruelty, or in the extent of his persecutions; and it would be most unreasonable to suppose that the influence of so conscientious an extirpator of heretics was not vigorously exerted on the Queen, and on others, when he came into England.

His clerical attendants

But King Philip did not come into England alone; and it is to be remembered especially that there accompanied him so many Spanish friars that it had been a matter of discussion whether they should not

[2] Sandoval's *History of Charles V.*, vol. ii.; Llorentes' *Hist. of Inquisition*, ch. xviii. p. 173, Eng. ed. 1826.

[3] Mezeray's *Abregé Chron.*, 990, ed. Par. 1667; Fabre, *Continu. of Fleury*, cliv. 47, 49.

set aside their habits for fear of exciting opposition among the new subjects of King Philip;[4] some of these friars being distinguished members of that Dominican order to which the Inquisition was indebted for its long and hateful vitality. A few particulars respecting the best known of these Spanish friars may be acceptable to the reader.

Carranza's work in England

Bartholomew Carranza di Miranda was a Spanish Dominican, who acted as confessor, first to King Philip, and afterwards to Queen Mary; and some particulars of his work in England may be gathered from a life of this eminent man which was written by Salazar di Mendoza soon after his death, as well as from a memoir contained in a church history of his own times which was published by Alonzo Fernandez in 1611. "On the conclusion of the match between Philip and Mary," says the memoir, "as it was the intention of the affianced parties to reduce the kingdom of England to the unity and bosom of the Catholic Church, the enterprise was begun by Carranza receiving orders to pass over into England, and to take with him great learned clerks, who should arrange the business dexterously, conquering the difficulties which might present themselves. He accordingly set out in May 1554, some time before the Prince himself embarked." His earliest work was to smooth the way for Cardinal Pole's return to England, and then to assist the Cardinal in recovering ecclesiastical property for the Church. He was afterwards appointed one of the commissioners for the reform of the universities, and

He precedes Philip and Pole

[4] This is mentioned by Cardinal Pole in the letter that he wrote to Pope Julius III., giving him an account of the interview which he had with the Emperor Charles V. before his voyage to England. [Burnet's *Reform.*, vi. 348, Pocock's Ed.]

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-57

is represented as saying on his deathbed, that while he filled that office he exhumed the bodies of the principal English heretics, and had them burned "with all the authority of the holy Inquisition;" these being the bodies of Martin Bucer and Paul Fagius. "He caused many Bibles to be collected and burned," says Fernandez, "which had been viciously turned by the heretics into the vulgar English tongue, these Bibles being found fastened with little chains to the benches in churches, in order that they might be easily read by all." Carranza is found meddling with the persecution so early as February 25, 1555, when he visited Bradford in company with Alphonsus A'Castro, to be presently mentioned, and endeavoured to persuade him into a recantation.[5]

Carranza burning dead heretics and Bibles

After the departure of Philip from England, Carranza remained as confessor and director to the Queen; and, by Philip's orders, as he stated in his last illness, he continued to take an active part in the persecution, the Queen assenting to the measures suggested, in the hope of regaining her hold upon her absent husband. If his biographer is to be believed, Carranza was the chief person employed in all the measures that were taken by the Ultramontane party respecting the degradation, condemnation, and execution of Cranmer. "It was by order of Master Bartholomew de Carranza," says Fernandez, "that, after his cause had been committed to the ecclesiastical tribunal, he was degraded by the Catholic bishops, and burnt alive in Oxford as an obstinate and impenitent heretic." "He had such strong supporters," says the biographer, "that the execution of his sentence gave the Queen much anxiety; but it was done without scandal, and as soon

Carranza and Cranmer's end

[5] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 179.

CHAP V
A.D. 1555-57

as she knew of the sentence she sent to Carranza to advise with about it." The same writer says that, by the contrivance of Carranza, "many were consigned to the flames, and among them was burned alive Thomas Cranmer, usurping Archbishop of Canterbury, who gave sentence against Catharine."[6]

Carranza's own end

Carranza left England in July 1557 to become Archbishop of Toledo, a promotion for which he had been recommended to Philip by Queen Mary. In his own see and province he gave a zealous support to the Inquisition by obtaining for its officers one canonry in every cathedral and collegiate church. But in August 1559 he himself was charged with having taught heretical doctrine, and he lingered as a prisoner of the Inquisition for sixteen years, eventually dying in a Dominican monastery at Rome in April 1576.

Garcina in Oxford

Garcina, or Juan di Villagarcia, was a Spanish Dominican, who was sent by Carranza, according to the statement of Fernandez, to read divinity lectures in Lincoln and Magdalen Colleges, Oxford, and he became Regius Professor of Divinity in 1556. He remained in Oxford during the whole of Queen Mary's reign, and is declared by Fernandez to have met with extraordinary success in eradicating the theology taught during the reign of Edward VI., and in establishing those ultramontane principles which led to the secession of so many young men to Rome in the next reign. Villagarcia had much to do with the last days of Cranmer, especially with his recantations, and was one of the friars who were present when he was burned.[7]

Pedro di Soto was also a Spanish Dominican, who had been confessor to the Emperor Charles V. for

[6] Fernandez, *Hist. Eccl. del nuestros tempos*, lib. iii. c. 27, 28.
[7] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, viii. 90.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-57

many years. He was sent to Oxford by Carranza, and appears to have acted as deputy to Bruerne, the Regius Professor of Hebrew during the reign of Queen Mary. He was associated with Garcina in the attempts to secure a satisfactory recantation from Cranmer, and was with him at the time when Latimer and Ridley passed his prison on their way to execution,[8] and had laboured with them also to the same purpose.[9] "So excellent and abundant," says Fernandez, "was the fruit which the religious and learned Peter de Soto and his companions, religious persons of his habit, obtained in Oxford, that the seed of the faith which has endured in England to this day is the fruit of their labour in sowing." So also Jewel wrote to Bullinger that Soto had overturned by the roots all which Peter Martyr had planted.[1]

Peter de Soto in Oxford

Alphonsus A'Castro, a Spanish Franciscan of the Observant rule, was, however, the person who more than all others stimulated this cruel and fanatical persecution, having made himself the chief authority on the subject long before it broke out in England. In 1534 he printed a folio volume containing an historical and theological account of all known heresies,[2] and in 1547 another work of much greater significance as regards the subject now under consideration, namely, a treatise on the righteous punishment of heretics.[3] Both of these volumes were reprinted specially for the

A'Castro a scientific persecutor

[8] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 548.

[9] Quirini's *Poli Epp.*, v. 47.

[1] Burnet's *Hist. Ref.*, vi. 406, Pocock's Ed.

[2] *Adversus Omnes Hæreses.*

[3] The full title of the work is as follows: "*Fratris Alfonsi A'Castro, Zamorensis, regularis Observantiæ, provinciæ Sancti Jacobi: De justa Hæreticorum punitione libri tres, opus nunc recens, et nunquam antea impressum, Salmantiæ excudebat Joannes Giunta*, A.D. 1547.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-57

use of King Philip in the year 1556, the dedication of the first to the Archbishop of Toledo, and of the second to the Emperor Charles V., being replaced by a dedication to Philip, dated May 20, 1556, in which the author speaks of each work as having been enlarged while he was resident in England, serving the King in public sermons and in matters of business connected with the faith. It is evident, therefore, that A'Castro had placed his book on the punishment of heretics in the hands of Philip at a time when the question of punishing English heretics was one lying immediately before the King, as a matter in which religious duty and public policy were concerned; and as there is no improbability in the supposition that A'Castro, who was confessor to the King, had brought his book to Philip's knowledge long before the date given in the dedication, so it is certain that advice would be given by him in the beginning of the persecution which would be in accordance with the principles laid down in the book.

A'Castro's influence on King Philip

His treatise on punishing heretics

There is probably no more thorough-going work on the subject of which it treats, and at the same time none more shocking, than this work of A'Castro's on the punishment of heretics, and it is one which was eminently calculated to incite such a gloomy fanatic as Philip to pursue the English Protestants with extreme rigour by all the means, direct and indirect, which lay in his power. The spirit in which it was originally written may be seen by its dedication to Charles V., which is dated October 28, 1547. After a bitter complaint of the Protestants, whom he compares to mad and hungry dogs who are ready to swallow the offal of any filthy doctrine of old rejected by the Church, and enumerating the catholic and learned men who have

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-57

written against them, he speaks of his own former work, "Adversus Hæreses," in which he had endeavoured at great length to put together an account of all the heresies which had infested the Church from the Ascension of our Lord to the present time. But though he had thus well beaten the heretics with arguments, they had not yet returned to their senses. Disagreeing among themselves more than from the Church, as their way has always been, they are yet all agreed in attacking the Pope, anti-Popery being their only bond of union. "Since, therefore," he goes on to say, "it is now well proved to my conviction that mild measures were of no profit to them, I thought it necessary to use sharper medicine, that we should now proceed against them, not with words, but with clubs and whips and swords; that punishment might teach wisdom to men who have abused the liberty allowed them, and persist in their folly; and that, since a too great lenity has failed to give them understanding, affliction may do so. The heretics, however, fearing such affliction, and wishing to rescue themselves from it, have, with their serpentine cunning, taught that the punishment of heretics is unlawful, and have said that those who punish heretics are rather tyrants than kings, or even those who compel them by pains and tortures to keep the faith. . . . For this cause I have determined, in a long treatise, to discuss the question as to what punishments are justly due to heretics, in order that Christian princes, being well persuaded concerning the lawfulness of punishing them, may not permit any of those penalties which the laws decree against heretics to be dispensed with, but order them to be inflicted on all stubborn and obstinate heretics whatsoever."

A'Castro's literary castigation of heretics

Its want of success with them

CHAP V
A.D. 1555-57

The subject is followed up through many chapters, and then, after long disquisitions on the duty of rulers to deprive heretics of their property and civil rights, there comes a chapter on the duty of further punishing them with death, either by the sword or by fire, or in some other manner.[4] All countries are not alike, he remarks, in the mode of inflicting this last punishment; but he gives his own experience. Within the preceding ten years he has seen heretics in Flanders and Lower Germany beheaded; in Guelders they were tied hand and foot and thrown into the river by order of Charles, Duke of Guelders; and one was similarly treated by Margaret, the Emperor's aunt, at Antwerp. At Bruges, as he has heard from many credible eye-witnesses, it was the custom to throw them into boiling oil; but when he was there there was nothing but simple beheading. In other Christian kingdoms, as far as he knows, it is the constant and inviolable custom to burn heretics with fire. He *has seen* it done so in France, particularly at Paris. So also it is done in Spain; and he thinks in Italy this was always the way. If any one asks why heretics should be burned rather than put to death in any other manner, he can only say that it is the custom, for there is no specific law on the subject. But he thinks that the custom of burning them is more consistent than any other with the teaching of Holy Scripture, for Korah and his company were destroyed by fire, etc. etc.

His experience as to modes of punishing them

Burning the most Scriptural method

But the edition prepared for King Philip[5] is specially associated with the persecution of the Protestants in

[4] The exact title of the chapter is "Quod Hæretici sunt mortis supplicio puniendi, sive talis mors gladio, aut igne, aut alio quovis modo illis inferatur." [A'Castro, *De justa Hæret. punitione*, ii. 12, fol. 116, col. 4, ed. 1547.]

[5] Of this edition the bibliographer Antonio writes, "Ex tertiaque auctoris ipsius recognitione, anno 1556," but does not give any place of publication. It was evidently printed privately, and not published until 1565.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-57

England by the words in which the author dedicates it to the husband of Queen Mary. "No man is more bound than Philip," he says, "to be an irreconcilable enemy to the opponents of the Catholic faith, since he is now, as King of England, Defender of the Faith; and he has well shown how he has deserved the title, by reconciling in four months a kingdom which for twenty years previously had revolted. And there is now good ground to hope, from the temper of the Parliament and nation, that the whole kingdom will shortly be in a condition to be restored to that purity of Christian religion which it held before its apostasy." The date "four months" is an important one. The marriage of Philip and Mary took place on July 25, 1554, the "reconciliation" to the Pope on November 30, 1554, and it may thus be concluded that the work of A'Castro was revised and ready for the perusal of Philip about the end of that year. Now, it was in the last month of 1554 and the first of 1555, immediately after the completion of this new edition, that the old statutes respecting the burning of heretics were revived; and it is hardly possible to put aside the apparent connection between that, the revival, and the urgent exhortations and instructions respecting the punishment of heretics by sword or FIRE, *but preferably the last*, which had been given to the King by his chaplain and spiritual director.

A'Castro's flattery of King Philip

His gross duplicity

It is, moreover, astonishing to see the shameless duplicity which was shown by the Spanish party in this matter. In the work which was privately submitted to Philip for his guidance, A'Castro had written that, "in proportion as any crime is more grievous and atrocious, the more just it is, by means of some greater and more bitter punishment, to inspire others

CHAP V
A.D. 1555-57

with a horror of such a crime. But there is no more grievous sin than heresy; there is therefore no crime with hatred of which a Christian ought to be more intensely inspired; whence it follows that there is no crime for which a man may be more justly put to death than for fixed and incurable heresy." On February 4, 1555, the firstfruits of A'Castro's work were gathered in by the burning of John Rogers; on February 9th Hooper was burned at Gloucester, and Taylor at Hadleigh; and on the very next day after these two latter executions, the man who had written what has been just quoted put on a mask of humanity; the man who had stimulated the King, and through him the Queen, to sanction such executions, preached a sermon before the Court, in which "he did earnestly inveigh against the" English "bishops for burning of men, saying plainly that they learned it not in Scripture to burn any for his conscience, but the contrary; that he should live and be converted, with many other things more to the same purport."[6] Hence, while A'Castro was secretly advising the persecution of heretics to the death, he was also preaching publicly against their persecution, thus serving the Spanish King, as he himself says in the dedication of his book, "in public sermons and in matters of business[7] connected

in secretly urging the burning of heretics

and publicly preaching against it

[6] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 704.

[7] A glimpse of A'Castro's personal bearing in these "matters of business" is afforded us in the account of his visit, in company with Carranza, to Bradford, when the latter lay a prisoner in the Compter, on February 25, 1555. "Here was the friar in a wonderful rage, and spake so high (as often he had done before) that the whole house rung again, chafing with *om* and *cho.* He hath a great name for learning, but surely he hath little patience; for if Bradford had been anything hot, one house could not have held them." "Here the friar fumed marvellously, and said 'I came not to learn at thee; are not here witnesses? Be not they sufficient?' But the man was so chafed that, if Bradford had not passed over this matter of writing, the friar would have fallen to plain scolding." [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 180, 182.]

CHAP V
A.D. 1555-57

with the faith." The sermon was undoubtedly a trick of statecraft, the object of which was to throw the public mind off the scent—a *suppressio veri* by its concealment of the fact that the Spanish intruders were the real authors of the persecution, a *suggestio falsi* by its assumption that the English bishops were the persons to be blamed and execrated. If we could see further into the secret history of the times, we should probably find that Alphonsus A'Castro was actively engaged in directing the course of the persecution during the whole of the time that he remained in England, as well as in giving to it its initial impetus. But having been nominated to the Archbishopric of Compostella, he left England at the end of 1557, and died at Brussels on February 2, 1558.

A'Castro blaming the bishops for his own work

Pole's alleged leniency

CARDINAL POLE.—Opinions have varied much as to the share which Cardinal Pole had in the persecution; and although out of the whole number of persons who were burned as many as one-fifth suffered in the Diocese of Canterbury, it has been often alleged, on the authority of some weak evidence given by Foxe,[8] that Pole had nothing to

[8] "Concerning the which Cardinal, although it cannot be denied by his acts and writings but that he was a professed enemy, and no otherwise to be reputed but for a Papist; yet, again, it is to be supposed that he was none of the bloody and cruel sort of Papists, as may appear, not only by staying the rage of this Bishop [*i.e.* Bonner], but also by the solicitous writing and long letters written to Cranmer, also by the complaints of certain Papists accusing him to the Pope to be a bearer with the heretics, and by the Pope's letters sent to him upon the same, calling him up to Rome, and setting Friar Peto in his place, had not Queen Mary, by special entreaty, kept him out of the Pope's danger. All which letters I have (if need be) to show; and besides, also, that it is thought of him that toward his latter end, a little before his coming from Rome to England, he began somewhat to favour the doctrine of Luther, and was no less suspected at Rome: yea, and furthermore, did there at Rome convert a certain learned Spaniard from Papism to Luther's side; notwithstanding the pomp and glory of the world afterward carried him away to play the Papist thus as he did. But of this Cardinal enough." [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, viii. 308.]

CHAP V
A.D. 1555-58

do with the persecution. It is certain, however, that the Archbishop's deputies—Richard Thornden, the Suffragan Bishop of Dover, and Nicholas Harpsfield, the Archdeacon of Canterbury—were actively engaged in carrying out the persecution within the bounds of his diocese, and that they received wide powers from him in a secret commission issued to them as early as June 16, 1554, when the Cardinal was still at Brussels.[9] Only a few months before his death, moreover, on March 28, 1558, Pole issued a fresh commission for proceedings to be taken against the heretics of his diocese, and formally delivered some of them over to the secular arm on July 7th of the same year.[1]

His acts contradict the allegation

That Pole's principles as to the punishment of heretics differed little or nothing from those of the Spanish party might be expected from his ultramontane training, but there is also evidence on the subject in his letters. He did not disguise his opinion that heretics were worthy of death, and ought to be cut off from the Church as rotten members;[2] and when writing to King Philip respecting the execution of Latimer and Ridley, he writes with evident approval, remarking that "no one can preserve him whom God has abandoned."[3]

His conduct toward Cranmer

It was in the spirit of these latter words that he acted also towards Cranmer. The Cardinal seems at one time to have made some effort to save the Archbishop's life, for he declared to him that, "if he could by any means rescue him from that dreadful sentence

[9] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 298. Thornden had been suffragan to Archbishop Cranmer, but, as a suffragan bishop's authority expires with that of his superior, he was reappointed by Cardinal Pole, apparently at the date above mentioned, although Pole was not yet archbishop.

[1] Wilkins' *Concil.*, iv. 173, 174.

[2] Quirini's *Poli Epp.*, iv. 156.

[3] *Ibid.*, v. 47.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

of death, not only of body, but of his soul, which was hanging over him, he would gladly prefer it, God knows, to all the riches and honours which this life could afford."[4] He also wrote several letters to him for the purpose of converting him, but they are couched in what can hardly be called otherwise than abusive terms; for, although he was only in deacon's orders, he took upon himself to rebuke the Archbishop as a man devoid of learning, piety, and grace; one who was incapable of understanding the doctrine of the Church, since he was neither enlightened as a teacher nor tractable as a scholar; one who had fallen into grievous errors through his evil life; one who had committed perjury, sensuality, and other crimes, for which he had been delivered up to a reprobate mind.[5] But as time went on Pole certainly gave up any desire that he might have had for showing mercy. Archbishop Parker, who calls Pole "Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ carnifex et flagellum," says that when Cranmer's recantation had been obtained, his execution was assented to and hastened by Pole;[6] and this statement of an adverse contemporary is confirmed by the language of a friendly contemporary, Dudith, who implies that Pole withdrew his petitions for the Archbishop's pardon when he became aware of his dissimulation.[7]

Pole's arrogant censure of Cranmer

His complicity in Cranmer's execution

[4] Phillips' *Life of Pole*, ii. 203.

[5] *Ibid.*, ii. 147.

[6] Parker's *Antiq. Brit.*, 523, 533.

[7] "Non minorem antea curam et studium Polus adhibuerat, ut saluti Thomæ Cranmeri, qui ante se Archiepiscopus Cantuarensis fuerat, quique tunc Oxonii, quod oppidum bidui iter Londino distat, in custodia asservabatur, consuleret, ad eumque bis scripserat, si posset, pravis ejus opinionibus contra Sacramentum Altaris et Primatum Pontificis Romani confutatis, ad sanitatem illum perducere. Cujus rei magnam quidem spem initio dederat, eique veniam Polus ab ipsa Regina impetraverat. Verum postea, cogniti ejus simulatione, ad quam natus et factus esse videbatur, et qua omnibus in rebus tota vita usus semper fuerat, ea tandem pœna est affectus, quæ ejus regni legibus in hæresim constituta erat, vivusque crematus est." [Dudith's pref. to Quirini, i. 43.]

There is something terribly suggestive, moreover, in the entry of a contemporary chronicler, that Cranmer was burned at Oxford on March 21, 1556, and that "the same day the Lord Cardinal Pole was made priest at Lambeth, and the morrow, being Sunday, he was consecrated Archbishop of Canterbury at Greenwich in the Friars' Church, and the Wednesday after, being the Feast of the Annunciation, he received the pall in his Church of St. Mary the Arches, *alias* Bow Church in Cheap."[8] But whereas Cranmer had been consecrated to the archbishopric twenty-three years before, Pole died in less than three years from his consecration, namely, on November 17, 1558.

How Pole succeeded Cranmer

QUEEN MARY.—But whoever was originally responsible for the persecution, it is much to be feared that the deeply religious and once amiable Queen herself cannot be exculpated. Her natural disposition was more gentle than that of any of the Tudors, and until her marriage with Philip was arranged she was a very popular sovereign; but when she came under the influence of her husband and Cardinal Pole she changed greatly. Marrying so late in life, and when her physicians ought to have advised her against marrying at all,[9] she was soon overwhelmed with physical and mental misery, which soured her disposition and made royal lenity less easy to her than it was when she struck out so many names from the list of traitors presented to her at the beginning of her reign.[1] She was then also brought under the influence of the Spanish Dominicans, one of whom was her confessor, and was thus

Changes in the Queen's disposition

[8] Wriothesley's *Chron.*, i. 134.

[9] See Madden's *Privy Purse Expenses of P. Mary*, pp. cxxxiv., cxliii., for contemporary evidence respecting her malady.

[1] See page 193.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

imbued with extravagant opinions respecting the extirpation of heresy.

The Queen's provocations

To these influences from the persecuting side there must also be added others which were brought to bear upon the Queen from the side of those who were persecuted, some of whom made themselves peculiarly obnoxious to her as a Queen and a woman by the insulting language which they used towards her, and did their best to identify anti-sacerdotalism with treason. John Knox, who was the leader of this extreme party, had fled into Germany with others at her accession, and from safe quarters sent into England great numbers of a bitter sermon which he had preached against her, and of a book entitled "The First Blast of the Trumpet against the monstrous Regiment of Women." Christopher Goodman, another of the fugitives, also wrote a book, showing "How superior powers ought to be obeyed of their subjects, and wherein they may lawfully by God's Word be disobeyed and resisted; and wherein also is declared the cause of all this present misery in England, and the only way to remedy the same." Bishop Poynet again revenged himself for the loss of the See of Winchester by writing "A short Treatise of Politick Power, and of the true Obedience which subjects owe to Kings and other Civil Governors, with an Exhortation to all true natural Englishmen," one chapter of which was headed, "Whether it be lawful to depose an evil governor and kill a tyrant." The publication of these works was commenced some time before the persecution began,[2] and their secret circu-

at the hands of the Puritans

[2] Foxe, writing of the year 1554, says, "About the 5th of October, and within a fortnight following, were divers, as well householders as servants and apprentices, apprehended and taken and committed to sundry prisons for the having and selling of certain books which were

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

lation in England was very extensive. The object of these books was undoubtedly that of stirring up the subjects of the Queen to rebellion, and so getting rid of the Queen herself. She was habitually spoken of as "Jezebel," "Cursed Jezebel of England," "That horrible monster Jezebel of England," the people's "Ungodly and unlawful governess, wicked Jezebel," "That wicked woman whom you untruly make your Queen," "This ungodly serpent Mary," and so forth; and the substance of the arguments used by the writers was that—[1] Being a woman, she was a creature under the curse of God; that [2] being an illegitimate daughter of Henry VIII., she had no right to the throne; and that [3] being a tyrant, she ought to be put to death.

Their insulting language towards her

How this Presbyterian venom worked among those of the party who remained in England may be seen by the results, which must have been very bitter to a sovereign whose reign had begun with so wonderful a display of national loyalty. It became so common among the Protestants to pray for the Queen's death, that it was necessary to put down the custom by a penal statute [1 and 2 Ph. and M., cap. 9], in which it was enacted that "if any person should pray and desire that God will shorten the Queen's days, or take her out of the way, or any such malicious prayer amounting to the same effect, he, his procurators and abettors, shall be adjudged traitors." But the disciples of Knox did not trust to prayer alone, for William Thomas, who had been clerk of the Privy Council under Edward VI., was involved in some actual plot for the

Their public prayers for her death

sent into England by the preachers that fled into Germany and other countries; which books nipped a great number so near, that within one fortnight there were little less than threescore imprisoned for this matter." [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 561.]

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

assassination of the Queen, and suffered a traitor's death on account of it on May 18, 1554.[3]

That these wicked and provocative writings also affected the course of events most unfavourably for the persecuted party is shown, too, by the strong opinion expressed in a letter written to Calvin by Whitehead, Cox, and others of the fugitives on September 20, 1555: "This we can assure you," they say, "that that outrageous pamphlet of Knox's added much oil to the flame of persecution in England. For before the publication of that book not one of our brethren had suffered death; but as soon as it came forth, we doubt not but that you are well aware of the number of excellent men who have perished in the flames, to say nothing of how many other godly men besides have been exposed to the risk of all their property, and even life itself, upon the sole ground of either having had this book in their possession or having read it, who were perhaps rescued from the sword at greater cost and danger of life than the others offered their necks to it."[4]

Opinion of some of the exiles

The first direct evidence of the effect produced upon Queen Mary by the influences which were thus pressing upon her from both sides is to be found in a paper which has come down to modern times, and which was written by her about November 1544, shortly

Evidence of effect on the Queen's mind

[3] On May 9, 1554, "William Thomas, Esquire, was arraigned at the Guildhall of High Treason for conspiracy of the Queen's death, and there by a jury of the citizens of London condemned, and had his judgment to die." On May 18th he was hanged, beheaded, and quartered at Tyburn, his head being set on London Bridge, and his quarters in four several places a mile out of the city of London. [Wriothesley's *Chron.*, ii. 116.]

[4] *Orig. Lett.*, 761. A commission of two bishops, a dean, and seventeen laymen was appointed with very full powers in respect to the writers, sellers, and possessors of heretical and slanderous books on February 8, 1557. [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, viii. 301.]

CHAP V
A.D. 1555-58

before the arrival of Cardinal Pole. This is entitled by some subsequent copyist, "Directions of Queen Mary to her Council touching the Reformation of the Church to the Roman religion out of her own original." After laying down some rules that are to be observed in conducting business with the Cardinal, the Queen goes on to say, "Touching punishment of heretics, methinketh it ought to be done without rashness, not leaving in the meanwhile to do justice to such as by learning would seem to deceive the simple,[5] and the rest so to be used that the people might well perceive them not to be condemned without just occasion, whereby they shall both understand the truth and beware to do the like. And especially in London I would wish none to be burnt without some of the Council's presence, and both there and everywhere good sermons at the same."[6]

Her directions respecting heretics

Some further evidence is given by an entry in the Council Book on August 1, 1558, the tone of which seems to show that it expresses the personal wishes of the Queen.[7] It orders a letter to be written "to Sir Robert Pexsall, Knight, Sheriff of the County of Hampshire, signifying that the Queen's Majesty cannot but find it very strange that he hath stayed one

Her apparent responsibility in one case

[5] That this instruction was not followed up is shown by a letter of Bonner's secretary, dated October 24, 1556. After mentioning that only three out of twelve accused persons were likely to prove obstinate and refuse to recant these heresies, he adds, "It may please your good Lordship to be advertised, that I do see by experience, that the sworn inquest for heresies do, most commonly, indict the simple, ignorant, and wretched heretics, and do let the arch-heretics go; which is one great cause that moveth the rude multitude to murmur, when they see the simple wretches (not knowing what heresy is) to burn." [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, viii. 388.]

[6] Burnet's *Reform.*, v. 440, Pocock's Ed. Copies of this pape, are in the British Museum Library, viz. Harl. MS., 444; add. MS., 1786.

[7] If so, it must have been one of the last occasions on which she appeared at the Council, for a few days later she was seized with the fever of which she died in November.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

Bembrigge from execution, being condemned for heresy; and therefore he is straightly commanded to cause him to be executed out of hand; and if he still continueth in the Catholic faith as he pretendeth, then to suffer him such discreet and learned men as the Bishop of Winchester shall appoint, who is written unto for this purpose, to have access unto him, and to confer with him, for the better confirmation of him in the Catholic faith, and to be present with him also at his death, for the better aiding of him to die God's servant. The said sheriff is also commanded to make his undelayed repair hither immediately after the execution, to answer his doings herein."[8] This was a peculiarly cruel and piteous case, for the poor victim had been dragged from the midst of the flames on crying out, "I recant," and after signing a recantation on the back of one of the standers-by, had been sent to prison again by the sheriff. He was finally burned a week after his recantation, and the sheriff was imprisoned for some time in the Fleet.[9]

The very cruel case of one who had recanted

Lastly, there is a graphic letter of Noailles, the French ambassador, dated May 7, 1556, in which he gives to the King the particulars of an audience which he had with the Queen respecting the delivery to her officers of some of the refugees who were being protected in France. "She felt herself much obliged to your Majesty that you had been pleased to promise to send her as prisoners some of her subjects who were in France, 'abominable wretches, heretics, and traitors.[1] Well might she call them so,' she said, 'in regard to their crimes, which were so vile and execrable. . . .' When I made answer, speaking of these persons as

Evidence of the French ambassador

[8] Burnet's *Reform.*, iii. 454, Pocock's note.

[9] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, viii. 492.

[1] Probably Knox, who was then at Geneva, was the person specially aimed at.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

exiles or refugees, she prayed me not to call them so, but abominable heretics and traitors, and even worse if possible, although she was very sorry to have occasion to call her own subjects by such bad names. . . . These demands of the Queen were made with such vehemence, and so often repeated, that it was evident, though she forced herself to give me a good and gracious reception, the very little I had said to contradict her, and it was very little, had thrown her into an extreme passion. . . . I must needs tell you, Sire, that this Princess lives constantly in two great extremes of anger and suspicion, for which we must excuse her, because she is in a continued madness of disappointment, not being able to enjoy either the presence of her husband or the love of her people; and she is also in great fear of losing her life by the treachery of some of her domestics, it having been lately found out that one of her chaplains had attempted to kill her, though they do not like to say much about it."[2]

respecting her feelings on the subject

There seems no reason to doubt the truth of this narrative, and when taken with other scraps of evidence, it shows that disappointment, fear, and indignation gave Queen Mary an intense hatred of the Protestants, while the austere principles which she had learned from her Spanish husband, from Cardinal Pole, and from her Dominican chaplains, incited her to some acts, at least, of fanatic cruelty, which have in no small degree justified the odium associated with a name that is otherwise deserving of very great respect.

General conclusions respecting the Queen's responsibility

THE SPIRIT OF THE TIMES.—After all has been said also respecting the responsibility of particular persons, there still remains something to be said respecting

[2] Noailles, v. 352-354.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

the spirit of the times, which has sometimes been accused of being the true though impersonal criminal; and under this head it will be convenient to gather together a few sayings and incidents which throw some light on the customs and principles by which both the persecutors and the persecuted were influenced.

The laws of the times

In the times of the Tudors, and down to a still later age, punishment for what was considered to be heresy was universally held to be right and necessary. It was a principle of civil and ecclesiastical law that no one could separate themselves from the Church without incurring some penalty, which penalty varied in severity at different periods, and according to the degree of the offence, and was also inflicted with greater severity at some periods than at others. The same principle was adopted by the Puritans when they at last became dominant in England after the suppression of the Monarchy and the Church in the middle of the seventeenth century, by the Presbyterians in Scotland from the time of their origin down to a very recent date, and by the emigrant sects which formed themselves into colonies in New England and other parts of the North American continent. An impartial and philosophical inquiry would probably lead us to the conclusion also that, notwithstanding all which is said in favour of toleration in modern times, there is not a religious body in Christendom, from the Quakers to the Ultramontane Catholics, which has entirely repudiated the principle and practice of persecution; and that although we may entertain hopes that no religious body could now persecute with the same severity as was exercised in the sixteenth and

The opinion of the times

seventeenth centuries, yet a certain amount of intolerance of supposed error will always accompany a warm zeal for supposed truth.

Certain it is that the ideas embodied in the word "Toleration" were unknown at the period of the Reformation; that persons were put to death for heresy in the reigns of Edward VI., Queen Elizabeth, and James I., as well as in that of Queen Mary;[3] and that the punishment of death for heresy was still enjoined by the statute-book until the year 1677, when it disappeared under the provisions of the "Act for taking away the Writ *De Hæretico comburendo*" [29 Ch. II., 9], which had not then been issued for sixty-five years.[4]

Heretics burned after Queen Mary's reign

[3] Among those condemned under Edward VI.'s commissions were a number of Unitarians—Champneys and Ashton, priests, Putton, a tanner, and Thumb, a butcher; all of whom recanted, and were ordered to bear faggots at St. Paul's in April 1549 [*Grey Friars' Chron.*, p. 58; Stowe's *Ann.*, 596; Wilkins' *Concil.*, iv. 39-42; Rymer's *Fœd.*, xv. 181, 250]. Others were Joan Butcher and Van Parre, a surgeon, who were both handed over to the secular arm by sentence of Archbishop Cranmer, and were both sent to the stake—Butcher being burned on May 2, 1550, Van Parre on April 2, 1551 [Stowe's *Ann.*, 605; Wilkins' *Concil.*, iv. 44, 45; *Journal of Edw. VI.*; Cranmer's *Reg.*, fol. 74, 75].

During Queen Elizabeth's reign the cruel practice still continued, notwithstanding the horror excited by the severities of the preceding reign. On Easter Day, 1575, twenty-seven Anabaptists were arrested in the city by Bishop Sandys, of whom one woman and ten men were sentenced to be burned. The woman abjured, and the men were sent out of the kingdom [Stowe's *Ann.*, 678, 679; Wright's *Queen Eliz.*, ii. 9]. Two named John Wielmacker and Hendrich Ter Woort were burned in Smithfield on July 22, 1575 [Stowe's *Ann.*, 679; Rymer's *Fœd.*, xv. 740, 741; Strype's *Ann.*, iii. 564, ed. 1824]. A plough-wright named Matthew Hammond was burned at Norwich on May 20, 1579 [Stowe's *Ann.*, 685]; John Lewis, in the same city, on September 17, 1583 [Stowe's *Ann.*, 697]; and a clergyman named Francis Kett was burned also in Norwich, in December 1587 [Stowe's *Ann.*, 697; Strype's *Ann.*, vi. 73; Archbishop Bancroft's *Sermon at Paul's Cross*, Feb. 9, 1588].

In James I.'s reign, Bartholomew Legate was burned in Smithfield on March 18, 1612, and Edward Wightman at Lichfield on April 11, 1612. Another was condemned, but died in Newgate [Fuller's *Ch. Hist.*, iii. 252-255, ed. 1837]. Wightman was the last person burned for heresy in England.

[4] Other crimes for which men

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

Perhaps there would be few horrors more horrible to us of this age than to see men or women chained hand and foot to a post, and then deliberately burned to ashes. The screams of the victims, the sight of their agonized struggles—such as we read of in the case of Bishop Ridley, whose half-consumed body is said to have sprung upward with a fearful convulsion, and then to have fallen back again into the flames—the eye, the ear, the very sense of smell choked with the odour of burning human flesh, would draw in such loathing for the mode of punishment as would fill us with utter pity for the victim, apart from any consideration of his innocence or his guilt that entered into the question. But the generations of former days were much less sensitive. Relatives often willingly chose to "see the last" of the sufferers—even such a last as this. Those who were burned for being Protestants—as, for example, Bishop Latimer—had sometimes been present at the execution of those who were burned for being Papists, and those who were burned for being Papists had assisted at the execution of those who had been burned for being Protestants. Whatever disgust and horror each may have felt at the misbelief of the other, it seems never to have been suggested that burning at the stake was an outrageously inhuman mode of punishing it for men to adopt of their own will. We meet with words of compassion for the death of some, but not a word that

Execution by burning as viewed by ourselves

and our forefathers

were punishable by burning were unnatural crimes and arson [Blackstone's *Comm.*, iv. 15, 4; 16, 1]. Women were, however, burned for all capital crimes down to a period within the lives of still living persons. It is a curious fact that Spain finally abolished the cruel practice before England; for, while the last person burned by the Spanish Inquisition was a nun who was executed for infanticide in 1781, a woman was burned in the Old Bailey for coining on March 18, 1789.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

indicates an extra grain of pity for the *mode* of that death. This sort of pity was a developement of later days, though there is no reason to suppose that the more humane ideas belong to an age of less physical courage. How strange it would sound for a Low Church Bishop of modern times to entreat the Prime Minister, as Latimer did when the High Church Friar Forrest was *roasted* to death, that he might have a place assigned him as near as possible to the victim;[5] or for the Queen's Privy Council to sit quietly by, witness the execution, and listen to a sermon, as the King's did on the same occasion, May 22, 1538!

The feelings of the age illustrated

This is partly explained by the fact that severe punishment was the custom of the times. It was enjoined by law, and countenanced by public opinion. In 1531 an Act of Parliament was made against beggars, in which it was ordained, that if any person was taken begging, whether man or woman, they were "to be tied to the end of a cart, naked, and to be beaten with whips through the town till their body be bloody by reason of such whipping." Another provision of the same Act was that, for a second offence, beggars were to be scourged two days, and the third day to be put in the pillory from nine to eleven in the forenoon of the same day, and to have the right ear cut off; and for a third offence, more scourging, more pillory, and the loss of the other ear. This statute was afterwards altered by Henry VIII. himself, his Parliament agreeing to the alteration; and under its amended form the able-bodied beggar was punished with death for his third offence: the previous cat-o'-nine-tails, pillory, and mutilation being thought to

The severity of laws at this period

[5] The same request was made by the contemporary Bishop of Norwich when a friar was burned in his cathedral city.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

have proved him irreclaimable. But the Acts of Henry VIII. were still further amended by one passed in the reign of his son. By this Act [1 Edw. VI. 3], a runaway servant, or any other idle vagabond, was to be branded on the breast with the letter "V," and to be adjudged "to be slave to the same person that brought and presented him" to two justices of the peace, "to have to him, his executors or assigns, for two years after, who shall take the said slave and give him bread, water, or small drink, and refuse meat; and cause him to work by beating, chaining, or otherwise, in such work as he shall put him to, be it never so vile. And if such slave shall absent himself from his said master within the said term of two years by the space of fourteen days, then he shall be adjudged by two justices of the peace to be marked on the forehead or the ball of the cheek with an hot iron with the sign of an S, and further shall be adjudged to be slave to his master for ever. And if the said slave shall run away the second time he shall be adjudged a felon. . . . It shall be lawful to every person to whom shall be adjudged a slave to put a ring of iron about his neck, arm, or leg."[6] At the same period of our history a statute was passed by which gipsies were, on conviction of being gipsies, to be put to

Punishments awarded to beggars

[6] This dreadful Act was repealed by 3 and 4 Edw. VI. 16, so far as "tendeth to make vagabonds slaves," but subsequent legislation was scarcely more humane. So late as the year 1678, the Churchwarden's Book of Dursley, in Gloucestershire, contains the copy of an order made on the subject of begging in a General Quarter Session of the county, putting in force the provisions of Acts passed in the reign of Elizabeth, James I., and Charles I. When a certain class of beggars have been apprehended, "without further delay the constable, headborough, or tithingman, *being assisted with the minister*, and some other of the p'ish, shall cause them to be stripped naked, ffrom their middle upward, and to be openly whipped untill theyr bodyes be bloody." [Blunt's *Dursley and its Neighbourhood*, p. 46.]

death; and another, as if the usual modes of punishment were too humane, by which poisoners were to be publicly *boiled* to death—a sentence actually carried into effect upon one Richard Rouse on April 5, 1532, and upon Margaret Davy on March 11, 1542.

Severe punishment for heresy analogous

Thus, in times when mendicancy was accounted a capital crime, when lifelong slavery was provided for vagabonds by Act of Parliament, and when murder was punished with such atrocious circumstances, it is not surprising that heresy, or what was conscientiously thought to be heresy,[7] should be punished with death, or that the kind of death adjudged to heretics should be one of so cruel and revolting a character.

Another explanation is found in the conviction with which the age was thoroughly imbued, that heresy was a crime which entailed the most severe of all future punishment. It was therefore in accordance with the principle of warning to the undetected, as well as of vengeance on the criminal, which lies at the root of all punishments for crime, that examples should be made so severe as to deter others by fear of such bodily punishment from falling into the same danger of infinitely greater pain for their souls. Bullinger, the friend and adviser of Bishop Hooper, of Sir John Cheke, and of so many other English Protestants, wrote to Beza on August 30, 1553, before any had been executed for religion by Queen Mary, "What is your most honour-

Heresy reckoned a great crime

[7] It must be remembered that "heresy" and "heretic" were words very recklessly bandied about by all parties at the time of the Reformation. How freely they were used by Romanists as regards Protestants is well known, but it may not be so well known that the opposite side accused their opponents with equal freedom. "It is heresy," said Rowland Taylor, "to defend any doctrine against the Holy Scripture; therefore the Lord Chancellor and bishops consenting to his sentence against me be heretics, for they have given sentence against the marriage of priests," etc. [Coverdale's *Godly Letters*, p. 133.]

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

able Senate of Geneva going to do with that blasphemous wretch Servetus? If they are wise, and do their duty, they will put him to death, that all the world may perceive that Geneva desires the glory of Christ to be maintained inviolate;" and to Calvin he wrote on October 15th, twelve days before the latter sent Servetus to the stake, "I well know that my opinion against Servetus, and the assurance of my approval, have been laid before you."[8] When Archdeacon Philpot was himself being examined on November 5, 1555, preparatory to his execution by fire, he told his judges, "As for Joan of Kent, she was a vain woman (I knew her well), and a heretic indeed, well worthy to be burned, because she stood against one of the manifest articles of our faith, contrary to the Scriptures."[9] When Queen Elizabeth was signing the writ "De hæretico comburendo" for the burning of two Anabaptists, she called to mind "that she was the head of the Church, that it was her duty to extirpate error, and that heretics ought to be cut off from the flock of Christ, that they may not corrupt others."[1] It is really difficult, with this evidence before us, to understand what ground Bishop Hooper had for preaching, "Beware of this ungodly pity wherewith all men for the most part be very much nowadays encumbered withal. . . . Foolish and preposterous pity," he calls it, which "hath brought both King and the laws, not only of this realm, but also of God, into contempt; and daily will more and more, if it be not foreseen."[2] The spirit of the times was pitiless enough, one would have

Protestant advocates of burning for heresy

Hooper's contempt for pity

[8] *Orig. Lett.*, p. 742.
[9] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 631.
[1] Rymer's *Fœd.*, xv. 740, 741.
[2] In his Third Sermon upon Jonah, preached before Edward VI. during the Lent of 1550. [Hooper's Works, i. 481, Parker Soc. ed

CHAP V

A.D. 1555-58

thought, when such laws could be enacted as those against vagabonds, and when men and women could be so freely burned to death for their religious opinions.

Something of the spirit of the times is also to be observed in the sufferers themselves as regards the sufferings to be undergone at the stake. Anti-Protestant lookers-on used to say that "the devil was so strong with such heretics that they could not feel any pain almost, nor yet be sorry for their sins."[3] The opinion that little or no pain would be felt was very widely spread among the victims themselves. In his earliest edition, the Latin one of 1559, Foxe gives a striking anecdote respecting John Rogers, the first of all the sufferers, which strongly illustrates this fact. After the condemnation of Joan of Kent, a familiar friend of Rogers entreated him to use his influence with Cranmer that her life might be spared. "When Rogers, after this appeal, declared himself still of the opinion that she ought to suffer death, his friend renewed his entreaties, praying that, if her errors must be wrested from her only with her life, some other mode of death might be selected more in accordance with the gentleness and mercy taught in the Gospel, and protesting against the introduction into the Christian code of justice, in imitation of the Papists, the horrors of a death so tormenting. But Rogers again declared this form of punishment by which men are burned alive to be the least agonizing of all, and sufficiently gentle. The other, immediately on hearing this speech of the man, which savoured so little of care and regard for the agonies of the unfortunate wretch, in a great passion of spirit smote Rogers' hand, which he had been grasping closely, and said, 'Well, per-

Belief that burning to death caused little pain

[3] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 347.

CHAP V

A D. 1555-58

chance you may yet find that you yourself shall have your hands full of this so gentle fire.' And afterwards that very Rogers himself, the first of all those who perished under the persecutions of Mary, experienced a speedy retribution." [4]

Belief that martyrs could not suffer

Similar language is found in use by others. Bilney said, the night before his execution, "I feel by experience, and have long known by philosophy, that fire by God's ordinance is naturally hot, but yet I am persuaded by God's Holy Word, and by the experience of some spoken of in the same, that in the flames they may feel no heat, and in the fire no consumption;" and he quoted in support of his opinion the sacred words, "When thou walkest through the fire I will be with thee." [5] Bainham, too, exclaimed out of the midst of the flames, "O ye Papists, ye look for miracles and behold a miracle, for in this fire I feel no pain; . . . it is to me as a bed of roses." [6] So, again, it is related of Barnes, Gerrard, and Jerome that "they remained in the fire without crying out, but were as quiet and patient as though they had felt no pain." [7] Of Rogers himself it is recorded, that "when it had taken hold both upon his legs and shoulders, he, as one feeling no smart, washed his hands in the flame as though it had been cold water." [8] Lastly, it is narrated of Thomas Hawkes, who suffered at Coggeshall on June 10, 1555, that he and his friends had arranged a kind of test on this point. "A little before his death certain there were of his familiar acquaintance and friends, who frequented

Alleged proofs that it was so

[4] Foxe's *Rev. in Eccl. gestarum*, p. 202, quoted in Chester's *Life of Rogers*, p. 65. The friend who thus remonstrated with Rogers was probably Foxe himself, who addressed a remonstrance to Queen Elizabeth respecting the sentence passed upon the Anabaptists who were burned by her warrant. [Fuller's *Ch. Hist.*, ii. 506.]

[5] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, iv. 658.

[6] *Ibid.*, iv. 705.

[7] *Orig. Lett.*, p. 209.

[8] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 611.

his company more familiarly, who seemed not a little to be confirmed both by the example of his constancy and by his talk; yet notwithstanding, the same again, being feared with the sharpness of the punishment which he was going to, privily desired that in the midst of the flame he would show them some token, if he could, whereby they might be the more certain whether the pain of such burning were so great that a man might not therein keep his mind quiet and patient. Which thing he promised them to do; and so, secretly between them, it was agreed that if the rage of the pain were tolerable and might be suffered, then he should lift up his hands above his head towards heaven before he gave up the ghost." Just when his friends thought that Hawkes had died without making a sign, "suddenly, and contrary to all expectation, the blessed servant of God, being mindful of his promise afore made, reached up his hands burning on a light fire, which was marvellous to behold, over his head to the living God, and with great rejoicing, as it seemed, struck or clapped them three times together. At the sight whereof there followed such applause and outcry of the people, and especially of them which understood the matter, that the like hath not commonly been heard, and you would have thought heaven and earth to have come together."[9]

Sign given by one that the pain was bearable

That the sufferings of those who died by fire were so short was often owing, however, to the fact that they were killed by gunpowder, or by the swords or halberts of the surrounding guards, or stunned by blows of the heavy billets[1] before the agony of burn-

[9] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 114.

[1] Burchet, who stabbed Admiral Hawkins, *killed* one of the warders of the Tower with a billet of wood [Camden's *Hist. Q. Eliz.*, 199].

CHAP V A.D. 1555-58

ing had begun, or in its very beginning. So a "train of gunpowder" is spoken of in the case of Bainham.[2] So also Taylor was apparently killed by the explosion of some gunpowder placed near him by Robert King, "one of them which went with his halbert to bring them to death which were burned at Bury," although another, "Soyce, with a halbert, struck him on the head that the brains fell out, and the dead corpse fell down into the fire."[3] It is told also of Bishop Ferrar that "one Richard Gravell, with a staff, dashed him upon the head, and so struck him down:"[4] of Bishop Hooper, that he "trussed his shirt between his legs, where he had a pound of gunpowder in a bladder, and under each arm the like quantity, delivered him by the guard;"[5] of Latimer and Ridley, that bags of gunpowder were hung about their necks by Ridley's brother-in-law, Shipside.[6] The flames leaping upward must necessarily have exploded the gunpowder thus provided almost immediately, and the explosion of such large quantities about the neck or any other vital part must necessarily have caused instant death, thus shortening the pain of the sufferers and deadening the horror to the spectators. It may be that these very circumstances helped to prolong the persecution by disguising the cruelty of the punishment which the custom of the times thus inflicted upon those who were accounted obstinate heretics.

Means used to shorten the agony

The Ends of the chief Sufferers.

Among the two hundred and fifty-one laymen and twenty-six clergy who were put to death by fire dur-

[2] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, iv. 705.
[3] *Ibid.*, vi. 699.
[4] *Ibid.*, vi. 657.
[5] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 26.
[6] *Ibid.*, vii. 550. See page 305.

ing the Marian persecution, there were only nine, all clergymen, who had previously attained any distinction, or whose names have any historical interest. These were Archbishop Cranmer, Bishops Ridley, Latimer, Hooper, and Ferrar, Archdeacon Philpot, Rogers, Prebendary of St. Paul's, and Taylor, Rector of Hadleigh. Some particulars respecting these distinguished sufferers may be given before closing this chapter. CHAP V A.D. 1555

JOHN ROGERS.—The first on whom the full force of the storm fell was John Rogers, Prebendary of St. Pancras in the Cathedral of St. Paul, Rector of Chigwell in Essex, and Vicar of St. Sepulchre in London.

Rogers was the son of John Rogers of Deritend, in Birmingham,[7] and after being educated at Pembroke Hall, Cambridge, where he took his degree in A.D. 1526, passed some years in the University of Oxford as a junior Canon of Wolsey's new College, or, as we should now say, as a Student of Christ Church. From 1532 to 1534 he appears to have been Rector of Holy Trinity the Less, in the city of London, and then went out to Antwerp as chaplain to the English merchants there. He assumed abroad the name of Thomas Matthew, and was engaged by a merchant named Jacob van Meteren, the employer of Coverdale, to edit—for sale to Grafton, the English publisher—an English version of the Bible, that now known as "Matthew's Bible," which was made up of Tyndale's Pentateuch and New Testament, Coverdale's version from Ezra to the end of the Apocrypha, and a new translation, probably Rogers' own, of the historical books from Joshua to the end of the Chronicles, and Previous career of Rogers

[7] The family is still known, being represented by Lord Blachford of Blachford, in South Devon.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555

was published in England in A.D. 1537. About the same time Rogers married and removed to Wittemberg, where he took charge of a Presbyterian congregation, until he was attracted to England by the accession of Edward VI. In 1550 he was presented by the Crown to the Rectory of St. Margaret Moyses and the Vicarage of St. Sepulchre, and was made Prebendary of St. Paul's by Bishop Ridley on August 24, 1551, when he resigned his London Rectory, and became Rector of Chigwell, in Essex. Here Ridley speaks of him as "a preacher, the which for detecting and confuting of the Anabaptists and Papists in Essex, both by his preaching and by his writing, is enforced now"—July 23, 1551—"to bear Christ's cross."[8] He was also summoned before the Privy Council for a sermon preached at Paul's Cross, "Concerning the misuse of Abbeys and other Church goods,"[9] and seems to have been regarded as a controversial and pugnacious man. Fuller describes Rogers and Hooper as the "ringleaders" of the Nonconformist party in the reign of Edward VI., and as being in opposition to Cranmer and Ridley, the heads of the Conformist party.[1]

Rogers a controversial preacher

When Queen Mary came to the Tower after her accession, Rogers preached, on August 6, 1553, "a godly and vehement sermon at Paul's Cross, confirming such true doctrine as he and others had there taught in King Edward's days, exhorting the people constantly to remain in the same, and to beware of all pestilent Popery, idolatry, and superstition. The Council, being then over-matched with Popish and bloody bishops," continues Foxe, "called him to account for his sermon, to whom he made a stout, witty, and

His zeal against Popery

[8] Ridley's Works, 331, Park. Soc. ed.

[9] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 605.

[1] Fuller's *Ch. Hist.*, iii. 330.

CHAP V
A.D. 1555

godly answer, and yet in such sort handled himself that at the time he was clearly dismissed." He was, however, called again before the Council, "for the bishops thirsted after his blood."[2] The truth is that Rogers was called up again before the Privy Council, because a fresh importance had been given to his "vehement" sermon by a circumstance which occurred at Paul's Cross on the following Sunday, and which seemed to be a natural consequence of his polemical discourse. The preacher on that Sunday, August 13th, was Bourn, afterwards Bishop of Bath and Wells, but then, like Rogers, a Canon of St. Paul's. The Bishop, the Lord Mayor, and Aldermen were present; but while Bourn was preaching from the Gospel for the day part of the audience behaved in a tumultuous manner, and one of them threw a dagger at the preacher with so near an aim that it stuck into a pillar of the pulpit not far from his head. Rogers and Bradford, another Canon of St. Paul's, came forward to appease the tumult, and under their protection their brother Canon reached his house safely. It was not unreasonably concluded that the two Canons were leaders of the discontented party, and both were called to account by the Privy Council, when, as is entered in the Council Register on August 16th,[3] "John Rogers, *alias* Matthewe," was ordered to keep his house at St. Paul's, and Bradford was sent to the Tower.

His association with the attack on Bourn

is restricted to his own house

No further notice seems to have been taken of Rogers until the breaking out of Wyatt's rebellion on

[2] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 592.

[3] "John Rogers, *alias* Matthewe, a sedicious preacher, ordered by the Lords of the Council to keep himself as prisoner in his house at Powles, without conference of any person other than such as are daily with him in household, until such time as he hath contrary commandment." [Haynes' State Papers, 170.]

CHAP V
A.D. 1555

January 26, 1554; but on the very next day, January 27th, he was committed to Newgate. There he remained for a whole year, there being apparently no distinct accusation against him upon which he could be brought to trial. As soon, however, as the Acts for the punishment of heretics had been revived, it was determined that Rogers should be accused of heresy, and he was brought before the Commission which sat in Southwark, as previously mentioned,[4] on January 22, 1555. Gardiner presided as Lord Chancellor, and endeavoured heartily to provide a way of escape, putting the question of conformity very widely to the prisoner, and entreating him to "condescend and agree to the Catholic Church" at once, and he would have "the Queen's mercy." He further told Rogers, in almost as many words, that if he gave up this chance there was no doubt the Queen would make it harder for him. "If," as Rogers himself reports the words, "thou wilt not receive the Bishop of Rome to be supreme head of the Catholic Church, then shalt thou never have her mercy, thou mayest be sure."[5] The Bishop of Ely also, "very gently, truly told me much of the Queen's Majesty's pleasure and meaning, and set out that with large words, saying that she took them that would not receive the Bishop of Rome's supremacy to be unworthy to have her mercy," etc.[6] The only reason Rogers gave for not conforming was that the Bishop of Rome could not be head of the Church, since he "and his Church say, sing, and read all that they do in Latin in the congregation, which is directly and plainly against the Word of God, that is, to wit, against the First to the Corinthians, the fourteenth chapter." He had, of course, many other

His examination for heresy

The Queen's mercy offered to him

[4] See page 229. [5] Chester's *Life of Rogers*, p. 299. [6] *Ibid.*, 303.

CHAP V
A.D. 1555

objections to make, but this singularly weak one was that which he chose to put forward. At a later examination on the 28th he talked most provocatively about "the Antichristian Church of Rome," averring "that the Romish Church is the Church of Antichrist," saying that his "adversaries, with their Antichristian head," were "members of the devil's church, as they undoubtedly are,"[7] and challenging controversy in every possible way.[8] To the very last Gardiner gave him every opportunity of escaping by some easy acknowledgement of conformity. "And the Lord Chancellor said unto me, Rogers, here thou wast yesterday, and we gave thee liberty to remember thyself this night whether that thou wouldest come to the Holy Catholic Church of Christ again or not. Tell us now how thou hast determined, whether that thou wilt be repentant and sorry, and wilt return and take mercy again."[9] In reply Rogers made a long controversial speech, which was at last stopped by his judges as irrelevant. When all attempts to get him to make some acknowledgement which would enable them to dismiss him had failed, he was declared guilty of maintaining opinions "contrary to the doctrine and determination of the Holy Church, as, namely, these: That the Catholic Church of Rome is the Church of Antichrist: *Item*, That in the Sacrament of the Altar there is not substantially nor really the natural Body and Blood of Christ."[1] He intended to have made a long speech, which he has left in writing, and which was adorned with such flowers of rhetoric as, "Think ye that this bloody butcherly Bishop of Winchester and his most bloody brethren shall escape? . . . Some shall have

Gardiner tries to get him to conform

Opinions for which he was found guilty of heresy

[7] Chester's *Life of Rogers*, p. 330.
[8] *Ibid.*, 313.
[9] Chester's *Life of Rogers*, p. 313.
[1] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 601.

CHAP V A.D. 1555

their punishment here in this world and in the world to come; and they that do escape in this world shall not escape everlasting damnation. This shall be your dance, O ye wicked Papists; make ye merry here as long as ye may." [2]

His execution in Smithfield

Rogers was excommunicated after his last examination, and delivered to the Sheriffs of London. On February 4, 1555, he was formally degraded from the priesthood, and the same day was burned in Smithfield, "in the presence of Master Rochester, Comptroller of the Queen's Household, Sir Richard Southwell, both the Sheriffs, and a wonderful number of people. . . . His wife and children, being eleven in number, and ten able to go, and one sucking on her breast, met him by the way as he went towards Smithfield;" and at the last moment a pardon was offered him if he would recant his errors and conform. "This sorrowful sight of his own flesh and blood could nothing move him; but that he constantly and cheerfully took his death with wonderful patience in the defence and quarrel of Christ's Gospel." In days when those who acknowledge the Pope's supremacy and the Tridentine theory of Christ's Sacramental Presence are not only tolerated, but honoured and regarded as pious Christians notwithstanding, there seems no sufficient reason why Rogers should have given up his life as the price of denying them. As little was there reason why the denial of these doctrines should have caused a man to be put to death. On the one side was an ill-informed obstinacy and opinionativeness, on the other an unreasonable, tyrannical, and cruel intolerance.

No reason why he should have died

Bishop Hooper.—In less than a week after John Rogers had been burned in Smithfield, his friend John

[2] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 608, 609.

Hooper, Bishop of Gloucester and Worcester, was burned in Gloucester, being the third who suffered at the beginning of the persecution. CHAP V A.D. 1555

Hooper was born in Somersetshire in the year 1495, and having taken his degree at Merton College, Oxford, in 1518, became a monk of the Cistercian Order at Cleeve, or Cliffe, in his native county. On the dissolution of the monasteries he appears to have gone to London, and to have held some office at Court, for he says that he had once lived "too much of a Court life in the palace of the King;"[3] but having adopted the opinions of Zwingle, he returned for a time to Oxford, and after being for a time chaplain and steward to Sir Thomas Arundel, he eventually went abroad, married, and resided at Zurich, until the accession of Edward VI. In May 1549 he returned to London, was appointed chaplain to the Duke of Somerset, and became the very popular leader of the Puritan or Anti-Church party. Being appointed Bishop of Gloucester and Worcester, he refused to wear the vestments of a bishop, and was only persuaded to do so after a short imprisonment in the Fleet.[4] From all that is recorded of him, it may be gathered that Hooper was of a most austere disposition, exceedingly contentious in all his dealings, bitterly controversial in matters of religion, and an uncompromising foe to the Reformation in its Catholic aspect. Hooper's career

His character

On the accession of Queen Mary he naturally became a marked man. A few days after Rogers and Bradford had been summoned before the Privy Council as leaders of the disaffected Puritans, Hooper also was summoned, and on September 1, 1553, he was

[3] *Zurich Lett.*, i. 33.

[4] See pp. 95, 158.

CHAP V A.D. 1555

committed to the Fleet. Popular as he was with the multitude, who only saw him at a distance, he seems always to have been on bad terms with those who came into close contact with him, and quarrels between himself and the governor of the Fleet led to a closer and more rigorous confinement than he would otherwise have suffered, of which he has left an account in detail, written in a far from Christian spirit.[5] He was deprived of his two sees on March 19, 1554, but was still kept in prison, partly on a charge that he owed money to the Crown, which he answered by alleging that the Crown owed eighty pounds to him. On January 22, 1555, Hooper was brought before the Commissioners at Southwark, and examined as the other prisoners had been, repeated offers of pardon being made to him on condition of recanting his errors and acknowledging the Pope's supremacy. A week later he was, in company with Rogers, excommunicated and handed over to the Sheriffs, who removed him from the Fleet to Newgate. There he remained for six days longer, during which Bishop Bonner made several visits to the prison, endeavouring to persuade him to recant and save his life: but Hooper was not afraid of death, and could not be persuaded by argument. On Monday, February 4th, Rogers and Hooper were formally degraded from the order of priesthood by Bonner in the chapel of Newgate. On the following

Deprived and charged with heresy

Endeavours made to save his life

[5] "Notwithstanding, while I came down thus to dinner and supper, the warden and his wife picked quarrels with me, and complained untruly of me to their great friend the Bishop of Winchester. After one quarter of a year and somewhat more, Balington, the warden, and his wife fell out with me for the wicked mass: and thereupon the warden resorted to the Bishop of Winchester, and obtained to put me into the wards. . . . . He hath used me worse than the veriest slave that ever came to the hall-commons. . . . Stephen Gardiner, God's enemy and mine," etc. [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 647.]

CHAP V
A.D. 1555

day Hooper rode away from London in custody, on his way to Gloucester. Arriving there in the evening of Thursday, he was handed over to the Sheriffs of the city, and about ten o'clock on Saturday, February 9, 1553, he was led to the place of execution on College Green. He went bravely to his death. "When he saw the multitude of bills, glaves, and weapons, 'Master Sheriffs,' said he, 'I am no traitor, neither needed you to have made such a business to bring me to the place where I must suffer; for if ye had willed me, I would have gone alone to the stake, and have troubled none of you all.'" Three bladders, each containing a pound of gunpowder, were placed between his legs and under each arm, by himself and the guard, which would obviously shatter his body to pieces as soon as the flame reached them. But, according to Foxe, he suffered for some time through the wind blowing the flames aside, until, as he cried, "Lord Jesus, have mercy upon me! Lord Jesus, have mercy upon me! Lord Jesus, receive my spirit!" one of his arms was blown from his body, and the end came.[6] It was the end of a good Christian; and if there is no sign that he had repented before man of his dreadful words respecting the Blessed Sacrament, who will doubt that his last prayer would be heard by the merciful Saviour on Whom he called?

He meets his death bravely

[6] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 636-676. While the narratives of Foxe may be taken as *containing* the truth in the main, there can be no doubt that they contain many things besides the truth. It is impossible to believe, for instance, that on his way to execution on Saturday Hooper was obliged to take "a staff in his hand to stay himself withal; for the grief of the sciatica, which he had taken in prison, caused him somewhat to halt;" and that yet, on the Monday previous, he "leaped cheerfully on horseback without help." So also the statement that Hooper remained alive for three-quarters of an hour in the midst of the fire is quite inconsistent with the fact that three pounds of gunpowder was distributed about his naked body.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555

ROWLAND TAYLOR.—On the same day on which Hooper was put to death at Gloucester Dr. Taylor, Rector of Hadleigh, suffered in his own parish. He was a native of Northumberland, having been born at Rothbury early in the sixteenth century, but was educated at Cambridge, and remained in the south for the rest of his life. In the reign of Henry VIII. he was domestic chaplain to Archbishop Cranmer, who presented him to the Rectory of Hadleigh in 1554, and was also Canon of Rochester, and one of the Six Preachers at Canterbury. He was twice appointed a Commissioner for the examination of heretics by Edward VI., namely, on April 12, 1549, and on January 18, 1551; and was also one of the Commissioners for the reformation of Ecclesiastical Laws. He must have been married several years before the death of Henry VIII., for at his own death his wife, who shortly afterwards married a Puritan minister named Wright, had borne him nine children.

Former career of Taylor

In the beginning of Queen Mary's reign two parishioners of Hadleigh, who had been aggrieved by the destruction of the altar, rebuilt it, with the intention of restoring the ancient service. It was pulled down again in the night, but being again rebuilt, the clergyman of a neighbouring parish was prevailed upon to come to Hadleigh for the purpose of celebrating Mass on the Monday in Holy Week. Taylor heard the bells ringing for service as he "sat at his book studying the Word of God," and hastening into the church to see what it meant, "saw a Popish sacrificer in his robes, with a broad new-shaven crown, ready to begin his Popish sacrifice, beset round about with drawn swords and bucklers, lest any man should approach to disturb him. Then said Dr. Taylor, 'Thou devil!

His altercation with a Popish sacrificer

CHAP V
A.D. 1555

who made thee so bold to enter into this Church of Christ to profane and defile it with this abominable idolatry?" After much altercation Taylor was led out of the church by the armed men, who were evidently acting under authority, and never officiated there again. Within a few days he was summoned before the Privy Council, and, rejecting all the persuasions of his friends to fly from the danger, took his journey to London. He was committed to the Queen's Bench prison on a charge of having "resisted the Queen's proceedings," and remained there until the Commission of 1555 sat in Southwark, being in the meantime formally deprived of his benefice by a process in the Court of Arches.

Is committed to prison and deprived

On January 22, 1555, Taylor was carried before the Commissioners, and addressed by the Lord Chancellor in these words, so far as he could remember when writing down an account of his examinations: "You, among others, are at this present time sent for to enjoy the King's and Queen's Majesties' favour and mercy if you will now rise again with us from the fall which we generally have received in this realm; from the which (God be praised!) we are now clearly delivered miraculously. If you will not rise with us now, and receive mercy now offered, you shall have judgement according to your demerit." His final examination took place on January 31st, when he was excommunicated, and being given into the custody of the Sheriffs, was removed to the Compter in the Poultry.

The Queen's mercy offered to him

On February 4th Taylor was degraded from the priesthood by Bishop Bonner, offering resistance, and threatening violence to the bishop himself. But while he was a man of this hot and uncontrollable temper, he was also a man of the tenderest affections, and, apart from polemics, a man of devotional mind.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555

On the last night that he spent in the Compter his wife and son and his faithful man-servant were permitted to sup with him, "and at their coming in afore supper, they kneeled down and prayed, saying the Litany." After supper he addressed wise words to his son and his wife, especially enjoining her for her own sake and that of their children to marry again. "When he had thus said, they with weeping tears prayed together, and kissed one the other; and he gave to his wife a book of the Church Service set out by King Edward, which he in the time of his imprisonment daily used." The next morning he began his journey to Hadleigh as early as two o'clock, but his wife and some of his children had been watching all night in St. Botolph's Church, beside Aldgate, and they were able to take a last farewell, all kneeling down in the road and saying the Lord's Prayer. "At which sight the Sheriff wept apace, and so did divers others of the company. After they had prayed, he rose up and kissed his wife, and shook her by the hand, and said, 'Farewell, my dear wife; be of good comfort, for I am quiet in my conscience. God shall stir up a father for my children.' And then he kissed his daughter Mary, and said, 'God bless thee, and make thee His servant;' and kissing Elizabeth, he said, 'God bless thee. I pray you all stand strong and steadfast unto Christ and His Word, and keep you from idolatry.' Then said his wife, 'God be with thee, dear Rowland; I will, with God's grace, meet thee at Hadleigh.'"

His touching farewell to his family

On the way to Hadleigh, and on his arrival there, he was met by many friends and neighbours, all of whom had a good word for him, as also had the Sheriff and his guard, who made great efforts to get him to put himself in the way of receiving pardon.

CHAP V
A.D. 1555

During the journey his mind appears to have been somewhat unsettled by his troubles, as he made unseemly jokes about his "very great carcase"—being, as Foxe says, "a corpulent and big man"—and, lighting off his horse, "he leaped, and set a frisk or twain, as men commonly do in dancing." But the sight of his home brought him to his senses; and as the sad procession passed through Hadleigh on its way to Aldham Common, no words proceeded from him but those of a pious and genial pastor. When he came opposite the almshouses he spoke kindly to the old alms-people who stood at their doors, and missing a blind man and woman, asked if they were still alive. Being told that they were, he put all the money he had left into one of his gloves and threw it in at the window of the cottage where the old couple dwelt. "Thus," says Foxe, "this good father and provider for the poor now took his leave of those for whom all his life he had a singular care and study."

His return to his parish

Some humane provisions were made for hastening his end. He was placed in a pitch barrel, the smoke of which would have suffocated him almost instantly. One Robert King had also brought some gunpowder.[7] But as he stood holding up both his hands, calling upon God, and saying, "Merciful Father of heaven, for Jesus Christ my Saviour's sake receive my soul

His execution at Hadleigh

[7] The cankered mind of Foxe is conspicuously shown in narrating this incident. "Amongst whom also was one Robert King, a deviser of interludes, who albeit was there present, and had doing there with the gunpowder: what he meant and did therein (he himself saith he did it for the best, and for quick despatch) the Lord knoweth, which shall judge all: more of this I have not to say." To this he appends a note: "This King was also one of them which went with his halbert to bring them to death which were burned at Bury. He ceaseth not to be a common railer; God grant him a heart to reflect on what is past, and a tongue to play the part of a good Christian in a short while." [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 699.]

CHAP V A.D. 1555

into Thy hands," one of the standers-by, "with a halbert, struck him on the head, that the brains fell out, and the dead corpse fell down into the fire." The spot where he suffered was not forgotten by his parishioners, and is still marked by a memorial which they placed there—a stone with the inscription "1555. D. Taylor in Defending that was good At this Plas Left his Blode." This appears to be the only contemporary memorial of any of those who suffered in Queen Mary's reign.

Taylor's contemporary monument

Former career of Ferrar

Bishop Ferrar.—While the persecution was still only beginning, another bishop, Robert Ferrar of St. David's, was numbered among its victims. He was born near the town of Halifax, in Yorkshire, early in the sixteenth century, and going up to Cambridge became a canon-regular of the Order of St. Augustine. In 1526 he migrated to Oxford, where he resided for several years at the Augustinian Monastery of St. Mary. During his residence in Oxford he took up Lutheran opinions, but notwithstanding this change he became Prior of St. Oswald's at Nostel, in his native county, and on surrendering that monastery to the Crown received a pension of eighty pounds a year. Ferrar then became chaplain to Archbishop Cranmer and to the Duke of Somerset, and in 1548 was made Bishop of St. David's, being the first who was nominated bishop by letters-patent after the abolition of election and the *congé d'élire*. He was but a few months in his diocese, yet the time was long enough for him to burn all its ancient records. But he was received with wonderful disfavour; and being accused before the Privy Council with abuse of his authority, covetousness, secularity, and negligence of duty, he

was summoned to London, and detained there as a prisoner during the last three years of Edward VI.'s reign. On the accession of Queen Mary it was desired to fill the See of St. David's, and hence Ferrar was deprived by the same authority which had appointed him on the ground of his marriage. Nothing further is known of him until he is found under examination before the Southwark Commission. After these examinations he was sent down to Caermarthen, where he was accused of heresy before his successor, Henry Morgan, by whom he was excommunicated as a heretic and delivered over to the Sheriffs. He was put to death at Caermarthen on Saturday, March 30, 1555, having been previously degraded from the priesthood. After the fire had begun to burn, "one Richard Gravell with a staff dashed him upon the head, and so struck him down."[8]

CHAP V

A.D. 1555

His execution at Caermarthen

JOHN BRADFORD.—The association of Bradford with the Reformation, and his career as a clergyman, extended over a very few years, but he had considerable influence upon the public opinion of the three years immediately preceding Queen Mary's accession. Although he was about fifty years of age when he died, he had only been ordained deacon five years before, and two of the intervening years he had spent in prison; but he was a great favourite with Bishop Ridley, who had made him Canon of St. Paul's as soon as ever he was qualified to hold the office, and by whose interest he was appointed one of the chaplains of Edward VI.

Former career of Bradford

Bradford was born at Manchester early in the sixteenth century, and was educated at the grammar-

[8] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 3-28.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555

school of that city. Nothing is known of his life afterwards, until he is found in 1544 acting as clerk to Sir John Harrington, "Treasurer of the King's camp beyond the seas"—that is, Paymaster to the forces at the siege of Boulogne. While in this employment he was guilty of a heavy fraud upon the Crown, the fraud being described by his friend and biographer Dr. Sampson as "one dash with a pen, which he had made without the knowledge of his master (as full often I have heard him confess with plenty of tears), being clerk to the treasurer of the King's camp beyond the seas, and was to the deceiving of the King."[2] From Latimer's Sermons it appears that the sum of which the Crown was defrauded amounted to not less than £520—a sum equal to more than £6000 of our present money. It was eventually refunded by Sir John Harrington, who was threatened with a charge of complicity by Bradford, and who, though he at first refused, saying he would not "have his head under his [Bradford's] girdle" by committing himself, yet eventually supplied Bradford with the money, by whom it was sent to the Exchequer through Latimer.[1]

His fraud on the revenue

[2] Sampson's *Pref. to Bradford's Serm. on Repentance;* Bradford's Works, i. 32, Park. Soc. ed. In recording Bradford's last examination before the Ecclesiastical Commissioners, Foxe narrates the following anecdote: "Here came forth Master Chamberlain of Woodstock, and spake to my Lord Chancellor how that Bradford had been a serving man, and was with Master Harrington. *L. Chan.*—'True, and did deceive his master of seven-score pounds: and because of this, he went to be a gospeller and a preacher, good people; and yet you see how he pretendeth conscience.' *Brad.*—'My Lord, I set my foot by his, whosoever he be, that can come forth and justly vouch to my face that ever I deceived my master. And as you are chief justicer by office in England, I desire justice upon them that so slander me, because they cannot prove it.'" [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 162.] It will be observed that Bradford denies having deceived his master, Sir John Harrington; but that what Sampson says that he acknowledged was deceiving the King.

[1] The history of this transaction is to be traced in Bradford's letters and in a sermon of Latimer. "At my first preaching of restitution,"

CHAP V

A.D. 1555

On April 8, 1547, Bradford became a student of the Inner Temple, where Sampson, afterwards Dean of Christ Church and Canon of St. Paul's, was also a student. There "Sampson, . . . being converted to the Protestant religion, did shortly after convert John Bradford,"[2] an event to which Sampson himself refers in the words, "I did know when and partly how it pleased God, by effectual calling, to turn his heart unto the true knowledge and obedience of the most Holy Gospel of Christ our Saviour." After this he forsook the study of the law, and employed his time on divinity, publishing in May 1548 translated portions of the works of St. Chrysostom and of Artopæus, or Becker, a Protestant minister at Stettin. He then went up to Cambridge, having "sold his chains, rings, broaches, and jewels of gold, which before he used to wear," intending to read for three years, take his degree, and go into Holy Orders. But when he had been settled about ten months at St. Catherine's Hall, on October 19, 1549, he received his Master's degree by a special grace of the Senate, on account of his mature age and good life, that Ridley, then Master of Pembroke Hall, might admit him to a fellowship

His conversion to Protestantism

Takes Orders late in life

says the latter, "one good man took remorse of conscience, and acknowledged himself to me that he had deceived the King, and willing he was to make restitution; and so the first Lent came to my hands twenty pounds to be restored to the King's use. I was promised twenty pound more the same Lent, but it could not be made, so that it came not. Well, the next Lent came three hundred and twenty pounds more. I received it myself, and paid it to the King's Council. So I was asked what he was that thus made restitution. But should I have named him? Nay, they should as soon have this wesant of mine. Well, now this Lent came one hundred and fourscore pounds ten shillings, which I have paid and delivered this present day to the King's Council; and so this man hath made a godly restitution." [Latimer's *Serm.*, i. 239, ed. 1824.] This sermon was preached in Lent 1550, and the dates of payment were 1548, 1549, 1550, as may be gathered from Bradford's Letters.

[2] Wood's *Athen.*, i. 548.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555

there. In the following year, on August 10, 1550, he was ordained deacon by Ridley, who made him one of his domestic chaplains, collated him to the Prebend of Cantlowes or Kentish town in St. Paul's Cathedral, on August 14, 1551, and obtained his appointment as one of the King's chaplains. In the latter capacity he was sent to preach in many towns in Cheshire and Lancashire, and also amongst the Anabaptists in Essex.

Bradford was in residence at St. Paul's when Queen Mary arrived in London; and when the dagger was thrown at Dr. Bourn as he was preaching at Paul's Cross, an incident narrated in the preceding notice of John Rogers,[3] he took a forward part in pacifying the mob, and in conveying Bourn to a place of safety.

He is sent to prison as a seditious preacher

On the following Wednesday, August 16, 1553, he was summoned before the Privy Council, and there being an impression that he was secretly a leader of the malcontents, he was committed to the Tower in company with Veron and Thomas Becon, all three as seditious preachers. Bonner, who was present, told the Council afterwards that Bradford "took upon him to rule and lead the people malapertly." Gardiner also spoke severely of his conduct while under examination in the Tower, and said that he was worthily kept in prison "as one that would have done more hurt than I will speak of." The Earl of Derby, moreover, declared in the House of Lords that Bradford was doing more harm by his letters while in prison than by his preaching when at liberty, a statement which

[3] See page 281. "The thirteenth day of August," writes Machyn, "did preach at Paul's Cross Doctor Bourn, parson of High Ongar, Essex, the Queen's chaplain, and there was a great uproar and shouting at his sermon, as it were like mad people, what young people and women as ever was heard, as hurly-burly, and casting up of caps: if my Lord Mayor and my Lord Courtenay had not been there, there had been great mischief done." [Machyn's *Diary*, p. 41.]

CHAP V

A.D. 1555

was corroborated by several members of the Privy Council when it was quoted at his examination.[4]

Early in 1554 he was removed from the Tower to the King's Bench, not being any longer regarded as a traitor, but as one accused of heresy. With the other persons who were under confinement for a similar reason he was brought before the Ecclesiastical Commissioners at Southwark on January 22, 1555, and after several examinations was excommunicated and delivered to the custody of the Sheriffs on the 30th. Unusual efforts were made, however, to obtain his recantation, and amongst many others who visited him for this purpose were Carranza and Alphonsus A'Castro. For this or some other reason he was kept in the Compter in the Poultry for five months; and it was only when all hope of his recantation was over, that, on July 1, 1551, he was carried to Smithfield. A young man of nineteen, named John Leaf, was burned at the same stake with him; and as the fire was being lighted, Bradford turned to him and said, "'Be of good comfort, brother; for we shall have a merry supper with the Lord this night:' and so spake no more words that any man did hear, but, embracing the reeds, said thus, 'Strait is the way and narrow is the gate that leadeth to eternal salvation, and few there be that find it.'" Probably these last words were uttered in the same spirit of recollection respecting his past life which made him say as he saw a man led to execution, "There goes John Bradford, but for the grace of God."[5]

Is accused of heresy

His execution in Smithfield

Bishop Ridley.—As has been shown on a former page,[6] Ridley's hasty endeavour to recover himself from

[4] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 150, 151.

[5] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 143-286.

[6] See page 190.

CHAP V A.D. 1554

the pitfall into which he had been precipitated by partisans of Lady Jane Grey proved of no avail. He was sent back to London in custody, reached the Tower as a prisoner on July 26, 1553, and was superseded as Bishop of London by Bonner—whom he had displaced three years before—ten days afterwards, so rapid was his fall. He remained in the State prison as a traitor until the spring of 1554, when he was sent to Oxford with Cranmer and Latimer; but the only record remaining of the eight months spent by him in the Tower is a memorandum which he made of a conversation on theological questions which he held with Feckenham, the Dean of his Cathedral, Bourn, one of the canons, and others at the Lieutenant's table.[7]

Ridley's rapid fall

On April 10, 1554, the Archbishop and the two bishops arrived in Oxford in the custody of Sir John Williams, and all three were at first imprisoned in Bocardo, the name given to a prison which formed the upper part of the North Gate, stretching across the Corn Market, close to the Tower of St. Michael's Church. While they lived together here, Ridley wittily called their prison the "College of Quondams," the name of "Quondam" being given to bishops or noblemen who had lost office. But before long they were separated, and Ridley was committed to the charge of Irish, one of the aldermen of the city, in whose house he remained until his death, a year and a half afterwards.

His unpopularity in Oxford

"We are, as ye know, separated," wrote Ridley to Bradford, "and one of us cannot in any thing consult with another, and much strait watching of the bailiffs is about us, that there be no privy conference amongst us; and yet, as we hear, the scholars bear us more heavily than the townsmen. A wonderful thing, among

[7] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 434-438.

so many, never yet scholar offered any of us (so far as I know) any manner of favour, either for or in Christ's cause. . . . Yet hath God provided for every one of us, instead of our servants, faithful fellows, which will be content to hear and see, and to do for us whatsoever they can." They were also well entertained by their custodians, and Ridley adds, "As far as London is from Oxford, yet thence we have received of late both meat, money, and shirts, not only from such as are of our acquaintance, but of some (whom this bearer can tell) with whom I had never to my knowledge any acquaintance. I know for whose sake they do it; to Him therefore be all honour, glory, and due thanks."[8]

CHAP V

A.D. 1554

His kind treatment by friends

The "disputation" for which the three bishops were taken to Oxford, and of which some particulars are given further on in the notice of Archbishop Cranmer's last days, began in less than a week after their arrival, and Tuesday, April 17th, was the day assigned for Bishop Ridley to appear in the Divinity School. The

[8] Some details of Ridley's earlier imprisonment are given in a letter written by him to Grindal, then at Frankfort. "Now, although I suppose you know a good part of our state here (for we are forthcoming, even as when ye departed, etc.), you shall understand that I was in the Tower about the space of two months close prisoner, and, after that, had granted to me, without my labour, the liberty of the Tower, and so continued about half a year; and then, because I refused to allow the Mass with my presence, I was shut up in prison again.

"The last Lent save one, it chanced by reason of the tumult stirred up in Kent, there were so many prisoners in the Tower, that my Lord of Canterbury, Master Latimer, Master Bradford, and I, were put all together in one prison, where we remained till almost the next Easter, and then we three, Canterbury, Master Latimer, and I, were suddenly sent a little before Easter to Oxford, and were suffered to have nothing with us but that we carried upon us. About the Whitsuntide following were our disputations at Oxford, after the which all was taken from us, as pen, ink, etc. Our own servants were taken from us before, and every one had put to him a strange man, and we each one appointed to be kept in several places, as we are unto this day." [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 434.] But Ridley adds that he was kept more strictly than the other two, through the influence of Mrs. Irish, who, he says, ruled her husband.

CHAP V

A.D. 1554

The disputation in the Divinity School

same three propositions respecting the Holy Eucharist which had been placed before Cranmer were also given to him as the subject of discussion, and he maintained his opinions respecting them with ready learning, having also prepared his arguments upon paper in logical form. But the result was, of course, the same as on the previous day. The disputants had made up their minds, and if they were to be changed it would be by private study, not by logical wrangling in the presence of an excited crowd.[9] Two o'clock arrived, and they were no nearer an agreement than when they began six hours before; nevertheless, the time for closing the "disputation" had arrived, and therefore the President Weston ended it with the words, "Here you see the stubborn, the glorious, the crafty, the unconstant mind of this man. Here you see this day that the strength of the truth is without foil. Therefore I beseech you all most earnestly to blow the note (and he began, and they followed), 'Verity hath the victory,' 'Verity hath the victory.'"

On Friday, April 20th, the Commissioners sat in St. Mary's again, as on the preceding Saturday. Each of the three bishops was asked in succession the same question, whether they still held the opinions which they had declared during the disputations. When they answered in the affirmative, "they were all called together, and sentence read over them that they were no members of the Church; and therefore they, their

He is excommunicated

[9] Ridley describes the disputation as being carried on in a most tumultuous manner, with many interruptions, and with much hissing and clapping of hands. His description of it winds up also with the following unworthy words: "And thus was ended this most glorious disputation of the most holy fathers, sacrificers, doctors, and masters, who fought most manfully, as ye may see, for their God and goods, for their faith and felicity, for their country and kitchen, for their beauty and belly, with triumphant applauses and favour of the whole university." [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 533.]

fautors and patrons, were condemned as heretics." To which sentence of excommunication Ridley retorted, "Although I be not of your company, yet doubt I not but my name is written in another place, whither this sentence will send us sooner than we should by the course of nature have come." It was eighteen months, however, before his end arrived, all which time he lived a prisoner in the house of Alderman Irish, much engaged in writing and holding occasional intercourse with his brother bishops and with other friends.

CHAP V

A.D. 1554

His long imprisonment in Oxford

In the autumn of the following year, a fortnight after the trial of the Archbishop before Bishop Brooks, acting as the Pope's sub-delegate, Ridley and Latimer were again brought to trial, and this time before three judges, Bishops White of Lincoln, Brooks of Gloucester, and Holyman of Bristol, acting under a commission from Cardinal Pole, the Pope's legate *á latere*. As Pole did not at this time hold any office in the Church of England or any appointment under the Crown, the two bishops were thus brought to trial before an entirely foreign jurisdiction, Pole having no authority except from the Pope, and the Crown of England, the only true source of judicial jurisdiction in England, being entirely unrepresented. When the Court was opened, therefore, in the Divinity School on September 30, 1555, Ridley refused to recognize its authority by declining to uncover his head in the presence of the judges; and although he was led by his love of argument to condescend too far in answering the theological charges brought against him, yet when he was required to make further answers to them on the next day, he formally protested against the jurisdiction of the court. "Seeing," he said, "you appoint me a time to answer to-morrow, and yet will take mine

He is brought before a Papal court

CHAP V A.D. 1555

answers out of hand, first, I require the notaries to take and write my protestation, that in no point I acknowledge your authority, or admit you to be my judges, in that point that you are authorized from the Pope. Therefore, whatsoever I shall say or do, I protest, I neither say it, neither do it willingly, thereby to admit the authority of the Pope; and, if your Lordship will give me leave, I will show the causes which move me thereunto." When he answered any questions afterwards, he sometimes prefaced his reply with some such words as "My protestation always saved that, by this mine answer, I do not condescend to your authority in that you are legate to the Pope: I answer thus . . ."

whose jurisdiction he repudiates

Before proceeding to carry out the last part of their commission, the bishops gave a final admonition to Ridley to submit himself to the determination of the Church in regard to the subjects in which he had refused to alter his opinions, and the Bishop of Gloucester used language which was justified to no small extent by Ridley's tone of mind and his conduct while he was in power. "If," said the bishop, "you would once empty your stomach, captivate your senses, subdue your reason, and together with us consider what a feeble ground of your religion you have, I do not doubt but you might easily be induced to acknowledge one Church with us, to confess one faith with us, and to believe one religion with us. For what a weak and feeble stay in religion is this, I pray you? Latimer leaneth to Cranmer, Cranmer to Ridley, and Ridley to the singularity of his own wit; so that if you overthrew the singularity of Ridley's wit, then must needs the religion of Cranmer and Latimer fall also. You remember well, Master Ridley, that the

Bishop Brooks' address to him

CHAP V

A.D. 1555

prophet speaketh most truly, saying, 'Væ, væ,' 'Woe be to them which are singular and wise in their own conceits.'" Ridley replied that the bishop "said most truly with the prophet, 'Woe be to him that is wise in his own conceit;' but that he acknowledgeth no such singularity in himself, nor knew any cause why he should attribute so much to him. And whereas he, the Bishop of Gloucester, said Master Cranmer leaned to him, that was most untrue, in that he was but a young scholar in comparison of Master Cranmer; for at what time he was a young scholar, then was Master Cranmer a doctor, so that he confessed that Master Cranmer might have been his schoolmaster these many years. It seemed that he would have spoken more, but the Bishop of Gloucester interrupted him, saying, 'Why, Master Ridley, it is your own confession, for Master Latimer, at the time of his disputation, confessed his learning to lie in Master Cranmer's books, and Master Cranmer also said that it was your doing.'"

Ridley's vindication of himself

After this the Bishop of Lincoln, "with many words, and gently holding his cap in his hand, desired him to turn," but Ridley had no thought of turning, and so there was nothing left for the judges to do but to close the case, to declare him guilty of heresy, to pass upon him the sentence of the greater excommunication, and to deliver him over to the secular arm, "to receive due punishment according to the tenor of the temporal laws."

His degradation from the priesthood

A fortnight later, on October 15th, the Bishop of Gloucester, Dr. Marshall, the Vice-Chancellor, and others, proceeded to the house where Ridley was confined for the purpose of degrading him from the order of priesthood, for he was not recognized as a bishop,

LIBRARY
Perkins School of Theology

CHAP V

A.D. 1555

His inconsistency about the vestments

having been consecrated by the new Ordinal. He showed much more temper than was becoming on this occasion, not only refusing to put on the surplice and other vestments, but while they were being put on by others, "Dr. Ridley," who had been Hooper's great opponent in this very matter of vestments, "did vehemently inveigh against the Romish bishop and all that foolish apparel, calling him Antichrist, and the apparel foolish and abominable, yea, too fond for a vice in a play, insomuch that Bishop Brooks was exceeding angry with him, and bade him hold his peace, for he did but rail. Dr. Ridley answered him again, and said, so long as his tongue and breath would suffer him, he would speak against their abominable doings, whatsoever happened him for so doing."

The next day, October 16, 1555, Ridley was led to the place of execution, the town ditch opposite the south front of Balliol College. On his way he looked up to the windows of Bocardo, in the hope of seeing Cranmer and taking leave of him; but the Archbishop was engaged in conversation with Friar Soto.

Last meeting with Latimer at the place of execution

A little further on, as he looked back, he "espied Master Latimer coming after, unto whom he said, 'Oh, be ye there?' 'Yea,' said Master Latimer, 'have after as fast as I can follow;'" and so both arrived at the stake. The rest of the story is too well known to need repetition here. Ridley, combative to the last, wished to reply to the sermon which Dr. Smith preached, and in which he had exhorted them to recant, but this was not permitted, and Ridley could do no more than say, "with a loud voice, 'Well, then, I commit our cause to Almighty God, which shall indifferently judge all,'" and no one attempting to reply, he had what he wanted, the last word. After

CHAP V
A.D. 1555

a few words of prayer he was chained to the stake, saying to the smith, "'Good fellow, knock it in hard, for the flesh will have his course.' Then his brother did bring him gunpowder in a bag, and would have tied the same about his neck. Master Ridley asked what it was. His brother said, 'Gunpowder.' 'Then,' said he, 'I will take it to be sent of God; therefore I will receive it as sent of Him. And have you any,' said he, 'for my brother,' meaning Master Latimer. 'Yea, sir, that I have,' quoth his brother. 'Then give it unto him,' said he, 'betime, lest ye come too late.' So his brother went and carried of the same gunpowder unto Master Latimer." As the flames rose around him, "he cried with a wonderful loud voice, 'In manus tuas, Domine, commendo spiritum meum: Domine, recipe spiritum meum;' and after repeated this often in English, 'Lord, Lord, receive my spirit!' Master Latimer crying as vehemently on the other side, 'O Father of heaven, receive my soul!'" The scene which followed must have been very horrible, for through mismanagement the fire which burned at his feet had not draught enough to carry it higher. "When the flame" at last "touched the gunpowder, he was seen to stir no more," and his dead body fell down at the feet of his companion in suffering.

His brother-in law brings gunpowder

His sufferings notwithstanding

Much feeling was excited among the crowd around by the cruel and humiliating end of the two bishops, although they had lately, as perhaps Ridley always had been, very unpopular. "But," says Foxe, in words that win our sympathy, "whoso considered their preferments in time past, the places of honour that they some time occupied in this commonwealth, the favour they were in with their princes, and the opinion of learning they had in the university where

CHAP V A.D. 1555

they studied, could not choose but sorrow with tears to see so great dignity, honour, and estimation, so necessary members sometime accounted, so many godly virtues, the study of so many years, such excellent learning, to be put into the fire, and consumed in one moment."[1]

The early life of Latimer

BISHOP LATIMER.—Tradition has commonly represented Latimer as an infirm and very aged man at the time of his death, but he seems in truth to have been about a year younger than Cranmer, having been born at Thurcaston, in Leicestershire, in the year 1490 or 1491, and being thus only sixty-five years old when his life was brought to an end.[2] He was the son of a small tenant farmer, who kept him to school, and at the age of fourteen sent him to Cambridge, where he became Fellow of Clare Hall, even while he was an undergraduate. A few years later he was found among the "White House Divines,"[3] being then a university preacher; and, being charged with Lutheranism before Wolsey, was dismissed by that mildest of legates with a license to preach in any part of England. About 1530 he was brought under the notice of Henry VIII. in association with the divorce business, and preached before the King at Windsor, soon after becoming

[1] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 469-500; vii. 519-552.

[2] This seems clear, for Foxe says that he went to Cambridge at the age of fourteen, and the university records show that he took his degree in 1511, being then a Fellow of Clare Hall. Yet Foxe's whole description of him in his last years gives the reader an impression that he was a very old man, with a very old man's ways, wearing several night-caps under his ordinary cap, complaining of loss of memory, and being called "father" and "reverend father," even by his judges, as he was commonly called "Father Latimer." At the last, however, Foxe says of him: "Whereas in his clothes he appeared a withered and crooked silly old man, he now stood bolt upright, as comely a father as one might lightly behold." [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 549.]

[3] See vol. i. p. 527.

chaplain to Anne Boleyn, and being presented by the Crown to what he called his "little bishopric of West Kington," in Wiltshire. On September 26, 1535, he was consecrated to the larger Bishopric of Worcester, but was required to resign that see on July 1, 1539, because he would not assent to the Act of the Six Articles. In the latter part of Henry VIII.'s reign he was imprisoned in the Tower, and being released by the general pardon issued at the beginning of Edward's reign, he went to reside at Lambeth with Archbishop Cranmer, but resolutely refused to resume his position as Bishop of Worcester. During Edward's reign he often preached before the Court, and was accustomed to deal pungently with political subjects, on which account he was often accused of sedition. "There is a certain man," he says, "that, shortly after my first sermon, being asked if he had been at the sermon that day, answered 'Yea.' 'I pray you,' said he, 'how liked you him?' 'Marry,' said he, 'even as I liked him always—a seditious fellow.' Oh, Lord! he pinched me there; nay, he had rather a full bite at me. . . . In the King's days that dead is, a many of us were called together before him to say our minds in certain matters. In the end one kneeleth me down, and accuseth me of sedition, that I had preached seditious doctrine. . . . Thus have I evermore been burdened with sedition. . . . Thus they burdened me ever with sedition." At the time when he said this he was being accused of sedition for "speaking a merry word of the new shilling to refresh my auditory; how I was like to put away my new shilling for an old groat," through the depreciation of the coinage. He added with biting sarcasm that he had now "gotten one fellow more, a companion of sedition, and wot ye

CHAP V

A.D. 1555

He is imprisoned by Henry VIII.

His pungent political sermons

CHAP V A.D. 1555

who is my fellow? Isaiah the prophet. I spake but of a little pretty shilling, but he speaketh to Jerusalem after another sort, and was bold to meddle with their coin. 'Thou proud, thou covetous, thou haughty city of Jerusalem: *Argentum tuum versum est in scoriam.*' Thy silver is turned into what? Into testoons? '*Scoriam:* Into dross.' . . . Was not this a seditious varlet to tell them this to their beards, to their face?"[4]

He is sent to the Tower as a seditious preacher

It is no wonder if a preacher who used such bold language as this was accused of seditious preaching soon after the accession of Queen Mary. On September 13, 1553, he was summoned before the Privy Council, and committed to the Tower, as is stated in the Council Register, "for his seditious demeanour." No record remains of the particular charges brought against him; but it is not improbable that he had been speaking against the proposals which were being made for the marriage of the Queen to a foreigner. On March 8, 1549, he had used this language in a sermon before Edward VI.: "Oh, what a plague were it that a strange King, of a strange land, and of a strange religion, should reign over us! Where now we be governed in the true religion he should extirp and pluck away altogether, and then plant again all abomination and Popery. God keep such a King from us. Well, the King's grace hath sisters, my Lady Mary and my Lady Elizabeth, which by succession and course are inheritors to the Crown; who, if they should marry strangers, what should ensue? God knoweth. But God grant if they so do, whereby strange religion cometh in, that they never come unto coursing nor succeeding."[5] He was not likely to hear

[4] Latimer's *Serm.*, i. 119-121. [5] *Ibid.*, i. 85.

patiently and without remonstrance that his anticipations were about to be fulfilled by Mary's marriage to Philip of Spain. CHAP V A.D. 1555

For whatever reason he was originally sent to the Tower, however, Latimer was soon regarded as a heretic rather than a traitor, and shared the fortunes of Cranmer and Ridley. At the Oxford "disputations" he was compelled to come forward and take some part in defending his opinions, but he did so very unwillingly. When the Court of Commissioners sat in St. Mary's on the Saturday, he came before them "with a kerchief and two or three caps on his head, his spectacles hanging by a string at his breast, and a staff in his hand, and was set in a chair; for so was he suffered by the prolocutor. And after his denial of the Articles, when he had Wednesday appointed for disputation, he alleged age, sickness, disuse, and lack of books, saying that he was almost as meet to dispute as to be a captain of Calais; but he would, he said, declare his mind either by writing or word, and would stand to all they could lay upon his back; complaining, moreover, that he was permitted to have neither pen nor ink, nor yet any book, but only the New Testament there in his hand, which, he said, he had read over seven times deliberately, and yet could not find the Mass in it, neither the marrow-bones nor sinews of the same."[6] On the day assigned for his "disputation," which was Wednesday, April 18, 1554, he pleaded faintness, and begged that he might not be kept long. He also requested that he might be allowed to speak in English, not having used Latin much during the preceding twenty years, and that he understood no Greek. He gave in an answer in writing to

His distaste for the disputations at Oxford

[6] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 443.

CHAP V
A.D. 1555

the three propositions respecting the Holy Eucharist which had been put before him and the other bishops on the preceding Saturday; but when Weston, the President, said to him, "Then refuse you to dispute? Will you here then subscribe?" he replied, "No, good master; I pray be good to an old man. You may, if it please God, be once old as I am, you may come to this age and this debility." When he was asked how long he had held his present opinion respecting the Sacrament, he said it was not long, not more than seven years, that is, since the early part of Edward VI.'s reign, and that his opinion had been confirmed by Archbishop Cranmer's book on the subject, which had been published in the year 1550. Previously to this change of opinion he had, and he "cried God mercy heartily for it, said Mass," to use the President's words, "full devoutly." He denied ever having been a Lutheran or a Zwinglian in his opinions, and averred that until he had changed them seven years before he had been "a Papist." A desultory discussion was kept up for some time, but the Court adjourned three hours earlier than on the preceding days, Latimer telling them as his last word, "You shall have no hope in me to turn. I pray for the Queen daily, even from the bottom of my heart, that she may turn from this religion."[7]

The short time which he had held his present opinions

On the next day but one the Court reassembled in St. Mary's Church, and Latimer declaring, as the other two bishops had done, that his mind was unchanged, he was found guilty of heresy and excommunicated, saying, after the sentence of excommunication had been passed, "I thank God most heartily that He hath prolonged

Is found guilty of heresy and excommunicated

[7] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 500-511.

my life to this end, that I may in this case glorify God by that kind of death."[8]

CHAP V

A.D. 1555

Latimer remained under restraint, however, in a private house in Oxford for seventeen months after he had been adjudged guilty of heresy, and little or nothing further is known of him until he and Ridley were brought before Cardinal Pole's Commissioners on September 30, 1555. On this occasion also he complained of old age; for having been kept waiting while Ridley was under examination, he said, "'My Lords, if I appear again, I pray you not to send for me until you be ready; for I am an old man, and it is great hurt to mine old age to tarry so long gazing upon the cold walls.' Then the Bishop of Lincoln, 'Master Latimer, I am sorry you are brought so soon, although it is the bailiff's fault, and not mine; but it shall be amended.'"[9] At one point of his examination there was much laughter at his replies, and he remonstrated that it was no laughing matter, but one of life and death. "Master Latimer," said the Bishop of Lincoln, "if you had kept yourself within your bounds, if you had not used such scoffs and taunts, this had not been done;" but when the Bishop of Gloucester spoke with slight contempt of Latimer's want of learning, the old bishop retorted with unbroken spirit and ready illustration: "Lo, you look for learning at my hands, which have gone so long to the school of Oblivion, making the bare walls my library, keeping me so long in prison without book or pen and ink; and now you let me loose to come and answer to Articles. You deal with me as though two were appointed to fight for life and death, and over night the one, through

His long imprisonment in Oxford

His conduct before the Papal Court

[8] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 534.

[9] *Ibid.*, vii. 529. Latimer's remonstrance sounds like that of a man much older than sixty-five. It was early autumn only.

CHAP V A.D. 1555

friends and favour, is cherished, and hath good counsel given him how to encounter with his enemy. The other, for envy or lack of friends, all the whole night is set in the stocks. In the morning, when they shall meet, the one is in strength and lusty, the other is stark of his limbs, and almost dead for feebleness. Think you that to run through this man with a spear is not a goodly victory?"

He is again excommunicated

On the next day, October 1st, Latimer was formally declared to be guilty of heresy, was excommunicated with the greater excommunication, and was handed over to the secular power, but nothing is said by Foxe respecting his degradation, either from the order of the episcopate or the priesthood, although it is certain to have taken place.

His execution with Ridley

The day of execution was October 16, 1555. Latimer went to the stake with the most unostentatious self-possession, and spoke only a few words. But, as they were lighting the fire at his feet, he burst out with the memorable exclamation, full of his old witty eloquence, yet having almost the solemnity of prophecy: "Be of good comfort, Master Ridley, and play the man. We shall this day light a candle, by God's grace, in England, as I trust shall never be put out." He prayed, "O Father of heaven, receive my soul!" stroking his face with his hands, and seemed to bathe them a little in the fire. He soon died, apparently without pain, probably suffocated by the smoke, or shattered by the explosion of the gunpowder which Shipside, Ridley's brother-in-law, had hung around his neck.[1]

Archdeacon Philpot.—Two months after the execution of Bishops Ridley and Latimer—three other

[1] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 550.

persons suffering in the meanwhile—John Philpot, Archdeacon of Winchester, was burned in Smithfield, the day of his execution being December 18, 1555. He was a man of better social position than most of the sufferers, being the son of Sir Peter Philpot of Compton, in Hampshire, and of considerable learning, being familiar with Hebrew, Greek, and Latin, at a time when the first two languages were little cultivated.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555

Philpot was born in 1511; went from Winchester to New College, where he became a Fellow in 1534; travelled much abroad, living for some time in Rome, and forfeited his Fellowship by his absence in 1541. Towards the end of Henry VIII.'s reign he took Holy Orders, and became Archdeacon of Winchester, while Gardiner was still exercising his office as Bishop of Winchester, though not perhaps until the reign of Edward VI.;[2] but when he died, at the age of forty-four, he appears not to have been a clergyman for more than eight or nine years of his life. He had been brought under Gardiner's notice and censure for his preaching during the reign of Henry VIII., and had a serious quarrel with Gardiner's successor, Poynet, during that of Edward VI., whence "intolerable troubles arose, and slanders in that diocese to them both."[3] He was as unsparing towards those whom he accounted, and justly, to be heretics, as his own persecutors were towards him. On one occasion he heard a person using language which implied Arian doctrine. Philpot spat in his face, "which he said he did for this end, to signify thereby that he was a person not fit to be accompanied withal for his horrid blasphemy, and to relieve the sorrow which he conceived for that blasphemy that was spoke against our Saviour." He

Antecedents of Philpot

His passionate intolerance

[2] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 607. [3] Strype's *Mem. Eccl.*, III. i. 439.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555

afterwards wrote a book justifying his act, and warning people against "the Arians" and "other late sprung heresies." Not long before he himself suffered he also spoke of Joan Butcher as "a vain woman (I knew her well) and a heretic indeed, well worthy to be burned, because she stood against one of the manifest articles of our faith, contrary to the Scriptures."[4]

Philpot's conduct in Convocation

On the accession of Queen Mary Archdeacon Philpot took a leading part in the debates which were carried on in Convocation during the last three months of 1553, when the chief subject discussed was that of the Holy Eucharist, the discussions being carried on in the Convocation House in St. Paul's Cathedral, and "in the presence of many earls, lords, knights, gentlemen, and divers others of the Court and of the city also."[5] His arguments had much learning to support them, but his arrogance was most unsuitable for a priest so recently ordained, and his manner was so violent that it was repeatedly asserted he must be mad. Early in 1554 he was apprehended, probably as a "suspect," in connection with Wyatt's rebellion; and after being imprisoned for a year and a half in the King's Bench without trial, was charged with heresy at the Old Bailey before the Queen's Commissioners—Cholmley, Roper, and Story—by whom he was sent for examination before the Bishop of London. Great efforts were made by Bonner and other bishops to bring him to an agreement with their opinions respecting the Eucharist, and it is lamentable to see how the differences between them, which were scarcely more than verbal,[6] were exaggerated by Philpot's self-suffi-

His long imprisonment for sedition

He is accused of heresy

[4] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 631.

[5] The debates are reported in Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 395-411.

[6] That is, even as the examinations of Philpot—the report of which was written and published

ciency and intemperate mind, on which neither gentleness (and he was treated with singular gentleness by Bishop Bonner) nor severity could make any impression. As in most of these discussions respecting the Eucharist, the divergences of opinion arose in a great degree from far too confident assertions on both sides respecting the *manner* of Christ's Presence therein, and from an obstinate determination to admit of no compromise in respect to the terms used respecting it. CHAP V A.D. 1555

As many as thirteen examinations of Philpot took place, the Archbishop of York, several other bishops, and some Privy Councillors taking part in them, and there were also many private conferences with him. But all was of no avail, and on December 16th he was finally brought into the Bishop of London's Consistory Court, where he was declared to be guilty of heresy, excommunicated, and delivered over to the secular power, the Sheriffs of London removing him to Newgate. His many examinations

December 18, 1555, was the day on which he was to be burned. "And so he went with the Sheriffs to

by himself—*now* appear in the pages of Foxe. But in Strype's *Life of Archbishop Grindal* there is evidence that they were altered here and there to suit the opinions of Foxe and Grindal before they were submitted to the world. "Philpot, Archdeacon of Winchester, and Martyr, his examinations also were soon come over from England. Which, when Fox had spoke somewhat concerning, and consulted with Grindal, Whether they ought not to have a review, and some corrections of them made before they were exposed to the Publick; Grindal freely thus expressed himself in this matter, That there were some things in them that needed the File; that is, some prudent hand to usher them out into the world. For that Philpot seemed to have somewhat ensnared himself in some words not so well approved; as that Christ is *Really* in the Supper, etc. And, that if the English Book had not been divulged, some things might be mitigated in it. And next, that he sometimes cited the Ancients *memoriter*, being void of the help of books, where one might easily slip. . . . Grindal also supposed that Fox himself might in like manner espy some oversights, wherefore he bad him use his judgement" [Strype's *Life of Grindal*, p. 20]. The meaning of this obviously is that Archbishop Grindal thought Foxe had better tamper with his original documents when he thought they made his martyrs appear too catholic in their opinions.

CHAP V
A.D. 1555

the place of execution; and when he was entering into Smithfield, the way was foul, and two officers took him up to bear him to the stake. Then he said, merrily, 'What! will ye make me a Pope? I am content to go to my journey's end on foot.' But first, coming into Smithfield, he kneeled down there, saying these words, 'I will pay my vows in thee, O Smithfield!'

His execution in Smithfield

"And when he was come to the place of suffering he kissed the stake, and said, 'Shall I disdain to suffer at this stake, seeing my Redeemer did not refuse to suffer a most vile death upon the Cross for me?' And then with an obedient heart full meekly he said the 106th, the 107th, and the 108th Psalms. And when he had made an end of all his prayers, he said to the officers, 'What have you done for me?' and every one of them declared what they had done; and he gave to every of them money.

"Then they bound him to the stake, and set fire unto that constant martyr, who the 18th day of December, in the midst of the fiery flames, yielded his soul into the hands of Almighty God, and full like a lamb gave up his breath, his body being consumed into ashes."[7]

Cranmer left in prison as a traitor

Archbishop Cranmer.—It is said by Coverdale, Foxe, and Strype that a pardon was eventually granted to Cranmer for his treason in the matter of Lady Jane Grey. Gardiner proposed to the Queen that he should be pardoned, his licence as Archbishop under Edward's Act withdrawn, and that a pension should be allowed him during the rest of his life;[8] but instead of taking this merciful course, the Queen, under the advice of

[7] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 685.

[8] *Biogr. Britan.*, 2119.

CHAP V

A.D. 1554

others, determined that the fallen Archbishop should be proceeded against for heresy.[9] This resolve being taken, it was also determined that his forfeiture of the archbishopric should not be enforced, but that application should be made to the Pope for his deprivation. The application was made to Julius III. on March 8, 1554, the ground stated being the evil life of the Archbishop,—that is, his life as a married man instead of as a celibate.[1] It appears not to have been granted, the ultramontane party having probably resolved that the Archbishop should not only be deprived but punished as a heretic, so soon as Gardiner's influence with the Queen could be overpowered.

The Pope asked to deprive him

Meanwhile it was thought expedient that the "heresies" of the Reformation should be as publicly condemned as possible, and the disputation in Convocation—that in which Archdeacon Philpot took so prominent a part—having come to nothing, it was determined, nominally at the request of Convocation, to take still higher ground, and have a disputation between the Reformation Archbishop of Canterbury, the Reformation Bishop of London, and the popular preacher of King Edward's days, on the one hand, with representatives of Convocation and the two Universities on the other. This disputation was arranged to take place at Oxford. Nothing could,

It is resolved to hold the disputations at Oxford

[9] Coverdale's *Lett. of Mart.*, p. 1, marg.; Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, viii. 67; Strype's *Cranmer*, iii. 68, 463, ed. 1854. On the other hand, when Cranmer was being tried before Brooks, at the last Dr. Martin said to him, "You refuse and deny him"—that is, the Pope—"by whose laws ye do remain in life; being otherwise attainted of high treason, and but a dead man by the laws of the realm." [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, viii. 51.]

[1] The document is preserved in the Magliabechiana at Florence. It is in the handwriting of Roger Ascham, by whom it is also signed, the counter-signatures of Queen Mary and King Philip being added. [Wriothesley's *Chron.*, ii. 133, n.]

CHAP V A.D. 1554

however, have been more unfairly arranged, for the three bishops were in fact put upon their trial, and the disputants on the opposite side became their judges, the latter acting under a Royal Commission which empowered them to declare the bishops guilty of heresy.

Cranmer, Ridley, and Latimer were removed from the Tower on March 7th, and arrived in Oxford on March 10, 1554, their imprisonment there being managed in the manner which has been mentioned in the preceding notice of Bishop Ridley. There also the Commissioners assembled, consisting of Weston, the Prolocutor of the Convocation of Canterbury, who was President, eight members of the Lower House of that Convocation, the Vice-Chancellors of Oxford and Cambridge, and Doctors of Divinity elected by each University—the whole number being thirty-three. The Commission was opened with much solemnity in the choir of the University, or St. Mary's, Church, on Saturday, April 14th, the Doctors occupying the stalls, and a seat being erected for the President in front of the altar. Each of the three bishops was called separately before the Commissioners, and addressed on the object of the Commission. "First they sent to the Mayor that he should bring in Dr. Cranmer, who, within a while, was brought to them with a great number of rusty bill-men," the Mayor's guard, armed with javelins. The President, then, "sitting in the midst in a scarlet gown"—all were in their doctor's gowns—"began with a short preface or oration in praise of unity, and especially in the Church of Christ," and recapitulating the principal circumstances in the Archbishop's career. To bring him into that unity again he was now required to subscribe to three Articles which had been

The disputations in the Divinity School

CHAP V
A.D. 1554

agreed upon by the Convocation of Canterbury, and had been subscribed not only by that Convocation, but also by the Convocation of the two Universities. "The Archbishop answered to the preface very wittily, modestly, and learnedly, showing that he was very glad of a unity, forasmuch as it was "the preserver of all commonwealths, as well of the heathen as of the Christians;" and so he dilated the matter with one or two stories of the Romans' commonwealth. Which thing when he had done, he said that he was very glad to come to a unity, so that it were in Christ, and agreeable to His Holy Word." After these jesting stories, for they could hardly have been told seriously as bearing on the unity of Christ's Church, the three Articles, which were as follows, were presented to the Archbishop for his subscription:—

The subject of the disputations stated

"*First.* Whether the natural Body of Christ be really in the Sacrament, after the words spoken by the priest, or no?

Secondly. Whether in the Sacrament, after the words of consecration, any other substance do remain than the substance of the Body and Blood of Christ?

Thirdly. Whether in the Mass be a sacrifice propitiatory for the sins of the quick and the dead?"

Cranmer disputes the statements

The Archbishop read them over two or three times, asked several questions about the meaning of the terms used, and refused utterly to subscribe to them, saying, "They were all false, and against God's Holy Word;" and therefore, he said, he would not agree in that unity with them. A copy of the Articles was then given to him, and he was required to produce his answer in writing on the following Monday.

On Monday, April 16, 1554, the Commissioners sat

CHAP V

A.D. 1554

in the Divinity School, and "Dr. Cranmer, with a rout of rusty bills, was brought thither and set in the answerer's place, with the Mayor and Aldermen sitting by him." The Archbishop put in his answer in writing, as he had been required to do, but notwithstanding this, a long *viva voce* argument was carried on between him and his opponents for several hours, in which much temper was shown on both sides, and many theological statements made by Cranmer—such, for example, as that "infants, when they are baptized, do eat the flesh of Christ"—which much misrepresented the principles retained and maintained in the reformed formularies of the Church which he had so long ruled. "This disordered disputation," says Foxe,[2] "sometimes in Latin, sometimes in English, continued almost till two of the clock. Which being finished, and the arguments,"—that is, the logical forms of them,[3]—"written and delivered to the hands of Master Say, the prisoner was led away by the Mayor, and the Doctors dined together at University College."

His strange opinions

On the Friday following,[4] April 20, 1554, the Commissioners again sat in St. Mary's Church, when the three bishops were finally brought before them. Cran-

[2] Foxe's condensed report of it occupies twenty-five octavo pages [vi. 444-469] of small print. It was probably provided for his work by Bishop Jewell, who acted as one of the notaries or official reporters, and who assisted Foxe, some years afterwards, in compiling his *Acts and Monuments of the Church.*

[3] They are all printed in later pages of Foxe.

[4] The intervening day was occupied with a scholastic disputation on the same subject between Dr. Weston and Dr. Harpsfield, the latter "disputing" for his doctor's degree. Cranmer was present in the Divinity School at this Divinity exercise, and was allowed to take part in it when he chose to do so. On this occasion Weston and the others treated the fallen Archbishop with great respect. "Your wonderful gentle behaviour and modesty, good Master Doctor Cranmer," said Weston, "is worthy much commendation; and that I may not deprive you of your right and just deserving, I give you most hearty thanks in my own name, and in the name of all my brethren. At this saying, all the doctors gently put off their caps." [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 511-520.

CHAP V

A.D. 1554

mer was told that he had now been vanquished in argument before a very learned audience, and this being so, was he prepared to subscribe to the three Articles at first offered to him? Cranmer replied that it was false to say his arguments were answered; "for he was not suffered to oppose as he would, nor could answer as he was required, unless he would have brawled with them: so thick their reasons came, one after another. Ever four or five did interrupt him, that he could not speak." Being afterwards again called forward with Ridley and Latimer, he firmly refused to subscribe the Articles, and was then excommunicated. This shameful act was met by his dignified reply: "From this your judgement and sentence I appeal to the judgement of God Almighty; trusting to be present with Him in Heaven, for Whose Presence in the Altar I am thus condemned."

Cranmer is excommunicated

Three days after his condemnation for heresy Cranmer wrote to the Privy Council,[5] begging them to intercede with the Queen for his pardon, supposing that sentence of death would at once follow; but the letter was returned to him by Weston, into whose hands he had delivered it, the Prolocutor refusing to have anything to do with a matter which lay beyond his commission, and which also reflected upon the manner in which that commission had been carried out. Instead, however, of sentence of death being passed at once after Cranmer and the others had been convicted of heresy, they were let alone—prisoners, but not very strictly confined—for seventeen months. Nothing is really known of the Archbishop during

[5] Coverdale's *Lett. Mart.*, p. 13, ed. 1837.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555

this long time,[6] except that he wrote a great deal, as did Ridley also.[7]

It is probable that there was much negotiation going on with the Pope in the course of these seventeen months, and correspondence on the subject of the Archbishop's condemnation is very likely to exist in those archives of the Vatican which the Court of Rome dares not throw open to the examination of critical historians; for when the attack upon Cranmer was suddenly renewed, it took the form of a Commission from the Pope for the trial of the Archbishop. The condemnation of the three bishops by a Commission holding its authority from the Crown was now held to be void, the Ultramontane party maintaining that the Pope only could lawfully exercise supreme authority in such a matter, and that the trial of bishops must be before his officers, and not before those of the Crown of England. Ridley and Latimer were therefore to be tried before Commissioners appointed by Cardinal Pole, as the Pope's legate; and Cranmer, whose case

The Pope's Commission for his trial

[6] There is one touching anecdote: "A Mrs. Hickman, whose husband had fled out of the country, was sent down to a gentleman's house in Oxfordshire for her approaching confinement, as she was not able to bear the voyage to Germany. But when her child was born she was in a dilemma about the baptism, not liking to have it baptized by a 'Romish Priest' according to the ritual then of late restored. So she contrived to send a message to the Bishops then in prison at Oxford, to know what she should do, and their answer was, that she might safely employ the priest, for that 'the Service for Holy Baptism was of all the Services that in which the Church of Rome had least departed from the truth of the Gospel and the primitive practice.'" This anecdote is given in Massingberd's *Lectures on the Prayer Book*, p. 123, from the leaves of a copy of Beza's New Testament, belonging to a descendant of the family.

[7] It is curious to find the Archbishop saying, with reference to his appeal from the Pope to a General Council, that the chief reason of that appeal is his wish to "gain time (if it shall so please God) to live until I have finished mine answer against Marcus Antonius Constantius, which I have now in hand." This was a treatise against Gardiner, who was now dead. The Archbishop's fame, at least, rests on other labours.

differed from the others, for he had received the pall direct from the Pope, was to be tried by a "sub-delegate" of the Pope, specially appointed for the purpose. But in the case of Cranmer there seems to have been a compromise, for a Court was constituted for his trial, over which Brooks, Bishop of Gloucester, sub-delegate of the Pope, acted as judge, while Dr. Martin and Dr. Story, commissioners or proctors for the King and Queen, sat with him as assessors.

CHAP V
A.D. 1555

Is brought before the Pope's delegate

The day appointed for the trial was September 12, 1555. The place was the choir of St. Mary's Church, Oxford, where a platform ten feet high was erected for the Pope's representative in front of the altar, immediately under the reserved Sacrament, which hung immediately over his head; the two representatives of the Crown of England being appropriately relegated to more humble seats on the right and left, at a much lower elevation. As soon as the sub-delegate had taken his seat, Cranmer was summoned by the crier of the court in a manner which showed that no regard was paid either to his *ipso facto* degradation as a traitor or to the formal excommunication passed upon him as a heretic, the words used being, "Thomas, Archbishop of Canterbury, appear here and make answer to that shall be laid to thy charge, that is to say, for blasphemy, incontinency, and heresy; and make answer here to the Bishop of Gloucester, representing the Pope's person." When he arrived before the platform Cranmer respectfully saluted the two doctors as representatives of his sovereign, but he would not salute the Bishop because he represented the Pope, whose jurisdiction he repudiated. When the proceedings had been opened by long addresses from Brooks and Martin, the Archbishop more formally repudiated this

Refuses to recognize his authority

CHAP V

A.D. 1555

jurisdiction by saying, "My Lord, I do not acknowledge this session of yours, nor yet *you*, my mislawful judge; neither would I have appeared here this day before you, but that I was brought hither as a prisoner. And therefore I openly here renounce you as my judge, protesting that my meaning is not to make any answer, as in a lawful judgement (for then would I be silent), but only for that I am bound in conscience to answer every man of that hope which I have in Jesus Christ, by the counsel of St. Peter; and lest, by my silence, many of those who are weak, here present, might be offended. And so I desire that my answers may be accepted as extra judicialia." Then, kneeling down "towards the west," he said the Lord's Prayer, and, standing up, he recited the Creed. Much time was then taken with arguments on both sides respecting the authority of the Pope in England, but Foxe could give these only from the notes of a notary who reported on the Roman side, and he rightly says that they seem to be very imperfect as regards the Archbishop's arguments. Afterwards a series of sixteen written interrogatories were placed before the Archbishop, a long speech was made by Brooks on the subjects of the Papal Supremacy and Transubstantiation, eight of the Commissioners of 1554 were examined for the purpose of obtaining evidence as to Cranmer's statement when he appeared before them, and then the Court adjourned until the next day. On that day, which was September 13, 1555, the Court sat in New College Chapel, but nothing further seems to have been done at this time than to make a public citation of Cranmer to appear at Rome in eighty days, a citation which he had already received privately as early as September 7th, before the trial began.[8]

His formal protest against the jurisdiction of his judge

Evidence produced against him

[8] Jenkyns' *Cranmer*, i. 369.

CHAP V

A.D. 1555

His letter to Queen Mary

The Archbishop now wrote a long letter to the Queen[9] in defence of his conduct. The substance of this letter is a repetition of his arguments against the Papal Supremacy and Transubstantiation, but the following noble burst of patriotic remonstrance occurs among its opening words: "But, alas! it cannot but grieve the heart of any natural subject to be accused of the King and Queen of his own realm, and specially before an outward judge, or by authority coming from any person out of this realm: where the King and Queen, as if they were subjects within their own realm, shall complain and require justice at a stranger's hands against their own subject, being already condemned to death by their own laws. As though the King and Queen could not do or have justice within their own realms against their own subjects, but they must seek it at a stranger's hands in a strange land; the like whereof, I think, was never seen. I would have wished to have had some meaner adversaries; and I think that death shall not grieve me much more, than to have my most dread and most gracious Sovereign Lord and Lady (to whom under God I do owe all obedience) to be mine accusers in judgement within their own realm, before any stranger and outward power."

This letter was answered on behalf of the Queen by Cardinal Pole, who wrote at great length, and he wrote also another very long letter to the Archbishop on the subject of the Eucharist,[1] but the correspondence wrought no change whatever in the situation of affairs.

His trial at Rome.

Meanwhile the formality of a trial was going on in the Consistory Court of the Pope, by which Cranmer was excommunicated on December 4, 1555, having

[9] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, viii. 91. [1] Strype's *Cranmer*, iii. 597-644.

CHAP V

A.D. 1556

first been pronounced contumacious for not appearing at the end of the eighty days. On December 14th the Pope issued a Brief—having meanwhile, on the 11th, appointed Pole to the See of Canterbury[2]—addressed to the King and Queen, and the bishops of London and Ely, directing the Bishops to degrade the Archbishop, and the King and Queen to deprive him of his temporalities.[3] This Brief was acted upon by Bonner and Thirlby on February 14, 1556, when the Archbishop was degraded from his orders before the altar of St. Mary's Church.[4] Foxe says that the vestments used for this ceremony were all made of "canvas and old clouts, with a mitre and a pall of the same suit done upon him in mockery." But before any of them were removed from his person a striking scene took place. "They began then," says Foxe, in his very confused narrative, "to bustle toward his degrading, and first to take from him his crosier-staff out of his hands, which he held fast and refused to deliver, and withal, imitating the example of Martin Luther, pulled an appeal out of his left sleeve under the wrist, which he there and then delivered unto them, saying, 'I appeal to the next General Council; and herein I have comprehended my cause and form of it, which I desire may be admitted;' and prayed divers of the standers by, by name, to be witnesses."[5]

He is degraded by the Pope's authority

His appeal to a General Council

[2] The recognition of the appointment in England was forbidden under penalty of Præmunire by the Statute of Provisors. See vol. i. 263.

[3] This Brief is printed at length in Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, viii. 69.

[4] "The 14 of February Thomas Cranmer, late Archbishop of Canterbury, was disgraded of all his orders and dignities of bishop and priesthood at Oxford by Dr. Bonner, Bishop of London, the Bishop of Ely and others being with him in commission, sent from the Pope; and after was committed to the laity as a layman, to suffer at the King and Queen's pleasure." [Wriothesley's *Chron.*, ii. 133.]

[5] This appeal is also in Foxe, viii. 73.

CHAP V

A.D. 1556

The appeal was at first refused, but afterwards received by the bishops; but it was a mere formality, as Cranmer knew when he made it, his death having been determined on by the Ultramontane party, with, sad to say, Cardinal Pole, his successor, now at their head.

Having thus been excommunicated and degraded by authority of the Pope, Cranmer was handed over to the secular power by the same authority. A few days later, on February 24, 1556, King Philip and Queen Mary accepted the office of executioners to the Pope by issuing a Privy Seal[6] to the Lord Chancellor, Heath, Archbishop of York, directing him to affix the Great Seal to a writ to be issued to the Mayor and Bailiffs of Oxford, ordering the public execution of "Thomas Cranmer, a condemned heretic and heresiarch," by fire, for a manifest example to all other Christian people.

Royal Warrant for his execution

Nearly a month elapsed before the execution took place, and during that time strong efforts were made by the Ultramontane party to obtain from Cranmer such a recantation as might seem to the world a total renunciation of the principles and opinions for which he had suffered so long. For a time he was removed to Christ Church Deanery, "where he lacked no delicate fare, played at the bowls, had his pleasure for walking, and all other things that might bring him from Christ." He was also visited by the Spanish Friars De Soto, De Villa Garcia, by Henry Sydal, and others, who endeavoured to work upon him by argument. Under these influences he signed one recantation after another, to the number of six. After signing the first, he had written to Cardinal Pole begging his intercession with the Queen for the grant

His recantations

[6] Printed in Burnet's *Reform.*, v. 452, Pocock's Ed.

CHAP V A.D. 1556

of a few days' reprieve, that he might make a recantation of a more complete kind, and this was granted him. There can be no doubt that he expected by this means to escape the fearful death to which he was sentenced; but his persecutors had no intention of letting him slip from their hands. On March 18th he signed his sixth recantation; on Saturday, March 21st, Villa Garcia came to him early with a document embodying this recantation, and intended to be read publicly at the stake. Cranmer signed the document, but he had with a strange duplicity prepared another of exactly an opposite character, in which he disavowed all his previous recantations. He slipped the two documents into his bosom, apparently intending to use the first in case he should receive pardon, and the second in case he should see that he must certainly die.

His last recantation.

He goes to his funeral sermon at St. Mary's

At nine o'clock of that morning, March 21, 1556, five months and a few days after the execution of Ridley and Latimer, and more than four months after the death of Gardiner, the fallen Archbishop was led out of Bocardo, and escorted by a great crowd of county magistrates and the "posse comitatus," for an attempt at rescue was expected, to the University Church, where a solemn service was sung as the Nunc Dimittis of the reclaimed heretic, and a funeral sermon preached by Dr. Cole, the Provost of Eton, who had several times visited him that morning and the day before, and had given him fifteen crowns to expend in alms. "The lamentable case and sight of that man," says Foxe, "gave a sorrowful spectacle to all Christian eyes that beheld him. He that late was Archbishop, Metropolitan, and Primate of England, and the King's Privy Councillor, being now in a bare and ragged gown, and ill-favouredly clothed, with an old square

cap, exposed to the contempt of all men, did admonish men not only of his own calamity, but also of their state and fortune. For who would not pity his case, and bewail his fortune, and might not fear his own chance, to see such a prelate, so grave a councillor, and of so long-continued honour, after so many dignities, in his old years to be deprived of his estate, adjudged to die, and in so painful a death to end his life, and now presently from such fresh ornaments to descend to such vile and ragged apparel?"

CHAP V
A.D. 1556

Cranmer shed many tears, "one while lifting up his hands and eyes unto heaven, and then again for shame letting them down to the earth." When the sermon was ended, Dr. Cole called upon him to read his recantation, meaning that of which he had an hour or two before delivered a copy to Villa Garcia. His last weakness was now gone,—he seems always to have been invigorated by the sight of a large audience,—and after solemn prayer and declaration of his belief in the Articles of the Creed, and in the Old and New Testaments, he recanted all his recantations, ending his speech with the words, "And forasmuch as my hand offended, writing contrary to my heart, my hand shall first be punished therefor; for, may I come to the fire, it shall be first burned." All sympathy with the doomed man seems now to have been extinguished, and amidst cries of contempt he was led by the Divinity School and along the glacis, since levelled, and forming one side of Broad Street, to that part of the wide dry ditch outside the city walls where Ridley and Latimer had been burned.

He recants all his six recantations

The end is narrated by Foxe, and although the incident of burning the hand is obviously exaggerated, the narrative seems otherwise simple enough to be

CHAP V

A.D. 1556

true. "When the wood was kindled," he writes, "and the fire began to burn near him, stretching out his arm, he put his right hand into the flame, which he held so steadfast and immovable (saving that once with the same hand he wiped his face), that all men might see his hand burned before his body was touched. His body did so abide the burning of the flame with such constancy and steadfastness, that standing always in one place without moving his body, he seemed to move no more than the stake to which he was bound; his eyes were lifted up into heaven, and oftentimes he repeated, 'This unworthy right hand,' so long as his voice would suffer him; and using often the words of Stephen, 'Lord Jesus, receive my spirit,' in the greatness of the flame he gave up the ghost."

His conduct at the stake

It cannot be charitably doubted that, as has been before remarked, long affliction brought out the better qualities of Archbishop Cranmer, but a calm review of his character as a whole, a review free from party prejudice, must pronounce upon it a very unfavourable opinion.

Character of the Archbishop

So far as his name is associated with the original conversion of the old Latin Breviary and Missal into an English Prayer Book, it is a name of which the Church of England might well be proud; so far as he gave way to foreign and English Presbyterianism, it is a name of which the Church of England may be thoroughly ashamed. As regards his personal character, he was vain, weak, heartless, and arrogant; vain of his position as the great man of Lambeth and the friend of the sovereign; weak in servile submission to stronger wills than his own, as well as to flattering tongues and pens; heartless in the ruthless sacrifice of every man or woman, from Queen Catherine down-

wards,[7] who stood in his way; arrogant to the last degree of insult towards Gardiner, Bonner, Day, and others of his suffragans. He was no great theologian, as is shown by his disputation at Oxford. For his earlier and sounder controversial work he depended upon old English authorities and Latin translations of the Fathers; his later, such as the Catechism going by his name, which was written by Poynet, was done chiefly by his chaplains, and by the foreign Divines to whom he gave shelter at Lambeth.

CHAP V

A.D. 1556

Happily for the Reformation, Archbishop Cranmer was not a Presbyterian by birth and country, and so was not so distinctly a foe to the Church of England as some of her later rulers have been; but his associations by marriage and friendship influenced him most mischievously in that direction, and in the last two years of his ecclesiastical rule he gave to the English Reformation an impetus towards Puritanism which endangered its Catholic character, alienated its Catholic supporters, and led to strifes and controversies that polluted the land with blood for a century. It is hard to look upon such a man otherwise than as one at whose door must be laid the guilt of many a slain body and many a lost soul.

The harm which he did in his later years.

Of the Archbishop's latest days there is no need to speak harshly. His weak will was no doubt still further weakened by his troubles, and to this, as well as to his passionate clinging to life, his six recantations may be attributed. When he had actually to face death, beyond all hope of escape, his behaviour at the last was not unworthy of a brave man.

[7] And worse than heartless, for it is but too certain that when he sanctioned the marriage of Henry VIII. with Anne Boleyn, and performed the rite, he knew well that the King had been associated in a licentious intimacy with her sister, Mary Boleyn. [*Saturday Rev.*, xxi. 290.]

CHAP V

A.D. 1558

Although about two hundred persons suffered at later times during the reign of Queen Mary, Cranmer was the last of those whose names are otherwise known to history. The persecution did not end until two years after his death. Five persons were burned at Canterbury on November 10, 1558, and these were the last of the sufferers. The Queen died on November 17th, Cardinal Pole on the day following, and then the Spaniards and the Italians fled from the country, much to the country's welfare and joy. The short and sharp rule of Ultramontanism was at an end.

Death of Queen Mary

CHAPTER VI

THE REVIVAL OF THE REFORMATION UNDER QUEEN ELIZABETH

[A.D. 1558—1603]

WHEN Queen Elizabeth came to the throne her relations towards the Reformation were already very different to those of her deceased sister. Mary was born in 1516; she grew up to womanhood under the mediæval system of the Church of England; she was trained in it by a mother, whose own training had been strictly ultramontane; she received her ideas of religious politics before there had been any breach with the Pope; she was thirty-three years of age before the English Prayer Book had seen the light, and she was much prejudiced against the leaders of the English Reformation by the wrongs which she and her mother had suffered at their hands. Elizabeth, on the other hand, was born in 1533, her mother being the patroness of the Puritans; long before she grew up to womanhood the mediæval system of English religion had completely passed out of sight; during all the period of her religious training she had lived under a government which regarded the doctrine of the Pope's Supremacy as one that could be held only by traitors; she was only sixteen years of age when the Latin

Different training of Queens Mary and Elizabeth

CHAP VI A.D. 1558

Services of the Church of England were superseded by the Book of Common Prayer, and she had no reason whatever for any adverse personal feeling towards the leading men among the English Reformers. It may be added also that while Queen Mary was naturally and by reason of her training a person of severely devotional mind, Queen Elizabeth was a born politician, and inherited from her father the highest gifts of statecraft, religion holding a very subordinate place in her purview of life.

Elizabeth a politician and stateswoman

§ 1. The Early Policy of Queen Elizabeth's Reign

Queen Mary's death took place between five and six o'clock[1] on the morning of Thursday, November 17, 1558; and before noon Elizabeth, who was then at Hatfield, had been proclaimed Queen, her accession being received with all the same signs of national goodwill which had been exhibited at that of her sister. On the following Wednesday she took up her abode at the Tower,[2] thus publicly assuming the sovereignty of the country, and for forty-five years afterwards she maintained her greatness and her popularity as Queen of England, as only one other sovereign, that one a Queen also, has done in all the succeeding ages. For forty years of that time she had a wise counsellor and

Her accession

[1] Machyn's *Diary*, 178.

[2] "The xxiii. of November the quen Elizabeth's grace toke here journey from Hadley, be-yond Barnett, toward London, unto my lord North's plas, with a M. and mor of lordes, knyghtes, and gentyllmen, lades, and gentyll-women; and ther lay v. days. . . . The xxviiith day of November the Queen removed to the Tower from the lord North's plase, which was the Charter Howsse. . . . And so here Grace lay in the towre unto the v. day of Dessember, that was Sant Necolas evyn. . . . The v. day here Grace removyd by water under the bryge unto Somersett plase." [Machyn's *Diary*, 180.]

CHAP VI
A.D. 1558-59

faithful friend in Sir Robert Cecil, afterwards Lord Burleigh, and it was probably by his advice that she was guided in her policy towards the Church at the beginning of her reign.

This policy was much the same as that which had been used in the first year of Edward VI. Her sister's funeral at Westminster Abbey, occupying December 10th and the four following days, was conducted with the usual ceremonies of the Salisbury ritual, and so also was that of Cardinal Pole at Canterbury, his funeral being not only that of an Archbishop, but also that of a member of the royal family.[3] On the 23d a solemn dirge and Requiem Mass were sung for Charles V. at Westminster Abbey,[4] and the Queen herself attending Mass, as she had been accustomed to do during the reign of her sister. On January 20, 1559, she was crowned with the usual ceremonies and Mass at Westminster Abbey, an Order of Council having been sent to Bishop Bonner, on January 11th, "to supply the Bishop of Carlisle, who is appointed to see to the Queen's coronation, with all pontifical apparatus customarily used by bishops for magnificent coronations of illustrious sovereigns."[5] On the 25th of the

The ancient rites still used

[3] There is an entry in the Council Book, dated December 10, 1558, providing for the funeral of the Cardinal, and an earlier order directing the Bishops of Worcester and St. Asaph to attend it. Machyn also says that he lay at Lambeth "tyll the consell sett the tyme he shuld be bered, and when, and wher," and his funeral was a very sumptuous one. [Machyn's *Diary*, 178, 181.]

[4] "The xxiii. day of December was the obseque at Westmynster, with the same herse that was for quen Mare, was for Charles the V., Emporowre of Rome, was durge, and the morow masse with . . . mornars, and . . . was the cheyff morner." [Machyn's *Diary*, p. 184.]

[5] The quotations from the Privy Council Book are taken from the Lansdowne MS., 238, in the British Museum. This contains Minutes of Council of Queen Elizabeth from November 20, 1558, to April 30, 1559. On the first page is the entry, "Our Sovereign Lady Queen Elizabeth beginneth her reign the xviith day of November 1558, her highness being then at her in the county of Hertford." The first three days' entries are dated "at Hatfield," but that for the 24th at the Charter House.

CHAP VI

A.D. 1559

same month, when the Queen opened Parliament, a solemn Mass of the Holy Ghost was also celebrated in her presence, as had been the ancient custom, except that the Communion was administered in both kinds, and that some portions of the Service were said in English.[6] Even in the middle of March so little change had been made, that Jewell wrote to Peter Martyr, "The Roman Pontiff was not yet cast out; no part of religion was yet restored; the country was still everywhere desecrated with the Mass; the pomp and insolence of the bishops was unabated. All these things, however," he added, "are at length beginning to shake, and almost to fall."[7]

Caution used respecting changes

It must, indeed, have been generally felt on the first accession of Queen Elizabeth to the throne that she would not continue the religious policy of her sister. She gave no immediate sign on the subject, and the proclamation issued on the day of her accession enjoined her subjects "not to attempt, upon any pretence, the breach, alteration, or change of any order or usage presently established within this our realm." But she at once asked the advice of her most intimate counsellors, perhaps Sir Nicolas Bacon and Sir Robert Cecil, and a paper exists which contains answers to certain questions which seem to have been put to them by her.[8] The first of these questions was, "When the Queen's Highness may attempt to reduce the Church of

Her advisers in ecclesiastical affairs

[6] It had been before resolved by the Queen's more immediate advisers, "That where there be more chaplains at the Mass, that they do always communicate with the executor in both kinds," and that the Queen herself was "to receive the Communion as her Majesty pleaseth." [Strype's *Ann.*, ii. 397; Burnet's *Reform.*, v. 503, Pocock's Ed.] A proclamation soon afterwards ordered general reception in both kinds.

[7] *Zurich Lett.*, i. 10.

[8] This paper is given at length with various readings from several copies in Pocock's Edition of Burnet's *Reformation*, v. 497. It is also in Strype's *Annals*, ii. 392 ed. 1824.

CHAP VI

A.D. 1559

England again to the former purity, and when to begin the alteration;" and the reply was, "At the next Parliament," a statesmanlike reference of the question to the precedent set in the reigns of her father and brother, and suggesting on the face of it that no movement should be made without caution, nor without the consent of the nation. The direction which the alteration was about to take is, however, shown by subsequent references to a Book of Common Prayer, and to some arrangements which were to be made for its preparation; and it is highly probable that these were being carried out for several weeks before the meeting of Parliament. But the first public intimation of coming changes was given by the Queen herself, and in her own characteristic way. While she was attending Mass on Christmas Day in her chapel at Westminster Palace, she sent a message to the celebrant, Bishop Oglethorpe, desiring him to omit the ceremony of the Elevation; and as he declined to do so, sending a reply that his body was at her Majesty's command, but his soul was his own, she rose and left the chapel with her suite immediately after the Gospel. Whether the Queen intended to assert an authority over the ceremonies of the Church, or whether she thoughtlessly considered the rite of Elevation to be one specially significant of Roman ritual, it is certain that she intended her act to be made public, and it was known far and wide the very next day.[9]

Careful regard to precedent

Changes foreshadowed by the Queen

[9] The incident is narrated in Camden's *Life of Elizabeth;* but there is also an account of it in a contemporary letter, as follows: "And for news, you shall understand that yesterday being Christmas Day, the Queen's Majesty repaired to her great closet with her nobles and ladies, as hath been accustomed at such high feasts. And she perceiving a bishop preparing himself to make all in the old form, she tarried there until the Gospel was done, and when all the people looked for her to have offered according to the old fashion, she with her nobles returned again from the closet and

CHAP VI

A.D. 1559

Two days after this incident, on December 27, 1558, a Proclamation was issued which ordered that no public prayers, rites, or ceremonies should be used except such as were already in use and by law received. But it was directed that the Gospel and Epistle, the Lord's Prayer and the Creed, should be said in English, that the Ten Commandments should be read without any exposition every Sunday, that sermons should not at present be preached, and that the English Litany should be again brought into use, as it was used in the Queen's Chapel.[1] And as the custom of the Chapel Royal was thus indicated as that which ought to be followed, so no doubt the royal example was also followed at once in many parish churches by the revival of Communion in both kinds. On March 22, 1559, a Proclamation was issued, in anticipation of an Act of Parliament to the same effect, enforcing the statute [1 Edw. VI. cap. 1] against irreverent speaking of the Sacrament of the Altar, and enjoining general reception of the Communion in both kinds.[2] Further changes were left to be brought about by the Act of Uniformity and the Book of Common Prayer.

Revival of English in Divine Service

Meanwhile a stop was at once put to the persecution of the Protestants. If any had remained under sentence of execution at the death of the late Queen, that sentence was of course not carried out. But the Council Book shows that Commissions were issued to

The persecution stopped

the Mass unto her privy chamber." [Wright's *Queen Eliz.*, i. 3; Ellis' *Orig. Lett.*, ii. 262.] Perhaps the Queen did the same thing on other occasions, for on March 4, 1559, the Duchess of Suffolk wrote to Cecil regretting that there was so much halting between two opinions, and mentioning a report that her Majesty was in the habit of leaving church after the reading of the Gospel. [State Papers, Dom. Eliz., i. 123.]

[1] Strype's *Annals*, ii. 389; Cardwell's *Docum. Ann.*, 176.

[2] Lansd. MS., 198.

CHAP VI

A.D. 1559

sheriffs and magistrates, some dated within three weeks of the Queen's accession, directing that inquiry should be made respecting persons who had been sent to prison "under suspicion for religion," and if no good cause were found for their detention, to set them at liberty on their own recognizances to appear when called on.[3] Thus many were released in London, Maidstone, and Colchester, three great centres of the persecution; and it is probable that all who had been left in prison for their religious opinions at the death of Queen Mary were thus set free within a few weeks afterwards.[4]

Prisoners for religion released

It being thus made evident that a change was about to take place in the religious policy of the Government, great hopes were entertained by the Puritans that the partial success which had attended their attacks upon the ancient principles of the Church of England in the end of King Edward's reign would now reach its consummation under the rule of his sister Elizabeth. Many of their self-exiled friends reluctantly[5] forsook their pleasant retreats on the banks of the Rhine, or on the lakes of Geneva and Switzerland, in the hope of rising on the wave of public opinion at home; and Calvin, the pope of the Puritans, wrote a patronizing admonition to Cecil, which, to his surprise and indig-

Exiles for religion return home

[3] On January 3, 1559, Bishop Bonner was ordered to bring before the Council "all such Commissions as were made to him and others for the examination and ordering of heresies and other misorders in the Church in the time of the late Queen;" and on a later day the fines imposed "for examination of heresies and other misdemeanors in the Church," and still remaining in hand, are ordered to be paid over to Mr. Throgmorton of the Chamber.

[4] Strype's *Annals*, i. 54.

[5] "O Zurich, Zurich!" wrote Jewell, "how much oftener do I now think of thee than ever I thought of England when I was in Zurich!" [*Zur. Lett.*, i. 23]. Perhaps he thought more frequently of England when he sat in his pleasant palace on the banks of the Wiltshire Avon.

CHAP VI A.D. 1559

nation, was not even acknowledged.[6] All these sanguine expectations were far, however, from being fulfilled; and while they were at the highest, the Queen's Government was quietly preparing for a Catholic restoration of the Church which had been so overshadowed by Ultramontanism.

§ 2. The Constitutional System of the Reformation restored

Parliament reviving the Reformation

The first Parliament of Queen Elizabeth's reign met on January 23d, and sat until May 8, 1559, and the first Act which it placed upon the statute-book was one by which the independence of the Church of England was constitutionally re-established.

This Act was originally entitled "A Bill to avoid," that is, to eject or annul, "the usurped power claimed by any Foreign Potentate in this Realm, and for the Oath to be taken for Spiritual and Temporal Offices;" but this title was eventually altered to that under which it now stands in the statute-book, "An Act to restore to the Crown the ancient Jurisdiction over the Estate, Ecclesiastical and Spiritual, and abolishing all Foreign Powers repugnant to the same" [1 Eliz. cap. 1]. It was brought into the House of Commons very early in the session, and passed into the House of Lords on February 17, 1559, but it underwent such a thorough discussion in and between both Houses, that it did not finally pass until April 29th, when the session was just at the point of coming to an end.

After a preamble setting forth the necessity of fresh legislation on account of the reintroduction into

[6] Gorham's *Reformation Gleanings*, p. 407.

CHAP VI
A.D. 1559

England of "usurped and foreign powers and authorities," which had been extinguished by Henry VIII., the Act of Queen Mary's reign by which this reintroduction was effected [1 Phil. and M. cap. 8] is repealed; and ten Acts of Henry VIII.'s reign which relate to the same subject are revived.[7] A section follows repealing the persecuting statutes, which is noticed elsewhere, and then the Act goes on to corroborate the preceding repeal and revival sections by a positive enactment, "That no Foreign Prince, Person, Prelate, State, or Potentate, Spiritual or Temporal, shall at any time after the last day of this Session of Parliament use, enjoy, or exercise any manner of power, jurisdiction, superiority, authority, pre-eminence, or privilege, spiritual or ecclesiastical, within this Realm" [§ 16]. Thus the exercise of the Papal authority in England was again made illegal as effectually as it had been by the Acts of Henry VIII.'s reign.

The Papal Supremacy finally abolished

But as in that reign so in this; the extinction of the Papal Supremacy made a void which it was absolutely necessary for the good government of the country to fill up. Some portions of the jurisdiction assumed by the Pope must necessarily be reabsorbed into the Crown; such, for example, as the authority to punish, without further appeal, clergy who should be guilty of crimes punishable by secular law. For other portions of that jurisdiction it is possible that an ecclesiastical authority might have been created by the ingenuity of legislators which would have been accepted by the

Some supremacy necessary

[7] The revived Acts are 23 Hen. VIII. cap. 9; 24 Hen. VIII. cap. 12; 25 Hen. VIII. caps. 1, 8, 19, 21; 26 Hen. VIII. cap. 14; 28 Hen. VIII. cap. 16; 32 Hen. VIII. cap. 28; 37 Hen. VIII. cap. 17. These Acts, and the bearing which each had on the Reformation, are noticed in the first volume of this work.

CHAP VI

A.D. 1559

country, but it is certain that none such was already in existence, nor was any such proposed at the time. Hence the void made by the extinction of the Papal Supremacy was almost necessarily filled up by the revival of the Royal Supremacy. The most simple way in which the legislature could have done this would have been by the revival of Henry VIII.'s Act of Supremacy [26 Hen. VIII. cap. 1], but this was not done, that Act being one of those which, having been repealed in Queen Mary's reign, were now "to remain and be repealed and void." The reasons for this were probably Queen Elizabeth's aversion to the title "Supreme Head of the Church of England," and the general feeling of Parliament that the powers conferred by the Act of Supremacy were too wide, turning the King into a Pope. The course now taken, therefore, was to insert a section which re-established the corrective jurisdiction of the Crown over "the ecclesiastical state and persons," so far as it might be lawfully exercised,[8] provision being made in a clause, which will be noticed further on, for the creation of a court by which this jurisdiction should be carried out. Thus, as the preceding section of this Act had extinguished the Papal Supremacy, this section revived the Royal Supremacy. But in the restoration of the latter no such extravagant claims were made for the

The Queen's dislike of the title 'Supreme Head'

[8] This section has been already printed [vol. i. p. 234] in illustration of Henry VIII.'s Act of Supremacy, but it will be convenient to the reader to have it placed here also. It is, "That such jurisdictions, privileges, superiorities, and pre-eminences, spiritual and ecclesiastical, as by any spiritual or ecclesiastical power or authority hath heretofore been, or may lawfully be exercised or used, for the visitation of the ecclesiastical state and persons, and for reformation, order, and correction of the same, and of all manner of errors, heresies, schisms, abuses, offences, contempts, and enormities, shall for ever, by authority of this present Parliament, be united and annexed to the imperial crown of this realm" [1 Eliz. cap. 1, § 17].

CHAP VI
A.D. 1559

Crown as had been made by Henry VIII., when he gave commissions to the bishops as he might have given them to his judges; when he sent his vicegerent, a layman, to preside over the Convocation of Canterbury; and when he took to himself the unjustifiable title of "Supreme Head of the Church of England." As the Royal Supremacy was established under Queen Elizabeth, the Crown is, through the judges, supreme over all its subjects, clergymen as well as laymen; it is the ultimate judge of appeal in all ecclesiastical causes as well as in civil causes; by a constitutional fiction, the *congé d'élire*, it appoints archbishops and bishops; it also empowers the two Convocations to pass canons, and gives legal force to them by its assent to them and its promulgation of them. But if the legitimate exercise of this ecclesiastical jurisdiction by the Crown is an anomaly, it is one of those anomalies of which the English constitution is patient, as being a generally beneficial one; and if it is at all a burden to the clergy or the laity of the Church of England, it has certainly never yet been proved that the burden of a jurisdiction which is absolutely necessary for the good government of the Church could be made lighter if exercised by any other authority.

Force of Royal Supremacy as now established

To conclude the account of Elizabethan legislation respecting the Royal and the Papal Supremacy, practical force was given to it by imposing the following oath on the clergy, on all who held honours and offices under the Crown, on candidates for Holy Orders, and on those who took university degrees:—

The Oath of Allegiance and Supremacy

"I, A. B., do utterly testify and declare in my conscience, that the Queen's Highness is the only supreme governor of this realm, and of all other her Highness' dominions and countries, as well in all spiritual or ecclesiastical things or

CHAP VI A.D. 1559

causes as temporal; and that no foreign prince, person, state, or potentate, hath or ought to have any jurisdiction, power, superiority, pre-eminence, or authority, ecclesiastical or spiritual, within this realm; and, therefore, I do utterly renounce and forsake all foreign jurisdictions, powers, superiorities, and authorities, and do promise that from henceforth I shall bear faith and true allegiance to the Queen's Highness, her heirs and lawful successors, and to my power shall assist and defend all jurisdictions, privileges, pre-eminences, and authorities, granted or belonging to the Queen's Highness, her heirs and successors, or united and annexed to the Imperial Crown of this realm. So help me God, and by the contents of this book."

Penalties for rejecting the Royal Supremacy

Refusal to take this oath incapacitated those who so refused from holding any benefice in the Church, or any office under the Crown; and those who already held preferments or offices and refused to take it were deprived of them [§§ 19-26].

or for accepting that of the Pope

As regards the Papal Supremacy, further force still was given to its legislative repudiation by enacting heavy penalties on all who should "by writing, printing, teaching, preaching, express words, deed, or act, advisedly, maliciously, and directly affirm, hold, stand with, set forth, maintain or defend the authority," etc. extinguished by this Act. Persons so offending were, for the first offence, to forfeit all their property to the Crown, or if they had no property, to suffer imprisonment for a year; for the second offence they were to incur the penalties of *præmunire* under 16 Rich. II. cap. 5; and for the third offence they were to be accounted guilty of high treason, and be put to death as traitors [§§ 27-31]. Four years later, in 1563, this portion of the Act was supplemented by another [5 Eliz. cap. 1], rendered necessary by the "marvellous outrage and licentious boldness" with which the

usurped power of the See of Rome had been asserted, and the penalties were then made more severe, *præmunire* being that awarded for the first offence, and death the punishment for the second, whether the offence were that of openly maintaining the authority of the Pope or that of refusing to take the Oath of Allegiance and Supremacy. But more will be said respecting this later Act in a subsequent chapter.[9] It is sufficient to say here that the Papal Court endeavoured to restore the authority of the Pope in England by excommunication of the Queen, by conspiracies against her throne and her life, and by foreign invasion; and that the plots of his supporters made it necessary for the Crown to enforce the Oath of Allegiance and Supremacy with the most stern severity, a severity that must have been considered cruel if it had not been justified by the duty of self-preservation.

CHAP VI
A.D. 1559

Necessity for enforcing the Oath of Supremacy

§ 3. The Devotional System of the Reformation restored

While Parliament was thus reviving the independence of the Church of England by re-establishing the supremacy of the Crown, measures were also being taken for restoring her reformed devotional system.

It has been shown in the beginning of this chapter that every endeavour was made to prevent hasty and unauthorized changes, but that in anticipation of actual legislation on the subject two proclamations were issued, one of which partially restored the use of the vernacular in Divine Service, while the other authorized and enjoined that return to Communion in both kinds

Restoration of full Communion

[9] See chap. viii.

CHAP VI

A.D. 1559

which was already becoming general. Meanwhile the first of these proclamations spoke of "consultation to be had by Parliament, by her Majesty, and her three estates of this realm, for the better conciliation and accord of such causes as at this present are moved in matters and ceremonies of religion;"[1] the consultation thus referred to ending in the re-establishment of the Book of Common Prayer under the authority of a new Act of Uniformity.

Plans for reviving the Prayer Book

In the paper of answers to questions respecting the reduction of "the Church of England again to the former purity," by which the Queen and Privy Council were guided, and which has been previously referred to, there was a paragraph specially relating to the revision of the Prayer Book. "What shall be the manner of the doing of it?" was the question,—that is, of restoring the purity of the Church of England,—and the reply was, "This consultation is to be referred to such learned men as be meet to show their minds therein, and to bring a platt or book hereof ready drawn to her Highness; which being approved by her Majesty, may so be put in the Parliament House. To the which for the time it is thought that these are apt men, Dr. Bill, Dr. Parker, Dr. May, Dr. Cox, Mr. Whitehead, Grindall, Pilkington, and Sir Thomas Smyth, to call them together, and to be amongst them. And after the consultation with these, to draw in other men of learning, and grave and apt men for your purpose and credit, to have their assents." It was also decided that these persons should meet "at Sir Thomas Smyth's lodging in Channon row."[2]

The plan contemplated appears to have been that

[1] Strype's *Annals*, ii. 392.

[2] Burnet's *Reform.*, v. 502, Pocock's Ed.; Strype's *Annals*, ii. 397.

CHAP VI
A.D. 1559

of appointing the seven Divines and the Queen's Secretary as a Royal Commission, whose duties would be that of drafting a Book of Common Prayer; and it is probable that, although Convocation is not mentioned by name, that body is intended by the cautious and reserved designation "other men of learning," who were to give "their assents" before the draft book was sent by the Queen in Council to the House of Lords. But when Convocation met, it proved to be thoroughly impracticable, as it so often has been at the time of an important crisis, and all the business it would do was to show its uncompromising hostility to the Reformation by passing five Articles, in which the Supremacy of the Pope and the doctrine of Transubstantiation were affirmed in the most ultramontane form. By so doing it came into direct conflict with the Crown and with the two Houses of Parliament, and having thus effaced itself as a working part of the constitution, its functions with respect to the revision of the Prayer Book were suspended.

Why Convocation not trusted with the revision

The Royal Commission eventually consisted of the following persons, none of whom were bishops at the time nor for some months afterward:[3]—

Names of Prayer Book revisers

Matthew Parker, subsequently Archbishop of Canterbury.
Edmund Grindal, subsequently Bishop of London, Archbishop of York, and Archbishop of Canterbury.
James Pilkington, subsequently Bishop of Durham.
Richard Cox, subsequently Bishop of Ely.
William May, appointed Archbishop of York, but died before consecration.

[3] Parker, Grindal, Cox, and Sandys were consecrated in December 1559, Guest in March 1560, and Pilkington in March 1561. Sir Thomas Smith was Secretary to Edward VI. and to Queen Elizabeth. He is said to have been "at least in deacon's orders," but he had held preferments in the time of Henry VIII., which makes it all but certain he was a priest, though afterwards knighted.

CHAP VI
A.D. 1559

William Bill, subsequently Dean of Westminster.
Sir Thomas Smith, subsequently Dean of Carlisle.
David Whitehead, [subsequently declined the Archbishopric of Canterbury].
Edwin Sandys, subsequently Bishop of Worcester and Archbishop of York.
Edmund Guest, subsequently Bishop of Rochester and of Salisbury.

Second Book of Edward VI. revived

When they were appointed it seems to have been supposed that an almost new Book of Common Prayer was required by the circumstances of the times, although there is a tradition that both the Queen and her chief minister, Cecil, desired to revive the First or High Church Prayer Book of Edward VI. But in the end it was determined neither to revive that Prayer Book nor to make a new one, but to adopt the Second or Low Church Prayer Book of Edward VI., with two significant alterations which at once raised it to a much higher level of doctrine and ritual.

Alteration of words of Administration

1. One of these alterations was in the words with which the Holy Sacrament is administered to the communicants. In the Book of 1549 these words were similar to those of the ancient Latin Service, being, "The Body of our Lord Jesus Christ, which was given for thee," or "The Blood of our Lord Jesus Christ, which was shed for thee," "preserve thy body and soul unto everlasting life." But in the Book of 1552, in which the doctrine of our Lord's Presence in the Eucharist was less distinctly recognized, these words were suppressed, and there were substituted for them the words, "Take and eat this in remembrance that Christ died for thee, and feed on Him in thy heart by faith, with thanksgiving," and "Drink this in remembrance that Christ's Blood was shed for thee,

and be thankful." The Elizabethan divines now united the earlier and ancient words of 1549 to the later and modern words of 1552, and by this skilful touch of revision restored the ancient and catholic idea, that of a commemorative act which derives its spiritual value originally from the mysterious Presence of Christ in the consecrated elements, and not from the mere faith of the person who receives them.

CHAP VI
A.D. 1559

2. The other important alteration was that which restored, by means of the "Ornaments Rubric," those vestments of the clergy and those utensils of the Church which were in use in the second year of Edward VI. [Jan. 28, 1548—Jan. 27, 1549], when the ancient Latin Mass of the Salisbury Missal was still in use, with (for the ten latter months of that year) the supplementary addition of an English form for administering the Sacrament to the Laity.[4]

Addition of the Ornaments Rubric

When the Prayer Book had thus been prepared by the Commission of Divines, it was presented to the authority from which they had received their commission,—that is, to the Queen in Council. In the meanwhile an Act of Uniformity similar to the two Acts of Edward VI. was being discussed and put into shape in the House of Commons, and to this Act the revised Prayer Book was attached as a schedule. It passed the Lower House on April 25th, and was read a first, second, and third time on the following three

A new Act of Uniformity

[4] See pp. 86-89. The "Ornaments Rubric" received a very special confirmation by being repeated in the last clause but one of the Act of Uniformity [1 Eliz. cap. 2, § 25]. In that place the words are added, "until other order shall be therein taken by the authority of the Queen's Majesty, with the advice of her Commissioners appointed and authorized under the Great Seal of England for causes ecclesiastical, or of the Metropolitan of this realm." No "other order" was ever, however, taken by the authority here set forth, and the rubric, having been retained at the revision of the Prayer Book in 1661, is still in force.

CHAP VI
A.D. 1559

days in the House of Lords, finally passing on April 28, 1559, and receiving the Royal Assent about May 8th, when the Parliament was dissolved. It was enacted that the Book should be taken into use on St. John the Baptist's Day, June 24th, but it was used in the Royal Chapel on Sunday, May 12th, and in St. Paul's Cathedral on Wednesday, May 15th, and was so generally adopted by the clergy throughout the country, that a few months afterwards it was found only 189 out of 9400 had refused to use it. Since that time, with the short interval of the Cromwellian tyranny, the sweet Alleluias and the plaintive Misereres of the English Prayer Book have been heard without intermission in the minsters and the parish churches of England for three centuries and a quarter; and the more the catholic principles and practices stamped upon it at the Reformation have been maintained, the dearer has their Prayer Book become to the hearts of the English people.

General adoption of the Prayer Book

§ 4. Provisions for the Discipline of the Church

High-handed use of the Prerogative

The restoration of the Supremacy of the Crown over the clergy and laity of the Church of England was accompanied by a renewal of those high-handed efforts to govern the Church in detail which had been made by Henry VIII., by the Privy Council of Edward VI., and, in the earlier part of her reign, by Queen Mary. And as in the reigns of the three preceding Tudors, so in that of Queen Elizabeth, the prerogative, which is the last refuge of even high-handed statesmen in modern times, was habitually used for a time in the discipline of the Church. In being so used, it was

often also strained to its utmost constitutional limits. Thus, wherever ecclesiastical government was needed, or was supposed to be needed, which went beyond the ordinary jurisdiction of the bishops, it was for some years carried on by means of Royal Commissions, Proclamations, and Injunctions, instead of by Synodal Canons. Happily the sceptre of the Tudors and the Stuarts was not so severe a rod to the Church as that which came to be wielded by the ministers who controlled the Crown after the Revolution of 1688; and when the danger of the immediate crisis had passed away, the Convocations of the Church were again allowed to issue Canons for its government.

Yet Convocation not suppressed

The Ecclesiastical Commissioners

When Henry VIII. revived the Supremacy of the Crown he seems to have held the view that the rights and duties belonging to it differed little from those which belonged to the Supremacy of the Pope; and as the Pope frequently exercised his authority by means of legates, it was apparently in imitation of this custom that the King appointed a vicegerent or vicar-general, Thomas Cromwell, as his deputy in the exercise of his visitatorial and reforming powers. With the death of Cromwell, however, the office fell into abeyance, and was never revived. During the remainder of Henry's reign any special Acts of the Supremacy were exercised by means of commissions, and the same course was followed in that of his son. Queen Mary also, notwithstanding her repudiation of the Royal Supremacy, issued at least two such commissions, one of a general nature on February 8, 1556,[5] and another of a special character on February 16, 1556.[6]

How the Royal Supremacy was exercised

[5] Burnet's *Reform.*, v. 469, Pocock's Ed. [6] Wilkins' *Concil.*, iv. 140.

CHAP. VI. A.D. 1559

Queen Elizabeth and her Parliament neither revived the title of "Supreme Head of the Church of England," which had been used by her father and brother,[7] nor the office of vicegerent. The Act which restored its ancient jurisdiction to the Crown of England styled the sovereign "the only Supreme Governor of this realm, and of all other her Highness' dominions and countries, as well in all spiritual or ecclesiastical things or causes as temporal," and enacted that she and her successors should from time to time appoint commissioners under the Great Seal for executing the jurisdiction of Supreme Governor in "ecclesiastical things or causes" [1 Eliz. cap. 1, §§ 17, 18]. Shortly after the Act was passed, on July 19, 1559, nineteen Ecclesiastical Commissioners were thus appointed, with Parker and Grindal at their head, for enforcing the Act of Uniformity and the Act of Supremacy, very large powers being entrusted to them; and these first constituted the tribunal which was afterwards known as "The Court of High Commission in causes Ecclesiastical."[8]

The title now associated with the Supremacy

Powers of the High Commission Court

These Commissioners, or any six of them, were empowered to summon juries and witnesses in any part of England for the trial of offenders against the two statutes named, "and also of all and singular heretical opinions, seditious books, contempts, conspiracies, false rumours, tales, seditious misbehaviours, slanderous words or showings, published, invented, or set forth by any person or persons against us, or contrary or against any the laws and statutes of this

[7] Sandys wrote to Parker on April 30, 1559, "Mr. Lever wisely put such a scruple in the Queen's head that she would not take the title of Supreme Head." [Parker's *Corresp.*, p. 66.]

[8] The Commission is printed in Cardwell's *Documentary Annals*, i. 223, and is very similar to the second of Queen Mary's, named above.

our realm, or against the quiet government and rule of our people and subjects." They were to try all offences committed against Divine Service or the clergy, and to put in force the laws made against those who obstinately absented themselves from church. They were also to try all offences against morality, having authority to punish such offences with fine or imprisonment. And, lastly, they were "to visit, reform, redress, order, correct, and amend," in all parts of the kingdom, "all such errors, heresies, crimes, abuses, offences, contempts, and enormities, spiritual and ecclesiastical, wheresoever, which by any spiritual or ecclesiastical power, authority, or jurisdiction, can or may lawfully be reformed, ordered, redressed, corrected, restrained, or amended," thus executing all that authority which had been declared to belong to the Crown in respect to its Supremacy in things and causes spiritual and ecclesiastical.

in exercising ecclesiastical jurisdiction

This Court of High Commission existed for eighty years, the numbers of the Commissioners being increased to forty-four. Its jurisdiction was frequently called in question by the judges at Westminster, who alleged that it encroached unconstitutionally upon the jurisdiction of the bishops in their Diocesan Courts, and that it inflicted great hardship upon the subject. Its action was often restrained by prohibitions; and at length it became so obnoxious that, in the year 1640, it was abolished by Act of Parliament [16 Ch. I. 11] on the ground that the powers exercised by the Commissioners did not belong "to the ecclesiastical jurisdiction restored by" the Act of Elizabeth, under which they were appointed. Had the Court executed the Royal Supremacy only in the discipline of the clergy, no objection would probably have been raised

Its abolition on constitutional grounds

CHAP VI

A.D. 1559

against its unconstitutional character either by the Parliament or the nation at large; but as its yoke was laid upon the shoulders of the laity also, it was as much hated by them as the Episcopal Courts had been hated by their forefathers in the early part of the sixteenth century. Spiritual discipline is never attractive to English laymen.

The Injunctions of Elizabeth

[A.D. 1559]

The Queen and her advisers followed the precedents of her father's and brother's reign more exactly by publishing a series of Injunctions preparatory to the General Visitation of the Church which was about to take place. These were declared to be for "the advancement of the true honour of Almighty God, the suppression of superstition," and the planting of "true religion, to the extirpation of all hypocrisy, enormities, and abuses," and they were published about the middle of the year 1559, soon after Parliament had finished its sittings.

These injunctions based on those of former reigns

The Elizabethan Injunctions were fifty-three in number, the principal portion of them, twenty-seven of the longest, being taken from those of Henry VIII. and Edward VI., with a few verbal changes. Some of the older Injunctions were, however, omitted, as being either obsolete or being superseded by the rubrics of the Prayer Book, and twenty-six new ones were given. To estimate the amount and character of the changes thus introduced, a comparison may be made between the following summary and that which has previously been given of the Edwardian Injunctions.[9]

[9] See pp. 52-59.

CHAP VI
A.D. 1559

1. THE PAPAL SUPREMACY.—The only alterations made in the two Injunctions which deal with this subject are—(1) that instead of naming the Bishop of Rome a general expression is used, that of "all usurped and foreign power;" and (2) that instead of calling the Royal Supremacy "the King's authority, jurisdiction, and supremacy of the Church of England and Ireland," it is called "the ancient jurisdiction" of the Crown "over the State Ecclesiastical" [1, 9]. The first alteration is in character with all the proceedings in the first four years of the Queen's reign, when care was always used to avoid forms of expression which might cause unnecessary offence to the Pope and the Papal party. The second alteration shows a desire to have it understood that the claim made for the Crown was no novelty, and was considered to be nothing more than a claim to exercise such authority in ecclesiastical matters as it had always been the right of the Crown to exercise, however much that right had been allowed to lie dormant.

The Royal Supremacy an ancient jurisdiction

2. SUPERSTITIOUS PRACTICES.—The Edwardian Injunctions respecting these were substantially incorporated into the Elizabethan, omitting part of one which referred to pilgrimages, and part of another which related to superstitions connected with ceremonies now abolished, both having become obsolete. But a new one was added, enjoining "That no persons shall use charms, sorceries, enchantments, witchcraft, soothsaying, or any suchlike devilish device, nor shall resort at any time to the same for counsel or help" [32]. The strong belief in such superstitions which prevailed among the Puritans in England and elsewhere is well known to all students of "folk-lore."

Superstitions of the Puritans

CHAP VI
A.D. 1559

3. Matters connected with Divine Service and Churches.—Several of the preceding Injunctions on these subjects were now omitted, and several new ones were added. That respecting lights before the Sacrament was covered by the Ornaments Rubric, that respecting the use of Epistles, Gospels, and Lessons in English was fully provided for by the Prayer Book, and neither were now necessary. The Injunction respecting Prime and the lesser Hours was obsolete, as these were no longer used in the form spoken of; and that relating to private Churchings and Offices for the Dead was also omitted, though for what reason is not clear, as these were long kept up by the Puritans in their own way. It is also to be observed that the parenthesis so singularly added in the time of Edward VI. to the Injunction of Henry VIII. respecting the reading of the Bible, and which limited the permission to read it to those who were "authorized and licensed thereto," was now expunged. There is no evidence that such licences were ever asked for or granted during Edward's reign, and the verbal revival of this pre-Reformation restriction is quite unaccountable.

Working of the Ornaments Rubric

The additions under this head were of considerable importance. The Edwardian Injunction respecting the Litany, in which it was forbidden to say it in procession, was now modified by a clause which confirmed the ancient custom of "beating the bounds," or "the perambulation of the circuits of parishes," when it is enjoined that "they shall once in the year at the time accustomed, with the curate and substantial men of the parish, walk about the parishes, as they were accustomed, and at their return to the church make their Common Prayers" [18]. This obviously points to the use of the Litany in a pro-

Processional Litanies in beating the bounds of parishes

cessional form; and from the Visitation Articles of bishops at later periods it appears that the ordinary practice was to use the Litany and the Homily "for the days of Rogation Week," with its appended "Exhortation."[1] CHAP VI A.D. 1559

An Injunction was also added which directed that "the Litany and Prayers or Suffrages" should be said "at the accustomed hours of service upon Wednesdays and Fridays, not being Holy-days" [48]. This was afterwards expanded into the fifteenth Canon, and was probably made necessary by the opposition which the Puritans offered to the responsive form of service. Similar opposition to gestures of reverence made it necessary to enjoin "that in time of the Litany, and all other Collects and common supplications to Almighty God, all manner of people shall devoutly and humbly kneel and give ear thereunto; and that whensoever the Name of Jesus shall be in any lesson, sermon, or otherwise in the Church pronounced, due reverence be made of all persons, young and old, with lowness of courtesy, and uncovering of heads of the men-kind, as thereunto doth necessarily belong, and heretofore hath been accustomed" [52]. This was afterwards expanded into the eighteenth Canon. Injunction respecting the Litany

A rather remarkable Injunction was also added for the continuance of choral service in the Church of England. Stating that endowments for the maintenance of singing men and boys have been made "in divers collegiate and in some parish churches," it and choral service

[1] In the "Advertisements" issued by Archbishop Parker and the other Ecclesiastical Commissioners in 1564, it was ordered as follows: "Item, That in the Rogation Days of procession they sing or say in English the two psalms beginning 'Benedic anima mea,' etc., with the Litany and Suffrages thereunto, with one homily of thanksgiving to God, already devised and divided into four parts, without any superstitious ceremony heretofore used."

CHAP VI
A.D. 1559

enjoins that "no alterations be made of such assignments of living as heretofore hath been appointed to the use of singing or music in the Church, but that the same so remain." But just as Wolsey had forbidden the use of "prick-song," or elaborately scored music, and had ordered "plain-song" alone to be used, so this Elizabethan Injunction directs that the old plain-song of the Church is to be used in such collegiate or parish churches as are referred to, "a modest and distinct song so used in all parts of the Common Prayers in the Church, that the same may be as plainly understanded as if it were read without singing." Cathedrals and college chapels not being named, were left free to use the "prick-song," which has been heard in them from that time to the present. It was also permitted, "for the comforting of such that delight in music, ... that in the beginning or in the end of the Common Prayers, either at morning or evening, there may be sung an hymn or suchlike song to the praise of Almighty God, in the best sort of melody and music that may be conveniently devised, having respect that the sentence," or sense, "of the hymn may be understanded and perceived" [49]. The "hymn" in this case being, of course, that which we now know by the name of "anthem,"[2] and the grand and solemn compositions of Tallis, Farrant, Bird, Purcell, Boyce, and other English masters of counterpoint or prick-song, having arisen on the foundation of this Elizabethan Injunction.

The use of plain-song in the Prayers,

with anthems or hymns for elaborate music

[2] "The xxiiii. day of Marche" [1560], "was Mydlent Sonday, Master Barlow, byshope of sant Davys, dyd pryche at the cowrtt, but the queen was not at yt; but ther was mony pepull; and he was in ys rochett and ys chymmer, and at v. of the cloke yt ended; and contenentt her chapell whent to evyning song, and ther the crosse stood on the auter, and ii. candlystykes and ii. tapurs bornyng, and after done a goodly anteme song." [Machyn's *Diary*, 229.]

CHAP VI

A.D. 1559

Lastly, the churchwardens were to deliver to the visitors "the inventories of vestments, copes, and other ornaments, plate, books, and specially of grails, couchers, legends, processionals, manuals, hymnals, portasses, and suchlike appertaining to the Church" [47].

4. THE DUTIES AND DISCIPLINE OF THE CLERGY.—On this subject also there were several omissions and additions. The provision respecting curates was withdrawn, perhaps from a feeling that it tended to encourage non-residence; and nothing was now said about chantry priests becoming schoolmasters, probably from a feeling that they might often be disloyal to the new order of things. Preaching against pilgrimages and relics was no longer enjoined, as it had become unnecessary; nor was the preaching of the cathedral and collegiate clergy enforced, as the subject would be dealt with in the special statutes of those bodies.

Unlearned clergy not to have cure of souls

On the other hand, new Injunctions were added, ordering that none should be admitted to any cure or function who were "utterly unlearned," however they might be able to read enough just "to say Mattins or Mass" [43]; and they were charged "to read leisurely, plainly, and distinctly," those who were "but mean readers" being enjoined to "peruse over before, once or twice, the chapters and homilies, to the intent they may read to the better understanding of the people, the more encouragement to godliness" [53]. They were also to catechize "the youth of the parish for half-an-hour at the least before Evening Prayer," every Holy-day and every other Sunday in the year [44]. No clergymen were to officiate out of their own parishes without license [8]; none were to marry without the permission of the bishop of the

CHAP VI

A.D. 1559

diocese, of two justices of the peace, and of the parents or the master and mistress of the intended wife [29]; and all clergy and members of universities were to "use and wear such seemly habits, garments, and such square caps as were most commonly and orderly received in the latter year of the reign of King Edward the Sixth" [30].

Records of the Marian persecution

Lastly, the ordinaries were required to exhibit to the visitors "their books, or a true copy of the same, containing the causes why any person was imprisoned, famished, or put to death for religion" [45]; this Injunction being apparently intended for some such purpose as that so industriously carried out by Foxe in his "Acts and Monuments of the Church," often called "The Book of Martyrs."

5. The Duties and Discipline of the Laity.—As regards lay persons there were also several changes in the Injunctions. As the Catechism now appeared in the Prayer Book, and all persons were required to know it before being confirmed, the Injunction that they should learn the Creed, the Lord's Prayer, and the Ten Commandments before being admitted to Communion was withdrawn. So also was the provision that parents should teach their children some useful occupation, to prevent them from becoming thieves or beggars, the latter subject being scarcely a suitable one for an ecclesiastical injunction.

Against erroneous doctrines

It was, however, enjoined in new sections that none should "wilfully and obstinately defend or maintain any heresies, errors, or false doctrine contrary to the faith of Christ and His Holy Spirit" [31]; that none should interpret the Scriptures in a rash or contentious way, but "commune of the same, when occasion is given, reverently, humbly, and in the fear of God, for

his comfort and better understanding" [37]; that the Queen's subjects should forbear all vain and contentious disputations in matters of religion," and should not "use in despite or rebuke of any person these convicious words, papist or papistical, heretic, schismatic, or sacramentary, or any suchlike words of reproach" [50]; and a strict rule was made forbidding the publication of any books or papers without license from some of the authorities named [51]. All schoolmasters also were required to have the license of the bishop of the diocese, they being first found qualified as to learning, dexterity in teaching, good life, and right understanding of God's true religion" [40]; they were enjoined to teach their scholars "to love and do reverence to God's true religion now truly set forth by public authority" [41]; and also to accustom them "to learn such sentences of Scriptures as shall be most expedient to induce them to all godliness" [42]. None were to be permitted to interrupt the clergy while engaged on their duties in church [36]; nor to "be otherwise busied in the time of the service than in quiet attendance to hear, mark, and understand that is read, preached, or ministered" [38]. Persons were not to forsake their own parish churches, "except it be by the occasion of some extraordinary sermon in some parish of the same town" [33]; and "in every parish three or four discreet men, which tender God's glory and His true religion," were to be appointed by the ordinaries to observe the attendance or non-attendance of the laity at church, to admonish the absentees, and, if necessary, to "denounce them to the ordinary" [46]. No "innholders or alehouse keepers were to sell meat or drink during church hours" [34].

CHAP VI

A.D. 1559

Polemical discussions discouraged

Regulations respecting attendance at church

To these fifty-three Injunctions were appended three

CHAP VI

A.D. 1559

documents of an authoritative character, but which were not numbered with them.

An authoritative explanation respecting the Royal Supremacy

I. The first was "An admonition to simple men deceived by malicious." It was a note explanatory of the sense in which the Oath of Allegiance, including the Queen's style and title as "the only Supreme Governor of this realm in all spiritual or ecclesiastical things or causes, as temporal," was to be interpreted. After stating that a perverse construction had been put upon the oath, "which certainly never was meant, nor by any equity of words or good sense can be thereof gathered," it goes on to declare "that nothing was, is, or shall be meant or intended by the same oath to have any other duty, allegiance, or bond required by the same oath than was acknowledged to be due to" her father and brother. The Queen then forbids her subjects to give credit to those "perverse and malicious persons which most sinisterly and maliciously labour to notify to her loving subjects how by words of the said oath it may be collected that the kings or queens of this realm, possessors of the crown, may challenge authority and power of ministry of Divine Service in the Church; wherein her said subjects be much abused by such evil-disposed persons." All that the Queen claims is that which had been claimed by Henry VIII. and Edward VI., "which is and was of ancient time due to the Imperial Crown of this realm,—that is, under God, to have the sovereignty and rule over all manner of persons born within these her realms, dominions, and countries, of what estate, either ecclesiastical or temporal, soever they be, so as no other foreign power shall or ought to have any superiority over them." In this sense alone the oath is required to be taken.

CHAP VI
A.D. 1559

II. The next of these authoritative notes or proclamations is one "For Tables in the Church." It states that in some parts of the kingdom "the altars of the churches be removed, and tables placed for the administration of the Holy Sacrament according to the form of the law there-for provided; and in some other places the altars be not removed, upon opinion conceived by some other order therein to be taken by her Majesty's visitors." The matter is of no great moment, it is added, except for the sake of uniformity, so that the Sacrament be duly and reverently ministered, but at the same time no altar is to be removed without the oversight of the clergyman and the churchwardens. Then follows a direction "that the holy table in every church be decently made, and set in the place where the altars stood, and there commonly covered as thereto belongeth;" but that when the Holy Communion is to be celebrated the holy table is to be so placed within the chancel, "as whereby the minister may be more conveniently heard of the communicants in his prayer and ministration, and the communicants also more conveniently and in more number communicate with the said minister."[3]

Regulations as to the position of the Lord's Table

A direction is then added, that "Where also it was,

[3] Further "Orders" on the subject of chancels and altars were published by the Ecclesiastical Commissioners on October 10, 1561. In these it is directed, among other things, that every rood loft is to be taken down as far as the beam crossing the chancel, and that the rood screen shall then be surmounted by "some convenient crest" instead of the loft; that where the chancel screen has been removed, "a comely partition betwixt the church and the chancel" is to be erected; that the chancel stalls are to remain in their old situation; that the altar steps are not to be removed; that the fonts are to remain in their accustomed place, and that "the curates take not upon them to confer Baptisms in basins, but in the font customably used."

A printed copy of these Orders is preserved in the British Museum Library, where it is numbered 5155 aa. It has also been printed in Parker's *Ornaments Rubric*, p. 52.

CHAP VI

A.D. 1559

Regulations respecting the form and size of wafer breads

in the time of King Edward the Sixth, used to have the Sacramental Bread of common fine bread, it is ordered for the more reverence to be given to these holy mysteries, being the Sacraments of the Body and Blood of our Saviour Jesus Christ, that the said Sacramental Bread be made and formed plain, without any figure thereupon, of the same fineness and fashion round, though somewhat bigger in compass and thickness, as the usual bread and water heretofore named singing cakes, which served for the use of the private Mass." This order was in accordance with a rubric on the subject in the First Prayer Book of Edward VI., and was obeyed in many churches down to recent times; but common bread is also permitted by a rubric at the end of the Communion Service, which enacts that "to take away all occasion of dissension and superstition which any person hath or might have concerning the Bread and Wine, it shall suffice that the bread be such as is usual to be eaten, but the best and purest Wheat Bread that conveniently may be gotten."[4]

III. The third note set forth "The form of bidding

[4] When Archbishop Parker was appealed to as to the meaning of the rubric, he wrote, "It shall suffice, I expound, where either there wanteth such fine usual bread, or superstition be feared in the wafer-bread, they may have the Communion in fine usual bread; which is rather a toleration in these two necessities, than is in plain ordering, as it is in the Injunction." [Parker's *Corresp.*, p. 376.] He also wrote to Sir Wm. Cecil, "As you desired, I send you here the form of the bread used, and was so appointed by order of my late Lord of London" [Grindal] "and myself, as we took it not disagreeable to the Injunction. And how so many churches have of late varied I cannot tell; except it be the practice of the common adversary the devil to make variance and dissension in the Sacrament of Unity." [*Ibid.*, 378.] Parker was also consulted by Parkhurst, Bishop of Norwich, on the subject. He first referred him to the Rubric and Injunction, and in a subsequent letter wrote, "I trust that you mean not universally in your diocese to command or wink at the loaf-bread, but, for peace and quietness, here and there to be contented therewith." [Parker's *Corresp.*, 460.] In

CHAP VI
A.D. 1559

the Prayers to be used generally in this uniform sort." This is the form still in use and embodied in the fifty-fifth Canon. But the royal style used in King Edward's days, in the words, "Wherein I first commend to your devout prayers the King's Most Excellent Majesty, Supreme Head, immediately under God, of the spirituality and temporality of the same Church," was now altered to, "And herein I require you most specially to pray for the Queen's Most Excellent Majesty, our Sovereign Lady Elizabeth, Queen of England, France, and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, and Supreme Governor of this realm, as well in causes ecclesiastical as temporal."

Alteration in the Bidding Prayer

The fifty-three Injunctions and the three additional notes thus published in 1559, and principally compiled from those previously set forth by Henry VIII. and Edward VI., were in force during the reign of Queen Elizabeth, but were eventually superseded by Canons which were framed by Convocation and promulgated by the Crown, and in which many of the Injunctions were substantially incorporated.

The General Visitation of the Church

Visitation a function of the Supremacy

In exercising that function of the Royal Supremacy which was stated to consist in "the visitation of the ecclesiastical state and persons, for reformation, order, and correction of the same, and of all manner of errors, heresies, schisms, abuses, offences, contempts, and enormities" [1 Eliz. cap. 1, § 17], perhaps the principal object which the Queen and her advisers had in

his Visitation Articles Parker also inquired, "And whether they do use to minister the Holy Communion in wafer-bread, according to the Queen's Majesty's Injunctions?"

CHAP VI A.D. 1559

view was the administration of the Oath of Allegiance. But this was not the only object, for the same Commissioners who were appointed to administer the oath were also authorized to impose the Book of Common Prayer upon the clergy, to see that obedience was given to the Injunctions by both the clergy and the laity, and to correct as far as they could such ecclesiastical abuses as they found among both clergy and laity. As in the case of the Edwardian Visitation, several sets of Commissioners were appointed, each set having to visit four or five dioceses, but the number of the visitors was larger than before, and their names have not been preserved in a complete form.[5] The powers which they received extended their authority over all ecclesiastical places, and over all persons in such matters as belong to the discipline of the Church.

The number and authority of the visitors

Limitation of their powers

But as the authority of the visitors was derived from the Crown, and not from the Church, there were some things in which they could not act; and in such cases they were to use a similar authority to that used by the Crown in summoning the Convocations, calling synods together for the reformation of abuses which could only be reformed by spiritual authority.[6]

In addition to the Injunctions issued by the Crown the visitors were also provided with a set of Articles of

[5] Strype has preserved some of the names, with the dates of the Commissions, which were issued in June, July, and August 1559. But his lists always speak of "divers others" in each Commission: they do not extend to every diocese; and in one case at least there is an important omission, the Archbishop of York having been added to the Commission for the Northern Dioceses, but not being named by the historian. [Strype's *Annals*, i. 245.]

[6] One of these Commissions, that for the Northern Dioceses, has been preserved in the Record Office, and was printed by Bishop Burnet. [Burnet's *Reform.*, v. 217, Pocock's Ed.; Cardwell's *Doc. Ann.*, i. 217.]

CHAP VI
A.D. 1559

Enquiry, fifty-six in number, some applying to the clergy and others to the laity; these Articles pointing to the abuses which might most generally be expected, chiefly those connected with the devotional system of the Church and those connected with immorality. Thirty-three of these were taken from those Visitation Articles of Edward VI. which were intended for the parochial clergy and the laity,[7] and the remaining twenty-three were new. There is nothing special in the character of these Enquiries, some relating only to temporary matters, and the large body forming the basis of the Visitation Articles subsequently used by the bishops in their triennial visitations of their particular dioceses.

Articles of Enquiry

The Oath of Allegiance was tendered to the bishops by the visitors of the Diocese of London, and was refused by all except one; but Camden, Heylin, Burnet, and Strype all assert that the number of beneficed clergy, including cathedral dignitaries, who refused to take the oath at this time, fell short of two hundred. But there is reason to think that many benefices had become vacant[8] through the flight of the Marian

Most of the clergy took the Oath of Allegiance

[7] See p. 49, note.

[8] One of the Articles of Enquiry was, "Whether the church of your parish be now vacant or no; who is the patron thereof; how long it hath been vacant; who doth receive the tithes, oblations, and other commodities during the time of the vacation, and by what authority; and in what estate the said church is at this time, and how long the parson or vicar hath had that benefice." No doubt there was a great deficiency of clergy during the reign of Queen Elizabeth. In 1560 there is an entry in Bishop Grindal's Register [fol. 7; Lansd. MS., 1031] which consists of a copy of a letter from Archbishop Parker to the Bishop of London, signifying that the latter had lately been ordaining artificers on account of the scarcity of clergy, and forbidding him to do so any more, as these persons had not behaved themselves to the credit of the Gospel. Thirty years later, in 1592, Convocation argued in favour of pluralities on the ground that of 8800 and more benefices there were not 600 which were sufficient for learned men; and that if they were all sufficient there could not be found a third part of that number of men to supply them. [Cardwell's *Synod.*, ii. 576.]

LIBRARY
Perkins School of Theology
Southern Methodist University

CHAP VI
A.D. 1559

clergy, and out of the ten thousand clergy who occupied the benefices of the Church of England in Queen Mary's days there were probably many more than two hundred who were unwilling to comply with the changes made in the opening of Queen Elizabeth's reign. Those who were willing to comply subscribed to the following document :—

Subscription of the clergy

"We do confess and acknowledge the restoration again of the ancient jurisdiction over the State, Ecclesiastical and Temporal, of this realm of England, and abolishing of all foreign power repugnant to the same, according to an Act thereof made in the last Parliament, begun at Westminster, January the 23d, in the first year of our Sovereign Lady Queen Elizabeth, and there continuing and kept to the 8th of May then next ensuing; the Administration of the Sacrament, the Use and Order of the Divine Service in manner and form as it is set forth in a book commonly called *The Book of Common Prayer*, &c., established by the same Act; and the orders and rules contained in the Injunctions given by the Queen's Majesty, and exhibited in this present Visitation, to be according to the true Word of God, and agreeable with the doctrine and use of the Primitive and Apostolic Church.—In witness whereof, hereunto we have subscribed our names." [9]

Whether or not the visitors dealt with the immorality of the laity there is nothing to show; but it is probable that the High Commission Court was left to execute this part of the duties assigned to them.

The Canons Ecclesiastical

In all these provisions for the discipline of the Church it must be acknowledged that if the Crown did not actually exceed its constitutional powers, it yet acted with a high-handedness characteristic of the

[9] Strype's *Annals*, i. 255.

Tudor sovereigns. For this there was some justification in the circumstances of the period, for the persistent attempts of the Roman Court to regain its authority over the Church of England involved the Crown in a struggle for its own existence, especially in the earlier part of Queen Elizabeth's reign; and it may have seemed sound, and even necessary, policy thus to use the authority of the Royal Supremacy in detail by means of Injunctions, General Visitations, and Ecclesiastical Commissions. Gradually, however, though slowly, there arose a tendency to fall back upon the more ancient method of Church discipline, that in which the ordinary jurisdiction of Church officers was exercised in detail according to general rules laid down in Ecclesiastical Canons.

Temporary use of the Royal Supremacy.

The *modus vivendi* between Church and State in respect to such canons was settled by what is called "The Submission of the Clergy" in 1532-33, at which time it was agreed that—[1] *First*, The ancient Canons of the Church of England should remain in force where they did not clash with the laws of the realm or the Royal Supremacy; [2] *Secondly*, That Convocation should not discuss the enactment of any new canons without a license from the Crown; [3] *Thirdly*, That no new canons should have any force unless they were ratified by the Crown.[1] Subsequently an attempt was made to produce a set of canons which should effectually meet the wants of the Church in respect to the spiritual discipline of the clergy and laity, but this attempt entirely failed,[2] and at the accession of Queen Elizabeth the system of Royal Injunctions was again adopted. So much freedom was afterwards allowed to Convocation, however, that

Reformation settlement as to legislation by Canons

[1] See vol. i. pp. 226-229. [2] See pp. 112-115.

CHAP VI

A.D. 1559

the bishops at length ventured to compile what they called "A Book of Discipline," that is—

THE CANONS OF 1571.[3]—These canons were sixty in number, and were classed under ten heads, beginning with ten canons relating to the duties of bishops, —laws for whose government are often left out in episcopal legislation,—and twelve relating to deans and archdeacons. The principal compilers of these canons were Archbishop Parker, Horne, Bishop of Winchester, and Coxe, Bishop of Ely, but they were subscribed by all the bishops of the province of Canterbury, as well as by the Archbishop of York and the bishops of the province of York, though it does not appear that they were subscribed by the clergy of the Lower House of Convocation in either province. Nor did they ever receive that formal assent of the Crown, without which they could not have the full force of ecclesiastical law.

Episcopal Canons not laws ecclesiastical

THE CANONS OF 1575.[4]—These were passed by the Convocations of Canterbury and York, and were ratified and promulgated by the Crown, being thus numbered among the ecclesiastical laws of the land. As they were originally presented to the Crown for its sanction, they were fifteen in number; eleven of them enforcing exactness in restricting the ministrations of the Church to an episcopally ordained and properly educated clergy; two relating to penance; one forbidding baptism to be administered by any but the clergy; and one permitting marriages to be solemnized in Lent and other seasons when they were formerly forbidden. The two last-named canons were not ratified by the Crown, and thus the ancient rule

Canons of constitutional authority

[3] Cardwell's *Synod.*, i. 111.

[4] *Ibid.*, i. 133.

CHAP VI

A.D. 1559

respecting the validity of lay baptism and the ancient restrictions respecting marriage were still left in force.

Disciplinary Canons

THE CANONS OF 1585.[5]—These were six in number, dealing again with the growing evil of an unauthorized and imperfectly educated ministry; with penance and excommunication; with abuses that had grown up in the substitution of marriage by license instead of by banns; with the evil of pluralities; and regulating the payment of fees to ecclesiastical officers. The six canons thus added to the ecclesiastical laws were afterwards substantially incorporated into those which follow.

THE CANONS OF 1597.[6]—Towards the close of the Queen's reign an attempt was made to deal more fully with the subject of Church discipline, and twelve voluminous canons were promulgated for the purpose of meeting the principal complaints that were made respecting the condition of the Church. These canons embodied the substance of most of those which had been enacted during the reign of Queen Elizabeth, and dealt also with some others; and they were themselves, in substance, embodied in the far more voluminous and complete code which was published in the beginning of the next reign.

The Canons now in force

THE CANONS OF 1603.[7]—The sanction of the Crown, which had been given to three of the preceding sets of canons, did not extend beyond the reign of the sovereign who had granted it.[8] The accession of James I. made it necessary, therefore, to re-enact them; and the opportunity was taken of compiling a more

[5] Cardwell's *Synod.*, i. 139.

[6] *Ibid.*, i. 147.

[7] *Ibid.*, i. 165-329. They are printed by Cardwell both in the Latin and the English form; but authentic copies in English have very frequently been printed, and they are also to be found at the end of most large Prayer Books.

[8] Gibson's *Codex*, 994; Wake's *State of the Church*, 507.

CHAP VI
A.D. 1559

comprehensive code, in which the discipline of the Church should be thoroughly dealt with on the principles of the Reformation. The canons which were thus compiled were one hundred and forty in number, and were distributed into thirteen sections relating to the status of the Church of England [1-12]; the Services of the Church [13-30]; the Ministry of the Church [31-76]; Schoolmasters [77-79]; the Fabrics and Ornaments of Churches [80-88]; Churchwardens and Sidemen [89, 90]; Parish Clerks [91]; the Ecclesiastical Courts, with their Judges and Officers [92-138]; and Synods [139-141]. These canons remained unaltered for two hundred and sixty-two years; but in the year 1865 new ones were framed in the place of the 36th, 37th, 38th, and 40th, relating to the subscription of the clergy to the Thirty-nine Articles, and to their declaration against simony at their institution to benefices.

Subjects of the Canons

Canons of 1865

In the publication of these canons, both in 1603 and in 1865, great care was taken to comply exactly with the conditions imposed by the "Act of the Submission of the Clergy" [25 Henry VIII. cap. 19]; the license of the sovereign being given to both Convocations before the canons were brought before them, and the canons when passed by the two Convocations being ratified and confirmed by letters-patent under the Great Seal, by James I. and by Queen Victoria, for themselves, their heirs and successors; and by the same authority propounded, published, and commanded "to be diligently observed, executed, and equally kept by all our loving subjects[9] of this our

Process by which Canons become Laws Ecclesiastical

[9] It was ruled by Lord Hardwicke that these canons do not, *proprio vigore*, bind the laity. But the great judge qualified this decision by adding, "I say *proprio vigore*, by their own force and authority; for there are many provisions contained in these

kingdom, within the provinces of Canterbury and York, in all points wherein they do or may concern every or any of them." CHAP VI A.D. 1559

The Canons of 1603 absorbed a very large proportion of the Injunctions of Henry VIII., Edward VI., and Queen Elizabeth, as also of the Canons of 1571, 1575, 1585, and 1597. But they did not fulfil the purpose proposed by the Acts for the revision of the pre-Reformation Canon Law,[1] and that law is still in force, subject to the limitation imposed by the "Act of Submission" respecting the Supremacy of the Crown and Statute Law. Old Canon Law not superseded

§ 5. Provisions for Uniformity of Belief

It was much easier to state authoritatively what was to be regarded as the doctrine of the Reformed Church of England than to impose upon its members laws for their spiritual discipline. In this case, as well as in that of the devotional system, the Convocation of Queen Elizabeth's reign fell back at once upon the work which had already been done by their predecessors, reviving the Articles of Religion, but taking them carefully into consideration, and revising them The Edwardian Articles of Religion revived

canons which are declaratory of the ancient usage and law of the Church of England, received and allowed here, and which in that respect, and by virtue of such ancient allowance, will bind the laity." [Middleton *v.* Croft, Str. *Rep.*, 1056; 2 Atkyn's *Rep.*, 650.]

The theory of the time was evidently that if they bound the clergy they also bound the laity, and on this account the authority of the canons was much disputed. A Bill was passed in the House of Commons which would have enacted that no canon or constitution ecclesiastical made within the preceding ten years, or to be made thereafter, should be of any force to impeach or hurt any person in his life, liberty, lands, or goods, unless it were first confirmed by Parliament. This was considered as an invasion of the Supremacy of the Crown and of the constitutional rights of Convocation, and before it could pass Parliament was dissolved. But the principle of the Bill is now fully admitted, so far as the laity are concerned.

[1] See p. 112.

CHAP VI

A.D. 1559

before they were again published as an authoritative document. Something has already been said by anticipation respecting this revised version of the Articles,[2] but it is necessary to show in this place by what steps it was led up to, and how it formed part of a great resettlement of the Reformation.

The Ultramontane Propositions of Convocation

The Marian proctors sent back to Convocation

When the first Parliament and the first Convocation of Queen Elizabeth's reign met, in the beginning of the year 1559, the colour of the Parliament had been changed by Cecil's management, under which the Sheriffs took measures to return candidates who had been nominated by the Crown; but Convocation could not be thus manipulated, and it remained of the same ultramontane colour as in the latter days of Queen Mary. The Archbishopric of Canterbury being vacant, the Bishop of London, Bonner, became President of the Convocation of Canterbury, and the Prolocutor was Nicolas Harpsfield, Archdeacon of Canterbury, who had been one of Cardinal Pole's principal agents during the reign of Queen Mary. Under Harpsfield's guidance the clergy of the Lower House endeavoured to make a stand for the maintenance of that ultramontane doctrine which had been introduced by the Spanish party and Pole. They therefore drew up the following five Articles,[3] which they presented to the Upper House for ratification with an explanatory preface :—

Their demands as to doctrine

"Reverend Fathers, public report affirms that many doctrines of the Christian religion hitherto believed by Christians, and handed down to us from Apostolic times,

[2] See p. 111. [3] Wilkins' *Concil.* iv. 179; Strype's *Annals*, i. 79.

CHAP VI
A.D. 1559

are now called in question, more especially such as are contained in the subjoined Articles. Thinking it our duty to provide not only for our own eternal salvation, but for that of those who are committed to our charge, and stirred to action by the examples of our forefathers who have lived in like times with ourselves, we deem it right to affirm our faith as contained in the following Articles :—

Five points of Ultramontanism

"I. That in the Sacrament of the Altar, by virtue of the words of Christ, duly spoken by the priest, is present *realiter*, under the kinds of Bread and Wine, the natural Body of Christ, conceived of the Virgin Mary, and also His natural Blood.

"II. That after the consecration there remains not the substance of bread and wine, nor any other substance, but the substance of God and Man.

"III. That in the Mass is offered the true Body of Christ and His true Blood, a propitiatory sacrifice for the living and the dead.

"IV. That to Peter the Apostle, and his lawful successors in the Apostolic See, as Christ's vicars, is given the supreme power of feeding and ruling the Church of Christ militant, and confirming their brethren.

"V. That the authority of handling and defining concerning the things belonging to Faith, Sacraments, and Discipline Ecclesiastical hath hitherto ever belonged, and ought to belong, only to the pastors of the Church, whom the Holy Ghost for this purpose hath set in the Church, and not to laymen."

They were allowed to drop without notice

These Articles were sent by Convocation to the two universities, and the first four were subscribed by most of the university. They were also presented to the Crown for ratification[4] through the Lord Keeper of the Great Seal, Sir Nicolas Bacon, but no notice appears to have been taken of them, either by the Queen or by Parliament. Although they fell to the ground, these five Articles are, however, historically

[4] Or perhaps to the House of Lords, as is said by Strype, though why this should be done is not evident.

CHAP VI

A.D. 1559

useful, as showing in a clear and condensed form what were the two distinctive principles for which the Papal party now stood out: [1] *First*, Transubstantiation in its most extreme form; [2] *Secondly*, The Supremacy of the Pope. But the Church of England had resolutely declined to accept the over-defined theory of Transubstantiation, and had firmly repudiated the Supremacy of the Pope. Three hundred and twenty years have since passed, and no further attempt to restore Ultramontanism has been made by the official representatives of the clergy.

Ultramontanism never revived in the Church of England

The Conference in Westminster Abbey

It was in consequence probably of the publication of these five Articles by Convocation that the Queen and her advisers determined to invite some of the leaders of the Ultramontane party to hold a conference in Westminster Abbey with some of the leaders of the opposite side; and arrangements were made under the authority of the Crown for this conference to take place in the presence of the Privy Council and both Houses of Parliament. The divines appointed on either side were as follows:—

Conference held in public

Marian Divines.	*Elizabethan Divines.*
White, Bishop of Winchester.	Scory, Bishop of Chichester.
Watson, Bishop of Lincoln.	Jewell, Bishop-Elect of Salisbury.
Bayne, Bishop of Lichfield.	Horne, Bishop-Elect of Winchester.
Scott, Bishop of Chester.	Aylmer, afterwards Bishop of London.
Cole, Dean of St. Paul's.	Grindal, Bishop-Elect of London.
Harpsfield, Archdeacon of Canterbury.	Guest, Bishop-Elect of Rochester.
Chedsey, Archdeacon of Middlesex.	Cox, Bishop-Elect of Ely.
Langdale, Archdeacon of Lewes.	Whitehead [declined the Archbishopric of Canterbury].

CHAP VI

A.D. 1559

The last four of the Elizabethan divines were all on the Commission for the revision of the Prayer Book.

The Conference met on Friday, March 31st,[5] and Monday, April 3, 1559, the Lord Keeper Bacon presiding, and the following three propositions were laid before the sixteen divines as the subjects for immediate discussion :—

Propositions submitted to it

"I. It is against the Word of God, and the custom of the ancient Church, to use a tongue unknown to the people in common prayers and the administration of the Sacraments.

"II. Every church hath authority to appoint, take away, and change ceremonies and ecclesiastical rites, so the same be to edification.

"III. It cannot be proved by the Word of God that there is, in the Mass, offered up a sacrifice propitiatory for the quick and the dead."

Preliminary dispute

It had been arranged, for the sake of more orderly discussion, that the arguments on both sides should be read from written papers, and not spoken extempore; but the Bishop of Winchester alleged that he and his colleagues had not understood this arrangement to have been made, and that although they had come ready to argue the questions *vivâ voce*, they had no written argument prepared. Dean Cole was then permitted to speak for the rest on the first proposition, his colleagues declining to add anything to his arguments when the opportunity was given them by the President. Horne then read a paper on behalf of the

[5] This is the date given by Foxe [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, viii. 679], and in a MS. of Archbishop Parker [Cardwell's *Conf.*, 25]; but Machyn writes, "The furst day of Aprell ther was at Westmynster a disputyng shuld a bene be the bysshopes and the nuw prychers, and ther they pute in a . . . agaynst Monday, after that the bysshopes shuld gyff a answer of the sam." [Machyn's *Diary*, 192.]

CHAP VI
A.D. 1559

other side, which contained a learned argument, supported by many quotations from the Fathers, in favour of vernacular Common Prayer. On its conclusion the Marian divines wished to reply, and they were required to do so in writing on the Monday following. When Monday came they claimed the right of beginning their arguments *de novo* in writing, to correct the informality of their proceedings on the previous day. The Lord Keeper ruled that this would be a fresh irregularity, that until the opposite side had been heard they were content that Dr. Cole's arguments should be accepted as their own, and that if they were allowed to do as they proposed, a very unfair advantage would be given to them. Much disputing arose out of this point; and as the Marian divines refused to give way, Bacon at last dissolved the Conference with the words, "My Lords, sith that ye are not willing, but refuse to read your writing after the order taken, we will break up and depart; and for that ye will not that we should hear you, you may perhaps shortly hear of us." Before night the Bishops of Winchester and Lincoln were sent to the Tower, the other six divines being required to report themselves daily to the Privy Council; and thus the attempt to effect a compromise between the Ultramontane party and the Reforming party was brought abruptly to an end.

The dispute stops the way

The Conference abruptly closed

The Statutory Definition of Heresy

But while endeavours were thus being made to bring the two great religious parties to an understanding as to disputed matters of doctrine, a most important clause was inserted in an Act of Parliament which took the sting out of many a controversy, and

CHAP VI

A.D. 1559

which, by a most effective stroke, cut the ground from under the feet of the Ultramontane party.

It will have been noticed in the account of the Marian sufferers that they were most generally condemned as "heretics" for denying the dogma of Transubstantiation; or, to state the case more exactly, for refusing to acknowledge that the natural substances of Bread and Wine cease to exist in the consecrated elements of the Holy Eucharist. But although the mysterious change of the elements had been defined as a change of substance by the Fourth Lateran Council [A.D. 1215], the definite dogma for the denial of which persons had been put to death in Queen Mary's time was not authoritatively set forth until the Council of Trent, actually dating from A.D. 1551. To exclude the denial of this and other mere Roman dogmas from the category of heresies, it was now enacted, in connection with the institution of the High Commission Court, as follows [1 Eliz. cap. 1, § 36]: That those who compose that court "shall not in any wise have authority or power to order, determine, or adjudge any matter or cause to be heresy, but only such as heretofore have been determined, ordered, or adjudged to be heresy by the authority of the Canonical Scriptures, or by the first four General Councils or any of them, or by any other General Council wherein the same was declared heresy by the express and plain words of the said Canonical Scriptures, or such as hereafter shall be ordered, judged, or determined to be heresy by the High Court of Parliament of this realm, with the assent of the clergy in their Convocation."

Denial of Roman dogma wrongly called heresy

Existing law on the subject

This enactment indicated very distinctly the lines upon which Convocation would have to proceed when

CHAP VI
A.D. 1559

it came to undertake any measures for promoting uniformity of belief.

The Bishops' Eleven Articles of A.D. 1559

But nearly four years elapsed after this before Parliament and Convocation were again called together, and during that interval a pressing necessity arose for such definite statements of the leading principles of the Reformed Church as would bind at least the clergy, and such as would guide them in the instruction of their people. About the end of April 1561, therefore, the archbishops and bishops published Eleven Articles, which they entitled "A declaration of certain principal Articles of Religion set out . . . for the uniformity of doctrine, to be taught and holden of all parsons, vicars, and curates, as well in testification of their common consent in the said doctrine, to the stopping of the mouths of them that go about to slander the ministers of the Church for diversity of judgement as necessary for the instruction of their people. . . . ."

Necessity for positive statements of doctrine

Contents of the Eleven Articles

These Articles contained a declaration of faith in the Holy Trinity [1]; in the Canonical Scriptures and the three Creeds [2]. They also defined the Church as a body, "wherein the Word of God is truly taught, the Sacraments orderly administered according to Christ's institution, and the authority of the Keys duly used;" and declared its authority to change ceremonies by putting some away and instituting others [3]. No man is to take upon him any office or ministry, ecclesiastical or secular, without lawfully called to it by the proper authorities [4]. The Queen's Supremacy is acknowledged [5], and that of the

CHAP VI
A.D. 1559

Bishop of Rome repudiated [6]. The Book of Common Prayer is declared to be "agreeable to the Scriptures, . . . Catholic and Apostolic, and most for the advancing of God's glory, and the edifying of God's people" [7]. The administration of Baptism is acknowledged to be full and perfect, even though the use of exorcism and other ancient ceremonies had been discontinued [8]. Private masses without communicants, and offered as a propitiatory sacrifice for quick and dead, are declared to be "neither agreeable to Christ's ordinance nor grounded upon doctrine Apostolic" [9]; and the Holy Communion ought to be administered in both kinds [10]. Lastly, there is a disavowal of all superstitions connected with images [11], which is taken substantially from the second and third of the Queen's Injunctions.

Only intended for temporary use

Very little is known about the history of these Articles, but no doubt they were intended to be for temporary use only, until those of Edward VI. could be revived by Convocation. The title states that they are to be read by the clergy at their "first entry into their cures," and also after that "twice a year, on Low Sunday and Michaelmas Day, immediately after the Gospel."[6]

The Thirty-Nine Articles

When Convocation was at last summoned again, on January 12, 1563, fifteen of the twenty-three Marian bishops who filled the English sees at the accession of Queen Elizabeth were dead, and the remaining eight were either living as private gentlemen or abroad. And as divines of the Reformed

[6] Burnet's *Reform.*, v. 263; Strype's *Annals*, i. 325; Cardwell's *Doc. Ann.*, 231.

CHAP VI

A.D. 1563

school of thought had been placed at the heads of all the dioceses, so also a similar change had taken place in the cathedrals and among the parochial clergy. Hence the Convocation which met in the fifth year of the Queen's reign was of a very different colour from that which had been called together in 1559. Ultramontanism was now unknown among its members, and if there was danger that any of them were alienated from the principles of the Reformation, the danger arose from Puritanism, which found its head at Geneva instead of Rome. But the majority of those who were now returned to the Lower House of Convocation were, like the majority of the bishops, men of the same theological type as their President, Archbishop Parker, and as their Prolocutor, Dean Nowell, men who accepted loyally the Elizabethan form of the Second or Low Church Prayer Book, but whose principles and inclinations gravitated towards the First or High Church Book.

The second Convocation of Elizabeth's reign

When, therefore, the pressing Church question of the day came before Convocation, that of Articles of Religion which should represent the theology and ecclesiastical system of the Reformation, there was no difficulty in falling back upon the Forty-two Articles of Edward VI.'s reign as the substance of those which should now be set forth. These Articles were consequently placed in the hands of the two Houses simultaneously, on January 19, 1563, the first day on which they met, in Henry VII.'s Chapel, for business, with a view to their consideration, and, if necessary, their reconstruction. The work occupied committees of both Houses for ten days, though much preparation had doubtless been made for it beforehand; and the bishops and clergy having come to an agreement, the

The Edwardian Articles of Religion revived

CHAP VI
A.D. 1563

Articles, now thirty-nine in number,[7] were subscribed by the former on January 29th, and by the latter on February 5th and subsequent days. They were also subscribed by the Archbishop of York, and the Bishops of Durham and Chester, who were probably appointed to act for the whole of the northern Convocation.[8] Thus they were fully received by the constitutional representatives of the clergy, and were entitled, "Articles whereupon it was agreed by the archbishops and bishops of both the provinces and the whole clergy in the Convocation holden at London . . . for the avoiding of the diversities of opinions, and for the establishing of consent, touching true religion." They were then transmitted to the Crown for ratification, according to the law laid down in the Act of Submission; and having been so ratified under the Great Seal,[9] were published in Latin some time after March 1563, with the Royal Assent appended in the words, "Quibus omnibus Articulis Serenissima Princeps Elizabeth Dei gratia Angliæ Franciæ et Hiberniæ Regina, Fidei Defensor etc. per seipsam diligenter prius lectis et examinatis Regium suum assensum præbuit;" the English copy having the words "Put forth by the Queen's authority" under the title. The Thirty-nine Articles thus took the form of a Canon of the Church of England, constructed and passed by the two Convocations, and confirmed and promulgated by the Crown. As they had been composed, passed, and ratified in Latin, there was some doubt as to the force of the English translation which was put into circulation.

Canonical authority of the Thirty-nine Articles

[7] The changes which were made are indicated in a note at page 111. They are given in detail in Hardwicke's *History of the Thirty-nine Articles.*

[8] Wilkins' *Concil.*, iv. 237; Gibson's *Synod. Anglic.*, 145, ed 1854.

[9] Coke's *Inst.*, iv. 74.

CHAP VI

A.D. 1563

In the next Convocation, therefore, that of 1571, both the Latin and the English versions were reviewed, and a new ratification was given by the Queen, which was appended in the following form :—

> " This Book of Articles, before rehearsed, is again approved, and allowed to be holden and executed within the realm, by the assent and consent of our Sovereign Lady Elizabeth, by the grace of God of England, France, and Ireland, Queen, Defender of the Faith, &c. Which Articles were deliberately read, and confirmed again by the subscription of the hands of the Archbishops and Bishops of the Upper House, and by the subscription of the whole clergy in the Nether House in their Convocation in the year of our Lord God 1571."

Clerical subscription to the Articles required

In the same year an Act of Parliament [13 Eliz. cap. 12], entitled " An Act for the Ministers of the Church to be of sound Religion," which enacted that every clergyman should subscribe to the Thirty-nine Articles at his ordination and at his admission to any benefice, and that he should also read them publicly in church on both occasions. This Act has been confirmed by later ones, and both the subscription and public reading are still strictly enforced by law as a test of every clergyman's conformity to the doctrines of the Church in which he ministers.

Comprehensive character of the Articles

The code of doctrinal canons thus settled as the standard of doctrine in the Church of England is a very comprehensive one, including the Bible [6, 7], the three Creeds [8], definite statements respecting the Sacraments [25, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31], and the chief principles of the Church. If it is possible, as it is possible, to point out defects in them, and to suggest improvements, it is yet to be remembered that they have received the assent of many generations of the clergy, not a few of whom have been skilled

theologians; and it is in their favour that amidst many controversies the Thirty-nine Articles have borne the wear and tear of more than three centuries, and are still assented to and subscribed by large numbers of divines whose age, learning, and piety qualify them and oblige them to assent and subscribe under the influence of deliberate and critical knowledge of the doctrine which those Articles contain.

CHAP VI
A.D. 1559

§ 6. The Resettlement of the Episcopate

A difficulty arose early in the reign of Queen Elizabeth which required the greatest care, patience, and self-possession on the part of those who had to deal with it, lest it should make shipwreck altogether of the Reformation of the Church of England as a catholic movement. The Marian bishops refused to have anything to do with the Church on its present footing, and the difficulty arose—How, then, were bishops to be obtained? Had it been impossible to obtain them, and it easily might have been, then the Reformers might have set up a Presbyterian ministry in the cathedrals and parish churches of the land, and the people might have been satisfied to accept their ministrations, and the Parliament might have endowed them with the ancient revenues of tithe and glebe, but the religious community thus established and endowed would no more have been the Church of England in the sense of the English Reformation than the Huguenots were the Church of France. It was a sin in all who were responsible for the danger to allow it to become a danger; but, happily for England, an overruling Providence made a way of

The Church in a serious danger

The danger Providentially overruled

CHAP VI A.D. 1559

escape, and the danger passed off. The circumstances which led up to this crisis, and the method taken to overcome the difficulty, form a very important episode in the history of the Church of England. Although clouds of controversy have been raised around them by the absurd mistake or the wicked falsehood of an Anglo-Roman priest of the seventeenth century, they may really be narrated in a very short compass.

Many vacant sees

1. When Queen Elizabeth succeeded her sister on November 17, 1558, there were seven vacancies among the twenty-seven English bishoprics. The next day the Archbishop of Canterbury died, and before the end of the year he was followed by the Bishops of Rochester and Bristol, increasing the number of vacancies to ten.

2. There were thus left only seventeen diocesan bishops, though there were several suffragans, in the Church of England; and of these seventeen, two, the Bishops of Worcester and St. Asaph, had deserted their posts and fled abroad.

3. But the Act of Supremacy made it necessary for all the bishops either to take the Oath of Allegiance or to suffer the loss of their sees; and soon after the rising of Parliament, on May 8, 1559, when it had completed the machinery for the revival of the Reformation, the Commissioners to whom the Visitation of the Church was intrusted began to tender the oath to the bishops as well as to the other clergy.

The remaining bishops will not conform

4. The fifteen bishops who had not thrown up their sees, including the Bishop of Man, refused, with one exception, to take the oath, and it was taken for granted that the same refusal would be given by the two bishops who had fled from the country. Thus, between May 29, 1559, when sentence of deprivation

CHAP VI

A.D. 1559

was passed upon Bonner, and September 28, 1559, when a similar sentence was passed upon Tunstal, Bishop of Durham, all seventeen of these remaining bishops[1] had been deprived of their sees, except Kitchin, Bishop of Llandaff.

5. It now became a question how the twenty-six vacant sees of the Church of England should be filled, three bishops at least being necessary for the full canonical consecration of new prelates, and there being only one diocesan bishop left.

Parker nominated Archbishop of Canterbury

6. Within less than a month after Cardinal Pole's death, however, on December 9, 1558, it had been determined to appoint Parker, who had been Dean of Lincoln and Master of Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, to the Archbishopric of Canterbury, and a delay of six months was caused by his hesitation in accepting the appointment.[2] About June other nominations had been made, such as those of Grindal for London, Coxe for Norwich, Barlow for Chichester, and Scory for Hereford;[3] but as it is the custom for the election of bishops to be confirmed by the Archbishop of the Province, it was desirable that Parker should be consecrated before any of the others. Hence, as soon as possible after Parker had been formally elected by the Dean and Chapter of Canterbury, the election taking place on August 1st, letters-patent dated September 9, 1558, were sent to Tunstal, Bishop of Durham, Bourn, Bishop of Bath and Wells, Pole,

His election

[1] Of these seventeen surviving Marian bishops, seven in number, Tunstal, Morgan, White, Bayne, Oglethorpe, Turberville, and Pole, died before the end of 1660; two lived abroad, Goldwell and Pates; five, Heath, Thirlby, Bourn, Scott, and Man, lived as private gentlemen; and two were in prison, Bonner being in the Tower, and Watson, the last survivor of the Marian episcopate, being a prisoner in Wisbeach Castle until his death in 1584.

[2] Parker's *Corresp.* pp. 49, 71.

[3] *Zurich Lett.*, p. 23.

CHAP VI A.D. 1559

the late Cardinal's brother, Bishop of Peterborough, Kitchin, Bishop of Llandaff, Barlow, late Bishop of Bath and Wells, and Scory, late Bishop of Chichester, requiring them to confirm and consecrate him to the Metropolitan See. Tunstal, Bourn, and Pole refused to obey this royal mandate, and were shortly afterwards deprived, being probably the last of the Marian bishops who were so dealt with. A second mandate was then issued, dated December 6, 1559, directed to Kitchin, Barlow, Scory, Coverdale, late Bishop of Exeter, Hodgkins, Suffragan Bishop of Bedford, Salisbury, Suffragan Bishop of Thetford, and Bale, Bishop of Ossory, and commanding them, or any four of them, to proceed with the confirmation and consecration of the Archbishop. The election was therefore confirmed in the church of St. Mary-le-Bow, Cheapside, where such confirmations always take place, and Parker was consecrated by Barlow, Scory, Coverdale, and Hodgkins in the chapel of Lambeth Palace, on December 17, 1559, more than a year after he had been originally designated for his high office by the Queen. On the 21st of the same month Parker, Barlow, Scory, and Hodgkins consecrated four other bishops; on January 21, 1560, four more were consecrated by Parker, Grindal, Cox, and Hodgkins, and three on March 21, 1560, by Parker, Bullingham, and Jewell; and the Archbishop took part in the consecration of all bishops of his province down to April 17, 1575, when he consecrated a Bishop of St. Asaph just a month before his own death.

Confirmation of his election

His consecration

His spiritual lineage

7. The consecration of Parker brought him into a direct lineal succession with the mediæval bishops, and therefore with the primitive bishops of the Church of England, and also, singular to say, with the bishops of Rome; for Hodgkins, Scory, and Coverdale had

CHAP VI

A.D. 1559

been consecrated by Cranmer, Hilsey, Stokesley, and others, while one of the bishops, Clerk of Bath and Wells, who took part with Cranmer and Voysey in the consecration of Barlow, had been consecrated at Rome by Roman bishops. Thus Archbishop Parker, from whom all subsequent Archbishops of Canterbury and York are spiritually descended, was able to hand on the Episcopal succession without any break in its full integrity; and the Church of England suffered no loss, at least in that respect, by the long and culpable hindrance which he had offered to his consecration.

He received and handed on the true Episcopal succession

8. But as the Episcopal succession of the Reformed Church of England was thus made for a time to depend on a single link of the chain, a great temptation fell in the way of unscrupulous controversialists to show that this link did not really exist, and that consequently there was no continuity of Apostolic succession between the ancient and the Reformed Church. A story was therefore trumped up in the year 1604 by a Roman Catholic priest named Holywood, or more sonorously, John de Sacrobosco, to the effect that Parker's alleged consecration had been a mere burlesque ceremony, performed at a tavern in Cheapside known by the name of the Nag's Head. This story—repeated with varying details by multitudes of Roman Catholic writers, until it was repudiated by Dr. Lingard—alleged that those who were nominated to bishoprics by Queen Elizabeth all met at the Cheapside tavern, where Scory, having been inhibited by Bonner from performing any episcopal functions within the Diocese of London, hastily laid a Bible on Parker, bidding him rise up Archbishop of Canterbury, Parker then doing the same to Scory and the rest.[4]

The Nag's Head fiction

[4] This lying parody is not worse than that to be seen on the cover of a Roman Catholic edition of Cobbett's *History of the Reforma-*

CHAP VI

A.D. 1559

It is marvellous that any writers with the least sense of responsibility should have printed and reprinted so strange a story without adducing a scrap of contemporary evidence in support of it. The fiction was never heard of until forty-five years after Parker became Archbishop of Canterbury, and was opposed to all the well-known and recorded circumstances of the case. But when attention was drawn to this fiction, a mass of documentary evidence was produced which placed the consecration at Lambeth beyond a doubt. This, with some additions, has been collected together in a most authentic form in recent times. [5]

Its utterly unhistorical character

The care taken respecting Parker's consecration

9. The truth is, that very elaborate care was taken by the Queen and her advisers to secure at every point the legal form of Archbishop Parker's appointment, and that the consecrating bishops used all the words, acts, and ceremonies which were laid down in the Ordinal of the Church of England; and this example being followed in the case of the other Elizabethan bishops, the secession of so many of their predecessors caused no break in the historical and spiritual continuity of their dioceses. The spiritual fabric of the Church had been originally laid on Apostolic foundations—had been built up on those foundations through many successive ages; and when some ruin had been caused by misunderstanding and wilfulness, it was restored strictly upon the line of the old walls, and without any deviation from the plan of Apostolic succession.

tion of modern times, where Queen Elizabeth is pourtrayed in the act of "making a bishop" by laying her hands upon Parker as he kneels before her in a secular dress and ruff.

[5] In Bailey's *Ordinum Sacrorum in Ecclesia Anglicana Defensio*, 1870. In this work the original official record of the consecration is photozincographed by the Ordnance Survey, and its correctness certified by the Archbishop of Canterbury and others.

CHAPTER VII

THE PURITANS OF THE REFORMATION AGE

[A.D. 1547—1603]

CHAP VII

A.D. 1547-53

THE strict administration of the Acts of Uniformity during the reigns of Edward VI. and Queen Elizabeth prevented the formal organization of sects apart from the Church of England, but did not prevent the growth of sectarian principles within its pale. The Wickliffite "Known-men" and "Just-fast-men" of Henry VIII.'s day, expanded into the "Gospellers" of Edward VI.'s reign, and these further expanded into the "Puritans" of the Elizabethan age.[1] Even when a more lax administration of the law permitted

The older Puritans

[1] The name of "Puritan" was suggested by the frequent assertion of those who composed the party that the Church of England was corrupted with the remains of Popery, and that what they desired was a "pure" system of doctrine and discipline; but the English word "Puritans" happens accidentally to represent the Greek name "Cathari," which had been assumed by the Novatians, and which had been adopted in Germany during the Middle Ages in the vernacular form "Ketzer" for the Albigenses and other opponents of the Church. It first came into use as the designation of an English Church party about the year 1564 [Fuller's *Ch. Hist.* ix. 66], but after a few years it got to be used also as inclusive of many who had separated from the Church of England. It was gradually superseded as regards the latter by the names of their various sects, as Independents, Presbyterians, Baptists, etc., and as regards the former by the term "Nonconformists." At a still later time, towards the end of the seventeenth century, the Church Puritans were represented by "Low Churchmen," and the Non-Church Puritans by "Dissenters." [Blunt's *Dict. Sects and Her.*]

For the earlier history of the party, see vol. i. pp. 522-554.

CHAP VII

A. D. 1547-53

the formation of religious bodies separate from the Church, as it did early in the seventeenth century, the great bulk of those who dissented from the episcopal and sacramental system of the Church still remained formally associated with it as its clergy and laity; and not only so, but they constantly endeavoured, with increasing boldness and improved organization, to force on such changes in the constitution and the laws of the Church as would adapt it to their own opinions.

They did not leave the Church at first

The rapid growth of this aggressive anti-Church party within the Church is to be attributed partly to the ignorance which resulted from the abolition of the monastic schools, the depression of the universities, and the barbarous destruction of libraries,[2] and partly to the hostile teaching of exotic *doctrinaire* preachers. The old Church influences had been broken down, and such influences as arose in their place came from those whose interest and principles lay as far as possible away from the lines of the old ecclesiastical system and the old theology. And thus it was that during the reign of Edward VI. a generation had grown up which had no personal knowledge of, and no association with, the ecclesiastical traditions of the nation, and which was educated both to hate and to despise them. French young men of the great middle-class were not

Causes of their rapid increase

[2] The quantity of new books produced by the help of the printing press was so great, that the carting off of the old ones *en masse* from the ancient libraries was less noticed on the revival of learning than it otherwise would have been. Even the library of the City of London did not escape, for the Duke of Somerset sent carts to the Lord Mayor with a request for the loan of the books [see p. 22, note]; and, like many other books, they have never been heard of by their owners since they were borrowed. At Oxford every volume was removed from the University Library, and the shelves and benches were sold in 1556 as old lumber. [Macray's *Annals of Bodl. Lib.* p. 12.]

more anti-monarchical in 1792, when nearly everything monarchical had disappeared from France, than young Englishmen of the same class were anti-Catholic in 1552, when nearly everything Catholic had shared the same fate in England.

Latimer's opinion of them

That the higher class of minds among the Reformers looked most unfavourably upon the rising Puritans of Edward VI.'s reign might be shown by many quotations from their writings. It may suffice to make two such quotations, the one from a sermon of Bishop Latimer, the other from the writings of Archbishop Cranmer. Latimer, preaching on Luke xii. 13, about the appeal to our Lord that He would "divide the inheritance," characterizes the brother who thus appealed as a "thorny brother, a Gospeller, a carnal Gospeller (as many be nowadays for a piece of an abbey, or for a portion of chantry lands), to get somewhat by it, and serve his commodity. *He was a Gospeller, one of the new brethren, somewhat worse than a rank Papist.*"[3] Strong as this language is, it is not stronger than that of Cranmer. "It is reported that there be many among these unlawful assemblers that pretend knowledge of the Gospel, and will need be called Gospellers, as though the Gospel were the cause of disobedience, sedition, and carnal liberality, and the destruction of those policies, kingdoms, and common weals where it is received." They are men "*whose wit and virtue* is in their tongues, hot disputers, busy talkers, taunters, and fault-finders with others, rather than menders of themselves."[4]

Cranmer's opinion of them

[3] Latimer's *Serm.*, i. 233, ed. 1824.

[4] Cranmer's Works, ii. 260, iv. 161, Parker Soc. Ed. These severe words of Cranmer are strongly corroborated by the narratives given in the voluminous accounts which Foxe has preserved

CHAP VII

A.D. 1547-53

§ 1. The Principles of Puritanism

The general theological principle on which the system of the Puritans was grounded may be conveniently designated as anti-Sacramentalism. The Church was regarded as having two functions, those of teaching and discipline; and the ministers of the Church as persons selected and appointed by the whole body for the purpose of carrying out these two functions. Bishops (if admitted at all into the system) were regarded only as ministers with enlarged powers of teaching and discipline, and not as possessors of any spiritual capacities of a higher capacity than those of other ministers. No supernatural gift was considered to be lodged in the ministry, nor any in the ordinances which they administered, Baptism being simply a formal sign of admission to Church fellowship, the Holy Communion a sign that such Church fellowship was being maintained, and the ministerial function, the administration of each, simply a "preaching of the Word" by exhortation, prayer, and the reading of our Lord's words of institution.

Their low estimation of the ministerial office

The practical working of this anti-Sacramental principle in the Church of England involved the

of the sufferers in Queen Mary's time. The discussions which they held with their judges show that most of them merited the same character which had been given to their predecessors, the Lollards of the fourteenth century, by their contemporary Knyghton. "They were all," he says, "like their master, too eloquent, and too much for other people in all disputes and contentions by word of mouth: being powerful in words, strong in prating, exceeding all in making speeches, and out-talking everybody in litigious disputations. . . . Though they were never so lately converted to this sect, they had all one manner of speech, or the same way of talking, and wonderfully agreed in the same opinion. Both men and women immediately commenced teachers of the Gospel in their mother tongue." They, or those who wrote the narratives which profess to record these discussions, must have been very pugnacious and provocative persons, and much given to word-splitting.

CHAP VII
A.D. 1547-53

destruction of everything but the mere shell of the building. The solemn ceremonies of ORDINATION represented far too much for such a theory respecting the ministerial office, and there was very little of the Ordinal that could be honestly used by those who looked on the ministry as a delegation from the members of the Church, and not from God. The Puritan idea was, in fact, "Choose your ministers, charge them, lay your hands on them if you like, and then send them to their work;" and for this no Ordinal at all was necessary. In the same manner they found the very lowest expressions of the ancient Sacramentalism that were retained or represented in the Prayer Book utterly at variance with their theories so long as they expressed any Sacramentalism at all. The idea of a supernatural gift, or a change of spiritual condition as a result of BAPTISM, was intolerable—what a later generation called "a soul-destroying heresy;" and of course such ceremonies as implied it, the Benediction of the Water, the Sign of the Cross, and the White Robe, could not be thought of with patience. CONFIRMATION, at the best, was only a public declaration by the confirmed persons that they accepted their position as adult Christians, and for such a purpose the old ceremonies—the blow on the cheek, the anointing of the forehead, the imposition of hands—were entirely unnecessary, and worse than unnecessary, since they symbolized the conveyance of a gift of grace by the Bishop to the confirmed. MARRIAGE was a civil contract which ought to be associated with Prayer; but the intervention of a Priest, the Benedictions, the tokens of Espousal, and the Wedding Ring, were all superstitions belonging to corrupt times, and a "pure"

Their theories respecting Church ordinances

CHAP VII

A.D. 1547-53

system could not endure them. The so-called Sacrament of PENANCE, with its formal confessions and absolutions, was a Popish invention, and must be superseded by the new "discipline;" while for EXTREME UNCTION there was not one word to be said. Lastly and chiefly, the HOLY COMMUNION was simply an ordinance in which Christ's promises were preached by the minister of it, and in which the communicants expressed their fellowship with Him and with each other by passing round Bread and Wine as festal food and drink, to remind them of the Body and Blood that Christ offered upon the Cross. If there was any Presence of Christ associated with the Holy Communion, it was only so associated in the hearts of the communicants, and had nothing whatever to do with the Bread and the Wine. Nothing could, therefore, be more unfitting than a liturgy in which prayers, praise, words of consecration, and manual acts performed over the elements with symbolical reference to the Body and Blood of Christ, were all used as though Christ were actually present in some other sense than in that sense in which He is everywhere present by the Omnipresence of His Godhead.

Their theory of the Eucharist

Origin of their principles

These anti-Sacramental principles had been current among the Lollards for about two centuries before the Reformation period, and were originally derived from the Manichæan sects which aggregated so mysteriously in Southern Europe during the Middle Ages. But the rise of the Puritans marks a new point of departure for them, since they were then associated with the novel "Discipline," a system for the supervision of morals which was intended to supersede the old ecclesiastical discipline of the Episcopal courts, by substituting for them local or parochial courts, in which a select vestry—such as has long been known in

Scotland under the name of "Kirk-Session"—was to take cognizance of all offences against morality or religion, and administer "Church censures" to the offenders.[5] The Puritans attached so much importance to this novel system of ecclesiastical police that they were sometimes called "Disciplinarians," as if it were the main feature of their principles, and the terrible immorality of Edward VI.'s reign gave the system an additional attractiveness in the eyes of those who desired to see a moral reformation.

CHAP VII
A.D. 1547-53

Their plan for Church discipline

In Edward VI.'s reign, however, little progress was made by the Puritans towards the establishment of their "Discipline" in England, and the real backbone of their system was their anti-Sacramentalism, to which they gained a large number of adherents from among the elder Wickliffites, the rising generation, and, to a certain extent, even from among men of unsettled minds, such as Cranmer, in the ranks of the elder clergy. It manifested itself especially against everything that tended to exalt the objective character of Divine Worship, and especially against the sacrificial aspect of the Holy Eucharist.

Their hostility to the Eucharistic Sacrifice

§ 2. The Attack upon the Altar

This opposition to the Eucharistic Sacrifice was the most painful characteristic of the Puritan movement

[5] In his *Brief and Clear Confession of the Christian Faith*, Bishop Hooper writes his 73d Article as follows: "I believe that the power to bind and loose, to excommunicate and to absolve, that is commonly called the Keys of the Church, is given of God not to one or two, or to some particular person, but to the whole Church; that is to say, to all the faithful and believers in Christ, not for to destroy, undo, or cast away, but to edify and to advance all. And, therefore, I say and confess that excommunication and absolution ought not, neither can it be given at the lust and pleasure of some particularly, but by the consent of all the Church, or at the least by the greater or most sound part of the same, when they be congregated and assembled together in the name of Christ, and the same to be done with prayer." [Hooper's Works, ii. 52.]

CHAP VII A.D. 1547-53

during the Reformation period, and it began to show itself at the very outset of the reign of Edward VI.

The Reformers long used the Latin Mass

Evidence has been given in the third chapter of this volume to prove that the ancient Latin Mass of the Church of England was used during the whole of the first two years and a quarter of Edward's reign, which was more than a third of the time that he was on the throne. During those years Archbishop Cranmer and Bishop Ridley officiated with this service, and neither they nor the other leading Reformers are likely to have received the Holy Communion except as consecrated with this service. The same must have been the case with great numbers of the laity, and with all the clergy, including among the latter the elder men, such as Rowland Taylor, Rector of Hadleigh, and John Philpot, Archdeacon of Winchester, of the sixteen clergy who were burned in the reign of Queen Mary. Yet, by a strange intellectual twist, some of these very men persuaded themselves that the Mass which they had been celebrating and receiving nearly all their lives was not the Holy Eucharist at all, and the notion spread among the Puritans until it became a complete monomania, for which they were ready to give up their lives.[6] They did not regard it as a rite in which the true Sacrament was associated with

The Puritan monomania respecting it

[6] The theological argument of learned men such as Philpot was that the Sacrament was invalidated because the priest alone received it in both kinds. At one of his examinations Dr. Cosins brought the argument to a crucial test by asking, "What and if all things be done, even as you would have it, and whilst the minister is about to minister the Sacrament, before any have received it, there rise a certain hurly-burly, that the communicants are compelled to go away: is it not a sacrament for all that none hath communicated beside the priest?" Philpot was obliged to reply, "In this case, where all things are appointed to be done according to God's Word, if incident necessity had not let, I cannot say but it is a sacrament, and that he which hath received hath received the true Sacrament. [Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 652.]

CHAP VII
A.D. 1547-53

superstitious ceremonies, but looked on it as a rite the validity of which was altogether vitiated, so that it possessed neither sacred character nor spiritual value. They lashed themselves into a belief that the splendid and solemn service which had been celebrated in the churches of England for at least a thousand years was an invention of Satan; they used language respecting it such as the Christian world had never heard before; and they dared acts towards it which they must have been quite certain would, in the existing state of the law, almost infallibly bring them to a painful death.

Their irreverence towards it

The keynote of this particular form of hostility towards the Mass was struck by Calvin, whose general tone on the subject is fairly represented by the following passage from his treatise on "The unlawful rites of the ungodly:"—

Calvin's opinion respecting the Mass

"In the Mass Christ is traduced, His death is mocked, an execrable idol is substituted for God: shall we hesitate, then, to call it the table of demons? or shall we not rather, in order justly to designate its monstrous impiety, try, if possible, to devise some new term still more expressive of detestation? Indeed, I exceedingly wonder how men, not utterly blind, can hesitate for a moment to apply the name 'Table of Demons' to the Mass, seeing they plainly behold in the erection and the arrangement of it the tricks, engines, and troops of devils all combined."[7]

This opinion adopted by Hooper

The same kind of language was used by the friends and allies of Calvin in England. Bishop Hooper calls the Mass a "wicked idol,"[8] an "idol honoured for God,"[9] and tells the Parliament that it is not only "a profanation of the Holy Supper of the Lord, and a treading under foot of the Passion of Christ, but is

[7] Calvin's Works, *Tracts*, iii. 387, Calv. Soc.

[8] Hooper's Works, Parker Soc., ii. 589.

[9] *Ibid.*, 610.

CHAP VII

A.D. 1547-53

and Bradford

even an impious and Satanic idol, . . . not in any way permissible or tolerable in the Church of Christ."[1] Bradford uses similar terms of abuse, speaking of "that abominable idol the Mass."[2] "It is no longer a Sacrament, but an idol;"[3] "their abominable idol of bread;"[4] "the Mass, . . . being of all idols that ever was the most abominable and blasphemous to Christ,"[5] his words being echoed by one of his feminine correspondents, who writes to him, "As for the Mass, it is the most abominable idol in the whole world,"[6] thus showing what impressions his teaching left on his hearers. And, in fact, how could they fail to use similar language if they trusted their teacher, when they heard him say, "Now, the Mass being known to be the device and invention of men, I will briefly show you that it is the horriblest and most detestable device that ever the devil brought out by man."[7]

Becon's blasphemies on the subject

The dreadful language of the Edwardian Bishop of Gloucester and of Bradford was, however, surpassed by that of Becon. His pages teem with most bitter and blasphemous ridicule of the whole service, and of everything connected with it, and if they are opened only at random the reader will find him calling it "the most wicked and devilish Mass,"[8] declaring that altars are "not of God, but of the devil, not of Christ, but of anti-Christ,"[9] speaking of a private Mass as "most vile, most stinking, most pestiferous, most abominable, most wicked, most devilish, and most idolatrous,"[1] and alleging that the clergy desire its

[1] Hooper's Works, Parker Soc., ii. 395.
[2] Bradford's Works, Parker Soc., i. 280.
[3] *Ibid.*, 88.
[4] *Ibid.*, 281.
Ibid., 392.
[6] Bradford's Works, Parker Soc., ii. 227.
[7] *Ibid.*, 312.
[8] Becon's Works, Parker Soc., iv. 253.
[9] *Ibid.*, 259.
[1] *Ibid.*, 257.

continuance only because "they are afraid lest this common whore, their Mass, should be driven out of the game place, and by this means their kitchen should wax cold."[2] CHAP VII A.D. 1547-53

Among less important persons speaking or writing in the same manner is the before-named Rowland Taylor, Rector of Hadleigh, who actually declared respecting the Mass that "the devil is rather present and received than our Saviour;"[3] Bland, Rector of Adisham, who spoke of the "devilishness of the Mass;"[4] and a number of others of those who were burned for heresy in Queen Mary's reign, who described it as "an idol, and no sacrament,"[5] a "naughty and abominable idol,"[6] a "most blasphemous idol."[7] But it is sad to find that it was echoed at last even by Latimer and Cranmer. For Latimer could use such language as "the sacrifice of the Mass, which was the most horrible blasphemy that could be devised;" "what an abomination is it, the foulest that ever was;" "oh! how heavy a sentence is this to all those that know the Mass to be an abominable idol, full of idolatry, blasphemy, sacrilege against God and the dear sacrifice of His Christ!" "this pernicious blasphemy against the death of our Redeemer;" "masses and pilgrimages, and such fooleries."[8] So also Cranmer, in his hasty and passionate "Declaration concerning the Mass,"[9] was so led away that he dared to write, "Now goeth the devil about, by lying, to overthrow the Lord's Holy Supper again, and to restore

Language of Rowland Taylor, Bland, Latimer, and Cranmer

[2] Becon's Works, Parker Soc., ii. 448.
[3] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 701.
[4] *Ibid.*, vii. 289.
[5] *Ibid.*, 716.
[6] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 751.
[7] *Ibid.*, viii. 156.
[8] Latimer's *Serm.*, i. 445, 237; ii. 440, 58, Parker Soc. Ed.
[9] See p. 194.

CHAP VII

A.D. 1547-53

his Latin satisfactory Mass, a thing of his own invention and device."

Abundant examples of such language

Quotations of the same character as these might be greatly multiplied, but it is hoped that the reader will take these few as sufficient evidence, when the evidence is of a kind so painful to bring forward, and when the assurance that what is given is only a small portion of what exists is made under a proper sense of responsibility.

Its practical influence

Yet it is still necessary, with however great reluctance, to show that the language of writers and preachers did actually and practically influence those who listened to them or read their writings. The sermons and letters of these few leading men were typical of a class; and some acts of other men which are also typical of a class must be brought again to the light, since they show how terribly this epidemic monomania had spread among Englishmen of that generation.

Puritan profanation of the Sacrament in Magdalen Chapel

The first illustration at hand, showing the class of men that were thus produced, is that of Thomas Bickley, a Fellow of Magdalen College, Oxford. Early in the reign of Edward VI., while the college was in chapel one day at Evensong, Bickley, "before Oglethorpe, the President, and many others that were assembled, took the Wafer from the Altar out of the pyx, and broke it to pieces with his hand, and stamped it under his feet."[1] At that time this profane wretch was forty years of age; in later life he became for twenty years Warden of Merton College, and from 1586 until 1596 he was actually Bishop of Chichester.

That the particular form of insult which this embryo bishop offered to the Blessed Sacrament was a typical

[1] Strype's *Mem. Eccl.*, III. i. 82.

CHAP VII

A.D. 1547-53

one among the Gospellers is shown by two narratives given in the pages of Foxe.

In the first of these he tells the story of "Bertrand le Blas, martyred at Dornick," or Tournay, "A.D. 1555." This Bertrand "went upon Christmas Day to the High Church of Dornick, where he took the cake out of the priest's hand as he would have lifted it over his head at Mass, and stamped it under his feet, saying that he did it to show the glory of that God, and what little power He hath."[2] He was less fortunate than the Fellow of Magdalen, scarcely escaping with his life from the indignant congregation at the time, and being afterwards put to death with great cruelty by the authorities.

In Tournay Cathedral

Another martyr to this wicked fanaticism Foxe commemorates at much greater length. This was William Gardiner, a young Bristol mariner, who settled down for a short time in some employment at Lisbon. On September 1, 1552, a marriage was being celebrated in the Cathedral of Lisbon between Prince John, the King of Portugal's son, and the Princess Joanna, a daughter of the Emperor Charles V. Gardiner was present to see the grand spectacle, and his Puritan feelings were so excited by it that he determined to do something by which "he might revoke that people from their impiety and superstition." On the following Sunday, therefore, when Mass was being celebrated in the presence of the King and his Court, this Bristol sailor "was present early in the morning, very cleanly apparelled, even of purpose, that he might stand near the altar without repulse. Within a while after cometh the King with all his nobles. Then Gardiner setteth himself as near the altar as he might,

In Lisbon Cathedral

[2] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, iv. 393.

CHAP VII
A.D. 1547-53

having a Testament in his hand, which he diligently read upon, and prayed, until the time was come that he had appointed to work his feat." The "feat" was to rush upon the Cardinal who was consecrating the Blessed Sacrament, "and (which is incredible to be spoken), even in the presence of the King and all his nobles and citizens, with the one hand he snatched away the cake from the priest and trod it under his feet, and with the other overthrew the chalice." There was great excitement, as was to be expected, and in the tumult one of the standers-by wounded Gardiner with his dagger, and would have slain him but for the King's interposition. An impression got abroad that he was the agent of a conspiracy organized by the reforming party of Edward's reign, and when torture elicited no proof of this, Gardiner was burned as a heretic.[3]

The last of these miserable cases that will be cited is that of William Branch or Flower, successively a monk of Ely, a parish priest in Suffolk, with a wife and family, a surgeon at Tewkesbury, and a schoolmaster in London. On Easter Day 1555, he went to "St. Margaret's Church at Westminster, where he, finding and seeing a priest called John Cheltham ministering and giving the Sacrament of the Altar to the people, and therewith being greatly offended in his conscience with the priest for the same his doing (for that he judged him not to be a Catholic minister, neither his act to be Catholic and laudable according to God's Word), did strike and wound him upon the head, and also upon the arm and hand, with his wood knife; the priest having the same time in his hand a chalice with certain consecrated hosts therein, which

In Westminster Abbey

[3] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 278.

were sprinkled with the blood of the said priest." On the 24th of April he was burned in the sanctuary in front of St. Margaret's Church, the hand with which he had endeavoured, for conscience' sake, to murder his brother clergyman being first cut off.[4]

The opinion of the growing Puritan party respecting these acts is shown by the pages of the popular Church historian, in which every one of the men who were guilty of them is called a "martyr," and his act recorded as that of a faithful witness to the Gospel. But those who were not "Gospellers" considered that to stamp upon the consecrated wafer-bread was a grievous dishonour to God, and that one who did so had committed a dreadful sin against God, besides being guilty of a most serious transgression against the laws of the land, those relating to sacrilege.

These sacrilegious men called "martyrs"

Nor is it necessary for us to throw ourselves back in thought and endeavour to realize the feelings of those who then retained all the old reverence for the Mass as it was celebrated in their own days and the days of their fathers. The revival of theological studies, and the consideration of theological subjects from other standpoints than those of mere uneducated prejudice and passion, has much narrowed the circle of those who consider that the Mass is invalid as a sacrament. Most educated people are aware that the "Canon of the Mass," in the old English Missals, was handed down to us almost without alteration from the Conquest, that it represented a much more ancient liturgy which connected it with apostolic times, and that it contained all the essentials of a valid and holy rite for the celebration of the Eucharist. Whether or not the more severe English Service of our own time is an im-

The Mass a true and valid sacrament

[4] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 69 ; Wriothesley's *Chron.*, ii. 127, 128.

CHAP VII

A.D. 1547-53

provement upon the elaborate Latin Service of our forefathers, it is quite certain that the elements were as effectually consecrated by the ancient service as by the modern one; and that the words and acts of the anti-Sacramentalists were used against truly consecrated elements which contained and gave then all that truly consecrated elements contain and give now. The only plea that can screen those Puritans who used such words and acts from our righteous indignation is that they used them in ignorance; but it is a difficult plea to support by evidence.

The English Communion Service equally obnoxious

It was not only, however, against the Latin Mass that the Puritans raised their sacrilegious hands. Nothing in the Church could be "pure," in their estimation, unless it conformed itself to the Genevan "platform," and hence the Communion Service of the English Prayer Book needed purification almost as much as the Missal, its unmistakable derivation from the Missal being an *a priori* reason for its condemnation.

Bucer on the Puritan nobility

The Prayer Book had only been a short time in use when even the Lutheran Bucer began to complain of the attack which was being made on the Communion Service. "Among the nobility of the kingdom," he writes, "those are very powerful who would reduce the whole of the sacred ministry into a narrow compass, and who are altogether unconcerned about the restoration of Church discipline. . . . While they seek to provide against our bringing down Christ the Lord from heaven and confining Him in the bread, and offering Him to the communicants to be fed upon without faith, a thing that none of our" [the Lutheran] "party ever thought of, they themselves go so far as, without any warrant of Holy Scripture, to confine

CHAP VII
A.D. 1547-53

Him to a certain limited place in heaven, and talk so vapidly about His exhibition and Presence in the Supper (nay, some of them cannot even endure these words), that they appear to believe that nothing else but the bread and wine is there distributed." [5] In writing to Calvin he makes use of similar language, saying that "not a few persons . . . do nothing but dispute and contend, and often very profanely, how they may seclude Christ our Saviour from our Sacraments and holy assemblies, and confine Him to His place in heaven." [6]

and other profane disputants of the party

It was probably under the influence, perhaps the compulsion, of this Court party, which would almost certainly include the head of the Government, the Duke of Somerset, that Bishop Ridley ordered the destruction of altars first in Rochester Diocese, and then in that of London. As early as December 27, 1549, Hooper writes that many altars have been changed into tables; and, when preaching before the King in the following Lent, he suggests, "It were well, then, that it might please the magistrates to turn the altars into tables, according to the first institution of Christ, to take away the false persuasion of the people they have of sacrifices to be done upon the altars; for as long as the altars remain, both the ignorant people and the ignorant and evil-persuaded priest will dream always of sacrifice. Therefore were it best that the magistrates removed all the monuments

Ridley orders altars to be destroyed

[5] *Orig. Lett.*, 544. The opinion here condemned by Bucer was that of Cranmer's influential friend A'Lasco. He wrote, "Nothing is given to or conferred on any one by sacraments, but they are only symbols of the thing previously given and received, for God has from eternity elected His own by His covenant, 'I am thy God;' and He afterwards confirms them by the symbols of Baptism and of the Holy Supper to be His own, and to have been previously His own." [Gorham's *Reform. Glean.*, 149.]

[6] *Orig. Lett.*, 547.

CHAP VII
A.D. 1547-53

and tokens of idolatry and superstition: then should the true religion of God the sooner take place."[7] Shortly afterwards he writes to Bullinger respecting the new Communion Service: "I can scarcely express to you, my dear friend, under what difficulties and dangers we are labouring and struggling that the idol of the Mass may be thrown out."[8] To which he adds that many altars in London have been destroyed since his arrival, having just previously expressed a hope that Ridley would "destroy the altars of Baal" in the Diocese of London, as he had done "in his church when he was Bishop of Rochester."

Astonishing profanity of Hooper on the subject

Ridley was translated to London on April 1, 1550, and shortly afterwards held a visitation of his new diocese, in which he issued a set of Injunctions, fourteen in number, the fifth of which ordered the demolition of altars, as desired by Hooper, in the following terms:—

Ridley's Injunction on the subject

"Whereas in divers places some use the Lord's board after the form of a table, and some of an altar, whereby dissension is perceived to arise among the unlearned; therefore, wishing a goodly unity to be observed in all our diocese, and for that the form of a table may more move and turn the simple from the old superstitious opinions of the Popish Mass and to the right use of the Lord's Supper, we exhort the curates, churchwardens, and questmen here present, to erect and set up the Lord's board after the form of an honest table, decently covered, in such place of the quire or chancel as shall be thought most meet by their discretion and agreement, so that the ministers with the communicants may have their place separated from the rest of the people; and to take down and abolish all other hy-altars or tables."

[7] Hooper's Works, ii. 488.

[8] *Orig. Lett.*, 79. The title of the Communion Service in the Prayer Book at the time when Hooper wrote this letter was, "The Supper of the Lord and the Holy Communion, commonly called the Mass."

The Injunction thus issued was supported by a paper of six "Reasons why the Lord's Board should rather be after the form of a Table than of an Altar." These reasons are to the effect that a table is more meet than an altar for spiritual eating and drinking; that the Prayer Book "calleth the thing whereupon the Lord's Supper is ministered indifferently a table, an altar, or the Lord's board, without prescription of any form thereof either of a table or an altar; that it was desirable to abolish the superstitious opinion that the Mass could only be celebrated on an altar or a super-altar; that the sacrifices of the law having been abolished, the form of an altar should cease to be used; that Christ instituted the Sacrament of His Body and Blood at a table, and not at an altar; and that by the rule of the Prayer Book any differences of opinion were to be appeased by the bishop of the diocese."[9]

His reasons for having tables, not altars

These illogical and superstitious "reasons," if they are the true expression of Ridley's opinions, exhibit his intellect in a very poor light. The first, since it says nothing about the table being a spiritual table, simply reduces the spiritual eating and drinking to the eating and drinking of something material; the second alleges that, as the Prayer Book gives no direction, the bishop may adopt what novelty he pleases in the matter; the third requires another reason to explain it; the fourth shows great ignorance as to the form of the Jewish altar; and the fifth equal ignorance as to the form of the "triclinium" used by the Jews in the time of our Lord. But it is probable that Ridley was more weak

Their superstition and want of logic

[9] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vi. 5, 741, ed. 1846. These reasons appear to have been prepared before the Injunctions, and had probably therefore been already used in Rochester Diocese. But there is strange confusion on the subject in Ridley's Register.

CHAP VII
A.D. 1547-53

than ignorant, and that the demolition of altars being forced upon him by the Privy Council, he was obliged to find some reasons in support of the superstitious act, and no better reasons were at hand. By unrighteously accepting the See of London while Bonner was yet its lawful occupant, he had made himself the tool of his patrons. For in Edward VI.'s Journal he records that, on June 23, 1550, "Sir John Gates, Sheriff of Essex, went down with letters to see the Bishop of London's Injunctions performed which touched plucking down of superaltaries, altars, and suchlike ceremonies and abuses;" from which it seems evident that the King and his Council were the real movers in the matter. On November 19th following, the young King enters that "There were letters sent to every bishop to pluck down the altars," and the order of Council itself is preserved in the pages of Foxe.

General destruction of altars ordered

Thus a general raid was made upon the beautiful and hallowed altars of the churches throughout England. Ridley himself caused his own Injunction to be carried out at St. Paul's Cathedral on St. Barnabas Day, immediately after it had been issued; and as it is recorded by Foxe that "he brake down the wall standing then by the high altar's side,"[1] so we may conclude that many another noble reredos was recklessly demolished, that there might be no dignity left to the "honest table" if it were placed where the altar had stood, and no memorial of the altar itself. We may partly judge of what such destruction means by imagining workmen to be sent into the cathedrals of Ely or Worcester by the Privy Council, with orders to demolish entirely

Ridley wrecks his Cathedral

[1] This is a curious illustration of the use of the word "side" for the length of the altar, even though speaking of its back.

CHAP VII
A.D. 1547-53

the beautiful and costly "wall standing by the high altar's side" which has been erected in each of those churches within the memory of the present generation; or by supposing the splendid altar screens of Durham and Beverley to have been destroyed as well as rifled of their statuary.

The tables which were intended

But this gross dishonour to the Holy Eucharist was not all. Ridley ordered "honest" tables to be set up in the place of altars, the Order in Council left out the adjective, and required simply "a table to be set up in some convenient part of the chancel." Educated and reverent men would probably expand the "table" into the "Tabulam vel Mensam congruam et decentem" of Bishop Goodrick in Ely Diocese,[2] and would provide solid oak tables such as those of Queen Anne's time that have come down to us. But the Puritans were neither educated nor reverent, and when they had got their own way in the destruction of altars, they also got it in many cases in the provision of tables. Queen Elizabeth, ten years later, wrote with just indignation of "the curiosity and costs bestowed by all sorts of men upon their private houses," and the "unmeet and unseemly tables with foul cloths" which were provided "for the Communion of the Sacraments."[3]

What kind were mostly set up

Those which were commonly provided in the latter half of her brother's reign were literally "boards," fixed on four legs, or supported on moveable "tressels." In one of Foxe's narratives he mentions the latter kind of table in a matter-of-fact way that shows how common it had become. John Bland, Rector of Adisham, in the declaration of his troubles, writes as follows:—

"First, the 3d of September" [1555] "being Sunday, after service ended, and or I had put off my surplice, John Austen

[2] Gorham's *Reform. Glean.*, 213. [3] Parker's *Corresp.*, 133.

CHAP VII A.D. 1547-53

came to the table (commonly called the Lord's Table), and laid both his hands upon it, saying, 'Who set this here again?' (Now they say they took the table down the Sunday before, which I knew not, neither do I know who set it up again.) . . . And in that rage he with others took up the table, and laid it on a chest in the chancel, and set the trestles by it." Afterwards "the table was brought down, and permitted as before."[4]

Contempt felt by many for these tables

This wretched kind of "board" was spoken of by old-fashioned people (with an almost excusable contempt) as an "oyster table," evidently from its close resemblance to the rough bench table used by the street hucksters.[5] Such were the mean and irreverent substitutes which the Puritans, when left to themselves, provided for the Lord's glorious tables of stone, precious marbles, costly mosaic, noble sculpture, and rich tapestry, with which the devotion of their forefathers had honoured Him and His Holy Sacrament, but which they wickedly called "altars of Baal."

Such degradation a natural result of the Puritan theory,

But this utter degradation of the chief Sacrament of the Church was typical of the practical consequences which must consistently have followed from the principles of the anti-Sacramentalists. If the functions of teaching and discipline comprised the whole work of the Church, it is evident that the material buildings of the Church are only needed as halls in which the people may conveniently meet to be taught. Their theory of public worship pointed to the presence of man, and the old theory of Divine worship, which

[4] Foxe's *Acts and Mon.*, vii. 290. So also in the list of "confused varieties" drawn up by Cecil, and dated Feb. 14, 1564-5, he says, "In some places the table is joined; in others it standeth upon tressels."

[5] Ridley's Works, 281; Latimer's Works, ii. 275; Huggard's *Displaying of Protestants.* These boards were afterwards ordered to be fixed on "frames," and the churchwarden's expenditure for making such a frame is recorded in the accounts of St. Mary's, Leicester. [North's *Chron. St. Mary, Leic.*, 156.]

pointed to the Presence of God, was looked upon by them as superstitious. Hence the irreverence which was shown towards the "instrumenta" of the Holy Eucharist was extended to all the instrumenta of Divine Service. The vestments of the clergy were to be minimized to that which was just necessary for indicating that they were public officials of the congregation. If paintings or sculptures were to be used in churches, they must be used as they would be used in dwelling-houses, as mere decorations; and those which had hitherto been seen in the churches having been placed there on other grounds which looked to the honour of God, were to be destroyed as idolatrous. It is unnecessary to follow up in detail the further results of this Puritan theory. The altar was the key of the position; and if once the principle could be established that the altar represented an idea —that of Eucharistic sacrifice, which was a false idea— and that the one true idea of the Lord's Table was that of a table at which the congregation should eat and drink, the degradation of all acts of worship from an objective to a subjective level must necessarily follow. There were doubtless a seven thousand in Israel who refused to bow the knee in that worship of the congregation which the Puritans succeeded in so generally substituting for the worship of God in English churches; but several generations elapsed before the key of the position was won again, and it was won at last only by a severe struggle, in which many of the clergy and laity lost their all in this world, in which an archbishop lost his life on the scaffold, and in which the Episcopal system of the Church of England escaped only by the skin of its teeth.

which looked not to the worship of God,

but to the worship of the congregation

CHAP VII

A.D. 1559-1603

§ 3. The Attack upon Episcopacy

The persevering attempts of the Puritan party to destroy this Episcopal system, and to substitute Presbyterianism in its place, form the other prominent feature in the history of this anti-Reformation movement; and these attempts extended over exactly a century—that is, from the beginning of the reign of Queen Elizabeth to the restoration of Charles II.

The revival of the official Reformation of the Church of England by Queen Elizabeth, her minister Cecil, and Archbishop Parker, was naturally accompanied by a resuscitation of the Puritan movement. But the party had become more than ever embittered by the persecution which it had undergone during the reign of Ultramontanism, and it had received an effective training in Presbyterianism by the residence of its leaders among the Protestants of Strasburg, Zurich, and Geneva. Its anti-sacramental principles had also undergone some modification, the theology of Calvin[6]

The Puritans trained for Presbyterianism by foreign Protestants

[6] Calvinism.—The opinions of Calvin were particularly distinguished by the doctrine of the Divine decrees respecting the Election and Predestination of some to salvation and some to damnation. "We say," writes Calvin, "that Scripture clearly proves this much, that God, by His eternal and immutable counsel, determined once for all those whom it was His pleasure one day to admit to salvation, and those whom, on the other hand, it was His pleasure to doom to destruction. We maintain that this counsel, as regards the elect, is founded on His free mercy, without any respect to human worth, while those whom He dooms to destruction are excluded from access to life by a just and blameless, but at the same time incomprehensible judgement." [Calvin's *Inst.*, III. xxi. 7.]

But Calvin altogether repudiated the Zwinglian theory that in the Lord's Supper the communicants receive bread and wine only. After guarding against ideas of a local and material Presence of Christ in the elements, he writes, "I willingly admit anything which helps to express the true and substantial communication of the Body and Blood of the Lord, as exhibited to believers under the sacred symbols of the Supper; understanding that they are received not by the imagination or intellect merely, but are enjoyed in reality as the

having taken the place of the theology of Zwingle. But the old dislike of the Prayer Book remained in all its force, and the opposition to Episcopacy, which had been somewhat vague before, was consolidated by practical contact with an ecclesiastical system from which bishops had long been banished and presbyteries established in working order.

The Puritans who had fled abroad at the accession of Queen Mary came back to England, indeed, with their antipathy to the old customs of the Church very much strengthened, and they were in the habit of calling those old customs "relics of the Amorites" and "leavings of idolatry," claptrap nicknames being always a favourite weapon of the anti-Church party at that time, and in later days also. The use even of cassock, surplice, and square cap were odious to them. The authorities enjoined these strictly on the London clergy, and summoned them before the Ecclesiastical Commissioners to witness the exhibition of a pattern priest, with the injunction that they were strictly to "keep the unity of apparel, like this man who stands here canonically habited with a square cap, a scholar's gown priestlike, a tippet, and in the church a linen surplice;" but "great was the anguish and distress of those ministers, who cried out for compassion of themselves and families, saying, 'We shall be killed in our souls for this pollution of ours.'" Copes, altar-crosses, "lights before the Sacrament," chanting, the use of organs or other musical instruments in church, the cross at Baptism, the old reverence at the Name of Jesus, the use of responses, the frequent

Nicknames in favour with them

Their hatred of Church customs

food of eternal life. For the odium with which this view is regarded by the world, and the unjust prejudice incurred by its defence, there is no cause, unless it be in the fearful fascinations of Satan" [Calvin's *Inst.*, IV. xviii. 19.]

CHAP VII

A.D. 1559-1603

repetition of the Lord's Prayer, the wedding-ring, sponsors in Baptism, the rite of Confirmation, and above all, kneeling at the reception of the Holy Communion,—these were greater grievances than ever; and to these were now to be added the practice of "the bishops affecting to be thought a superior order to presbyters, and claiming the sole right of ordination and the use of the keys." [7]

Episcopacy numbered among their grievances

Many of the implacable clergy who groaned under this formidable list of grievances were deprived of their benefices by the High Commission Court for refusing to obey the "Injunctions" and "Advertisements" set forth by the Crown with the object of securing uniformity. But the liberation of this body of clergy from the necessary restraint of a fixed sphere of duty rendered them far more dangerous, for they went from place to place fomenting ecclesiastical discord, living on the voluntary system, as the friars had done before the dissolution of the monasteries, "preaching where they could get leave," says Jewell, "as if they were apostles," and, everywhere that they went, depreciating the bishops, and exalting the system of the non-episcopal Protestants abroad.

Puritan "Prophesyings"

The younger clergy and the laity were educated in Puritan principles by means of what were called "Prophesyings" [8] or "Exercises," a kind of prayer-meetings in which polemical discussion formed the principal element, "The manner whereof was that the ministers of such a division, at a set time, met together in some church belonging to a market or other large town, and there each in their order explained, according to their ability, some particular

[7] Neal's *Hist. Purit.*, i. 211, 235-40, ed. 1732.

[8] So called in imitation of the inspired interpretations of Scripture mentioned in 1 Cor. xiv. 31.

portion of Scripture allotted them before. And after all of them had done, a moderator, who was one of the gravest and best learned among them, made his observations upon what the rest had said, and determined the true sense of the place. . . . At these assemblies there were great confluxes of people to hear and learn. . . . But the inconvenience was, that at these meetings happened at length confusions and disturbances, some affecting to show their parts, and to confute others that spake not so appositely, perhaps, as themselves. They also would sometimes broach heterodox opinions. And some that had been silenced from their preaching for their incompliance with the established worship would intrude themselves here and vent themselves against the Liturgy and hierarchy; some would speak against states or particular persons. The people also fell to arguing and disputing much upon religion; sometimes a layman would take upon him to speak; so that the exercises degenerated into factions, divisions, and censurings."[9]

Their characteristic features

They degenerated, in fact, into an organized attack upon Episcopacy and the Prayer Book, each person who took part in the prophesyings being required to subscribe to a Confession of Faith which condemned, among other things, "distinctions of meats, apparels, and days; and, briefly, all the ceremonies and whole order of Papistry which they call the Hierarchy, which are a devilish confusion, established as it were in spite of God, and to the reproach of religion.[1] The great

Their opposition to the Church system

[9] Strype's *Life of Grindal*, 325.

[1] Neal's *Hist. Purit.*, i. 277. Attempts were made by Archbishop Grindal and some other bishops, especially Cowper, Bishop of Lincoln [Strype's *Annals*, i. 472-477], to bring the prophesyings within the range of Church order, but it was found that no system could divest them of their essentially schismatical character. A Queen's letter was sent round to the bishops on May 7, 1577, requiring that the "exercises" should

CHAP VII

A.D. 1559-1603

object in view was, as stated by Cartwright, the leader of the party,[2] to reduce the ministry of the Church to one Order, which, under the name of "Ministers," was supposed to represent the Bishops of the Primitive Church, to turn over the election and ordination of ministers to local "presbyteries," and to reduce deacons to what was supposed to be their original position—that of laymen intrusted with the collection and distribution of alms. In 1572 these principles of the party were fully expounded in a volume entitled "A full and plain declaration of Ecclesiastical Discipline out of the Word of God, and of the decline of the Church of England from the same." This "Book of Discipline" became the text-book of the Puritans, and was written[3] by Walter Travers, chaplain and tutor in the family of Lord Burleigh, and afterwards lecturer at the Temple, where he had that controversy with Hooker, then Master of the Temple, which led

Travers' Book of Discipline

be put down, and in this it is said that many persons neither lawfully called to nor fit for the ministry "do daily devise, imagine, propound, and put in execution sundry new rites and forms in the Church, as well by their preaching, reading, and ministering the Sacrament as by procuring unlawful assemblies of a great number of our people out of their ordinary parishes, and from places far distant . . . to be hearers of their disputations and new devised opinions upon points of divinity." By the increase of these, the Queen goes on to say, "great danger may ensue even to the decay of the Christian faith, whereof we are by God appointed the Defender, besides the other inconveniences to the disturbance of our peaceable Government." [Cardwell's *Doc. Annals*, i. 373.] The prophesyings were for a time suppressed, but they were revived again before long; and early in the seventeenth century the learned and pious Dr. Thomas Jackson wrote respecting them, "Since the liberty of prophesying was taken up, which came but lately into the northern parts (unless it were in the towns of Newcastle and Berwick, where Knox, Mackbray, and Udal had sown their tares), all things have gone so cross and backward in our Church that I cannot call the history of these forty years to mind, or express my observations upon it, but with a bleeding heart." [Jackson's Works, ii. 273.]

[2] In his lectures as Margaret Professor of Divinity at Cambridge [Strype's *Annals*, ii. 379], and his other works. See Brooke's *Memoir of Cartwright*, 1845.

[3] An introductory preface to it was written by Cartwright.

the latter to write his immortal work on "The Laws of Ecclesiastical Polity." But the clearest and most concise statement of the object which the Puritans had in view is to be found in "The Solemn League and Covenant," which was drawn up by the General Assembly of Scotland on August 17, 1643, and was sworn to in St. Margaret's Church, Westminster, by the Westminster Assembly and the House of Commons on September 26, 1643. The *first* article of this famous Puritan manifesto pledges those who subscribe to it, and subscriptions were extorted in all parishes throughout the country,[4] to defend the doctrine, worship, discipline, and government of the Church of Scotland, and "to endeavour to bring the Churches of God in the three kingdoms to the nearest conjunction and uniformity in religion, confession of faith, form of Church government," and "directory for worship and catechizing." The *second* article pledges the subscribers in the following words: "That we shall in like manner, without respect of persons, endeavour the extirpation of Popery, Prelacy (that is, Church government by Archbishops, Bishops, their Chancellors, Commissaries, Deans, Deans and Chapters, Archdeacons, and all other ecclesiastical officers depending on that hierarchy), superstition, heresy, schism, profaneness, and whatsoever shall be found to be contrary to sound doctrine and the power of godliness, lest we partake in other men's sins, and thereby be in danger to receive of their plagues, and that the Lord may be one, and His Name one, in the three kingdoms."[5]

The "Solemn League and Covenant"

Covenanters pledged to the extinction of the Church system

[4] Some of these long strings of signatures and marks still remain in the registers of country parishes.

[5] Similar language respecting the extirpation of the Episcopal "Hierarchy" had been used from a very early period of Queen Elizabeth's reign; as, for example, in the notorious "Admonition to the Parliament" which was published

Southern Methodist University

CHAP VII

A.D. 1559-1603

The system of prophesyings did much towards educating the younger clergy and the laity into a predilection for Presbyterianism, but the Puritan leaders adopted a still more astute policy—that of introducing a secret Presbyterian organization into every parish where it was possible to introduce it. It was shrewdly expected that the spread of such an organization would, in the course of a few years, so influence public feeling and opinion that the maintenance of Episcopacy would be rendered impossible, the functions of the bishops in ordaining ministers, and in instituting them to their particular parishes, being superseded by the local "classes" of the clergy, and their functions in the discipline of clergy and laity, as exercised in the Diocesan Courts, being superseded by the "ruling elders" of each parish. At one time the Puritans were so confident that this organization would prove successful, that some of them ventured openly to express the opinion that Parker would be the last Archbishop of Canterbury.[6]

Secret organization of the Puritans

Bancroft, afterwards successively Bishop of London and Archbishop of Canterbury, took much pains to investigate this movement at the close of the sixteenth century, and published the result of his researches in two works, the one entitled "Dangerous Positions and Proceedings, . . . under pretence of Reformation

Bancroft's exposure of Puritanism

in 1572, under the direction of a meeting of Puritan ministers, by Field and Wilcox, two of their number.

[6] In 1589 the heads of the Puritan party were gravely taking into consideration "how Archbishops, Bishops, Chancellors, Deans, Canons, Archdeacons, Commissaries, Registrars, Apparitors, etc., should be provided for, that the Commonwealth be not thereby,"—that is, on their expulsion from their benefices and offices—"pestered with beggars." [Bancroft's *Dangerous Positions*, 127.] It was a full half century before this question came "within the range of practical politics," and then it quickly passed out of that range again for more than two centuries longer.

and for the Presbyteriall Discipline," and the other, "A Survey of the Pretended Holy Discipline." In the first of these works, published in 1593, Bancroft shows that the organization of "classes" as a means for superseding Episcopal ordination and institution had spread far and wide; and, from the evidence of a Puritan minister, he gives an account of it as it was said to exist about 1587 in Northamptonshire. "The whole shire was divided into three Classes: 1. The Classis of Northamptonshire, consisting of these ministers—Master Snape, Master Penry, Master Sibthorpe, Master Edwards, Master Littleton, Master Bradshaw, Master Larke, Master Fleshware, Master Spicer, etc.: 2. The Classis of Daventry side, consisting of these—Master Barebon, Master Rogers, Master King, Master Smart, Master Sharpe, Master Proudloe, Master Elliston, etc.: 3. The Classis of Kettering side, consisting of these—Master Stone, Master Williamson, Master Fawsbrook, Master Patinson, Master Massey, etc. This devise (saith Master Johnson) is commonly received in most parts of England (as I have heard in sundry of our meetings), but especially in Warwickshire, Suffolk, Norfolk, Essex," etc.[7]

The "Classes" of ministers

Whenever it was possible to influence the patron of any vacant benefice, he was persuaded to place the appointment in the hands of the parishioners, who proceeded to "try" candidates, and then to elect one, that he might be formally presented by the patron. This process may be illustrated by the case of one Axton, Rector of Moreton Corbet, in Leicestershire, who was brought before the Bishop of Peterborough for refusing to wear the surplice and to use the ceremonies enjoined in the Prayer Book. The man denied that

The "trial" of presentees to benefices by them

[7] Bancroft's *Dang. Pos.*, 77.

CHAP VII
A.D. 1559-1603

he was rector or "parson," but declared that he was chosen pastor "by the free election of the people and leave of the patron. After I had preached about six weeks, by way of probation, I was chosen by one consent of them all, a sermon being preached by one of my brethren, setting forth the mutual duties of pastor and people." The bishop reminded him that he received his tithes because he had been instituted and inducted as "parson" of the parish; but Axton's view was, "I receive these temporal things of the people, because I, being their pastor, do minister to them spiritual things."[8]

Pretended election to benefices

After this popular election, although the person elected must necessarily have been in Priest's Orders already, he went through a ceremony of ordination by the clergy who formed the "class" in which the parish was situated. "I think," says another Puritan clergyman, when being examined by the High Commission Court, "they observe as much as they can the order prescribed in the said Book of Discipline, as about Proudloe of Weedenbeck, his admission (as I have heard), and Snapes and Larke. The manner whereof is, that they renounce the calling they have had of the bishops, and do take it again from the approbation of the 'classis.' And again, they will be content to accept Orders from the bishop as a civil matter, but do not thereby count themselves ministers until the godly brethren of some classis have allowed them." He gives, as one instance among many, "one Maister Hocknel," who had been in Orders six or seven years, who was presented to a benefice, and then went for his "call" to Snape, Penry, and other members of the Northamptonshire "classis." In this case the exami-

Disingenuousness about Holy Orders

[8] Neal's *Hist. Purit.*, i. 258.

nation and the trial sermon were not considered satisfactory, and they refused to "call" him to the ministry of the parish to which he had been presented. "Hereupon," says the narrator, "Maister Hocknel and they fell out; and he (contemning their censure) did proceed and took possession of his benefice."[9] It is hardly necessary to point out that the system here adopted, from necessity, as supplemental to that of Episcopacy, was the system which alone remained in use during those years when Episcopacy was abolished by the temporary supremacy of the Puritans under the rule of the Long Parliament and of Cromwell.

The system superseded Ordination

Of the local "discipline," by which it was intended to supersede the bishop's functions as exercised in his Consistory Court, nothing more need be said than that it took the shape of a kind of "select vestry," or, as a similar body is still called in Scotland, a "kirk-session," the members of which were named "ruling elders."[1] This body was to be established in every parish, and was to be intrusted with a critical control over the morals of all persons within the parish, dealing out spiritual censures, penances, and excommunications upon all offenders, just as had been done, though with much less severity, in the Consistory Courts of the bishops. Great importance was attached to this system of discipline by ruling elders, and the following statements respecting it were collected from Puritan writers of the day by Bishop Bancroft:

The Puritan "Discipline" of the laity

"The want of the eldership is the cause of all evil. It is not to be hoped for that any commonwealth will flourish without it. This discipline is no small part of the Gospel, it is of the substance of it. It is the right stuff and gold for

[9] Bancroft's *Dang. Pos.*, 113.

[1] For the earlier idea of the Puritan Discipline, see pp. 167, 168.

CHAP VII

A.D. 1559-1603

building the Church of God. This would make the Church a chaste spouse, having a wonderful brightness as the morning, fair as the moon, pure as the sun, and terrible like an army with banners. Without this discipline there can be no true religion. This government is the sceptre whereby alone Christ Jesus ruleth among men. The Churches of God in Denmark, Saxony, Tigurin, etc., wanting this government, are to be accounted maimed and unperfect. The establishing of the presbyteries is the full placing of Christ in His kingdom. They that reject this discipline refuse to have Christ reign over them, and deny Him in effect to be their King or their Lord. It is the blade of a shaken sword in the hand of the Cherubins, to keep the way of the tree of life." "Ridiculous men, and bewitched," is his indignant comment on these quotations, for which he gives the references; "as though Christ's sovereignty, kingdom, and lordship were nowhere acknowledged or to be found but where half-a-dozen artizans, shoemakers, tinkers, and tailors, with their preacher and reader (eight or nine Cherubins forsooth), do rule the whole parish." [2]

Bancroft on the "Discipline"

Political influence of the Puritans

The result of these politic measures was, however, that a large number of the imperfectly educated portion of the middle classes were enlisted on the side of the Puritan "platform," and in the year 1585 the leaders of the party calculated their numbers at 100,000. The movement was supported, for political purposes, by the Earl of Leicester, Sir Francis Walsingham, Sir Francis Knollys, and to some extent by the Cecils, and had so much support in Parliament that several bills were introduced, though not carried, to legalize its progress. It also received assistance from the growing sect of the Brownists, especially through the pamphleteering ability of John Penry, the author of the ribald tracts which were published under the

[2] Bancroft's *Dang. Pos.*, 43.

pseudonym of "Martin Mar-Prelate."[3] And thus, notwithstanding the endeavours of the High Commission Court (often under direct orders from the Queen) to suppress the Puritans, they had by the end of Queen Elizabeth's reign become a very powerful party in the country, and one which was already showing signs of doing great injury to the established order of things both in Church and State. They had then spread among the clergy and laity a very false idea of the Reformation settlement so carefully made

Their antagonism to the Reformation settlement

[3] These were a series of pamphlets professedly advocating the cause of religion as set forth in the Puritan system, but in reality filled with the most venomous rancour against the non-Puritan clergy. The following are specimens of the terms in which the bishops and other clergy were spoken of: "Our lord bishops, as John of Canterbury, with the rest of that swinish rabble, are petty Antichrists, petty popes, proud prelates, enemies to the Gospel, and most covetous wretched priests. . . . I suppose them to be in the state of the sin against the Holy Ghost. . . . Right puissant and terrible priests, my clergy, masters of our Convocation house, whether vicars, worshipful paltripolitans, or others of the holy league of subscription: right poisoned, persecuting, and terrible priests; worshipful priests of the crew of monstrous and ungodly wretches, that, to maintain their own outrageous proceedings, mingle heaven and earth together. All who have subscribed have approved lies upon the Holy Ghost. . . . Our bishops, and proud, popish, presumptuous, paltry, pestilent, and pernicious prelates are usurpers. I will presently mar the fashion of your lordships. They are cogging and cozening knaves. The bishops will lie like dogs. Impudent, shameless, wainscoatfaced bishops. . . . I have heard some say his Grace will speak against his conscience. It is true." [Strype's *Life of Whitgift*, i. 553, 570.] The Mar-Prelate tracts were printed at a press which was quickly moved from place to place to avoid discovery, being set up first at Moulsey, near Kingston-on-Thames, then at Fawsley in Northamptonshire, Norton, Coventry, Welston in Warwickshire, from which latter place the letters were sent to another press in or near Manchester, where the printer was ultimately discovered while at work on a libellous tract against Bishop Cooper. The publications were forbidden by a proclamation, issued on February 13, 1589, but the printers, though fined and imprisoned by the Star Chamber, were eventually pardoned. Dr. John Bridges, Dean of Salisbury, and Thomas Cooper, Bishop of Winchester, wrote against Mar-Prelate and his assistants, but such publications cannot be met by argument. A full account of the series may be found in Maskell's *History of the Martin Mar-Prelate Controversy*, 1845.

CHAP VII

A.D. 1603

The effects of Elizabethan Puritanism

at the beginning of the Queen's reign, leading even those who were far from wishing to discard the Prayer Book into habits of non-natural interpretations of its doctrine and ritual. They had established a popular theory of the ministry and the Sacraments which was almost on the level of their own. They had opened the flood-gates of schism, and had made ecclesiastical disintegration so easy, that even their own body was soon broken up into fragmentary sects.

CHAPTER VIII

THE ORIGIN AND DEVELOPEMENT OF THE ROMAN CATHOLIC SECT

[A.D. 1559—1606]

CHAP VIII

A.D. 1559

THE history of early Anglo-Romanism, in its relation to the Reformed Church of England, is as melancholy a record of perverse opposition to Catholic right and order as is that of Puritanism. "The attempt to impose an uncanonical jurisdiction on the British Churches, and a refusal to hold communion with them except on that condition, was clearly an act of schism. And this was further aggravated by every kind of aggression: acts of excommunication and anathema, instigations to warfare abroad and to rebellion and schism at home, are the measures by which the Roman Church has exhibited its professed desire to restore unity to the Church of Christ. It must never be forgotten that the act of the Bishop of Rome, by which a most grievous and stubborn contest was begun in the English Church, was taken not in the character of Patriarch, but in the title of Supreme Pontiff. The same bull which made a rent in every English diocese professed to depose also the Queen of England. It was a power to give away not sees, but thrones also; and the effect of this has been, as in the

The schismatical aggressiveness of Rome

CHAP VIII

A.D. 1559

East so in England, to erect altar against altar, and succession against succession. In the formation of sects in diocesan churches, in the exclusive assumption of the name Catholic, in the re-ordination of priests, and in restricting the One Church to their own communion, there has been no such example of division since the schism of Donatus."[1] These are the eloquent words of Henry Edward Manning, written at a time of life when his historical vision had not been distorted by the dazzling purple of Roman dignities, and they give a most true summary of the course by which the Roman Catholic sect was set up in opposition to the Church of England. It will be the object of this chapter to trace in some detail the series of events which the future Cardinal thus indicated in outline.

as delineated by Manning

§ 1. The Early Policy of Rome towards Queen Elizabeth

In the early months of the Queen's reign a hope seems to have been entertained that Rome and England might find some *modus vivendi*, notwithstanding the Acts of Supremacy and Uniformity which were passed early in 1559. The Pope who was reigning when Elizabeth came to the throne, Paul IV., does not appear to have taken any measures towards securing his authority in England; but his successor, Pius IV., endeavoured to open negotiations with the Queen very shortly after his accession. For this purpose he sent a confidential agent, Vincentius Parpalia, Abbot of St.

May 26, 1555—Aug. 18, 1559.

Jan. 6, 1560—Dec. 9, 1565.

[1] *The Unity of the Church*, by Henry Edward Manning, M.A., Archdeacon of Chichester, p. 364, second edition, 1845. This work was dedicated to Mr. Gladstone, and is a very able treatise on the great subject with which it deals.

Saviour's, who received authority to deal with Elizabeth personally, and in what manner may be partly gathered from the letter which the Pope sent to her by his messenger's hands :—

Letter of Pope Pius IV. to Queen Elizabeth

"To our most dear daughter in Christ, Elizabeth, Queen of England.

"Dear daughter in Christ, health and apostolical benediction. How greatly we desire (our pastoral charge requiring it) to procure the salvation of your soul, and to provide likewise for your honour and the establishment of your kingdom withal, God, the searcher of all hearts, knoweth. And you may understand by what we have given in charge to this our beloved son Vincentius Parpalia, Abbot of St. Saviour's, a man well known to you, and well approved by us. Wherefore, we do again and again exhort and admonish your highness, most dear daughter, that, rejecting evil counsellors which love not you, but themselves, and serve their own lusts, you would take the fear of God into council with you, and acknowledge the time of your visitation, show yourself obedient to our fatherly persuasion and wholesome counsels, and promise to yourself from us all things that may make, not only to the salvation of your soul, but also whatsoever you shall desire from us for the establishing and confirming of your princely dignity, according to the authority, place, and office committed unto us by God. And if so be, as we desire and hope, you shall return into the bosom of the Church, we shall be ready to receive you with the same love, honour, and rejoicing that the father in the Gospel did his son returning to him: although our joy is like to be the greater in that he was joyful for the salvation of one son, but you, drawing along with you all the people of England, shall hear us and the whole company of our brethren, who are shortly, God willing, to be assembled in a General Council for the taking away of heresies, and so for the salvation of yourself and your whole nation, fill the universal Church with rejoicing and gladness. Yea, you shall make glad heaven itself with such a memorable fact, and achieve admirable renown to your name, much more glorious than the crown

CHAP VIII
A.D. 1560

you wear. But concerning this matter the same Vincentius shall deal with you more largely, and shall declare our fatherly affection toward you; and we entreat your Majesty to receive him lovingly, to hear him diligently, and to give the same credit to his speeches which you would to ourself.

"Given at Rome at St. Peter's, etc., the 5th day of May 1560, in our first year." [2]

Concessions offered by the Papal Court

It was understood by those who wrote of these events that Parpalia was authorized to promise great concessions to the Queen, such as the revocation of the sentence against her mother's marriage, to permit Communion under both kinds, and to sanction the Prayer Book. It seems highly probable that this was the case, since a secret agent of Cecil, whose report to him is printed further on, wrote on April 13, 1564, saying that the Pope and his advisers had come to the determination to offer the Queen to confirm the English Liturgy, "with some things altered therein, provided that her Grace and the Council do acknowledge the same from Rome and her Council." This statement is also strongly supported by the words of Lord Chief-Justice Coke in his charge to the grand jury at Norwich in the year 1606. He then asserted, among other things connected with the dealings between Rome and England during the late Queen's reign, that before the sentence of excommunication had been pronounced against her, the Pope "sent his letter unto her Majesty, in which he did allow the Bible, and Book of Divine Service, as it is now used among us, to be authentick, and not repugnant to truth. But that therein was contained enough necessary to salvation, though there was not in it so much as might conveniently be, and that he would also allow it unto us, without changing any part: so

[2] Fuller's *Ch. Hist.*, ii. 463.

CHAP VIII
A.D. 1560

as her Majesty would acknowledge to receive it from the Pope, and by his allowance; which her Majesty denying to do, she was then presently by the same Pope excommunicated. And this is the truth concerning Pope Pius Quartus, as I have faith to God and men, I have oftentimes heard avowed by the late Queen her own words; and I have conferred with some Lords that were of greatest reckoning in the State, who had seen and read the letter which the Pope sent to that effect, as have been by me specified. And this upon my credit, as I am an honest man, is most true."[3]

Coke's testimony on this point

But Parpalia was not even allowed to cross the Channel, the Queen and her Council determining that he should remain at Calais, and send his credentials on by a messenger. What answer was returned to this letter does not appear; but about the same time next year another attempt of a similar kind was made through the King of Spain, a second nuncio, named Martinengo, being sent with despatches for the Queen as far as Brussels, where he waited while Philip's ambassador made the request that he might be received. Meetings of the Privy Council were held at Greenwich, where the Queen was then residing, on May 1st and 5th, 1561, to consider the subject, and an elaborate note is preserved among the State Papers which contains the reasons why it was decided, "without any manner of contradiction or doubt moved by

Attempts to introduce a Papal Nuncio into England

[3] The Lord Coke, his Speech and Charge, London, 1607. When Coke says, "She was then presently by the same Pope excommunicated," he seems to be confusing Pius IV. with Pius V. See also Camden, *Ann. Eliz.*, p. 59, ed. 1615; Twysden's *Historical Vindication of the Church of England*, p. 175; *Validity of the Orders of the Church of England*, by Humphrey Prideaux, D.D., 1688; Bramhall's Works, ii. 85, ed. 1845; Bishop Babington's *Notes on the Pentateuch*, on Numbers vii.; Courayer's *Defence of the Dissertation on the Validity of English Ordination*, ii. 360, 378; Harrington's *Pius IV. and the Book of Common Prayer*, 1856.

CHAP VIII A.D. 1561

any, that the nuncio should not come into any of her Majesty's dominions," on the ground that even the ancient laws of the land would not have permitted him to do so without taking an oath that he should do nothing against the crown or the liberties of the kingdom, that recent laws entirely forbade the entrance of a nuncio into England, and that the right of prohibition was exercised by Queen Mary shortly before her death.[4]

A few weeks later, on July 14, 1561, a report was received from Sir Nicholas Throckmorton, the Queen's ambassador at Paris, stating that the Bishop of Vitelli, the Pope's nuncio to the King of France, had been "labouring with" him "to persuade the Queen's Majesty to accept the Council of Trent. But this question also had been fully considered in the case of Martinengo, who was supposed to have been intrusted with an invitation to the Queen to send delegates to the Council. It was then determined that this could not be done, chiefly because, *first*, the invitation came so long after the other principal Sovereigns of Europe had been consulted as to make it appear that England was regarded only as a second-rate power; and, *secondly*, because to send delegates would be to recognize the authority of the Bishop of Rome to call a General Council, thus acknowledging his supremacy. A third time, therefore, the advances of the Pope were declined.

The Queen refuses to send delegates to Trent

§ 2. Endeavours to recover Papal Authority by Force and Fraud

It appears to have been this last refusal which provoked the Court of Rome to that deadly hostility

[4] State Papers, Dom. Eliz., 175.

CHAP VIII

A.D. 1562

with which Queen Elizabeth was henceforth regarded, and which prompted the Pope to seek her ruin by all means at his command as the only way of recovering his authority in England. When Parliament met in December 1562, Cecil introduced a bill "for the assurance of the Queen's regal power over all estates and subjects within her dominions," with a speech in which he made it clear that he had received secret information—his "intelligence department" was always very efficient—to the effect that Pius IV. was goading the King of Spain into a war with England, and offering large supplies of money to assist him in organizing an invasion, and that the Pope was also using measures for undermining the Queen's power, and leading to the re-establishment of the Papal system. In the preamble to the Act it was stated that "the fautors," or favourers and supporters of the Pope's "usurped power," had "at this time grown to marvellous outrage and licentious boldness," and that great dangers were arising in consequence, which required "more sharp restraint and correction of laws than hitherto in the time of the Queen's most mild and merciful reign have been had, used, or established." Sterner provisions were therefore made by this Act [5 Eliz. c. 1] respecting those who maintained the authority of the Bishop of Rome and refused the Oath of Supremacy, the first offence in either case being now met by the penalty of præmunire, and the second offence being accounted as treason, and so punished; but the second tender of the oath was only to be made to ecclesiastical persons.

Cecil's information respecting the Papal schemes

Further strictness in enforcing the Oath of Supremacy

What the general nature of Cecil's private information is likely to have been may be seen from a paper sent by one of his agents from Venice early in the

CHAP VIII A.D. 1563

next year, the contents of which are amply corroborated by subsequent events, and by Catena's eulogistic Life of the succeeding Pope, Pius V.[5]

"*A list of several Consultations amongst the Cardinals, Bishops, and other of the several Orders of Rome now a contriving and conspiring against her gracious Majesty and the Established Church of England.*

Denham's account of the Papal plans

"Pius having consulted with the clergy of Italy, and assembling them together, it was by general consent voted that the immunity of the Romish Church and her jurisdiction is required to be defended by all her princes as the principal Church of God.

"And to encourage the same, the Council hath voted that Pius should bestow her Grace's realm on that prince who shall attempt to conquer it.

"There was a Council ordered by way of a Committee, who contain three of the cardinals, two of the archbishops,

[5] This paper is copied from a manuscript in the British Museum [Add. MS., 4784, fol. 39-42], to which is prefixed the following memorandum: "Severall Memorialls of ye Lord Cecill's transcribed out of a Booke of his being lent vnto mee by John King, Minister & Deane of Tuam, Anno 1656."

After this memorandum is a copy of a letter from Dennum to Cecil, as follows:—

"Worthy Sir,—You can assure her Highnesse of my care and charge which I vndertooke at my departing from her Grace & the Honble Privy Councell. I assure you I doe not mispend my little time, it being soe precious, as you and others can testefie by my former Intelligences sent by the hands of Capt. Russell, of which I was assured came safe to the Councell. I intended to have presented this inclosed with mine owne hands to her Grace, but her last message to mee hath been the occasion of sending it sooner vpon two accompts, it being a matter of sudden prvenc̃on, and likewise haveing soe sure a hand, & the conveniency of Mr. Edward Maxwells & others of our English ffactors here going from hence, and guarded by her Grace's shipp called the Swallow, I shall make all the speed I can possible, and with God's helpe see yor Worship as cheerfull as ever, though I am somewhat altered by this last voyage. God prserve yor vndertakeings, both at home & abroad, for the publiq good of her gracious Matie & welfare of the Nac̃on.—Yor assured Servant,

"E. Dennum."

"Venice, *Apr. 13th*, 1564."

Strype gives a summary of this paper, and says that "the original was kept private in the Queen's closet, among other papers of secrecy." [Strype's *Annals*, ii. 54 ed. 1824.]

six of the bishops, and as many of the late order of the Jesuits, who daily increase and come into great favour with the Pope of late; these do present weekly methods, ways, and contrivances for the Church of Rome, which hold the great Council for the week following in employment how to order all things for the advancement of the Romish faith. Some of these contrivances, coming to my hands by the help of the silver-key, be as follow:— CHAP VIII A.D. 1563

"1. The people of England being much averted from their Mother Church of Rome, they have thought fit, sounding out their inclinations how the common sort are taken with the Liturgy in English, for to offer her Grace to confirm it with some things altered therein, provided that her Grace and the Council do acknowledge the same from Rome and her Council, which, if it be denied, as we suppose it will, then these are to asperse the Liturgy of England by all ways and conspiracy imaginable.

"2. A license or dispensation, to be granted to any of the Romish orders, to preach, speak, or write against the now Established Church of England, amongst other protestors against Rome, purposely to make England odious to them; and that they may retain their assistances promised them in case of any prince's invasion, and the parties so licensed and indulged (dispensed with) to be seemingly as one of them, and not to be either taxed, checked, or excommunicated for so doing. And further, for the better assurance of the party so licensed and indulged, the party to change his name, lest he be discovered, and to keep a quarternal correspondence with any of the cardinals, archbishops, bishops, abbots, priors, or other of the chief monasteries, abbeys, etc. At which quarternal correspondence shall not only give the Pope intelligence of heretical conspiracy, but be a full assurance of their fidelity to Rome. Denham's account of the Papal plans

"This proposal was much debated in the Council, which caused some of the Council to say, how shall we prevent it, in case any of the parties so licensed flinch from us and receive a good reward, and fall off from our correspondency?

"3. It was then ordered that there should be several appointed for to watch the parties so licensed and indulged,

CHAP VIII
A.D. 1563

and to give intelligence to Rome of their behaviour; which parties are sworn not to divulge to any of those so licensed or indulged what they be, or from whence they came, but to be strange, and to come in as one of their converts, so that the party shall be cautious how and which way he bendeth.

"It was afterwards debated how it should be ordered in case any of the heretical ministry of England should become as they who had these licenses, and what should be done in that case.

"4. It was then answered by the Bishop of Mens that that was the thing they aimed at, and that they desired no more than separation amongst the heretics of England; and by so doing, in case an animosity be amongst them (the Church established by the heretic Queen, as they so termed her Grace), there would be the less to oppose the Mother Church of Rome, whenever opportunity served. This reason of the Bishop's pacified the whole Council.

Denham's account of the Papal plans

"5. It was granted, not only indulgence and pardon to the party that should assault her Grace, either private or in public, or to any cook, brewer, baker, physician, vintner, grocer, chirurgeon, or any other calling whatsoever, that should or did make her away out of this world, a pardon, but an absolute remission of sins to the heirs of that party's family sprung from him, and a perpetual annuity to them for ever, and the said heir to be never beholden to any of the fathers for pardon, be they of what order soever, unless it pleased himself, and to be one of those Privy Council, whosoever reigned successively.

"6. It was ordered, for the better assurance of further intelligence to the See of Rome, to give licenses to any that shall swear to that supremacy due obedience and allegiance to her powers, to dispense with sacraments, baptism, marriages, and other ceremonies of our now Established Church in England; that the parties so obliged may possess and enjoy any office, employment, either ecclesiastical, military, or civil, and to take such oaths as shall be imposed upon them, provided that the said oaths be taken with a reserve for to serve the Mother Church of Rome whenever opportunity

serveth; and thereby in so doing the Act in Council was passed, it was no sin, but meritorious until occasion served to the contrary, and that when it so served for Rome's advantage, the party was absolved from his oath.

"7. It was also ordered that all the Romish orders, as well regular as secular, to cherish all the adherents of the Mother Church of Rome, whenever occasion serveth, to be in readiness at the times that shall be appointed, and to contribute according to their capacities what in them lieth for the promotion of the Romish cause.

"8. It is ordered that the Romish party shall propose a match for the Queen of the Catholic princes for to further or to promote the Romish faith.

"9. It is ordered, upon pain of excommunication, and of a perpetual curse to light on the families and posterities of all those of the Mother Church of Rome who will not promote or assist by means of money or otherwise Mary Queen of Scotland's pretence to the crown of England.

Denham's account of the Papal plans

"10. It is also ordered that every Romish Catholic within England and Ireland, or any of England's territories, to contribute to those Romish bishops, parish priests, etc., that are privately or shall be by Rome set over them, to pay all the Church duties, as if they were in possession, upon pain of excommunication of them and their posterity.

"11. It is ordered that the See of Rome do dispense with all parties of the Roman faith to swear against all heretics of England as elsewhere, and that not to be a crime, or an offence against the soul of the party, the accused taking the oath with an intention to promote or advance the Roman Catholic faith."

These plans were considerably modified a few years afterwards by the ingenious device of founding colleges abroad for the education of "missionary" priests of English birth, and by the determination not to allow Roman Catholics to attend Divine Service in English churches. But the "prince's invasion" was already in contemplation, and although hindered for a time, was actually attempted when the Spanish Armada sailed for

CHAP VIII

A.D. 1563-69

the shores of England in 1588. An account of what was done by the Papal Court at this time is given by Catena in his Life of Pius V., which was published in the year 1587.

Jan. 17, 1566—May 1, 1572

"How clearly the zeal of Pope Pius[6] flamed out for retrieving the state of religion which was fallen and decayed, may be seen in the affairs of England. Besides the continual supplies and pensions which he gave to many persons of quality of that nation, and to such as had fled thence for the sake of the Catholic faith, he resolved immediately to send Vincenzo Lauro, Bishop of Mondovi, Nuncio, into Scotland, where Calvin's heresy began to creep in, furnishing him with a good sum of money to be expended in the cause of religion, and of Queen Mary Stuart, who had still preserved herself Catholic. Vincenzo gave her that supply of money, together with his wholesome advice; but by reason of the many and great troubles of that kingdom, fomented by Elizabeth, Queen of England, he, residing at Paris, could not penetrate so far into those affairs as Queen Mary desired, as well for the great devotion she bore to the holiness and bounty of the Pope as for her great regard to the worth and singular prudence of the Nuncio. She, after having solemnly baptized the Prince, her son, according to the rites of the Roman Church, was several times reduced to such a condition by the snares and treachery of the heretics (whom Elizabeth secretly favoured, yet seeming to take pity on her, exhorting her to patience, and keeping her in hope of assistance, 'till she might entice and draw' her into her territories), that she passed at length into England to demand succours against her rebellious subjects, relying on the promises of the said Queen, who yet no sooner had her in her power but she shut her up in prison, fearing, lest if Mary prospered, who being nearest of blood to Henry VIII., was his lawful heir, she would lose her kingdom of England,

Catena's account of the Papal plans

[6] This zeal was appreciated at Rome at a much later date, for, in the bull by which Pius V. was canonized in 1712, he is sainted among other things for his "unhesitating zeal in striking with his dread anathema the impious heretic Queen Elizabeth, the pretended Queen of England."

who, being born of Anne of Boleyn, not his wife but his concubine, might justly be driven out of it as illegitimate.

"Now Pius, taking into consideration, as well how he might help and deliver the Queen of Scots (whom neither imprisonment, nor bonds, nor threatened tortures, nor promised rewards could shake from the Catholic faith, or from the obedience to the Holy See), as how he might restore the true religion in England, and remove the very stink or source of so great evils (Elizabeth still aiding and abetting the dissensions in Christendom, especially in France and Flanders, and giving support to the Protestants in Germany), deputed certain persons who should go into that kingdom, and informing themselves of the state of the heretics and Catholics, should give him an account of both, animating the latter to set up again the ancient rites and worship.

"And as he was not permitted to have there an Apostolical Nuncio, or any public minister for the Holy See, he had diligent care that Robert Ridolfi, a Florentine gentleman, who resided in England under the show of a merchant, should move the minds of the people to a sedition for the destruction of Elizabeth. This gentleman operated after such a manner in the name of his Holiness, not only with the Catholics, of whom there are great numbers, but likewise with many of the principal Protestants, who concurred in this design for various reasons, some for the personal enmity they had with those who aspired to the next succession of the Crown; some prompted by more solid hopes in the change of the government, that there was reason to expect a good event.

Catena's account of the Papal plans

"While these things were secretly in agitation, there arose a difference between the Catholic King and Elizabeth, on account of shipping and of money detained in London, which the King intended for the payment of his army in Flanders, and neither these nor the goods of the Genoese being restored as the Duke d'Alva demanded, he, by way of reprisal, seized on the effects of the English at Antwerp, and other places. Hence Pius, taking advantage of the occasion, pressed the King to favour the design of the conspirators in England, as he could not better secure his dominions in Flanders than by depressing the power of this Queen, who, while she was in a

CHAP VIII
A.D. 1563-69

condition, would always infest those provinces; and reminded him of the obligation of his religion, as the first motive to such an undertaking. The King gladly embracing this proposal, it was left to the care of Pius to manage dextrously with the Court of France, in order to its favouring the Catholics of England. But for this, he was to use, as he did, very different persuasives, representing chiefly the interest of the Queen of Scots, who was allied to the Crown of France, and of those noblemen who had assisted the same Crown, when the Admiral, at the head of an army, was attempting the ruin of the royal family, these having kept back Elizabeth from declaring herself openly in behalf of the French rebels. Everything appearing to be well concerted in England, Ridolfi pushed the matter so strenuously that the greatest part of the nobility joined together, taking the Duke of Norfolk for their head, to whom the Queen of Scots, with her own consent, was promised in marriage.

Catena's account of the Papal plans

"And that this insurrection might be of greater service to the said Queen, and Duke, and nobles, Pius at the same time published a bull and sentence against Elizabeth, declaring her to be heretical, and deprived of her kingdom, discharging her subjects from their oath of fidelity and from all other duty whatsoever, and likewise excommunicating those that should hereafter obey her; in the same form granting full commission to all to withstand and oppose her. And, first of all, there being a difficulty of publishing the bull in Spain or France for fear of provoking this wicked woman, he caused it to be published in that very kingdom, transmitting to Ridolfi many printed copies to be dispersed, as was accordingly done. Thus, none knowing whence they came, many persons were executed for having transcribed them with their own hand. Among others John Melela" [Felton], "an English gentleman, having fixed a copy on the gate of the Bishop of London's palace, suffered a most cruel death, constantly affirming to the last that he had done well, and that he was ready to do it again, according to the tenor and purport of the said bull; which so far influenced and excited the minds of the people, that they declared publicly against yielding any farther allegiance to Elizabeth, and if any head

of the faction had then discovered himself, they would certainly have run into a sudden and open revolt. Whereupon Elizabeth, apprehending her danger, and not being altogether ignorant of the conspiracy of the nobles, began to arm, and to use the necessary precautions, as well to defend herself as to lay hold on some of the parties that were engaged against her."[7] A.D. 1569

Catena seems here to confuse the dates of events, for the bull of deposition and excommunication was not published in England until some time after the rebellion to which his words refer. This was the insurrection headed by the young Earls of Westmoreland and Northumberland, which began in November 1569, and was suppressed in January 1570. It seems not unlikely that some notification of the coming bull was given to the leaders of this rebellion, for Sanders says, in his "De visibili Monarchia," written in the year 1572, that the Pope caused the rebellion in the North, by sending Nicolas Morton, a priest, to declare to the Earls of Northumberland and Westmoreland that Elizabeth was a heretic, that she had thus lost all claim to dominion and power, that she was to be regarded by them as a heathen, and that they were free from any obligation to obey her laws. The exact words are thus given by another writer: "Our Lord has inspired your minds with a zeal worthy of your Catholic faith, that you may attempt to free yourselves and your country from the shameful slavery of female lewdness, and bring it back to its former obedience to this holy Roman See."[8]

The Pope and the Northern rebellion

[7] Catena's *Life of Pius V.*, p. 112. The full title of the work is, *Vita del Gloriosissimo Papa Pio Quinto, scritta*, etc., Girolamo Catena, *dedicata al Santissimo signor nostro* Sisto Quinto. *In Roma con licenza et privilegi*, 1587.

[8] Throckmorton's *Further Considerations*, 101.

CHAP VIII
A.D. 1569

This assertion of Sanders is fully borne out by the narrative given of the rebellion, and of the Pope's grief on its failure, in the subsequent pages of Catena's work. "Hence," he goes on to say,—

"The Earls of Northumberland and Westmoreland, fearing to be surprised on their estates, without tarrying for their companions, or for succour from abroad, rose with more than twelve thousand men, and by public declarations notified the cause of their rising to be the restoring of the Catholic religion, and the ancient laws of the kingdom. Nor did they scour the country and march immediately against Elizabeth, as they ought to have done; and by which means they would have been sure of all their followers. But standing still, and not being able to maintain themselves in the field for want of money, at length retiring into Scotland, they did nothing at all, but gave occasion to Elizabeth to put the Duke of Norfolk under a guard upon suspicion, as also for fear of his marriage with the Queen of Scots, and to imprison many others, of whom Ridolfi was one. But Elizabeth not being able to penetrate the depth of the conspiracy, they were all set at liberty except the Duke.

Catena's account of the Pope's dealings with the Northern rebels

"In the meanwhile Pius had given Ridolfi a credit of an hundred and fifty thousand crowns, and was preparing a greater sum to advance the design. Ridolfi, being then a prisoner, could not distribute the money among those who were up in arms; yet afterwards he gave part of it to them, to keep them on the borders of Scotland, part to the Duke of Norfolk, part to others of the conspirators, to hold them firm. Yet, the alarm still sounding through the realm, Elizabeth called several persons to court under various pretences, —not daring to make a greater noise,—who refused to come, and gave her plainly enough to understand that they owed her no manner of obedience during the interdict of the bull; of which Elizabeth herself was heard to say, that it troubled her not so much for its substance and contents as because it had Pius for its author, whose election and life she could not but esteem miraculous. Now that the work might proceed on at due foundations, they despatched Ridolfi to Pius,

CHAP VIII
A.D. 1569

acquainting him that on their side all things were now ready, and desiring that he would be pleased to lend his name to the undertaking, as designed for the cause of religion, and for setting the Queen of Scots on the English throne after her marriage to the Duke of Norfolk; as also that he would move the Catholic King to grant them the succours they had demanded.

"Pius, well comprehending all their measures, and approving them, and rejecting what the Duke d'Alva had written to dissuade from the enterprise, after Ridolfi had communicated it to him in passing through Flanders, sent the same Ridolfi to the King of Spain under pretence of carrying articles for a league, and gave him likewise briefs to the King of Portugal, with all necessary instructions and deliberations; at the same time writing to the Duke of Norfolk, and exhorting him to be of good courage, inasmuch as he should want no assistance. Ridolfi, presenting the brief to the Catholic King, with the Pope's commission, by which he encouraged him to make the attempt, and speedily to send the desired succours, *offering not only all his power, but even to go in person, if need were, for the obtaining so great a benefit to all Christendom, and to pawn all the substance of the Apostolical See, the chalices, the crosses, and even his own vestments;* informing him exactly how feasible the thing was if he would only send into England a detachment of his army in Flanders, under the command of Chiapin Vitelli, in case that d'Alva was hindered.

Catena's account of the Pope's dealings with the Northern rebels

"The King having signified his pleasure to this purpose by an express courier, and Pius having remitted by the way of Flanders a great supply of money, d'Alva was not pleased to forward the execution; as well that he might deny this honour to Vitelli (having in his place proposed his own son, whom neither the King nor Council accepted) as on account of the new troubles in France, it being necessary to use precaution with that Crown, lest it should discover that the Catholic King embarked in this design without its aid, and thereupon should interpose to hinder it, and so the arms both of France and England should be brought against Flanders, because the French would be jealous lest the

CHAP VIII
A.D. 1569

Spaniard should make himself master of England, as the Spaniard would have been, could the French have attempted the like by their own strength, as they were never yet able to do; nor could the Pope give sufficient security in the case. Wherefore d'Alva wrote back to the Spanish Court, representing these difficulties and considerations. And, while his master give him new orders, that, notwithstanding any objections, he should undertake the assistance of his friends in England in the manner that was resolved on, and sent Ridolfi to him with money for the performance, it pleased God, in His secret judgment, to permit that Elizabeth should be advised of the whole design by a person abroad, whose name is here concealed. Whence, using still greater diligence, and being more upon her guard, and having found at the passing of a river letters from the Duke of Norfolk with twelve thousand crowns, which he sent to his friends in Scotland to be ready with forces, she ordered him to be taken into stricter custody, many others being imprisoned, and among these his secretary, who at the torture confessed his cipher, upon which the Duke, being convicted, was put to death, with many others.

Catena's account of the Pope's dealings with the Northern rebels

"With what excess of sorrow the Pope regretted this disappointment let the reader judge. The Catholic King lamented it before the Cardinal of Alexandria, telling him that never was there a fairer enterprise, nor better concerted, nor even more union and constancy among the parties concerned, it having never been discovered by their means all the time it was in agitation. Nor indeed was it less easy; because, if only three thousand of the infantry had in one night and one day unexpectedly passed over from Flanders, and landed at a time appointed in a certain place near London where Elizabeth's guards were posted, as in the Tower and in the Palace, there was so good an understanding, and so many people prepared, that the blow had been given in England before it could have been heard of in France, the Queen of Scots had been set at liberty, and confirmed Queen of England, as lawful heir, and the Catholic religion restored in that kingdom. Especially there having been assurance given that Thomas Stuckley, an English gentleman, by means

of the correspondence he held in Ireland, should in a few weeks, with certain ships of war granted him by the King of Spain, and three thousand soldiers on board, reduce that whole island to the devotion of the Catholics; at the same time sending his own pilot with two ships, and two armed barks, to burn all the vessels in the River of Thames." [9]

CHAP VIII
A.D. 1569

A year after Catena had published this narrative of the infamous plots of Pius V.,—he was afterwards canonized,—they were brought to a climax by the influence of the next Pope but one, Sixtus V., over the same fanatical King who sent forth the great fleet called the Armada to accomplish the long-threatened invasion of England. The expedition sailed, fortified by the blessing of the Pope and every other aid that he could render, in May 1588; and before August 5th it was utterly ruined, partly by the resolute hearts and strong arms of English sailors, and partly by those storms of which the brave English Queen said, when the intelligence was brought to her, "Afflavit Deus, et dissipantur." It was the last attempt of a foreign prince to conquer England for the Pope; and henceforth the Roman Court sought to substitute the novel English sect for the ancient English Church by more ordinary means.

May 1, 1585—Aug. 27, 1590

The Spanish Armada

§ 3. The Papal Party separated from the Church

But long before the Armada was despatched to this country the Anglo-Roman party had been completely severed from the Church of England by the fulmination of a bull in which the Pope sentenced their Queen to deposition from her throne, and to excommunication from the company of the faithful.

[9] Catena's *Life of Pius V.*, *loc. cit.*

CHAP VIII

A.D. 1570

The Pope's Bull against Queen Elizabeth

This famous, or rather infamous, bull is known by the title, "Regnans in Excelsis," the first words of it being, "He that reigneth on high, to Whom is given all power in heaven and in earth, hath committed the one Holy, Catholic, and Apostolic Church, out of which there is no salvation, to one alone upon earth, namely, to Peter, the chief of the Apostles, and to Peter's successor, the Roman Pontiff, to be governed in the fulness of power." The bull contained the final sentence in a fictitious cause or process which was instituted in the Papal Consistory between the Pope and the Queen, in which the form was gone through of trying her in her absence, according to the precedent set in the case of Archbishop Cranmer.[1] The crimes alleged against the Queen in the bull itself are, that she had "inhibited the exercise of the true religion" which Queen Mary had, "by the help of this See, restored;" that she had displaced the English nobility from the Privy Council, "and filled it with obscure men being heretics; suppressed the embracers of the Catholic faith, placed dishonest preachers and ministers of impieties; abolished the sacrifice of the Mass, fastings, choice of meats, unmarried life, and the Catholic rites and ceremonies; commended books to be read in the whole realm containing manifest heresy and impious mysteries, and institutions by herself entertained and observed, according to the prescript of Calvin, to be likewise observed by her subjects; presumed to throw bishops, parsons of churches, and other Catholic priests out of their churches and benefices, and to bestow them and other Church livings upon heretics; and to determine of Church causes; prohibited the prelates, clergy, and people to

The Queen's alleged crimes

[1] See p. 325.

acknowledge the Church of Rome, or obey the precepts and canonical sanctions thereof, compelled most of them to condescend to her wicked laws, and to abjure the authority and obedience of the Bishop of Rome, and to acknowledge her to be sole lady in temporal and spiritual matters, and this by oath; imposed penalties and punishment upon those which obeyed not, and exacted them of those which persevered in the unity of the faith, and their obedience aforesaid; cast the Catholic prelates and rectors of churches in prison, where many of them, being spent with long, languishing sorrow, miserably ended their lives."

For these misdoings, and because it is plain that she is obdurate and incorrigible, and notwithstanding the great sorrow which it causes the Pope to take punishment upon one to whose ancestors the whole Christendom hath been so much bounden, the bull goes on to say, "We do out of the fulness of our apostolic power declare the aforesaid Elizabeth, being a heretic and a favourer of heresies, and her adherents in the matters aforesaid, to have incurred the sentence of Anathema, and to be cut off from the unity of the Body of Christ." After this excommunication comes the sentence of deposition in the words, "And, moreover, we do declare her to be deprived of her pretended title to the kingdom aforesaid, and of all dominion, dignity, and privilege whatsoever." Then follows a release of the Queen's subjects from their allegiance to her, "And also the nobility, subjects, and people of the said kingdom, and all other which have in any sort sworn unto her, to be for ever absolved from any such oath, and all manner of duty of dominion, allegiance, and obedience: as we do also by authority of these pre-

The sentence of excommunication

The sentence of deposition

CHAP VIII

A.D. 1570

sents absolve them, and do deprive the same Elizabeth of her pretended title to the kingdom, and all other things above said. And we do command and interdict all and every the noblemen, subjects, people, and others aforesaid that they presume not to obey her, or her monitions, mandates, and laws; and those which shall do the contrary we do innodate with the like sentence of Anathema."[2]

The Queen's subjects forbidden to obey her

This bull was dated April 27, 1570,[3] and it was not formally published, by being affixed to the door of London House at St. Paul's by Felton, until March 2, 1571. But it was well known to the authorities soon after it had been signed. Bishop Jewell wrote to Bullinger on August 7, 1570, "It was for some months carried about in obscurity, and known only to a few," and sent him a copy of it.[4] Even earlier, on July 10, 1570, Bishop Cox had written an account of it to Bullinger, and says that it had been introduced into the country by stealth in the preceding month.[5] Bullinger had been requested to write a reply to the assertions made against the Queen, and on July 27, 1571, Cox thanks him for sending the book, which he had in consequence written.[6] But the intention to issue it had been made known to the northern rebels by Morton still earlier, when he brought from Rome a letter to the two Earls, in which the Pope promised them his support in their "holy and religious" undertaking, declaring that the Queen was a heretic, who had lost all claim to dominion and power, was to be

Contents of the Bull known before its publication

[2] Fuller's *Ch. Hist.*, ii. 491; Cardwell's *Doc. Ann.*, i. 328.

[3] Sanders [*de Schism Angl.*, 368] and Fuller give the date as February 25, 1570; but Cardwell takes the text and the date from the copy printed in the *Bullarium Romanum*, ii. 303.

[4] *Zurich Lett.*, i. 229-239.

[5] *Ibid.*, i. 221.

[6] *Ibid.*, 243; Strype's *Annals*, ii. 579.

CHAP VIII
A.D. 1570

regarded as a heathen, and that they were free from any obligation to obey her laws. It was confirmed at least twice afterwards by succeeding Popes, namely, by Gregory XIII. and Sixtus V.,[7] so well satisfied were they with the work of their predecessor, Pius V., and so blind to the infinite damage which they were doing to Christian unity and peace.

The bull drove the Roman party from Church

Up to the time when this bull was promulgated, 1570, those who more or less maintained an allegiance to Rome were accustomed to attend church, observing what was called "occasional conformity," though using what opportunities they could for having Mass celebrated in private houses according to the old Latin rite. This is implied by the direct assertion of the Act passed in 1570-71 against bringing in bulls of Rome [13 Eliz. c. 2], that one effect of the bull of deposition had been that persons had been induced to receive absolution from the missionary priests, and "to withdraw and absent themselves from all Divine Service." So also, in the instructions which were drawn up for Sir Francis Walsingham on his embassy to France in 1581, it is said that in the earlier years of the Queen's reign the recusants "did ordinarily resort, in all open places, to the Churches, and to Divine Service in the Church, without any contradiction or show of misliking."[8]

Coke's testimony on this point

Some dispute arose on this subject between Sir Edward Coke and the Jesuit Garnet at the trial of the latter, on January 27, 1605, for his share in the Gunpowder Plot. Coke declared, "Before the Bull of Impius Pius Quintus, in the eleventh year of the Queen, wherein her Majesty was excommunicated and de-

[7] Dod's *Ch. Hist.*, Tierney's ed. III., xliv.

[8] Digge's *Complete Ambassador*, p. 98.

CHAP VIII

A.D. 1570

posed, and all they accursed who should yield any obedience unto her, etc., there were no recusants in England, all came to church (howsoever Popishly inclined or persuaded in most points) to the same Divine Service we now use; but thereupon presently they refused to assemble in our churches, or join with us in public service, not for conscience of anything there done, against which they might justly except out of the Word of God, but because the Pope had excommunicated and deposed her Majesty, and cursed those who should obey her."[9] Garnet tried to show that this was a mistake of Sir Edward Coke's, yet he admitted the main fact, even while contradicting the reason which the great Attorney-General had given for the change that afterwards took place. "I know divers myself," said Garnet, "who before that bull refused to go to church all the time of Queen Elizabeth; though perhaps *most Catholics did indeed go to church before.* It was about the end of the Council of Trent where this matter was discussed by twelve learned men, and concluded not lawful. And this was occasioned for that Calvin himself held it not lawful for any Protestant to be present, not only at our Mass, wherein perhaps they may say there is idolatry, but not at our Evensong, being the same with theirs." But Coke proved that this was "a gross error; for the last session of that Council was in the year of our Lord 1563, which was in the fifth year of Queen Elizabeth; whereas I showed, and am able to justify and prove, that their Romish English Catholics came to our service in our churches until the nineteenth year of her Majesty, which was many years after that Council was ended."[1]

Coke's testimony confirmed by Garnet

[9] *State Trials*, i. 242.

[1] *Ibid.*, i. 250-252. As Coke was a student of Trinity College, Cambridge, for four years

Coke's testimony confirmed by Persons

It was perhaps even earlier than this that the Jesuit Persons had written to the same effect, attributing the change to the teaching of the Jesuits. Some time after the year 1595 he wrote: "Whereupon also the same devil" [emulation between laity and clergy, and between the secular priests and the monks] "brought in the division of opinions about going to the heretical churches and service, which most part of Catholics did follow for many years; and when the better and truer opinion was taught them by priests and religious men from beyond the seas as more perfect and necessary, there wanted not many that opposed themselves, especially of the elder priests of Queen Mary's days. And this division was not only favoured by the Council, but nourished also for many years by divers troublesome people of our own, both in teaching and writing."[2]

A little later, in 1606, Persons published a volume of three hundred and eighty-six closely printed pages against the fifth part of Sir Edward Coke's Reports. The last chapter, the sixteenth, is a reply to Coke's statement as given above. Yet, after a quantity of mere rhetoric, Persons says: "I deny not but that many others besides these," the deprived dignitaries "throughout the realm, though otherwise Catholics in heart (as most of them were), did at that time and after, as also

before the bull was published in England, he may well have spoken from personal knowledge of the circumstances.

The decision arrived at by the twelve divines at Trent was published in England under the title, "A Declaration of the Fathers of the Council of Trent concerning the going into Churches at such times as heretical service is said or heresy preaching."

[2] Persons' *Brief Apology or Defence of the Catholic Eccl. Hierarchy*, fol. 2. In 1580 he had printed a *Brief Discourse, containing certain reasons why Catholics refuse to go to Church;* and in this pamphlet he says that he writes in answer to several books, "and, namely, to a peculiar treatise not long agone published touching this matter" [fol. 5].

CHAP VIII

A.D. 1570

now, either upon fear or lack of better instruction, or both, repair to Protestant churches, the case being then not so fully discussed by learned men as after it was, 'whether a man with good conscience may go to the church and service of a different religion from his own.'"

Being now Lord Chief-Justice, Coke again repeated his assertion in the charge which he delivered to the grand jury at the Norwich assizes of 1607. His words were: "Notwithstanding the change of religion, it cannot be denied that for the first ten years of her Majesty's reign the estate of Roman Catholics in England was tolerable, though some were committed in the beginning of her coming to the crown, yet none but those whose precedent actions had caused the faith of their allegiance to remain doubtful; and so was the manner of their commitment mixed with such gracious clemency, as that they rather endured a favourable restraint than any straight or rigorous imprisonment. But as well those restrained as generally all the Papists in this kingdom, not any of them did refuse to come to our church and yield their formal obedience to the laws established. And thus they all continued, not any one refusing to come to our churches during the first ten years of her Majesty's government. And in the beginning of the eleventh year of her reign Cornwallis, Bedingfield, and Silyard were the first recusants, they absolutely refusing to come to our churches. And until they in that sort begun, the name of recusant was never heard of amongst us."[3]

Coke's reiterated statement on the subject

This evidence is sufficient to show that the Roman party remained within the Church of England for some years after the accession of Queen Elizabeth.[4]

[3] The Lord Coke, *His Speech and Charge*, 1607.

[4] A distinguished Roman Catholic writer of the last century dates

CHAP VIII
A.D. 1570

No doubt many of the less far-seeing persons of the party entertained hopes that there would be another turn of the tide, and that by waiting patiently they would see the ancient Latin services revived in the churches which they had thus frequented while the English Prayer Book was in use. Had they been left to themselves, it is very probable that the "Occasional Conformists" would have seen their way to a more thorough recognition of the principles of the Reformation, and would have conformed entirely and *ex animo* to the Prayer Book.[5] But the stern anathema of the Pope, and the uncompromising hatred of the Jesuit clergy who had now gained influence in England, effectually barred the way to such a happy reconciliation, and from this time the Roman party within the Church became the Roman sect outside of it: a body separate from the ancient Catholic Church of the land,

The obstacles to a reconciliation

the origin of his community from the accession of Queen Elizabeth. "In the year 1558," he says, "Elizabeth ascended the throne of England. At this time begins the real era of English Reformation; and consequently from this time Catholics are to be considered as a sect, dissenting from the National Church." [Berington's *State and Behaviour of English Catholics, from the Reformation to the year* 1780, *with a view of their present number, wealth, character*, etc., 1780.]

[5] "It was pretended by some of the ancient priests," says Dod, "that occasional conformity had been practised by the most zealous Catholics during the reign of Edward VI.; that it was not a thing *per se malum;* that the Common Prayer containing no positive heterodoxy, there was no Divine prohibition of being one of the audience; that recusancy would involve the Catholics in many difficulties; that it would entirely ruin the cause, and expose them to the loss of goods and liberty; that, according to the opinion of many learned divines, human laws might be complied with or neglected under such circumstances." [Dod's *Ch. Hist.*, ii. 44, ed. 1739.] As time went on, the Marian bishops and priests who remained in England were comparatively reconciled to the changes made in the Church, but they felt themselves under the obligation of oaths of obedience to the Pope which were inconsistent with their acceptance of the Oath of Allegiance and Supremacy. When Tunstal and Thirlby lived with Archbishop Parker "in free custody" at Lambeth Palace, they would be sure to attend Divine Service in the chapel there with him, even as they sat at table with him in his hall. Compare p. 95, note 8.

CHAP VIII

A.D. 1570

and soon to be cut off entirely from its ancient episcopal succession.

For, as has been already shown,[6] the Marian episcopate died out in a very remarkable manner, seventeen sees becoming vacant by death before the first twelve of the Elizabethan bishops were consecrated, and only one of the survivors—Watson, ex-Bishop of Lincoln—living on so late as 1584. The six survivors who remained in England abstained from any attempt to consecrate other bishops; and thus, when Watson died, the only claimants to descent from the pre-Reformation episcopate were the Elizabethan prelates, who derived their succession through Barlow, Coverdale, Scory, and Hodgkins, from the mediæval, the Anglo-Saxon, and the primitive bishops of Great Britain and Ireland.[7] The continuity of the English Church was strictly maintained by the continuity of its episcopal succession. The Roman Catholic community which gradually came into existence by the side of it had no association with it whatever when the last of the few old priests who seceded had passed away; and when a Roman Catholic episcopate was introduced in the next century, it was an alien and schismatical episcopate intruded into dioceses already occupied.

The Roman party did not consecrate bishops,

But as the surviving Marian bishops no more ordained priests than they consecrated successors to their own office, there was a probability at first that the new sect might die out for want of a ministry. This had been foreseen as early as the year 1568 by

or ordain priests

[6] See p. 387, n. 1.

[7] Goldwell, the Marian Bishop of St. Asaph, left Rome for the purpose of returning to England and taking charge of the missionary priests there in 1580; but, through old age and infirmity, he could get no further than Rheims, and after a time he returned to Rome. [Dod's *Ch. Hist.*, ii. 132, ed. 1739.]

CHAP VIII

A.D. 1570

an acute Oxford seceder named William Allen [A.D. 1532-94], who had been a Fellow of Oriel in the reign of Edward VI., Principal of St. Mary's Hall in that of Queen Mary, received the empty title of Cardinal of England in the year 1587, and became Archbishop of Mechlin in 1589. During the early part of Elizabeth's reign Allen was in England, when "he was very much scandalized at the practice of several Catholics" in Lancashire, "who, to avoid the penalty of the laws, were accustomed at certain times to frequent Protestant churches. He showed himself a great enemy to this sort of complaisance, and used many arguments against it."[8] But about 1566 he went abroad, and was ordained priest at Mechlin, where he became a reader in theology. His acquaintance with the state of the Marian party in England led him to the conclusion that the old clergy would not perpetuate the schism, and he therefore devised the plan of founding colleges on the Continent "for restoring," as Persons writes, "a new English clergy." The first of these colleges, or "seminaries," as they were called, was established at Douay, in Flanders, in the year 1568, under Allen himself. From 1576 until 1593 it was carried on at Rheims, whither it had been driven by a riot at Douay. But in 1593 it was reinstated at the latter town, and continued there until the French Revolution, when it migrated to Old Hall Green at Ware, in Hertfordshire, and is now known as St. Edmund's College, though originally dedicated to St. Thomas of Canterbury. Other seminaries were founded at Rome, Seville, and Madrid, in 1578, and others at Valladolid, St. Omer's, Paris, Liège, Lisbon, Louvain, and Ghent, during the subse-

Allen's opposition to occasional conformity

He establishes a college for educating "missionaries"

[8] Dod's *Church Hist.*, ii. 44, ed. 1739.

CHAP VIII

A.D. 1570

quent forty years;[9] and so energetically were these supported by the Court of Rome, that dispensations were granted to those Roman Catholics who possessed abbey lands, freeing them from all spiritual censures on that account if they contributed to the support of seminaries.[1]

The seminary priests come to England

At the foreign colleges thus established English youths were educated for the priesthood on the most extreme system of devotion to Rome and of antipathy to England and the English Church. Some of these began to come over in the year 1571, "apparelled like mariners," and with "captains' passports" obtained in the Low Countries. They landed full of untempered youthful zeal, knowing nothing whatever of the real history and principles of the Church of England, and with a fierce desire for martyrdom in the cause of the Pope, as if they were coming to an enemy's country, and one in which the light of Christianity having been extinguished, it was to be kindled again by their means, as it had been kindled among the heathen Saxons of Kent by the missionaries under St. Augustine.

Their coming known to the Government

Secretly as they came, their movements were well known to the Government, and minute descriptions of their persons exist, one being described as having "little hair on the front of his forehead," another as "freckled," a third as a "pretty little fellow, of complexion something brown, and apparelled in blue," and so forth;[2] but the Queen and her Government were not uneasy about them for the first few years, believing that the movement was only a temporary one, and would gradually, from one cause

[9] Butler's *Hist. Mem.*, ii. 172, 440.

[1] Fuller's *Church Hist.*, 92.

[2] Harl. MS., 360, fol. 25.

CHAP VIII

A.D. 1570

or another, cease.[3] Queen Elizabeth had been nineteen years on the throne before any seminary priest suffered punishment; but when the Papal conspiracy was aided by them, and especially by those of them who were Jesuits,[4] a very serious danger threatened the Queen and the nation, and it became necessary to treat those as traitors who unhesitatingly mixed themselves up with treason. The old Marian clergy had been treated with forbearance and liberality, many being tolerated even who quietly retained their views about the Supremacy, but did not obtrude them on others, and who were permitted to retain the income of their benefices and do their work by deputy. Even the missionary or

Toleration shewn to the Marian clergy

[3] Sanders, *de Schism. Anglic.*, 312.

[4] The historian of the Jesuit mission in England says that one of the body named William Good was sent to Ireland for four years, leaving the country again in 1568, but that none came to England until Campion and Persons made their appearance there in 1581. The almost blasphemous reason he alleges is, that as in the Divine counsels the Saviour was not sent into the world until it was sunk in darkness, so England was permitted to become dark and wicked before the Jesuits were sent to convertit. [More, *Hist. Miss. Anglican. Soc. Jesu.* 1660, p. 33.] But a story is told by Strype which shows that More was mistaken, and that Jesuits were among the earliest of the so-called "missionaries." According to this narrative, one of them named Thomas Heath, brother to the former Archbishop of York, was at work early in the Queen's reign, and was discovered in a curious manner. From 1562 until 1568 he went up and down the country, preaching in the churches, and spicing his sermons with Puritanism of the most extreme type. At last he applied to the Dean of Rochester as a poor minister deserving preferment, and to test his ability the Dean gave him a preaching turn in the cathedral. While preaching a sermon, in which he cried down the services of the Church, he accidentally dropped a letter from his pocket, which had been addressed to him under the name of Thomas Fine from an eminent English Jesuit named Malt at Madrid. This letter, containing instructions respecting his mission, was carried to the Bishop of Rochester, and led to Heath's chamber being searched, when there were found in his boots and in his trunk a license from the Jesuits, a bull from the Pope authorizing him to preach what doctrine the Jesuits ordered him to preach for dividing Protestants, with several books against infant baptism. Heath was put in the pillory, branded with an R as a recusant, and condemned to imprisonment for life; but he died after being a few months in prison. [Strype's *Annals*, ii. 273, ed. 1824.]

CHAP VIII

A.D. 1570-80

seminary priests were merely placed under surveillance as long as they kept clear of treasonable acts, and none of them were put to death; but when it became part of their regular work to "reconcile the Queen's subjects to the See of Rome," withdrawing them "from their natural obedience to her to obey the usurped authority of the Pope," it became necessary to pass strict penal laws [13 Eliz. c. 2, 23 Eliz. c. 1, 27 Eliz. c. 2] respecting those who were neither more nor less than conspirators against the Crown of England and the liberties of the people. Some of them may have been excellent men, but they had taken up with the fatal crotchet that the Papal Supremacy was an essential article of Christianity; a very few, few if any, may have come to England with the sole intention of ministering to the lay Roman Catholics, but far the greater number came on the "Mission" with the obvious intention of doing all they could, openly and secretly, to restore this Papal Supremacy. They voluntarily made themselves the tools of those who set themselves above the Crown and the Altar, "to pull down and to destroy," and it was as the representatives of these arrogant Popes, not as men professing a different religion from that of the country, that they suffered. The first of the seminary priests who was thus executed suffered in the year 1577, and about one hundred and twenty seminaries and Jesuits were punished as traitors during the reign of Queen Elizabeth. They in no sense represented the "ancient Church," as is so often represented by Roman Catholics, but had in fact given up even their birthright as Englishmen, and had enlisted themselves under a foreign sovereign who prided himself

The seminary priests and Jesuits were traitors,

and were treated as traitors

upon being the enemy of the English Church and the English Crown.[5]

CHAP VIII

A.D. 1580-1682

The permanent organization of the Roman Catholic sect in England began with the Jesuits. It has already been shown that on the death of Bishop Watson the few of the Marian clergy who remained were left entirely without a head, and the idea of continuing the old succession, if it had ever been seriously entertained, was necessarily abandoned. The Jesuits henceforth easily took the lead (although constantly and bitterly opposed by the secular clergy), and the "English Mission" was established under their leadership and under the sanction of the Pope. No pretence was at that time made by them to represent the *old* Church of England, their professed object being to effect a new conversion of the English people, and so to found a *new* branch of the Church, with, as Persons wrote, "a new English clergy."[6] This object was well understood by the partisans of the Pope on the Continent, and excited so much interest and expectation that an official letter of intelligence to the Lord Treasurer, dated August 31, 1592, says, "Scarcely anything else is talked of in Italy but this combat of England." The writer adds, however, that in Germany there were many who disapproved of what was going on.[7]

The Jesuits become supreme in the Roman Catholic sect

[5] "After the promulgation of the bull, six queries were generally proposed to the priests who were arraigned. They regarded the import of that bull, the deposition of the Queen as pronounced in it, and what should be the conduct of good subjects in reference to both. Few answered, I am sorry to observe, as became loyal Englishmen and faithful citizens. They seemed rather to consider themselves as the subjects of a foreign master, whose sovereignty was paramount, and whose will was supreme." [Berington's *Memoirs of Panzani*, Introd. 34.]

[6] Persons' *Four Conversions of England;* Berington's *Panzani's Mem.*, Introd. 42.

[7] Harl. MS., 35, fol. 372.

CHAP VIII

A.D. 1580-1682

For some years the direction of this arrogant and schismatical "Mission" was assumed by Robert Persons [A.D. 1546-1610], an Oxford seceder who had become a Jesuit in the year 1575, and having come to England with Edmund Campian[8] (an ex-fellow of St. John's, Oxford) under a commission from Gregory XIII., in July 1580, returned to Rome soon after the execution of Campian in 1581, and, after being rector of the English Seminary at Rome for some years, was eventually appointed "Prefect of the English Mission," in the year 1592. Father Persons himself was under the direction of Cardinal Allen, who was Archbishop of Mechlin, but neither of them left the Continent, Persons remaining in safety abroad, while he stirred up sedition in England by means of his books and his Jesuit agents. This mode of government was very objectionable to the schismatical clergy, who all along felt themselves to be in a false position, and desired to place themselves in one that should seem more justifiable than that of a foreign mission, by having bishops appointed from their own body. After the death of Cardinal Allen, in the year 1594, this feeling grew stronger, and it ended in 1597 in an unanimous petition to the Pope for the restoration of a hierarchy, "in which bishops should be elected by the common consent of the clergy, and appointed by them to different districts."[9] Instead of acceding to the request so made, the Pope was persuaded by the Jesuits to appoint an archpriest, George Blackwell [A.D. 1545-1613], an Oxford seceder, whose sole

Discontent with Jesuit rule,

and strong desire for bishops

[8] Campian's true name, it is said, was Edwards, but he assumed that by which he is usually known to save his friends from trouble. [Harl. MS., 360, f. 25.] He is, however, entered as "Edmund Campian" in modern Oxford lists.

[9] Mush, *Declaratio Motuum*, 21 30.

CHAP VIII

A.D. 1580-1682

commission was a letter from Cardinal Cajetan, dated March 7, 1598. This gave him authority over the four hundred Roman Catholic clergy of England, but restricted that authority by appointing a council of six to act with him, and by prohibiting him from determining anything of importance without consulting the Superior of the Jesuits. The clergy remonstrated so strongly at the slight put upon them by the off-hand manner in which this appointment was made, that at last the Pope was persuaded to add the dignity and weight of his own commission, which was issued to Blackwell in the form of a brief on August 17, 1601. Blackwell, however, became a loyal Englishman under the influence of horror and disgust at the Gunpowder Plot, and, taking the oath of allegiance to James I., was deprived of his office by the Pope for so doing in the year 1608. Two other archpriests were appointed, George Birkhead in 1608, and George Harrison in 1615, but on the death of the latter, in 1621, the Pope was again petitioned to substitute bishops for these anomalous officers. This request was so far conceded that William Bishop was consecrated to the episcopal office on June 4, 1623, and sent to England as Vicar Apostolic, with faculties similar to "those of the late archpriests joined to those which ordinaries enjoy and exercise;" but the authority was given only during the pleasure of the Pope, and the Vicar Apostolic was not a bishop with independent power, but only a delegate of another bishop, the Pope, under the title of the "Bishop of Chalcedon." Now, "it seemed to many," says Berington, "that the English Catholic Church was re-established in the renovation of her hierarchy. But the fond imagination, I fear, was founded on no truth. . . . The Roman Pontiff

Blackwell appointed Archpriest

Bishop appointed Vicar-Apostolic

CHAP VIII A.D. 1580-1682

still continued to be, what the clergy of England had for many years *permitted* him to be, their only bishop. How, then, with him at our head, could it in the estimation of such men be said that we were without a Church and a hierarchy of transcendent excellence? He governed us at one time by the agency of Dr. Allen, perhaps by that of Father Persons; at another by his archpriests; now by the Bishop of Chalcedon; and in after times, as it will appear, by a series of similar delegations."[1]

The first "Bishop of Chalcedon" died in less than a year after his appointment. He was succeeded by Richard Smith, under the same title, who retained the office until 1655, but lived most of the time abroad. For thirty years no successor to Smith was appointed, but in 1685 John Leyburn was consecrated under the title of "Bishop of Adrumetum," and England was afterwards, on January 20, 1688, divided into the London, Midland, Northern, and Western Districts by Pope Innocent XI.

Four Vicars-Apostolic for all England

Such was the origin, developement, and organization of the Roman Catholic sect during the period of the Reformation. It began in wilfulness, schism, rebellion, and shortsightedness; it was developed by means of foreign agencies; it has held on its existence in the midst of fellow-countrymen as if it had been a colony of foreigners; and no merits that it can ever claim for its work can do away with Manning's justly spoken stigma upon its catholicity, that it has "set up altar against altar."

[1] Berington's *Memoirs of Panzani*, Introd. 105.

CHAPTER IX

THE LOSS AND RECOVERY OF THE REFORMATION SETTLEMENT

[A.D. 1603—1662]

CHAP IX
A.D. 1603

WHEN the reign of Queen Elizabeth was brought to a close by her death on March 24, 1603, the long struggle of the Puritans for such a supremacy of their principles in England as they had won in Scotland seemed likely to be reaching a triumphant close. The old Queen's successor was indeed the son of that rival, Mary, Queen of Scots, whose name had long been the watchword of the Ultramontane party, and whom that party had long conspired to place upon the throne of England in the place of Elizabeth; but he had lived from his childhood in the midst of the Presbyterian system, and had outwardly conformed to it, and the Puritans entertained as strong hopes from his accession to the throne as the Ultramontanes would have entertained had his mother been placed there. They were doomed to disappointment. The experience which King James had of Presbyterianism had not enamoured him with its charms; but, on the contrary, whether in its religious or its political aspect, he considered it most unlovely. "My mother and I," he said to his Privy Councillors, not long after his arrival in England, "My mother and I have from

James I. and the Puritans

CHAP IX
A.D. 1603

our cradles been haunted with a Puritan devil, and I fear it will not leave me till I get into my grave."[1] He added that he would hazard his crown rather than not suppress those malicious spirits. His son was to be haunted as well as he, and to hazard not his crown only, but also his head. The Puritans did not at once succeed in gaining the ascendancy they so perseveringly strove after; but they were to gain it effectually enough before half a century was over. They were to attack the doctrine and discipline of the Church of England until their assaults culminated in the barbarous execution of an Archbishop of Canterbury, in the expulsion of the bishops from their sees and most of the clergy from their benefices, and in the suppression of the Book of Common Prayer. The principles of the Reformation, so far as it was a Church of England movement, were then to be brought into the deadliest danger, those of Presbyterianism and Calvinism were to reign supreme for twenty years, and nothing but the miraculous dispensations of Divine Providence could resuscitate that Church which for a time would seem to be dead and forgotten.

Summary of what the Puritans accomplished

§ 1. The Reign of James I.

How high the hopes of the Puritans had risen was shown even while the Scottish King was on his journey from Edinburgh to London to take possession of the great kingdom which he had inherited through his descent from Henry VII.

James arrives in England

Leaving Edinburgh on April 4th, he held his court for about three weeks at Berwick, Newcastle, and York successively, and did not reach London until

[1] Peck's *Desiderata Curiosa*, v. 31.

CHAP IX

A.D. 1603

May 7, 1603. During this progress, and while he was still in the northern counties, the King was waited upon by a deputation of the Puritan party, bearing a memorial which—with an audacious amplification of numbers not yet extinct among their descendants—they called the "Millenary Petition," though it was signed not by "more than a thousand" of the King's "subjects and ministers," but by seven hundred and fifty only of the clergy, whose names had been gleaned from among some ten thousand in twenty-five counties.[2]

The Millenary Petition immediately presented to the King

This petition set forth the principal points in which those clergy who were discontented with the Elizabethan settlement of the Reformation platform desired a change, and the petitioners represented themselves as having subscribed to the Prayer Book,—"some upon protestation, some upon exposition given them, some with condition, rather than the Church should have been deprived of their ministry," but now, "to the number of more than a thousand of your Majesty's subjects and ministers, all groaning as under a common burden of human rites and ceremonies." The petitioners, therefore—the seven hundred and fifty nonconforming clergy who considered their own ministry of such importance to the Church, though they set little store by that of the conforming clergy, who outnumbered them in the country at large in the proportion of about sixteen to one,—require "that these offences following, some may be removed, some amended, some qualified," everything in the Church being by these removals, amendments, and qualifications brought round to their way of thinking, whatever may be the way of thinking of that vast majority

[2] Fuller's *Ch. Hist.*, iii. 172, ed. 1837; Neal's *Hist. Purit.*, ii. 5, ed. 1733.

CHAP IX
A.D. 1603

whom the Reformation settlement still satisfies. Confirmation, the sign of the Cross in Baptism, the terms "priest" and "absolution, and some others," the ring in marriage, bowing at the Name of Jesus, the use of the surplice and square cap, choral services, and the observance of saints' days, are all to be abolished; Church courts are to be superseded by the parochial "discipline and excommunication;" and those clergy are to be removed, or in some other way supplanted, who do not come up to the Puritan standard of ability and sufficiency as preachers. "These, with such other abuses yet remaining and practised in the Church of England," the petitioners go on to say, leaving thus a very large margin for further attack upon the system of the Church, "we are able to show not to be agreeable to the Scriptures, if it shall please your Highness further to hear us, or more at large in writing to be informed, or by conference among the learned to be resolved;" and after much flattery of the King, they finally subscribe themselves "The Ministers of the Gospel that desire not a disorderly innovation, but a due and godly reformation."[3]

The Millenary Petition

There is nothing on record to show how King James received this petition at the time, but subsequent events make it evident that the idea of submitting these proposals to a "conference among the learned" was one which met with his approbation, partly, perhaps, because there was a precedent for such a course in the Conference held at the beginning of Queen Elizabeth's reign, and partly, it may be, because it offered him the opportunity of appearing

The King assented to a Conference

[3] The Millenary Petition is given at length in Fuller's *Church History*, iii. 193, ed. 1837; also in Collier's *Ch. Hist.*, vii. 271, ed. 1852.

"among the learned" himself, by assuming its presidency in person.

The Hampton Court Conference

Soon after the King's arrival in London, he appointed a meeting of bishops and other learned men to be held before himself and the Privy Council on November 1st, for the purpose of obtaining full information respecting the alleged abuses in the Church. In "a proclamation concerning such as seditiously seek reformation in Church matters," which was issued on October 24th, it is stated, however, that circumstances had arisen which made it necessary to postpone this meeting. "By reason of the sickness reigning in many places of our kingdom," an outbreak of the plague, "the unseasonable time of the year for travel, and the incommodity of the place of our abode"—Wilton, near Salisbury—"for such an assembly, we were constrained to defer it till after Christmas.[4] At which consultation we shall both more particularly understand the state of the Church, and receive thereby light to judge whether there be indeed any such enormities as are pretended, and know how to proceed to the redress." After complaining that the Puritan party, "whose heat tendeth rather to combustion than reformation," were meanwhile agitating unceasingly

The Conference delayed.

[4] It is probable that another reason for the delay is to be found in the two conspiracies, the "Surprise" and the "Bye" plots, got up by Lord Grey, the leader of the Puritans, Lord Brook, Sir Walter Raleigh, the two seminary priests, Watson, Clarke, and Gerard, the Jesuits, and others, for seizing the King's person, and keeping him in their hands until he had granted toleration to the Puritans and the Roman Catholics. The only full account of these plots, with the evidence of documents, is to be found in Tierney's edition of Dod's *Church History*, vol. iv., Appendix, i-lii. The collapse of the two conspiracies of 1603 led to the Gunpowder Plot of 1604-5.

CHAP IX A.D. 1603

by "public invectives against the state ecclesiastical here established," by "indecent speeches in the pulpit," and by other means, to stir up discontent among the people, the proclamation goes on to order that such "unlawful and factious manner of proceeding" shall cease. The King is persuaded that the Church of England is "agreeable to the Word of God and the form of the Primitive Church," but he is also "not ignorant that time may have brought in some corruptions which may deserve a review and amendment, which, if by the assembly intended by us we shall find to be so indeed, we shall therein proceed according to the laws and customs of this realm, by advice of our Council, or in our High Court of Parliament, or by Convocation of our clergy, as we shall find reason to lead us; not doubting but that in such orderly proceeding we shall have the prelates and others of our clergy no less willing, and far more able to afford us their duty and service, than any other whose zeal goeth so fast before their discretion."[5]

The King's opinion respecting the Church

The Conference meets at Hampton Court

The Conference eventually met on Saturday, Monday, and Wednesday, January 14, 16, and 18, 1604, in the drawing-room of the King's private apartments at Hampton Court Palace, and from its place of meeting acquired the name by which it is known. There were summoned to attend it the Archbishops of Canterbury and York, and eight other bishops, seven deans, Dr. Field, and King, Archdeacon of Nottingham, together with five of the more prominent among the theologians of the Puritan party, Cartwright, their leader, dying, however, a fortnight before the Conference opened. But the whole of the bishops and deans who had been summoned were not called to

[5] Wilkins' *Concil.*, iv. 371.

take part in the proceedings, and the two sides eventually stood as follows :—

For Conformity.	*For Nonconformity.*
Bancroft, Bishop of London.	Reynolds, President of Corpus Christi College, Oxford.
Bilson, Bishop of Winchester.	Sparks, Regius Professor of Divinity, Oxford.
Montague, Dean of Chapel Royal.	Chaderton, Master of Emmanuel College, Cambridge.
Andrewes, Dean of Westminster.	Knewstub, Vicar of Cockfield.
Overall, Dean of St. Paul's.	Galloway, Minister of Perth.
Barlow, Dean of Chester.	
Bridges, Dean of Salisbury.	

Three accounts of the Conference, all written by persons who were present, have come down to us; one by Toby Matthew, Bishop of Durham,[6] a second by Barlow, then Dean of Chester,[7] and a third, corrected by the King's own hand, by Galloway, the Scotch minister, who was permitted to be present and take part in it.[8] From all these it may be seen that the King, fond of hearing his own voice, took a leading part in the discussions, and that he showed a real knowledge of the subjects discussed, which excited "exceeding great admiration," says the Bishop of Durham, "of his Majesty's not only rhetorical and logical, but theological and juridical discourses."

The King takes a prominent part

On the *first* day five hours were occupied by a preliminary address of the King, an hour long, and by a consultation with the bishops and five of the deans respecting several things in the Prayer Book on which he wanted further information, these being the rite of Confirmation, the use of interrogatories in

Proceedings of the Conference

[6] Strype's *Life of Whitgift*, iii. 402.

[7] Barlow's *Sum and Substance of the Conference*. See also Fuller's *Ch. Hist.*, iii. 172-192.

[8] Calderwood's *Hist. of Ch. of Scotland*, 474.

CHAP IX A.D. 1604

connection with Infant Baptism, the use of private Baptism and its administration by laymen, the meaning of Absolution, and the practice as regarded Excommunication.

On the *second* day the four "millenary plaintiffs," or representatives of the clergy who had made their complaints respecting rites and ceremonies in the Millenary Petition, were called into the presence of the King and Privy Council as well as the bishops and deans, Galloway being also summoned with them.[9] Dr. Reynolds then stated the Puritan case, desiring to have alterations made in the Thirty-nine Articles, to have the special doctrines of Calvinism set forth in nine additional "orthodoxal assertions," and to have the Prayer Book so revised as to exclude the points to which the Puritans objected. He did not carry either the King or any others of his audience with him in opening out these points in detail; but when he urged that steps should be taken for enforcing the better observance of Sunday, "unto this he found a general and unanimous assent;" and he met with no opposition when he proposed that a new translation of the Bible should be made. But it is evident that the Puritan

Proceedings of the Conference

[9] These Puritan clergymen showed a singular want of taste and judgement by appearing in "Turkey gowns"—furred gowns, such as were then worn by merchants, and are still worn by aldermen—instead of their university gowns. Bancroft twitted them with the suggestion that they did this to show their approval of a saying of Cartwright, that it was better to conform to the ceremonies of the Turks than to those of the Papists.

But Fuller says of Reynolds that "his disaffection to the discipline established in England was not so great as some bishops did suspect, or as more Nonconformists did believe. No doubt he desired the abolishing of some ceremonies for the ease of the conscience of others, to which in his own practice he did willingly submit, constantly wearing hood and surplice, and kneeling at the Sacrament. On his deathbed he earnestly desired absolution according to the form of the Church of England, and received it from Dr. Holland, whose hand he affectionately kissed." [Fuller's *Ch. Hist.*, iii. 231.]

divines were overawed by the strength of their opponents, neither they nor any others of their party being at all able to contend in any fair arena with such profoundly learned theologians and liturgical scholars as Bilson, the saintly Andrewes, and Overall. Bishop Bancroft fairly lost his temper over the captiousness of the Puritan objections, and even the King's patience was tired out by the weak arguments which were wordily urged in support of them.

Proceedings of the Conference

On the *third* day it was determined that some verbal alterations should be made in the Prayer Book with reference to the points which the King had laid before the bishops on the preceding Saturday, and some measures were taken to meet the complaints of the Puritans respecting the working of the High Commission Court. But the demands which had been made for substantial changes in the Prayer Book for the introduction of the "Discipline" and for the authorization of "Prophesyings" were quietly rejected; nor would the King and Privy Council assent to the reiterated request that kneeling at Communion, the use of the surplice, and the sign of the Cross in Baptism should be abolished.

Its results

The practical result of the Hampton Court Conference, as regards the purpose for which it was called, was consequently very unimportant. A new reign seemed to give the Puritan clergy—who, it must be remembered, were priests of the Church of England, still ministering at its altars and teaching from its pulpits—a favourable opportunity for making a vigorous attack on the principles of the Anglican Reformation. But the defenders of those principles were at present too strong to be beaten, and they found an effective ally in the Scottish King, who

CHAP IX
A.D. 1604

evidently learned to respect those principles more and more, the more he came to know them.[1]

The Revision of the English Bible

One most important result of the Hampton Court Conference was, however, that revision of the English Bible which gave to all English-speaking people throughout the world the noble "Authorized Version" which has now been in use for nearly three centuries.

Reynolds suggests a revision of the Authorized Version

Towards the end of the second day's conference, Dr. Reynolds, according to Bishop Barlow's report—

"Moved his Majesty that there might be a new translation of the Bible, because those which were allowed in the reign of King Henry the Eighth and Edward the Sixth were corrupt, and not answerable to the truth of the original. For example—*First*, Galatians iv. 25, the Greek word συστοιχεῖ is not well translated as now it is, 'bordereth' neither expressing the force of the word, nor the Apostle's sense, nor the situation of the place: *Secondly*, Psalm cv. 28, 'They were not obedient;' the original being, 'They were not disobedient:' *Thirdly*, Psalm cvi. 30, 'Then stood up Phinehas and prayed;' the Hebrew hath 'executed judgment.'

[1] The satisfaction with which King James looked back on his own share in the conference is amusingly shown by a letter which he wrote to some person in Scotland whom he calls "My honest Blake." "We have kept," he says, "such a revell with the Puritans here this two days as was never heard the like: quhaire I have peppered thaime as soundlie as yee have done the Papists thaire. It were no reason that those that will refuse the airy sign of the cross after Baptism should have their purses stuffed with any more solid and substantial crosses. They fled me so from argument to argument, without ever answering me directly, *ut est eorum moris*, as I was forced at last to say unto thaime, that if any of thaime had been in a college disputing with thair scholars, if any of thair disciples had answered them in that sort, they would have fetched him up in a place of a reply; and so should the rod have plyed upon the poor boye's buttocks. I have such a book of thaires as may well convert infidels, but it shall never convert me, except by turning me more earnestly against thayme." The letter is preserved in the British Museum [Cott. MSS., Vesp. F. 3], and is printed entire in Cardwell's *Conferences on the Prayer Book*, p. 160.

CHAP IX
A.D. 1604

"To which motion there was at the present no gainsaying, the objections being trivial and old, and already in print often answered: only my Lord of London well added, that if every man's humour should be followed, there would be no end of translating. Whereupon his Highness wished that some special pains should be taken in that behalf for one uniform translation (professing that he could never yet see a Bible well translated in English, but the worst of all his Majesty thought the Geneva to be), and this to be done by the best learned in both universities; after them to be reviewed by the bishops and the chief learned in the Church; from them to be presented to the Privy Council; and, lastly, to be ratified by his royal authority. And so this whole Church to be bound upon it and none other.

The King's ideas on the subject

"Marry, withal he gave this caveat upon a word cast out by my Lord of London, that no marginal notes should be added, having found in them which are annexed to the Geneva translation (which he saw in a Bible given him by an English lady) some notes very partial, untrue, seditious, and savouring too much of dangerous and traitorous conceits. As, for example, the first chapter of Exodus and the nineteenth verse, where the marginal note alloweth disobedience unto kings. And 2 Chron. xv. 16, the note taxeth Asa for deposing his mother only, and not killing her."[2]

His objection to the Geneva version

There were at this time three English versions in use, namely, [1] the "Great Bible" of Henry VIII.,[3]

[2] Cardwell's *Conf.*, 187. A slightly different account is given in the Preface to the Authorized Version, which was written by Dr. Miles Smith, afterwards Bishop of Gloucester: "Upon the importunate petitions of the Puritans at his Majesty's coming to this crown, the Conference at Hampton Court having been appointed for hearing their complaints, when by force of reason they were put from all other grounds, they had recourse at the last to this shift, that they could not with good conscience subscribe to the Communion book, since it maintained the Bible as it was there translated, which was, as they said, a most corrupted translation. And although this was judged to be but a very poor and empty shift, yet even hereupon did his Majesty begin to bethink himself of the good that might ensue by a new translation, and presently after gave order for this translation which is now presented unto thee."

The writer probably derived his information from Bishop Bilson, who was present at the Conference, and who assisted Dr. Smith, six or seven years afterwards, in the last revision of the proof-sheets of the Bible.

[3] See vol. i. pp. 515-521.

CHAP IX A.D. 1604

from which were taken the Psalms, Gospels, and Epistles used in the services of the Church; [2] the "Bishops' Bible," a revised translation made under the superintendence of Archbishop Parker, and published in 1568, and from which, in many churches, the lessons were read at Morning and Evening Prayer; and [3] the "Geneva Bible," a revised translation made by Whittingham and others who had fled to Geneva during the Marian persecution, this last being published in 1560, and being printed in so convenient a form that it became the favourite Bible for domestic use, and continued to be so for several generations. It seems, therefore, that there was good reason why "one uniform translation" should be desired, and the long approved result has shown the practical wisdom of the suggestion which led to it.

The three translations then in use

Preparations were immediately made for undertaking this great work. During the following five months correspondence was carried on with many learned men for the purpose of collecting a large number into six committees,—three for the Hebrew of the Old Testament, and three for the Greek of the Apocrypha and the New Testament, the number of divines who at last engaged in the work being forty-seven. The divines thus selected were the most learned men of their day. Bishop Andrewes, who was familiar with Hebrew, Chaldee, Syriac, Greek, Latin, and ten other languages; Bishop Overall; Dr. Saravia; Bedwell, the greatest Arabic scholar of Europe; Sir Henry Savile, the most learned layman of his time, and, to say nothing of others well known to later generations, nine who were then or afterwards Professors of Hebrew or of Greek at Oxford and Cambridge. It is observable also that they were

Six Committees of learned men appointed as translators

chosen without reference to party, at least as many of the Puritan clergy as of the opposite party being on the list, and among them Reynolds and Chaderton, two of the four who represented those clergy in the Hampton Court Conference. Care was, moreover, taken to enlist all the Biblical scholarship of the kingdom as well as that of the learned men to whom the work was especially intrusted; for when the latter had been appointed, a royal letter was sent to the Archbishop of Canterbury, on July 22d, which shows how much solicitude was used in this particular. "Furthermore," the King says, "we require you to move all our bishops to inform themselves of all such learned men within their several dioceses as, having especial skill in the Hebrew and Greek tongues, have taken pains in their private studies of the Scriptures for the clearing of any obscurities either in the Hebrew or in the Greek, or touching any difficulties or mistakings in the former English translation, which we have now commanded to be thoroughly viewed and amended, and thereupon to write unto them, earnestly charging them, and signifying our pleasure therein, that they send such their observations either to Mr. Lively, our Hebrew reader in Cambridge, or to Dr. Hardinge, our Hebrew reader in Oxford, or to Dr. Andrewes, Dean of Westminster, to be imparted to the rest of their several companies; that so their said intended translation may have the help and furtherance of all our principal learned men within this our kingdom."

Other learned men required to assist

The plan on which the translators worked may be gathered from the rules which they laid down for their general guidance, and may be described as a combination of translation and revision.

CHAP IX

A.D. 1604-11

[1.] The old English Bibles[4] were used as the substance of the new one, but no word was inserted in the latter which had not been critically compared with the Hebrew or Greek that it was intended to represent in English. When a Hebrew or Greek word has different meanings, the translators were to take to their assistance three or four of the most ancient and grave divines in the universities, and other learned men in cases of special obscurity, and that meaning was to be eventually adopted which was most frequently used by the ancient fathers, provided that it suited the context and "the analogy of the Faith." The English version was thus intended to represent theological truth as well as etymological, it being considered by the translators that Biblical words, especially Greek words, are often used in a special Biblical sense which would not be fairly reproduced by a strict adherence to the sense in which they were used by secular writers.

The translation to represent truth theologically as well as etymologically

[2.] The learning of the whole body of translators was also to be brought to bear as much as possible upon the particular work which was done by each several person of their number. There were, as has been said, six committees, each consisting of from six to ten members, and each under its own president; two of these committees, seventeen in number, meeting at Westminster, two at Oxford, and two at Cambridge, fifteen in number at each university. Each particular member of a committee or "company" first revised privately the whole of the portion, say the Epistles of

The revision often revised by the Committees

[4] Those mentioned in the rules were the translations of Tyndall, Coverdale, Matthew, Cranmer, and the Geneva version. But the earlier of these were largely indebted for their English to the Wickliffite version of the fourteenth century. See the author's article on "English Bibles" in the *Encyclopædia Britannica*.

CHAP IX

A.D. 1604-11

the New Testament, which had been assigned to that committee; the seven or eight revised translations thus obtained were then critically compared, and revised at meetings of the whole committee; and copies of the one revised translation thus resulting were sent to the other five committees for their consideration and criticism. The five new revisions were then returned to the particular committee by which the translation had been made, and after their further consideration, a final copy was sent to a committee consisting of one of "the chief persons of each company," on whom rested the responsibility of sending the work to the press.

The preface to the "Authorized Version" states that the translators not only consulted the Chaldee, Hebrew, Greek, and Latin, but also Spanish, French, Italian, and German versions, together with commentators in all languages. "Neither did we disdain," they add, "to revise that which we had done, and to bring back to the anvil that which we had hammered, but having and using as great helps as were needful, and fearing no reproach for slowness, nor coveting praise for expedition, we have, at length, through the good hand of the Lord upon us, brought the work to that pass that you see." So thoroughly was this painstaking "hammering" carried out, that no part of the translation was brought back to the anvil fewer than fourteen times, and some must have returned there as many as seventeen times. Thus, although the gradually improving English version which had been used for two centuries and a quarter [5] [A.D. 1380-

The careful "hammering" of the workmen

[5] Specimens of it in its various stages of transition, from Wicklife's time onwards, are given in the General Introduction to the author's Annotated Bible, pages xlvi. xlvii.

CHAP IX

A.D. 1611-33

1604] was adopted in the main, the work of revision occupied four or five years, and it was not until the year 1611 that the printers had completed it for publication. More than two centuries and a half have passed since this last "Authorized Version" took possession of the English mind and heart; and subsequent attempts at translation and revision have all tended to show that the Anglican Vulgate, which is now five hundred years old, has a rhythmical beauty that can seldom be retouched with advantage, and a critical excellence which leaves comparatively little necessity for revision by the light of modern scholarship. Many generations have found in it the truth of Fuller's words, "A good translation is an excellent comment on the Bible."[6]

The value of the work then accomplished

The Primacy of Archbishop Abbott

The Elizabethan Archbishops of Canterbury were Parker [A.D. 1559-1576], Grindal [A.D. 1576-1583], and Whitgift [A.D. 1583-1604]. The last of the three died just after the Hampton Court Conference, and was succeeded by Bancroft [A.D. 1604-1611], whose death was almost coincident with the publication of that Authorized Version which had occupied him and so many other learned men during the whole of his rule. When Bancroft passed away, it was generally supposed that the saintly and learned Andrewes, who was then Bishop of Ely, and under whose superintendence the work of Biblical revision had been carried on, would have succeeded to the vacant Archbishopric; but Scottish influence and abject flattery[7]

Vacancy in the Archbishopric of Canterbury

Abbott appointed

[6] Fuller's *Ch. Hist.*, iii. 247.

[7] Abbott had been chaplain to the Earl of Dunbar, and had recently ingratiated himself with

CHAP IX

A.D. 1611-33

prevailed with the King, so that George Abbott, who, on December 3, 1609, had become Bishop of Lichfield, and six weeks afterwards, on January 20, 1610, Bishop of London, was translated to Canterbury on April 9, 1611, instead of Andrewes. "If Archbishop Bancroft," says Lord Clarendon, "had been succeeded by Bishop Andrewes, or by any man who understood or loved the Church, that infection would easily have been kept out which could not afterwards be expelled." As it was, the Archbishop of Canterbury became the leader of the Puritans, or was looked up to by the Puritans as their leader, for twenty-two years; and his lamentable rule strengthening the hands of all the enemies of the Church of England, led to its temporary overthrow within a very few years of his death.

He is the recognized leader of the Puritans

Abbott had, indeed, been recognized as such a leader for some years before he became a bishop, having occupied the two important posts of Dean of

the King by helping to ferret out the secret history of the Gowrie conspiracy. In the preface to a pamphlet of Sir William Hart on this subject, Abbott had written of King James as one "whose life hath been so immaculate and unspotted in the world, so free from all touch of viciousness and staining imputation, that even malice itself, which leaveth nothing unsearched, could never find true blemish in it, nor cast probable aspersion on it. Zealous as David, learned and wise, the Solomon of our age, religious as Josias, careful of spreading Christ's faith as Constantine the Great, just as Moses, undefiled in all his ways as a Jehoshaphat or a Hezekias, full of clemency as another Theodosius." [*Exam. . . . of George Sprot . . . by Sir William Hart*, . . . 1608, page 34.] Abbott's preface occupies thirty-eight pages, Hart's pamphlet twenty-two only.

In a contemporary letter from Secretary Calvert to Sir Thomas Edmonds, the former writes, "The Bishop of London, by a strong north wind coming out of Scotland, is blown across the Thames to Lambeth, the King having professed to the Bishop himself, as also to the Lords of his Council, that it is neither the respect of his learning, his wisdom, nor his sincerity (although he is well persuaded there is not any one of them wanting in him) that hath moved him to prefer him before the rest of his fellows, but merely the recommendation of his faithful servant Dunbar that is dead, whose suit on behalf of the Bishop he cannot and will not suffer to lose his intention." Several other north winds have blown since then.

CHAP IX A.D. 1611-33

Winchester [A.D. 1599-1609] and Master of University College [A.D. 1597-1609]. Oxford has its regular periods of theological libration, and at this period it was exhibiting a large front of Calvinistic opinion. When the pupils of the Marian professors, De Villa Garcia and Peter de Soto, impatiently deserted to Rome early in Queen Elizabeth's reign, instead of remaining at their posts in the Church of England, they left a gap through which the stream of Puritanism flowed with such energy that it soon flooded the university. The professors' chairs were filled by men who supported the Calvinism which then came into fashion; for a quarter of a century [A.D. 1564-1585] the Earl of Leicester, the political leader of the Puritans, was Chancellor, and under his influence professors and heads of houses were appointed who almost extinguished the light of Church theology in Oxford, and substituted that of Germany and Geneva. "As it hath been observed," writes Fuller, "that the sin of drunkenness was first brought over into England out of the Low Countries about the midst of the reign of Queen Elizabeth (before which time neither general practice nor legal punishment of that vice in this kingdom), so we must sadly confess that since that time many English souls have taken a cup too much of Belgic wine, whereby their heads have not only grown dizzy in matters of less moment, but their whole bodies stagger in the fundamentals of their religion."[8] So Heylin also writes of the Calvinistic professors and heads, "By the power and practices of these men the face of the University was so much altered that there was little to be seen in it of the Church of England. All the Calvinian rigours were

Calvinism dominant in Oxford

Oxford dizzy with German theology

[8] Fuller's *Church Hist.*, iii. 249.

CHAP IX A.D. 1611-33

received as the established doctrines of the Church; Episcopacy was maintained by halves; there was no care taken for the forms and orders of the Church; the surplice was disused in officiating the Divine Service." [9]

While the future Archbishop of Canterbury was heading this Germanizing and Calvinistic school as Master of University College, and as Vice-Chancellor in the years 1600, 1603, and 1605, his brother, Dr. Robert Abbott, was assisting him with his influence as Master of Balliol College, and for some time Regius Professor of Divinity. During his few years' absence from Oxford in the North, and as Bishop of London, Abbott became more of a political and less of a theological Puritan; and thus his rule at Lambeth was that of what would in modern times be styled a "Broad Churchman." For the Calvinism of official Churchmen of Puritan times was as broad in its narrowness as the Germanism of modern official Churchmen is narrow in its breadth. The one point on which each school balances itself is the abnegation of a special sacerdotal character in the priesthood. So long as this character is maintained there can be no toleration: let it be repudiated, and all laxity of belief and practice is tolerable. Hence Abbott was exceedingly severe towards those of the clergy who faithfully represented the Catholic principles of the Reformation, principles which he opposed with supercilious virulence. Towards the growing school of Puritan clergy, on the other hand, and still more towards the influential laity of that school, he showed great favour. "It is charged on him," says Fuller, "that *non amavit gentem nostram*, he loved not our

Abbott the "Broad Churchman" of his day

[9] Heylin's *Life of Laud*, p. 61.

CHAP IX
A.D. 1611-33

nation; forsaking the birds of his own feather to fly with others, and generally favouring the laity above the clergy in all cases brought before him."[1] "No friend was he," says Aubrey, "to the Church of England whereof he was the head, but scandalously permitted that poisonous spirit of Puritanism to spread all over the whole nation by his indolence, at least, if not by his connivance, which some years after broke out, and laid a flourishing Church and State in the most miserable ruins." "He considered the Christian religion," wrote Lord Clarendon, "no otherwise than as it abhorred and reviled Popery, and valued those men most who did that most furiously, while he enquired little after the strict observance and discipline of the Church."

Contemporary opinions of Abbott

Under the presidency of Abbott the High Commission Court became exceedingly obnoxious to the public mind, and brought down a most unjust odium upon the Church, which was in no way responsible for its constitution. Bishop Hacket, in his life of Archbishop Williams, says respecting Abbott's severity, "It was not so in his predecessor Bancroft's days, who would chide strictly, but censure mildly. He considered that he sat there rather as a father than a judge, 'Et pro peccato magno paululum supplicii satis esse putavit.' He knew that a pastoral staff was made to reduce a wandering sheep, not to knock it down." He also adds, "that sentences of great correction, or rather destruction, have their epocha from his predominancy in that court."[2] Almost more severe are the simple words of Fuller, "He was mounted to command in the Church before he ever learned to obey therein; made a shepherd of shepherds before he

His severity as a judge

[1] Fuller's *Church Hist.*, iii. 351. [2] Hacket's *Life of Williams*, p. 97.

was a shepherd of sheep; consecrated bishop before ever called to a pastoral charge." [3]

The accession of this prelate to political power, first as Bishop of London, and then as Archbishop of Canterbury, seems at once to have given a stimulus to the never-slumbering activity of the party opposed to the Church. The nonconforming clergy, who had been obliged to give up their public ministrations and employ conforming curates, now took their places again in their churches, wearing no surplice, moving the communion table into the body of the church, encouraging the laity to receive the Holy Communion standing or sitting, instead of kneeling, and dropping as far as possible all usages which were disapproved of by the Presbyterians. The pulpits were industriously tuned by means of lecturers, who were appointed to preach afternoon sermons where the instructive practice of catechizing children in the presence of the adult congregation had hitherto been the rule. "These lecturers," says Neal, "were chiefly Puritans, who, not being satisfied with a full conformity so as to take upon them a cure of souls, only preached in the afternoons, being chosen and maintained by the people. They were strict Calvinists, warm and affectionate preachers, and distinguished themselves by a religious observation of the Lord's Day, by a bold opposition to Popery and the new ceremonies, and by an uncommon severity of life." The bishops in general disliked them as sowers of dissension and bitterness; but Archbishop Abbott "had a good opinion of the lecturers, as men that had the Protestant religion at heart, and would fortify their hearers against the return of Popery. When Mr. Palmer, Lecturer of St. Alphege, in Canter-

The Nonconformists grow bolder under Abbott

The rise of "Lecturers"

[3] Fuller's *Church Hist.*, iii. 287.

CHAP IX A.D. 1611-33

bury, was commanded to desist from preaching by the Archdeacon because he drew great numbers of factious people after him, and did not wear the surplice, the Archbishop authorized him to continue; the like he did by Mr. Udnay of Ashford."[4] In a similar way the bookstalls were flooded with Puritan pamphlets which had received the *imprimatur* of the Archbishop, and a popular literature was thus brought into wide and free circulation, the most conspicuous characteristic of which was that of a most bitter hostility to the doctrines, institutions, and customs of the Church. Added to all which he made his house the resort of leading men among the Puritan party, as if it were a home for those who were conspiring against the Catholic principles of the Reformation, and thus reproduced one of the worst features of Archbishop Cranmer's later rule.

Abbott's encouragement of anti-Church literature

Collapse of his influence

During the latter half of his primacy the influence of Abbott collapsed in a great degree through a misfortune which clouded his life. While out at a stag-hunt in Harringworth Park, on July 24, 1622—he was the first hunting bishop since mediæval times—a barbed arrow which he shot from a cross-bow killed a keeper instead of the deer. The Archbishop was not tried for the homicide, and after a short suspension and retirement, he returned to his duties and to Court. But the stain of blood could not be washed out. He lost influence at Court; some of those who were nominated to bishoprics refused to be consecrated by him; and Laud becoming the confidential adviser of Charles I., when he was appointed Privy Councillor in 1627, and Bishop of London in 1628, Abbott became

[4] Neal's *Hist. Purit.*, ii. 207. A full account of these lecturers, with quotations from their singularly seditious, bloodthirsty, and profane sermons, will be found in Walker's *Sufferings of the Clergy*, pages 16-20.

CHAP IX
A.D. 1611-33

a man of the past, although he lived on to the age of seventy-two, not making way for a successor until August 4, 1633. When the time came for him to give up his stewardship, to quote the words of Lord Clarendon, he "left his successor a very difficult work to do, to reform and reduce a Church to order that had been so long neglected, and that was so ill-fitted by many weak and more wilful Churchmen." His lawless disregard for the principles of the Reformation settlement helped largely indeed to prepare the way for the great rebellion, which was, in the first instance, a rebellion against that settlement.

Difficult work made for his successor

§ 2. The Reign of Charles I.

The death of James I., on March 27, 1625, raised to the throne Charles, his third and only surviving son, one who had been wholly brought up in the Reformed Church of England, as none of his predecessors of the Reformation period had been, and who was so well instructed in its principles that he never had any hesitation as to what they were, and was never in danger of swerving toward either Romanism on the one hand, or Puritanism on the other. His eldest brother, Prince Henry, who died in 1612 at the age of nineteen, when Charles was only twelve, was "the darling of the Puritans," and "he had frequently said that if ever he mounted the throne his first care should be to try to reconcile the Puritans to the Church of England."[5] In what sense this "reconciliation" was understood is shown by the popular rhyme—

Charles I. brought up a well instructed Church-man

His elder brother's Puritanism

"Henry the Eighth pulled down abbeys and cells,
But Henry the Ninth shall pull down bishops and bells:"

[5] Neal's *Hist. Purit.*, ii. 102

CHAP IX
A.D. 1625-49

and something of his ecclesiastical feeling, as well as that of his young brother, is shown by the tradition that he used to rally the latter roughly respecting his love for the Church, and to promise that when he became King he would give Charles a gown to hide his crooked legs, by making him Archbishop of Canterbury.[6] But although Charles I. received such an education as made him a refined and religious English gentleman in the midst of a coarse and licentious age, he was not educated for the throne, and it was only when he had bought experience very dearly that he began to develope those qualities which might have made him a strong-handed king. He loved retirement and domestic life at a period when sovereigns were accustomed to live much in public, and were expected to keep up great state; he was shy and reserved in speech when the Court had long been used to the free-spokenness of Queen Elizabeth and King James; his gentleness and love of peace were ill-fitted for the volcanic age in which his lot was cast; his humility and conscientiousness gave him a distrust of his own judgement which made him rely far too much on the judgement of others; and his unsuspiciousness placed him and his friends at the mercy of an exceedingly treacherous and deceitful band of courtiers, who sought nothing but personal advancement and gain.

Charles I. not educated for the throne

Qualities unsuitable for his time and position

Nor were the disadvantages under which Charles I. began his reign those of his personal character only, for he was embarrassed by a combination of circumstances which he may be said to have inherited. [1.] He found an impoverished exchequer, and a people

[6] The theological knowledge of Charles I. was very considerable, as is shown by the papers which he wrote in reply to the Presbyterian minister Henderson.

CHAP IX

A.D. 1625-49

comparatively unused to taxation. His predecessors, since the beginning of the Reformation, had obtained a large part of the funds necessary for carrying on the government of the country and its defence by the confiscation of Church property and the sale of Crown lands. Charles could only obtain such funds by taxation, and when the Puritanized House of Commons refused to vote supplies, except in exchange for encroachments on the liberties of the Church and the authority of the Crown, he was almost driven into that unwise course of levying taxes under the name of loans, which enabled him for a few years to carry on the Government without calling Parliament together, but which eventually shook the constitution to pieces. [2.] The King's Tudor connections entailed upon him Tudor views respecting the rights and duties of the Crown, and these were rapidly growing incompatible with the smooth working of a constitutional machine in which the power of a growing middle class formed a larger element every year. [3.] A wife had been chosen for the King by his father, Henrietta Maria, the daughter of Henry IV. of France, whose associations were of that ultramontane character which had now become so odious to the English nation; and her household included a clique of bigoted and covetous followers, chiefly French monks, who made ultramontanism more odious still. The King was soon driven to dismiss them, not without much bribing, on account of their obnoxious conduct, and he did so with a burst of angry language and disgust which is altogether unparalleled in any other of his letters[7] or

His revenue too small for public requirements

Prejudice excited by the Queen's followers

[7] The following is the letter to the Duke of Buckingham [Harl. MSS., 6988, 6], in which the King orders their final dismissal: "I have received your letter by Dick Greame. This is my answer. I command you send all the French away to-morrow out of the town.

CHAP IX A.D. 1625-49

reported conversations. But the prejudices which were created in the popular mind by the religion of the Queen—"an idolatress, a Canaanite, and a daughter of Heth"—contributed largely to the cuckoo cry of Popery which was raised against him, as it usually is against High Churchmen whether great or small, and which so much strengthened the hands of his rebellious subjects.

His reign disastrous to the Church for a time,

It thus happened that the King, who, from his thorough loyalty to the Church of England and his deeply religious character, was best adapted of all the sovereigns of the Reformation period to consolidate the Reformation settlement, was so hampered by the circumstances in which he was placed and the obstacles which were raised in his path, as to make his reign appear at first sight to be the most disastrous through which the Church of England ever passed. But a more complete view of history will lead us to regard this Caroline epoch as one in which a temporary reverse prepared the way for a permanent victory. During the later years of Charles I.'s reign the Puritan forces which had so long been besieging the Church were developed to their utmost extent in numbers and in power; they did the worst they could, by driving the Church out of its sanctuaries, prohibiting its worship, and seizing upon its long-coveted endowments; but the hour in which they attained their greatest triumph was the hour in which their power began to wane, and their short career of success and victory ended in utter failure and hopeless defeat.

but led to a subsequent defeat of its foes

If you can by fair means (but stick not long in disputing), otherwise force them away; driving them away like so many wild beasts, until ye have shipped them; and so the devil go with them. Let me hear no answer but of the performance of my command. So I rest, your faithful, constant, loving friend, CHARLES R."

Oaking, the 7th of August 1626.

The Laudian Movement.

That which preserved the Reformed Church of England from falling into irrecoverable dissolution was, under Providence, the movement of which Archbishop Laud became the nominal leader, and the object of which was to return to the true principles of the English Reformation as distinguished from those of the Presbyterian Calvinism established in Geneva, or the non-Episcopal Lutheranism established in Germany. The movement may be shortly characterized under three heads as—

Laud's a Reformation movement

I. *First*, A return to the doctrine of the Reformation respecting the necessity of Episcopal Ordination for the ministry of the Church, and of Episcopal government for its discipline.

II. *Secondly*, A return to high doctrine respecting Sacraments and Sacramental Ordinances.

III. *Thirdly*, A return to the ritual system which was set forth in the Book of Common Prayer.

Against these doctrines and their corresponding ritual the Puritan party had been fighting ever since Archbishop Cranmer had given up his better judgement to his foreign guests and to Bishop Hooper in the latter half of Edward VI.'s reign, three generations before. But they had not been able to annul the Reformation settlement, for although their opinions spread widely among the clergy and laity, the formularies and laws of the Church continued to express the doctrines and to enjoin the ritual, or to take them for granted. There were not a few persons then, as there are in modern times, who desired to keep the laws and formularies of the Church substantially

Its principles laid down in Reformation formularies

CHAP IX

A.D. 1603-45

unchanged, but at the same time to give them such an interpretation as would bring them down nearly or quite to the level of the Puritan platform, thus making a way for the Nonconformists to conform. But the Laudian movement brought out clearly that such interpretations are "non-natural," however ingenious they may be, and that, even when well meant, they are in fact dishonest. Hence the prayers and doctrinal statements began to be taken in a literal sense on both sides, a sense which had been much lost sight of, and as this literal sense was developed, ritual customs which had lost their meaning under the influence of "non-natural" interpretation began again to revive. Then escaped the Church of England from the imminent danger of becoming a "paper-Church,"—that is, a Church whose theories of Episcopacy, the sacerdotal office, and Divine worship are clearly enough expressed in her Prayer Book, her Canons, and her Articles, but whose practical Church life expresses a very much lower type of doctrine; a Church which would remain Catholic upon paper, but degenerate in practice almost to the level of a Protestant sect. There were never wanting in the Church of England divines who held fast by the original principles of her Reformation; men like Hooker, Saravia, Archbishop Bancroft, Bishop Bilson, Bishop Overall, and Bishop Andrewes: but Archbishop Laud was the first to take the lead in a widespread revival of these principles, and in a revival, almost as widespread, of the ritual customs of the Prayer Book which give visible expression to them.

based on natural instead of non-natural interpretations

Divines of same opinions with Laud

Like Wolsey and Cranmer, Laud sprang from that social border-land on which the landed gentry and the commercial classes overlap each other, and which

CHAP IX

A.D. 1603-45

has given birth to so many ruling minds among Englishmen, his father being a "clothier" or woollen cloth manufacturer at Reading, who had wealth and culture enough to send his son to St. John's College, Oxford. Laud was born in the earlier half of Queen Elizabeth's reign, on October 7, 1573, while Parker was still Archbishop of Canterbury, and Hooker only an undergraduate; and about the time when the earlier books of Hooker's "Laws of Ecclesiastical Polity" [A.D. 1593] saw the light he became Fellow of St. John's. He was not ordained priest until the year 1601, when he was twenty-eight years of age; but by that time he had spent not a few years in independent theological study, and had formed ideas on many subjects, from which he never swerved to the end of his life. As Divinity Lecturer in his college, he became notorious for his maintenance of the principle that the Church of England was part of a visible Church which had a continuous existence from the Apostolic age, a visible Church of which the pre-Reformation Churches in England and elsewhere were the true representatives and not the non-Episcopal sects of the Berengarians, Albigenses, Wickliffites, and Hussites, as was asserted by Abbott and the rest of the Puritan party. When he performed a theological exercise for his Bachelor of Divinity degree in the Divinity School, Laud also maintained the two propositions that Baptism is necessary to salvation, and that without Episcopacy there can be no true Church, and his unwavering assertion of these principles was so well known that it formed part of the accusation brought against the Archbishop at his trial nearly forty years afterwards. At the earlier period such opinions were comparatively unknown in Oxford, but

Laud's early career

and early opinions

CHAP IX
A.D. 1603-45

that they exercised considerable influence on the minds of the younger men is shown by the bitter hostility which Laud met with from Abbott and other leading men of the party which had hitherto had everything its own way.

For two or three years the irrepressible teacher of "innovations" was absent from Oxford in chaplaincies and parochial cures, but this hostility by no means diminished; and when there was a prospect of his being elected President of St. John's, Abbott, then recently made Archbishop of Canterbury, actually endeavoured to override the election by conveying reports to the King through Lord Ellesmere, who was Chancellor of the University as well as Lord Chancellor, that the expectant President was "at least a Papist in heart, and cordially addicted unto Popery."[8] But after giving him an audience of several hours, King James confirmed his election, and appointed him one of his chaplains, raising him to the Deanery of

Abbott's hostility to Laud

[8] This "Popery" of the Laudian party was defined by Robert Abbott, the brother of the Archbishop, in a sermon which he levelled at them. "Some are partly Romish, partly English, as occasion serves them, that a man might say, 'Noster es, an Adversariorum?" who, under pretence of truth, and preaching against the Puritan, strike at the heart and root of the faith and religion now established among us. . . . If they do at any time speak against the Papists they do but beat a little about the bush; . . . they speak nothing but that wherein one Papist may speak against another, as against equivocation, and the Pope's temporal authority and the like, and perhaps some of their blasphemous speeches; but in the points of Freewill, Justification, Concupiscence being a sin after Baptism, inherent Righteousness, and certainty of Salvation, the Papists beyond the seas can say they are wholly theirs, and the recusants at home make their brags of them. And in all things they keep themselves so near the brink that upon any occasion they may step over to them. Might not Christ say, 'What art thou, Romish or English, Papist or Protestant? or what art thou? a mongrel, or compound of both; a Protestant by ordination, a Papist in point of freewill, inherent righteousness, and the like; a Protestant in receiving the Sacrament, a Papist in the doctrine of the Sacrament?'" [Heylin's *Life of Laud*, 56, 61, 62.]

CHAP IX
A.D. 1603-45

Gloucester in 1616, and nominating him to the Bishopric of St. David's in 1621. The young King translated him to Bath and Wells in 1626, made him Privy Councillor in 1627, and Chief Minister on the departure of the Duke of Buckingham for the Rochelle Expedition; and great offices fell to him so rapidly that he became Bishop of London in 1628, Chancellor of Oxford University in 1630,[9] and Archbishop of Canterbury in 1633. But when Laud thus rose to the highest political and the highest ecclesiastical position in the kingdom he had been an influential leader in the Church for a whole generation. During all that time the principles and practices which he supported and encouraged were those in which the lines of the Church Reformation had been laid—those which had been brought out with the greatest clearness in the First Prayer Book of Edward VI., but which have, notwithstanding subsequent revisions, been found all along, and are still to be found, in the authorized formularies of the Church of England. "He was always," says one of his enemies, "the same man: begin with him at Oxford, and so go on to Canterbury, he is unmoved, unchanged; he never complied with the times, but kept his own stand till the times came up to him."[1] "Let me be bold to observe to your Majesty in particular," he said to King James during his controversy with Fisher the Jesuit, "concerning your great charge in the Church of England. She is in hard condition. She professes the ancient Catholic faith, and yet the Romanist condemns her for novelty in her doctrine. She practises Church government as

Laud's rapid rise to high office in Church and State

His ideas on the position of the Church

[9] While he was Chancellor of Oxford Laud enriched the University with some noble buildings, and gave thirteen hundred costly MSS., with many printed books, to the Bodleian Library.

[1] Sir Edw. Dering's *Speeches*, p. 4.

CHAP IX A.D. 1603-45

it hath been in use in all ages and all places where the Church of Christ hath been established, both in and since the days of the Apostles, and yet the separatist condemns her for anti-Christianism in her discipline. The plain truth is, she is between these two factions as between two millstones, and unless your Majesty look to it, to whose trust she is committed, she will be ground to powder, to an irreparable dishonour and loss to this kingdom. And it is very remarkable that while both these press hard upon the Church of England, both of them cry out against persecution like froward children, who scratch, and kick, and bite, and yet cry out all the while, as if they were killed. Now, to the Romanist I shall say this: the errors of the Church of Rome are grown now (many of them) very old, and when errors are grown by age and continuance to strength, they which speak for the truth, though it be an older, are usually challenged for the bringers-in of new opinions. And there is no greater absurdity stirring this day in Christendom than that the reformation of an old corrupted Church, whether we will or not, must be taken for the building of a new. And were not this so, we should never be troubled with that idle and impertinent question of theirs, Where was your Church before Luther? for it was just there where theirs is now—one and the same Church still, no doubt of that; one in substance, but not one in condition of state and purity; their part of the same Church remaining in corruption, and our part of the same Church under reformation. The same Naaman, and he a Syrian still; but leprous with them and cleansed with us: the same man still. And for the separatist, and him that lays his ground for separation or change of disci-

The Church ground between two millstones of Popery and Puritanism

The Reformed Church like Naaman cleansed

pline, though all he says, or can say, be in truth of Divinity and among learned men little better than ridiculous, yet, since these fond opinions have gained some ground among the people, to such among them as are wilfully set to follow their blind guides through thick and thin till they fall into the ditch together, I shall say nothing. But for so many of them as mean well, and are only misled by artifice and cunning, concerning them I shall say thus much only—they are bells of passing good metal, and tunable enough of themselves and in their own disposition; and a world of pity it is that they are rung so miserably out of tune as they are by them who have acquired power in and over their consciences. And for this there is remedy enough, but how long there will be I know not."

The people good bells in the hands of bad ringers

One remedy had already been applied in the Universities, and another was on the point of being applied throughout the kingdom. When Laud first began to exercise personal influence with James I. in 1616, some Royal Injunctions were sent to Oxford and Cambridge, one of which required that students in Divinity "should apply themselves in the first place to the reading of the Scriptures, next the Councils and ancient Fathers, and then the Schoolmen [histories and controversies, and not to insist too long upon compendiums and abbreviatures, making them the grounds of their study in Divinity], excluding those neoterics, both Jesuits and Puritans, who are known to be meddlers in matters of state and monarchy, that thereby they may be the better enabled only to preach Christ crucified, which ought to be the end of their studies."[2]

Study of sound Divinity enjoined on the Universities

[2] Heylin's *Life of Laud*, 66; Wood's *Ann.*, ii. 323, 343.

CHAP IX

A.D. 1603-45

This was followed up in 1622 by a letter to the Archbishop of Canterbury, in which he and the rest of the bishops are reminded of representations which have been made to the King, that "at this present divers young students, by reading of late writers and ungrounded divines, do broach many times unprofitable, unsound, seditious, and dangerous doctrines, to the scandal of this Church and disquieting of the State and present Government;" and they are enjoined "to use all possible care and diligence that these limitations and cautions herewith sent to you concerning preachers be duly and strictly from henceforth observed and put in practice by the several bishops in their several dioceses within your jurisdiction." Of the six Injunctions which accompanied this letter, the *first* restricted the clergy in cathedrals to such sermons as should be "comprehended and warranted in essence, substance, effect, or natural inference, within some one of the Thirty-nine Articles of Religion; the *second* directed the parochial clergy to base their sermons on the Catechism, or some text taken out of the Creed, the Lord's Prayer, or the Ten Commandments, adding that those preachers were to be most encouraged and approved of who spent the Sunday afternoon in catechizing; the *third* forbade the inferior clergy "to preach in any popular auditory the deep points of predestination, election, reprobation, or of the universality, efficacy, resistibility or irresistibility of God's grace;" the *fourth* forbade meddling with matters of State in sermons; the *fifth* enjoined that preachers should not "fall into bitter invectives and indecent railing speeches against the persons of either Papists or Puritans;" and the *sixth* ordered that lecturers "(a new body severed from the ancient clergy of

Sound and practical Divinity

enjoined on preachers.

England, as being neither parsons, vicars, or curates)" should be licensed only upon a bishop's recommendation, with a "fiat" from the Archbishop of Canterbury and a confirmation under the Great Seal.[3] These strict Injunctions were reissued by Charles I. in the year 1626; and had they been at all generally enforced by the bishops, they must have gone far to prevent the diffusion of Puritan doctrines by means of the pulpits. It is very improbable that they were so enforced; and indeed the time was past when it was possible to enforce them generally, though they may have been brought to bear on some very conspicuous cases of disobedience.

Calvinistic interpretation of the Thirty-nine Articles forbidden

The next step taken by Laud in thus using the Royal Prerogative for the resuscitation of sound doctrine was one which brought on a serious collision with the House of Commons, an admonitory warning of the storm which was to break out in its fury as soon as ever Parliament was allowed again to assemble. The Puritan clergy, in pursuance of their non-natural interpretation of formularies, were accustomed to "read in" the doctrines of Calvin into the Thirty-nine Articles of Religion, especially interpreting the seventeenth, which treats of Predestination and Election in the sense which it had been endeavoured in vain to fix more definitely on the Church of England in the year 1595, by means of nine propositions upon these subjects, called "The Lambeth Articles."[4] To

[3] Cardwell's *Doc. Ann.*, ii. 149.

[4] THE LAMBETH ARTICLES arose out of a long-standing feud at Cambridge. The Calvinist divines were at one time in such high authority in the University, that they caused a search to be made in all private studies for books and papers opposed to their doctrines of Election and Predestination [Strype's *Life of Whitgift*, p. 438]; and when this tyranny over opinion was resisted by Baron, the Margaret Professor of Divinity, he was driven from his professorship. Baron's teaching had, however,

CHAP IX
A.D. 1626-45

guard against this perversion of Anglican doctrine, the Thirty-nine Articles were again promulgated by the Crown in 1628, with a royal declaration prefixed (written by Laud or Cosin), ratifying and confirming them as containing "the true doctrine of the Church of England agreeable to God's Word." It also enjoined "that no man hereafter shall either print or preach to draw the article aside any way, but shall submit to it in the plain and full meaning thereof, and shall not put his own sense or comment to be the meaning of the article, but shall take it in the literal and grammatical sense." The event has proved the wisdom of these words, for the "Declaration" which was thus prefixed to the Thirty-nine Articles in 1628 has held its place as an interpretative clause to them for two centuries and a half, no one now venturing to contend that they should be taken in any other than "the literal and grammatical sense."

The literal and grammatical sense of the Thirty-nine Articles enforced

The "Calvinist divines," says their historian Neal, "understood the King's intention, and complained in a petition of 'the restraints they were laid

produced its effect, and soon young preachers were found who dared to maintain from the pulpit that Christ died for the salvation of all men, and not only for that of a predestinated and elected few. An appeal was made to Archbishop Whitgift, and a conference of several Calvinistic divines was invited to meet at Lambeth Palace. Here Whitaker, their leader, laid down certain propositions which were formulated into nine Articles, the fundamental principles of which are thus stated. That "God has from eternity predestined some persons unto life, and some persons He has reprobated unto death [1]; they who are not predestinated to salvation will, by necessity, be damned on account of their sins [4]; a truly faithful man—that is, one endued with justifying faith—is certain, by the full assurance of faith, concerning the remission of his sins and his eternal salvation through Christ" [6].

These Articles were never brought before Convocation, but were got up at a hole-and-corner meeting of party clergy presided over by the Archbishop of Canterbury, Whitgift, and the Bishop of London, Fletcher. As soon as they became known beyond Lambeth and Cambridge, they were sup pressed by the Queen's order, having no authority, but being mischievously assumed to have some.

CHAP IX
A.D. 1626-45

under by his Majesty's forbidding them to preach the saving doctrines of God's free grace in Election and Predestination to eternal life, according to the seventeenth Article of the Church.' But this address was stopped in its progress, and never reached the King's ears."[5] When Parliament reassembled, on January 20, 1629, "they began again with grievances of religion, Oliver Cromwell, Esq^re, being of the Committee," for the House now resolved itself into a "Committee of Religion," as if the consideration of religious questions was part of its regular functions. "Upon debating the King's late Declaration, the House voted that the main end of that Declaration was to suppress the Puritan party, and to give liberty to the contrary side." Pym now became, and long continued to be, the Parliamentary spokesman and leader of the Puritans, and he passionately maintained that the Lambeth Articles were the doctrine of the Church of England, calling upon the House of Commons to put down those who "professed the contrary heresies." "An Arminian,"—that is, an anti-Calvinist, —said another member, "is the spawn of a Papist, and if the warmth of favour come upon him, you shall see him turn into one of those frogs that rose out of the bottomless pit. . . . Wherefore, let us now, by the unanimous consent and resolution of us all, make a vow and covenant henceforth to hold fast—I say to hold fast—our God and religion." In this spirit the House of Commons took upon itself the duties of an ecclesiastical synod, and "entered into the following vow," this extraordinary resolution being long called "The Vow of the House of Commons:"—

This sense judged to be anti-Puritan by the House of Commons

The vow of the House of Common

"We, the Commons in Parliament assembled, do claim, protest, and avow for truth the sense of the Articles of

[5] Neal's *Hist. Purit.*, ii. 190.

Perkins School of T

CHAP IX
A.D. 1626-45

Religion which were established by Parliament in the thirteenth year of our late Queen Elizabeth, which by the public act of the Church of England, and by the general and current expositions of the writers of our Church, has been delivered unto us. And we reject the sense of the Jesuits and Arminians, and all others wherein they differ from us."[6]

This was obviously intended as a counter-declaration to that of the King, the object being to fix upon the Church of England a Calvinistic sense of the Articles, according to Pym's suggestion, instead of that "literal and grammatical sense" which, in spite of these endeavours, the Church of England has so long preferred. But the Crown and the House of Commons were now at serious variance on the subject of taxes, and after several adjournments, Parliament was dissolved on March 10, 1629, not to be summoned again for eleven years, but then to resume its synodical functions with renewed vigour.[7] But the Laudian movement had won an effective and lasting victory in gaining for the Church of England through so many succeeding generations the establishment of the principle that the Thirty-nine Articles of Religion are to be interpreted in their "literal and grammatical sense," and not according to the traditions of any party; and if that movement had no other, this is an exceedingly well-founded title to the gratitude of later times. It was obviously a return to the Reformation Settlement of Doctrine.[8]

Dissolution of Parliament for eleven years

[6] Rushworth's *Coll.*, i. 645-649.

[7] Great were the murmurings of the people upon this occasion. Libels were dispersed against the Prime Minister, Laud, one of which says, "Laud, look to thyself; be assured thy life is sought. As thou art the fountain of wickedness, repent of thy monstrous sins before thou be taken out of this world, and assure thyself neither God nor the world can endure such a vile counsellor or whisperer to live." [Neal's *Hist. Purit.*, ii. 198; Rushworth's *Coll.*, i. 662.]

[8] Comp. pp. 108 and 381.

CHAP IX

A.D. 1626-45

Under the same influences and during the same period a very important retrogression took place towards the ritual customs of the Reformation Settlement. In this also the Laudian movement affected very largely the Church of England of subsequent generations, and no period more largely than the latter half of the nineteenth century. This revival of ritual is generally fastened upon Laud individually, but contemporaries accused others also, as when Sir John Elliot said in Parliament as early as 1628 respecting the "bishops that are not orthodox nor sound in religion, as they should be," that is, not Calvinists, "Some of these are masters of ceremonies, and labour to introduce new ceremonies into the Church,"[9] Neal explaining "the new ceremonies that began now to be introduced into the Church as images of saints and angels, crucifixes, altars, and lighted candles, etc."[1] Bishop Andrewes [A.D. 1555-1626], who died seven years before Laud became Archbishop of Canterbury, was quite as zealous a maintainer of the high Reformation ritual as Laud himself. The Episcopal chapel at Winchester House was full of what Prynne afterwards called "Popish furniture," which Laud took as the pattern for his own chapels at Abergwily, London House, and Lambeth;[2] while in the Visitation Articles of the Diocese of Winchester minute enquiries were made as to the alienation of church ornaments, as to chancel screens, comely surplices and altar-cloths, the churchwardens being required in the case of the latter to answer the significant questions, "What it costs by the yard?" "What it is worth to be priced?" "What might either of them," the altar-cloths, "be worth?'

Laud not alone in this revival

Bishop Andrewes chapel, and his Visitation Articles

[9] Rushworth's *Coll.*, i. 649.
[1] Neal's *Hist. Purit.*, ii. 191.
[2] Prynne's *Canterbury's Doom*, 120

CHAP IX A.D. 1626-45

Peter Smart, one of the Prebendaries of Durham in the time of Bishop Neile, complained, in a sermon preached on July 7, 1628, that there was then in that Cathedral "an inundation of ceremonies, crosses, and crucifixes, and chalices, and images, copes, and candlesticks, and tapers, and basins, and a thousand fresh trinkets which attend upon the Mass; all which we have seen in this church since the communion table was turned into an altar. Before we had ministers, . . . but now we have priests, and sacrifices, and altars, with much altar furniture, and many massing implements. . . . If religion consist in altar decking, cope wearing, organ playing, piping and singing, crossing of cushions and kissing of clouts, oft starting up and squatting down, nodding of heads and whirling about till their noses stand eastward, setting basins on the altar, candlesticks and crucifixes, burning wax candles in excessive number when and where there is no use of lights, . . . we never had more religion than now."[3] In a later publication Smart writes that "the setting up of altars and images, with a multitude of superstitious ceremonies, changing of services, and corruptions of sacraments," began at Durham with Bishop Neile in 1617; that "they have since," writing in 1643, "spread themselves over all the cathedrals, collegiate churches, and colleges of this realm;" and he names Bishops Neile, Laud, Lindsell, Corbet, Wren, Montague, Howson, Goodman, Manwaring, White, Field, Wright, and Harsnett as those who were responsible for the movement, for "all these Bishops were zealous maintainers of altars and images, and other superstitious ceremonies depending upon altars."[4]

Smart's invective against Durham usages

When, however, Laud became Archbishop of Canter-

[3] Smart's *Sermon*, pp. 11, 23, 24. [4] Smart's *Canterbury's Cruelty*, App.

bury, A.D. 1633, the ritual movement received an impetus from his strong hand which caused it to be specially associated with his name. He held a visitation of his province for the purpose of reforming abuses in its cathedral churches; and while he enforced residence and other disciplinary reforms, he also required that the altar should be restored to its proper place at the east end of the choir, wherever it had been removed thence under Puritan influence, that it should be treated with reverence, and that the clergy officiating at it should wear copes or vestments, according to the injunctions laid down in the canons and the Elizabethan Act of Uniformity. "He began," says his biographer Heylin, "with Canterbury, his own cathedral, where he found the table placed at the east end of the choir by the dean and chapter, and adoration used toward it by their appointment, which, having found in so good order, he recommended unto them the providing of candlesticks, basons, carpet, and other furniture for the adorning of the altar. And that these things might be perpetual to succeeding ages, he composed a body of statutes, in which was this (which the deans, prebends, and officers were bound by oath to observe), that at their coming in and going out of the choir, and all approaches to the altar, they should, by bowing toward it, make reverence to Almighty God." At Winchester he required them "to provide four copes, to rail in the communion table, place it altarwise, to bow towards it, and daily to read the Epistles and Gospels at it;" at Chichester, "to provide copes by one a year for God's public service, till they were sufficiently furnished with them, with the like adorations;" at Hereford, "that they should officiate on Sundays and holidays in their

Restoration of reverent customs in cathedrals

CHAP IX
A.D. 1626-45

copes; stand at the Creeds, Gospel, and doxologies; bow at the name of Jesus, and toward the altar." And so at other cathedrals also. Heylin notices that the movement extended to college chapels, writing, "According to which example of their Lord Chancellor, the principal colleges in Oxon beautified their chapels, transposed their tables, fenced them with rails, and furnished them with hangings, palls, plate, etc."[5]

Restoration of reverent customs in parish churches

That it extended to many parish churches also is shown by numerous references made to them in contemporary publications. "What!" said Burton in 1636, "must other churches have organs, singing quires, altars, images, crucifixes, tapers, copes, and the like, because such is the guise of cathedrals? Must long chanting service go up and preaching go down because it is so done in Wolverhampton, Durham, and other cathedrals?"[6] Similar evidence is also given by the "grievances" laid before the Lords' "Committee for Religion" of 1641, of which some were, that canopies were placed over the altars, that curtains or veils were used at each end, that candlesticks were placed upon them in the day-time, that credence tables had been introduced, and that the Litany was said in the body of the church;"[7] as also by "Ordinances" of the House of Commons passed in 1643, ordering that the copes, surplices, etc., in all cathedral, collegiate, and parish churches shall be sold; and in 1644 that all copes, surplices, superstitious vestments, roods, fonts, and organs should not only be taken away from the churches, but be utterly destroyed.

By comparison of these facts—which, although narrated in some detail, are necessary to the plain

[5] Heylin's *Life of Laud*, p. 291.
[6] Burton's *For God and the King*, p. 163.
[7] Collier's *Eccl. Hist.*, viii. 198 Neal's *Hist. Purit.*, ii. 462.

statement here attempted—with what has been said in a previous chapter about the Puritan movement, it will be seen that the Laudian movement was evidently brought about by the reaction of reverent minds against the scornful dishonour which had been cast upon the doctrines and customs of the Church by the Calvinistic party. Their complaint all along was that the Reformation had not gone far enough, and their endeavour had been to bring about, by indirect and unlegalized means, what they could not effect by means that were constitutional. Under the influence of Andrewes, Overall, Laud, and others of like mind, a large number of the clergy and laity were led to a better understanding of the true principles which were embodied in the Reformation Settlement, and as they endeavoured to revive these principles by their teaching and by ritual, they were necessarily placed in opposition to the Puritan party. For the charge of Romanism which was brought against these so-called "innovators" there was not the least ground. "The Presbyterians," says the historian Rapin, "had taken it into their heads that a project was formed to re-establish the Roman religion in England. . . . They imagined that the King's ministers, the Council, the Bishops, and particularly the new Archbishop of Canterbury, were the authors of this project. . . . For my part, I verily believe neither the King, nor the Archbishop, nor the ministers, for the most part, ever formed such a design. At least, in all that has been said upon this subject, I have not met with any proof which to me seemed, I will not say strong enough to convince me, but even to have the least probability. Nevertheless, it is certain this opinion prevailed more and more among the people, and the

The Laudian reformers charged with Popery

CHAP IX

A.D. 1626-45

Presbyterians used their endeavour to gain it credit. I do not know whether they believed it themselves, or whether they only thought it would be for their advantage to throw this reproach upon the Church of England, that they might strengthen their party, in which they succeeded at length even beyond their expectations." [8]

The Laudian movement was abruptly interrupted by the Long Parliament, and seemed before long to be utterly extinct. But it revived again at the Restoration, and had a lasting influence upon the Church of England. As Laud and his friends were the true representatives of the divines who led the Reformation movement identified with the First Prayer Book of Edward VI., so the succession was continued from Laud to such divines as Thorndike, Bramhall, Cosin, Sancroft, Sanderson, and Pearson; Ken, Beveridge, and Bull [A.D. 1634-1710] in the next generation, with the orthodox laymen, Robert Nelson [A.D. 1656-1775], and Dr. Johnson [A.D. 1709-1784], bringing down the line of succession continuously to our own time through such profoundly learned divines as Routh [A.D. 1775-1854], President of Magdalen College, and such energetic champions of Reformation principles as Routh's pupil, Phillpotts [A.D. 1778-1869], Bishop of Exeter.

The permanent effects of the Laudian movement

The Great Rebellion.

But the climax which was reached at last by the conflict between the Puritan and the Laudian movements was a religious war. The elements of that war had been seething in English society during the whole time that the Church of England was being ground

[8] Rapin's *Hist. of Eng.*, ii. 278, 290.

between the upper stone of Puritanism and the nether stone of Popish aggression; but the first actual outbreak took place in Scotland.

James I. had seen enough of Presbyterianism to have acquired a very strong aversion, both political and religious, towards it, and he had not long been sovereign of England as well as Scotland before he began to lay plans for the restoration of Scottish Episcopacy. Presbyterianism had been substituted for Episcopacy in 1560, and had been formally established by the "114th Act James VI., Parl. 12, Anno 1592," but side by side with it there was a nominal Episcopate, certain clergymen or laymen bearing the title of Bishop, and receiving episcopal revenues, but not exercising any functions of the episcopal office.[9] In 1606 James I. persuaded the Scottish Parliament to pass an Act for "the restitution of bishops," the nominal object of which was to enable the Crown to restore to the titular bishops such episcopal estates as were held by it; and at the same time the General Assembly was persuaded to give an ecclesiastical status to the nominal prelates, by making them permanent moderators or presidents of the presbyteries into which their territorial dioceses were divided. In June 1610 nine resolutions were passed by the General Assembly which restored jurisdiction to the bishops, and on October 21, 1610, three of them were consecrated in the Chapel of London House, by Bishops Abbott, Andrewes, and Montague, that they might return to Scotland clothed with proper spiritual authority to consecrate the rest.

Temporary revival of the Episcopate in Scotland

In 1616 it was enacted by the General Assembly

[9] These titular prelates were popularly nicknamed "Tulchane Bishops," from the "tulchane" or "tulchin," which was a stuffed calf's skin set up in sight of a cow, to persuade her to give her milk.

CHAP IX

A.D. 1626-45

"that a Liturgy or Book of Common Prayer should be formed for the use of the Church," which was understood by some to mean a Prayer Book like that of the Church of England, but by others as an authorized "Directory," similar to Knox's "Book of Common Order," which was already used in many places. A draft of a Liturgy was sent to King James by Spottiswood, Archbishop of St. Andrews, and was returned to the Archbishop with some revision shortly before the King's death, an Ordinal having already, in 1620, been brought into use by his authority. The Prayer Book thus prepared was never introduced into use, nor is it exactly known what was its character. Charles I. and Laud, then [A.D. 1629] Bishop of London, whom the King consulted on the subject, advised the Scottish clergy who petitioned for a Prayer Book to adopt that of the Church of England without any alteration; but after some years, in 1633, the King gave way to the importunity of the Scottish bishops, and directed that a committee formed from their body should prepare a Liturgy, communicating with Laud as to what they were doing, and receiving from him, by the royal command, his "best assistance in this way and work." The two chief compilers of the book were Maxwell, Bishop of Ross, and Wedderburn, Bishop of Dunblane, Laud being often consulted by letter, and having the assistance of Bishops Nixon and Wren in replying to such questions as were laid before him. The "Scottish Prayer Book" which was thus compiled by Scottish bishops was more like the First Prayer Book of Edward VI. than like that then in use in England, and has always been highly esteemed by liturgical scholars. It was taken as the model for the American Prayer Book. But it was introduced to

The Scottish Prayer Book compiled

the people of Scotland under most unfavourable circumstances, being preceded by a book of canons which had done anything but smooth the way for it, and being set forth, on December 20, 1636, by royal proclamation alone, without being brought, as Laud had strongly advised that it should be brought, before the General Assembly.

The proclamation ordered that the new Prayer Book should be provided for all parishes before Easter 1637, and the bishops directed the clergy to begin the use of it in Divine Service on July 23, 1637. Meanwhile a secret conspiracy was being organized for the overthrow of Episcopacy by some of the nobility who had been invited by the King to restore to the Church the ecclesiastical lands which their fathers had appropriated during the confusion and scramble of the Scottish Reformation; and these were assisted by a number of Presbyterian ministers, of whom Alexander Henderson, afterwards well known for his conferences with the King, was the ringleader. It was secretly arranged that the first assault should be made by an attack upon the new Prayer Book at its first introduction. For this purpose, using the plea that "the Jews stirred up the devout and honourable women," "Nicolas Balfour, Euphan Henderson, Bethia and Elspa Craig, and many other matrons, were instructed how to give the first affront to the book, and assured that men would afterwards take the business out of their hands." The result was that when the Prayer Book was used for the first time in St. Giles' Church, then the Cathedral of Edinburgh, the dean and the bishop were both assaulted by the women with the most indecent violence, some of them throwing the stools on which they sat at their heads, and others

Conspiracy against Episcopacy

Women used as tools of the conspirators

CHAP IX

A.D. 1626-45

endeavouring to pull them out of the reading-desk and the pulpit, so that the Apostolic Bishop Forbes escaped the most fearful form of assassination, that which takes place at the hands of a mob of women, only by the timely appearance of the Earl of Roxburgh.

The conspiracy against Episcopacy was now in some danger of being defeated, the concession which was made in the withdrawal of the Liturgy after it had been in partial use for a few months, and by a royal proclamation which was put forth on February 19, 1639, declaring that the King desired nothing but the promotion of religion in the changes which had been made. But to meet these peaceful overtures on the part of the King, an open rebellion was at once initiated by the election of a National Convention, consisting of four representative bodies of nobility, lairds, burgesses, and ministers, which received the name of "the Four Tables," and which overruled all other authority, with the nominal exception of the King. This body revived a "National Covenant" which had been set forth in 1580 and 1590, and which bound all those who were sworn to it to oppose all "Papistry," adding a clause which declared that "the government of the Kirk by bishops" was unlawful. The General Assembly assented to the proceedings of the "Four Tables," and passed an Act declaring that it could not be dissolved or in any way controlled by the Crown; Henderson, the Moderator, winding up his prayer on the occasion with the invocation of the curse of Joshua on the head of the King if he should attempt to rebuild the Jericho of Episcopacy. "All that we have done these thirty years is thrown down at once," said Archbishop Spottiswood. He and most of the other bishops left

The Prayer Book withdrawn again

The General Assembly declares its sittings permanent

CHAP IX
A. D. 1640-45

Scotland, and only one, Sydserf, survived to see the Restoration. Episcopacy lay in the dust already in the smaller kingdom, and the complete success of the Presbyterians there suggested an alliance between them and the Puritans, that the same work of destruction might be accomplished in the larger kingdom also. Before long a great army of Covenanters, numbering twenty-three thousand infantry and three thousand cavalry, had marched through Northumberland, headed by their ministers, and proclaiming that they marched not against the people of England, but against the "Canterburian faction of Papists, Atheists, Arminians, and Prelates," their only object being that of "punishing the troublers of Israel, the firebrands of hell, the Korahs, the Balaams, the Doegs, the Rabshakehs, the Hamans, the Tobiahs, the Sanballats of the times."[1]

The Covenanters invading England

Before long a part of the royal army which had been collected to meet them had been defeated at Newburn on the Tyne, and just when the great Lord Strafford arrived to take the command, the King was persuaded to break off hostilities, to enter into negotiations with his rebellious subjects, which were to be concluded in London with commissioners sent thither by them. Then Charles hastened back from York to meet the Parliament which he had summoned together, leaving the northern counties at the command of the Covenanters.

The Short Parliament

In the beginning of the year a Parliament had assembled [April 13—May 5, 1640], but it was so hostile to the King that he had hastily dissolved it. Compelled by the financial necessities of the country to call another almost immediately, he was confronted

[1] Rushworth's *Coll.*, ii. 1226.

CHAP IX

A.D. 1640-45

at Westminster by that Parliament which put Strafford, Laud, and himself to death, and which sat for twelve years and a half [Nov. 3, 1640—April 20, 1653]. The character of the members who filled the House of Commons at the first meeting of this Parliament may be given in the words of Milton :—

The Long Parliament described

"The people, with great courage and expectation to be eased of what discontented them, chose to their behoof a Parliament such as they thought best affected to the public good, and some, indeed, men of wisdom and integrity; the rest whom wealth, or ample possessions, or bold and active ambition, rather than merit, had recommended to the same place. But when the superficial zeal and popular fumes that acted their new magistracy were cooled and spent in them, strait every man betook himself to do as his own profit or ambition led him. Then was justice delayed, and soon after denied; spite and favour determined all; hence faction, thence treachery, both at home and in the field; everywhere wrong and oppression; foul and horrid deeds committed daily, or maintained in secret or in open. Some who had been called from shops and warehouses, without other merit, to sit in supreme councils and committees (as their breeding was), fell to huxter the commonwealth. Others did thereafter as men could soothe and humour them best; so he, who would give most, or, under covert of hypocritical zeal, insinuate basest, enjoyed unworthily the rewards of learning and fidelity, or escaped the punishment of his crimes and misdeeds. Their votes and ordinances, which men looked should have contained the repealing of bad laws and the immediate constitution of better, resounded with nothing else but new impositions, taxes, excises, yearly, monthly, weekly; not to reckon the offices, gifts, and preferments bestowed and shared among themselves." [2]

The House of Commons was, however, imbued with the same ambition to exercise the functions of an

[2] Milton's Prose Works, i. 130.

CHAP IX
A.D. 1640-45

ecclesiastical synod as that which had characterized its predecessor twelve years before. On the day when Parliament was opened, it issued an order to the Dean of Westminster, Bishop Williams, to place a table in the middle of the Abbey at which the members of the House might receive the Holy Communion on the following Sunday, instead of going up to the altar in the choir. Having thus shown the direction in which its prejudices leaned, the House then appointed a committee for hearing grievances about religion, and this "Committee for Religion," with Pym for its chairman, originated all the ecclesiastical acts for which the Long Parliament became so notorious.

The Commons' Committee for Religion appointed

The enormous advantage which the anti-Episcopal party derived from the presence of a large Presbyterian army in the north of England, gave them a sense of power which emboldened them to strike at the institutions of the Church and at its defenders with a wonderful promptness, decision, and confidence. Lord Strafford, who had been called over from his post as Viceroy of Ireland to command the forces opposed to the Scottish army, was looked upon as the strongest and most dangerous lay enemy of Presbyterianism, and Archbishop Laud as its greatest ecclesiastical foe, the latter having indeed written to his suffragans that the war was one in which Episcopacy was at stake. Both were got out of the way by impeachment, which made them State prisoners within six weeks of the meeting of Parliament. Strafford hastened down from the north to face his accusers, arriving in London on a Monday, and as soon as he appeared in the House of Lords on the Wednesday, November 25, 1640, following his return, he was impeached by the House of Commons and sent a prisoner to the Tower.

The attack on Strafford and Laud

CHAP IX

A.D. 1640-45

Three weeks afterwards, on December 18, 1640, Laud also was impeached before the bar of the House of Lords by Denzil Holles, the brother-in-law of Strafford, and the bitter foe of both the Earl and the Archbishop. The particular articles of impeachment against Laud not being produced on that day, he was committed to the custody of the Black Rod, but after they had been presented, he was sent to the Tower, where he remained without any pretence of trial from March 1, 1641, until March 13, 1644, his hands being so effectually tied that his enemies could afford for a time to let him alone. Lord Strafford was brought to trial before the House of Lords in Westminster Hall on March 21, 1641; but after sixteen days of virulent accusation by the Commons' Committee of Management, it was found impossible to bring home to him in a legal manner any of the charges of high treason which were levelled against him. A Bill of Attainder was then brought into the House of Commons, and Strafford appeared on his defence for the last time in Westminster Hall, but he knew that it was in vain: "Stone dead hath no fellow," was the cry of his enemies; and his last words to the peers were, "Now, my Lords, for myself, I have been, by the blessing of Almighty God, taught that the afflictions of this present life are not worthy to be compared to the glory which shall be revealed hereafter. And so, my Lords, even so, with all tranquillity of mind, I freely submit myself to your judgment, and whether that judgment be for life or death, Te Deum laudamus. In Te, Domine, confido, non confundar in æternum." Before the day of his execution came, his brother-in-law, Denzil Holles, was sent to promise him a pardon if he would advise the King to give up Episcopacy. But Strafford replied

Strafford's trial, attainder, and death

that "he would not buy his life at so dear a rate;" and on May 12, 1641, two days after the royal assent to the Act of Attainder had been extorted from the King, he was beheaded on Tower Hill at the age of forty-eight. It was an honourable distinction for the great pacificator of Ireland that the Bill of Attainder which deprived him of his life was accompanied by a Bill for the abolition of Episcopacy.

The aged Archbishop of Canterbury lingered on for more than four years in the Tower. On April 25, 1643, Hugh Peters and others suggested to the House of Commons that he should be transported to Virginia, despairing, perhaps, of getting him hanged; but hanging was the sentence at last passed upon him. He was brought to trial before the House of Lords—though it was only represented at any time by a few strong partisans—on March 13, 1644, the trial continuing until July 29th of the same year. But after all that the well-drilled[3] witnesses of the malignant Prynne could say, it was felt that neither the House of Lords nor a Middlesex jury would dream of finding the Archbishop guilty of the high treason alleged against him. As in the case of Strafford, therefore, the House of Commons dropped the trial, and proceeded to accomplish their end by the tyrannical process of a Bill of Attainder. The Bill was introduced into the House of Commons on November 13, 1644, and passed on the third day afterwards; but it was not until the 4th of January that even six peers[4] could be got to

Laud's trial

[3] Prynne kept what the Archbishop called "a school of instruction" for such witnesses as he could trust, that they might be trained in what they were to say; and that they had been so tampered with was evident to some even of those who had no liking for Laud. [Laud's *Troubles and Trial*, 219.]

[4] They were Henry, Earl of Kent; William, Earl of Salisbury; Oliver, Earl of Bolingbroke; Dudley; Lord North; and William, Lord Grey of Warke.

CHAP IX
A. D. 1640-45

pass it through the House of Lords. The Bill did not receive the assent of the Crown, and was not, therefore, in a constitutional sense an Act of Parliament, but such it was accounted; and thus the venerable ecclesiastic, against whom no conviction could be obtained by evidence, was condemned by the "omnipotence" of Parliament, without evidence, to be hanged, drawn, and quartered. After several petitions, which were violently opposed in the House of Commons, this sentence was commuted by the two Houses into one of simple decapitation, and Laud was beheaded—being nearly seventy-two years of age—on Tower Hill, on January 10, 1645. He was the second Archbishop of Canterbury who suffered death in defence of the Reformation of the Church of England; Cranmer being persecuted to death in 1556 by those who wished to undo the Reformation on behalf of Popery; Laud being persecuted to death in 1645 by those who wished to undo it on the side of Puritanism.

Laud's attainder and death

It is remarkable that as the Bill of Attainder which was brought into the House of Commons against Lord Strafford was associated with a Bill for the abolition of bishops, so that which was passed against Archbishop Laud was associated with an "Ordinance" for the abolition of the Prayer Book.[5]

Putting down Ritualism.

But while the Archbishop had been spending his last years in the Tower of London, the anti-Reformation party had been taking vigorous strides towards that which they regarded as a new Reformation, the suppression of Episcopacy, sacerdotalism, and the Book

[5] Rushworth's *Coll.*, iii. 839.

CHAP IX
A.D. 1640

of Common Prayer, and the substitution of the Presbyterian discipline and Calvinism. The first stage on this onward march was the extirpation of that "ritualism" which had been, as has already been shown, a marked feature of the Laudian movement.[6]

The revived ritual assailed

The agitation against "Innovations and Ceremonies" was carried on with much greater boldness on the opening of the Long Parliament than it had been during the years in which no Parliaments were summoned. Petitions against them were got up in great numbers, under the management of Dr. Cornelius Burgess and some others of the Low Church clergy of London, and these were presented to the House of Commons with ostentatious publicity, being sometimes carried up to Westminster from the country by troops of horsemen.[7] A week after the opening of Parliament, on November 10th, an attack was made upon Cosin—subsequently Bishop of Durham, and the principal reviser of the Prayer Book in 1661, but at this time Dean of Peterborough—on account of superstitions and innovations which he was accused of having introduced into Durham Cathedral while he had been prebendary there. These accusations were set forth in a petition presented by Peter Smart, one of his brother prebendaries, and Cosin was committed to the custody of the Serjeant-at-Arms, and after being kept prisoner for two months, was, on January 22, 1641, deprived of all his ecclesiastical preferments by

The attack on Cosin

[6] The successive steps are clearly indicated by the Speaker's address to Charles II. from the bar of the House of Lords on May 19, 1662. "In order to this work," he said, "Church ornaments were first taken away; then the means whereby distinction or inequality might be upheld amongst ecclesiastical governors; then the forms of common prayer, which as members of the public body of Christ's Church were enjoined us, were decried as superstitious, and in lieu thereof nothing, or worse than nothing, introduced." [*Journ. House of Lords*, xi. 471.]

[7] Whitelock's *Memorials*, 36.

CHAP IX
A.D. 1640

a vote of the House, being the first clergyman who was so dealt with.[8]

Immediately after the impeachment of Archbishop Laud the agitation was taken up by Puritan mobs, who began to wreck the interiors of those churches in which the High Church or Laudian movement had obtained a footing, and to interrupt the services. In some churches they pulled down the altar rails, as was the case in St. Saviour's, Southwark, tore the surplices to pieces, misused the fonts, and broke the stained glass windows. Even when the House of Commons was present at St. Margaret's Church, as soon as the Communion Service began some people at the lower end of the church struck up a psalm, and were followed by so many more that the service could not be proceeded with. This went so far, that on January 16, 1641, the House of Lords passed the following order, with directions that it should be read in all the London churches: "That Divine Service shall be performed as it is appointed by the Acts of Parliament of this realm; and that all such as disturb that wholesome order shall be severely punished according to law:" to which was added, "That the parsons, vicars, and curates of the several parishes shall forbear to introduce any rites or ceremonies that may give offence, otherwise than those established by the laws of the land."[9] But when the Lords desired the concurrence

Mob law and the revived ritual

The Lords intervene on behalf of order

[8] Fuller's *Ch. Hist.*, iii. 412; Walker's *Suff. of Clergy*, ii. 58. The charges brought against Cosin are given in the notes to his life in the *Biographia Britannica*, which are reprinted as an introduction to his collected works, 1843. Smart had grievances of his own, having been deprived of his preferments by the High Commission Court of York; but he was called a "proto-martyr and confessor" by the Puritans, and received from them something more substantial than a name in the shape of a subscription amounting to £400 a year.

[9] Collier's *Eccl. Hist.*, viii. 219; Neal's *Hist. Purit.*, ii. 390. The order was reissued before the adjournment of Parliament on September 9th.

of the Commons, instead of joining in it, the Lower House made an order on January 23d "to deface, demolish, and quite take away all images, altars, or tables turned altar-wise, crucifixes, superstitious pictures, monuments, and relics of idolatry out of all churches and chapels," an order which was so expanded by those to whom its execution was intrusted, that on the strength of it they took down St. Paul's Cross, the cross in Cheapside, that at Charing Cross, and others elsewhere.[1] Later on in the year, on June 28th, the same House forbade "bowing and cringing to the Communion Table, or offering at it;" and soon afterwards the use of the surplice by graduates and scholars in the chapels of the Universities and public schools was abolished by a similar order.

CHAP IX A.D. 1641

The Commons side with the mob

Meanwhile, however, the House of Lords, on March 1, 1641, appointed a "Committee of Accommodation," that is, a committee for the purpose of adjusting the differences between the two parties,—the Puritans and those whom they were opposing. This consisted of ten bishops and twenty lay peers, Williams, Bishop of Lincoln, and a great opponent of Laud for many years, being their chairman; but at their first meeting they appointed a sub-committee of four bishops under the same chairmanship, with authority to call in other divines as assessors for the purpose of preparing matters for the consideration of the committee itself. This purpose is explained in the letter of March 12th, which Bishop Williams, who was also Dean of Westminster, addressed to those whom he desired to meet at the Deanery:—

Conciliation attempted by the Lords

"I am commanded by the Lords of the Committee for Innovations in matters of Religion to let you know that their

[1] Whitelock's *Memorials*, 41.

CHAP IX A.D. 1641

said Lordships have assigned and appointed you to attend them as assistants in that Committee; and to let you know in general that their Lordships intend to examine all innovations in doctrine and discipline introduced into the Church without law since the Reformation; and, if their Lordships shall find it behoveful for the good of the Church and State, to examine after that the degrees and perfection of the Reformation itself, which I am directed to intimate to you, that you may prepare your thoughts, studies, and meditations accordingly, expecting their Lordships' pleasure for the particular points."

A sub-committee of enquiry appointed

The following are the names of those who responded to this summons, and who eventually formed the sub-committee :—

Williams, Bishop of Lincoln.
Ussher, Archbishop of Armagh.
Morton, Bishop of Durham.[2]
Hall, Bishop of Exeter.
Prideaux, afterwards Bishop of Worcester.
Sanderson, afterwards Bishop of Lincoln.
Hackett, afterwards Bishop of Lichfield.
Brownrigg, afterwards Bishop of Exeter.
Ward, Marg. Prof. Div., Cambridge.
Featly, Provost of Chelsea College.
Holdsworth, afterwards Marg. Prof. Div., Cambridge.
White, Chaplain of the Savoy.
Twisse, Vicar of Newbury.
Burgess,[3] Rector of Sutton Coldfield.
Marshall,[4] Vicar of Finchfield.
Calamy, Lecturer of St. Mary, Aldermanbury.
Mr. Thomas Hill.

The result of their consultations was collected for the Lords' Committee under three heads: "I. Innovations

[2] Cosin, afterwards also Bishop of Durham, and one of the principal revisers of the Prayer Book at the Restoration, was Bishop Morton's chaplain.

[3] When Dr. Hackett was heard at the bar of the House of Commons in defence of cathedrals and their establishments, Dr. Cornelius Burgess was afterwards heard as the advocate of their abolition.

[4] Stephen Marshall, Edmund Calamy, Thomas Young, Matthew Newcomen, and William Spurstow were the authors of the work entitled from their initials "Smectymnuus," which was a reply to a work of Bishop Hall's in defence of Episcopacy and the Prayer Book.

in Doctrine;" "II. Innovations in Discipline;" and "III. Considerations upon the Book of Common Prayer;" but these read more like suggestions for changes made by the Puritan section of the sub-committee than conclusions arrived at by the majority.

CHAP IX
A.D. 1641

Among the "Innovations in Doctrine" were alleged the preaching of justification by works; that works of penance are satisfactory before God; that private confession is necessary to salvation; that the absolution given by the priest is more than declaratory; that the Lord's Supper is a true and proper sacrifice; and that prayers for the dead are lawful.

Doctrinal innovations alleged

Among the "Innovations in Discipline" are enumerated the turning the Holy Table into an Altar, and "bowing towards it or to the east many times, with three congees, at access or recess in the church;" placing candlesticks on altars in parochial churches in the daytime; making canopies with curtains over the altars; "advancing crucifixes and images upon the parafront or altar-cloth;" compelling communicants to receive at the altar rails; reading the Litany in the body of the church; turning towards the east in saying the Creed or the prayers; offering bread and wine by the hands of the churchwardens or others before the consecration of the elements, and having a credence table; omitting direct prayers before the sermon, and using the Bidding of Prayers instead; singing the Te Deum in prose; standing up at the hymns of the church; prohibiting galleries in churches; introducing Latin services at Oxford and Cambridge; "pretending for their innovations the Injunctions and Advertisements of Queen Elizabeth, which are not in force, but appertain to the Liturgy printed in the 2d and 3d of Edward VI., which the Parliament hath reformed and laid aside."

Ritual innovations alleged

CHAP IX
A.D. 1641

Among the suggestions for altering the Book of Common Prayer are these: That the names of some of the saints should be struck out of the calendar; that the rubric should be amended where all those vestments are commanded which were used in the second year of Edward VI.; that Apocryphal lessons should be omitted; that explanatory rubrics should be inserted respecting kneeling at the Communion and the sign of the cross used at Baptism, or else that the latter should be omitted; that in the Absolution of the Sick the words "I pronounce thee absolved" should be substituted for those in use; and that in the Burial Service the words "knowing assuredly that the dead shall rise again" should be substituted for "in sure and certain hope of the resurrection to eternal life."[5]

Alterations suggested in the Prayer Book

All these proposals were submitted to the Committee of Accommodation, but they were as a body opposed by the bishops and the non-Puritan peers, and, in view of the political turmoil that was approaching, the Committee broke up about the middle of May without having arrived at any practical result. It had begun with an honest desire to bring about some *modus vivendi* between the Low Church and the High Church parties; but as it went on with its proceedings, the Puritans were found to be irreconcilable except on the principle that all concessions should be made by their opponents and none by themselves. If the Low Church school ever found any virtue in "the great law of give and take," the discovery must have been made in a later generation.

Failure of this attempt at conciliation

Not long afterwards the Puritan party obtained so much influence over the House of Commons, that a

[5] Fuller's *Ch. Hist.*, iii. 415; Neal's *Hist. Purit.*, ii. 459-464; Collier's *Ch. Hist.*, viii. 197.

most comprehensive and effective measure for the suppression of High Church "innovations" was taken. On September 8, 1641, a resolution of the House was adopted in the following terms :—

"Whereas divers innovations in or about the worship of God have been lately practised in this kingdom, by enjoining some things and prohibiting others, without warrant of law, to the great grievance and discontent of his Majesty's subjects; for the suppression of such innovations, and for preservation of public peace, it is this day ordered, by the Commons in Parliament assembled, that the churchwardens in every parish church and chapel respectively do forthwith remove the communion table from the east end of the church, chapel, or chancel, into some other convenient place; and that they take away the rails and level the chancels as heretofore they were before the late innovations.

Suppression of innovations by order of the House of Commons

"That all crucifixes, scandalous pictures of any one or more persons of the Trinity, and all images of the Virgin Mary, shall be taken away and abolished; and that all tapers, candlesticks, and basons be removed from the communion table.

"That all corporal bowing at the name of Jesus, or towards the east end of the church, chapel, or chancel, or towards the communion table, be henceforth forborne.

"That the orders aforesaid be observed in all the several cathedral churches of this kingdom, and all the collegiate churches or chapels in the two Universities, or any other part of the kingdom; and in the Temple church, and the chapels of the other Inns of Court, by the deans of the said cathedral churches, by the vice-chancellor of the said Universities, and by the heads and governors of the several colleges and halls aforesaid, and by the benchers and readers in the said Inns of Court respectively.

"That the Lord's Day shall be duly observed and sanctified: all dancing or other sports, either before or after Divine Service, be forborne and restrained; and that the preaching of God's Word be permitted in the afternoon in the several

CHAP IX
A.D. 1641

churches and chapels of this kingdom, and that ministers and preachers be encouraged thereunto.

"That the vice-chancellors of the Universities, heads and governors of colleges, all parsons, vicars, churchwardens, do make certificates of the performance of these orders; and if the same shall not be observed in any of the places afore mentioned, upon complaint thereof made to the two next justices of peace, mayor, or head officers of cities or towns corporate, it is ordered that the said justices, mayor, or other head officer respectively shall examine the truth of all such complaints, and certify by whose default the same are committed: all which certificates are to be delivered in Parliament before the 30th of October next, 1641."[6]

The strife and ruin of churches that followed

These orders of the House of Commons were sent to be read in all parish churches throughout the kingdom, although they were not even assented to by the House of Lords. In some places, even in London, bodies of parishioners offered effective resistance to the attempts which were made to put them in execution;[7] but as a rule the Puritan party were now too strong to be resisted. "They caused the windows to be broken down in churches," says Lord Clarendon; "broke down the rails and removed the communion tables (which in many places had stood in that manner ever since the Reformation), and committed many insolent and scandalous disorders." Heylin also says that "hereupon followed such an alteration in all churches and chapels that the churchwardens pulled down more in a week than all the bishops and clergy

[6] Collier's *Ch. Hist.*, iii. 220.

[7] Pym reports to the House of Commons, while trying to minimize the signs of discontent, "In some parishes they came to blows, and in others they would have done the like if care had not been taken to prevent it. At St. Giles, Cripplegate, the parishioners were almost at daggers-drawing about the rails of the communion table, which they would not suffer to be removed. The like opposition was made to the orders of the House at St. George, Southwark, St. Mary, Woolnoth, St. Botolph, Aldersgate and a few other places." [Neal's *Hist. Purit.*, ii. 491.]

had been able to raise in two weeks of years." But the work of destruction was not accomplished so thoroughly as was desired by the anti-Church party, and to carry out their purpose with more show of authority, a Bill was passed in both Houses "for the Suppression of divers Innovations in Churches," though it never received the royal assent. In this Bill, which, after a vain endeavour to obtain the King's consent to it, was published as an Ordinance of Parliament on August 18, 1643, "for the purpose of removing all monuments of superstition and idolatry,"[8] it was ordered as follows: That all altars and tables of stone should be demolished; that communion tables should be removed from the east wall; that the chancel floor of every church and chapel which had been raised for any altar or communion table should be levelled; that tapers and candlesticks should be removed from the communion tables; that no cross, crucifix, or representation of any saint or angel was to remain upon any place or on any furniture belonging to the worship of God; that no copes, surplices, superstitious vestments, roods, or holy-water fonts—by which baptismal fonts were meant—should be used; that all organs were to be taken away, and, with the superstitious vestments before mentioned, utterly defaced.[9]

The ruin carried further by Ordinance of Parliament

A graphic illustration of the manner in which this "Ordinance" was carried out is preserved in Bishop Hall's "Hard Measure," the account of what he and his family suffered at the hands of the Puritans. "It is no less than tragical," he writes, "to relate the carnage of that furious sacrilege whereof our eyes and

[8] The Puritans called the House of Commons "The House of Gods," but Maypoles were destroyed as monuments of idolatry, heathen "vanities," or idols.

[9] Scobell's *Collect.*, 69.

CHAP IX A.D. 1641

ears were the sad witnesses under the authority and presence of Linsey, Toftes, the sheriff, and Greenwood. Lord, what work was here! what tearing up of monuments! what pulling down of seats! what wresting out of iron and brass from the windows and graves! what defacing of arms! what demolishing of curious stone-work that had not any representation in the world, but only the cost of the founder and skill of the mason! what tooting and piping upon the destroyed organ-pipes! and what a hideous triumph on the market-day before all the country, when, in a kind of sacrilegious and profane procession, all the organ-pipes, vestments, both copes and surplices, together with the leaden cross, which had been newly sawn down from over the Green-yard pulpit, and the service books and singing books that could be had, were carried to the fire in the public market-place; a lewd wretch walking before the train in his cope, trailing in the dirt, with a service book in his hand, imitating in an impious scorn the tune and usurping the words of the Litany used formerly in the Church!"

Bishop Hall's description of the profane doings at Norwich

It was at this time that much of the beautiful stained glass which remained in the cathedrals and parish churches, and which had survived the storms of the earlier Puritan wreckers, was destroyed for ever. Now also disappeared a vast quantity of sculpture, figures of the saints and angels condemned by the House of Commons,[1] and monumental effigies in ala-

The destruction then wrought

[1] Anthony Wood tells a story of a Puritan iconoclast named Richard Culmer, "who, in defacing the windows of Christ Church in Canterbury, in which, among other things, was represented the history of our Saviour's Temptation, broke down Christ and left the devil standing; for which he afterwards gave this reason—that he had an order to take down Christ, and had no order to take down the devil." [Wood's *Athen.*, i. 863.] A similar story is told of Ireton, that, "in his zeal against the images in a church whose windows were very beautiful, he made all the twelve Apostles and many other saints

baster, of which a few have survived to show us what a noble school of English sculpture once existed. Now, too, were stolen most of the altar vessels, of the beautiful and valuable altar frontals, of the chasubles and copes, which had been left in cathedrals and parish churches by the visitations of Edward VI. and Queen Elizabeth. Soon the churches in many places looked utterly desolate, and all the goodly beauty of Divine Service had vanished. "I find," writes Bishop Goodman to Oliver Cromwell, on June 4, 1653, "that the fonts where we are baptised and make profession of the Trinity and the Incarnation are generally pulled down. I find that the solemnity and joy at Christ's Nativity was forbidden; that fasting in Lent and sorrow at Christ's Passion were by public order neglected; I found that all the memorials of Christ's Passion, the harmless crosses, were demolished; I found that no honour was given to the name of Jesus, no settled form of prayer, but every one left to his own invocations; nor was there any time appointed for prayers, but only a little preparation for preaching; I found that in very many parishes the church doors were locked up, and there was not so much as any public meeting, the churches generally decaying, and never repaired, that many men would not have their children baptised, and that many were dipped, it should seem, into some other church; for if they were Christians it is impossible they should deny the virtue and efficacy of their first baptism, no more than they can deny the original sin derived unto them from their first parents."[2] Ritual-

Bishop Goodman's description of the irreligion that arose

suffer a second martyrdom, only the picture of the old dragon vomiting flames out of his mouth was spared, and for old acquaintance left entire, which occasioned the inhabitants to whisper among themselves, that it was plain enough who was Ireton's saint." [Walker's *Suff.*, 25.]

[2] Goodman's dedication to Cromwell of his work on the Trinity and the Incarnation.

CHAP IX A.D. 1640

ism had been effectually put down, and a good many other things had been put down as well, when its opponents had thus, in no small degree, through the opening made for them by Archbishop Abbott and his school, found their opportunity.

Putting down Bishops.

A vigorous attempt had been made by the Convocations to stem this torrent of Puritanism, while the Scottish Presbyterian army was in possession of the northern counties; but the breach had become too wide, and those who led the gallant band of defenders were themselves overwhelmed by the flood.

There had been no Parliament for eleven years, and so, of course, there had been no Convocation; but, equally of course, the two Convocations were summoned at the same time with the "Short" Parliament, and met on April 14, 1640. A Royal Commission was then issued, authorizing the Convocations to make "certain Canons for the establishment of true religion and profit of the State of the Church." While they were engaged in making such canons, on May 5, 1640, the Parliament was dissolved. The usual but not invariable custom was then, as it is in modern times, to dissolve the Convocations by writs specially addressed to each at the same time that Parliament is dissolved, but the writ which dissolves Parliament does not of itself dissolve the Convocations. In this case it was determined—the opinion of the judges being first taken—to delay the issue of the Convocation writs until the canons were completed and subsidies had been voted to the Crown, and thus the two Convocations continued sitting until May 29, 1640,

Convocation authorized to make some new Canons

more than three weeks longer than the Houses of Lords and Commons. Their work had now been completed, seventeen "Constitutions and Canons Ecclesiastical" having been passed; and these canons were promulgated by the Crown, "according to the form of a certain Statute or Act of Parliament made in that behalf in the five-and-twentieth year of the reign of King Henry VIII.," on June 30, 1640.

These Canons promulgated by the Crown

In the Letters Patent by which these "Canons of 1640" were promulgated, and which were in strict accordance with the precedent of 1603, one reason for their promulgation is stated to be that the proper rites and ceremonies of the Reformed Church of England may be re-established. The words are as follows:—

"Forasmuch as we are given to understand that many of our subjects, being misled against the rites and ceremonies now used in the Church of England, have lately taken offence at the same, upon an unjust supposal that they are not only contrary to our laws, but also introductive to Popish superstitions; whereas it well appeareth unto us, upon mature consideration, that the said rites and ceremonies which are now so much quarrelled at were not only approved of and used by those learned and godly divines, to whom at the time of reformation, under King Edward the Sixth, the compiling of the Book of Common Prayer was committed, divers of which suffered martyrdom in Queen Mary's days, but also again taken up by this whole Church under Queen Elizabeth, and so duly and ordinarily practised for a great part of her reign, within the memory of divers yet living, as that it could not then be imagined that there would need any rule or law for the observation of the same, or that they could be thought to savour of Popery.

The rites and ceremonies of the Reformation Settlement

"And albeit since those times, for want of an express rule therein, and by subtle practices, the said rites and ceremonies began to fall into disuse, and in place thereof other foreign and unfitting usages by little and little to creep in;

CHAP IX
A.D. 1640

yet forasmuch as in our own royal chapels, and in many other churches, most of them have been ever constantly used and observed, we . . . therefore, out of our princely inclination to uniformity and peace in matters especially that concern the holy worship of God, proposing to ourselves herein the pious examples of King Edward VI. and of Queen Elizabeth, who sent forth Injunctions and Orders about the Divine Service and other ecclesiastical matters, and of our dear father of blessed memory, King James, who published a Book of Constitutions and Canons Ecclesiastical," etc., etc., etc. —the ratification following in the usual form.[3]

Reasons for hostility to these Canons

But the exercise of the Royal Prerogative in continuing the sitting of the Convocations after the dissolution of Parliament aroused a most bitter feeling in the minds of the Puritans, and this feeling was intensified by the canons themselves, which set forth in very plain and strong language the claims of the Crown and the Church to obedience. Archbishop Laud was made the object of virulent abuse then, and until his execution five years afterwards, as the supposed chief author of them, and a general attack was also begun upon the whole bench of bishops, which ended in their expulsion from the House of Lords, in the abolition of their jurisdiction, and in the confiscation of their estates.

[3] These seventeen canons were set forth strictly in accordance with the Reformation Settlement [see page 369], and have the same constitutional authority as those of 1603; but they have been looked upon with disfavour, and practically disregarded, on the ground that they were passed by the Convocations and assented to by the Crown when there was no Parliament in existence. The House of Commons passed a resolution, which was afterwards adopted by the House of Lords, "That the clergy of England, convened in any Convocation of Synod or otherwise, have no power to make any Constitutions, Canons, or Acts whatsoever, in matter of doctrine, discipline, or otherwise to bind the clergy or laity of the land, without common consent of Parliament." But this statement is directly at variance with the terms of the constitutional settlement arrived at in the time of Henry VIII., and the resolution has never been confirmed by Act of Parliament.

The canons may be found at length in Cardwell's *Synodalia*, pp. 380-415.

CHAP IX
A.D. 1640

Organized acts of violence began immediately after the dissolution of Parliament. On May 10th Lambeth Palace was attacked by a large number of the young working men or "apprentices" of London, who had been called together for the purpose by an inflammatory summons posted on the Royal Exchange, and who would have sacked the palace and murdered the Archbishop had they not been forestalled by the arrival of troops. A few days later a similar mob threatened to pull down the Convocation House at Westminster. On October 22d a large mob of Brownists broke into St. Paul's while the High Commission Court was sitting, and their shout of "No Bishops" may be regarded as the first trumpet-call of that virulent army of agitators who soon succeeded in pressing on the Legislature to the abolition of Episcopacy. So wild and so general did the agitation become, that the famous distich may be read more as history than mere satire—

Fury of the London mobs against the Bishops

> "The oyster women locked their fish up,
> And trudged away to cry, No Bishop."

As soon as the Long Parliament met speeches against the bishops began to abound in the House of Commons, and indeed scarcely a speech was heard in which they and the Church were not abused. Resolutions were passed which declared that the canons recently made by them and by the Lower House of Convocation were illegal, and a committee was appointed to consider the conduct of Archbishop Laud. The committee reported to the House on December 18, 1640, when many bitter speeches were made against him, among others one by Sir Harbottle Grimstone, in which he said that "this great man, the Archbishop of Canterbury, was

Resolutions of the House of Commons against the Bishops

CHAP IX
A.D. 1641

the very sty of all the pestilential filth that had infested the Government, the only man that had advanced those who, together with himself, had been the authors of all the miseries the nation now groaned under. . . . There is scarce any grievance or complaint comes before the House wherein he is not mentioned, like an angry wasp leaving his sting in the tail of everything." Thus inflamed, the House of Commons voted that the Archbishop had been guilty of high treason. Holles then went up to the Bar of the House of Lords, and as Laud sat on the right hand of the Lord Chancellor, he was impeached and committed to the custody of the Usher of the Black Rod until the charges against him could be formulated. He returned to his place once, on February 26, 1641, to hear those charges read against him, and three days afterwards was sent to the Tower.

Impeachment of Archbishop Laud

Petitions against the bishops were now poured in under the management of Dr. Burgess and those who were organizing the agitation. Many pamphlets were also written against them, and among others one by Lord Brooke, in which he attacked them as men of low origin, a charge which acted wonderfully to their disfavour with the Radical mob in and out of the House, although in fact some of the bishops, as Williams, Morton, Curle, Cook, and Owen, belonged to families of ancient descent, and were themselves county gentlemen of good property independently of their episcopal rank. Taking the lead among the petitions was one presented, on December 11, 1640, in the name of the City of London, but under the influence of the commissioners from the Scottish army, which prayed that "the Government of Archbishops and Lord Bishops, Deans and Archdeacons, &c. . . .

The Root and Branch petition from the City

with all its dependencies, roots, and branches, may be abolished, and all laws in their behalf made void, and that the Government according to God's Word may be rightly placed among us." This was the notorious "Root and Branch" Petition, and the name thus given to it became a watchword among those who were endeavouring to supplant Episcopacy by Presbyterianism, "the Government according to God's Word." It was superseded for the moment by "the Ministers' Petition," which prayed for a modification of Episcopacy instead of the entire abolition of it, and hence a Bill for its abolition was for the time thrown out.

The Ministers' Petition

On March 9, 1641, the House of Commons made an important step in the direction of abolition by passing a resolution "that the legislative and judicial power of bishops in the House of Peers is a great hindrance to the discharge of their spiritual function, prejudicial to the Commonwealth, and fit to be taken away by Bill; and that a Bill be drawn up to this purpose." The Bill was brought in the very next day, and was easily passed in the Lower House, but it was thrown out in the House of Lords.[4] Being thus defeated, the Commons, on August 4, 1641, impeached at the Bar of the House of Lords thirteen of the bishops who were considered to have been the chief movers with the Archbishop of Canterbury in passing the obnoxious canons through Convocation.[5] It was alleged that they had incurred the dreaded penalty of Præmunire, and it was hoped that a compromise might be effected, in which the impeached bishops would barter their places in the House of Lords for a release from that

Impeachment of thirteen bishops

[4] Collier's *Ch. Hist.*, viii. 197, 210; Neal's *Hist. Purit.*, ii. 417, 430, 444-451.

[5] Rushworth's *Coll.*, iii. 359.

CHAP IX A.D. 1641

penalty. They desired time to answer the charges brought against them, and were allowed three months in which to prepare their reply, with counsel to appear for them. When that answer was put in, however, a dispute arose between the two Houses of Parliament, and the bishops' impeachment fell through.

It seemed now as if the prolonged struggle was going to end in favour of the Church after all, and as "agitate, agitate, agitate," is always the policy of an anti-Church party, the agitation was fiercely renewed by a fresh organization of petitions among the middle classes, and by stirring up the passions of the lower. Rumours were circulated that a Popish massacre of the Protestant citizens of London was being arranged, and that the bishops and the Roman Catholic peers were at the bottom of the plot; and again the Aldermen and Common Councillors led the van of a host of petitions, by going to Westminster in sixty coaches, to pray "that the House of Commons would still be a means to the King and House of Peers to concur with them in redressing the grievances of Church and State; and for the better effecting hereof, that the Popish lords and bishops may be removed out of the House of Peers." A week or two later the ever troublesome "apprentices" of London carried up a petition complaining of the decay of trade occasioned by Papists and prelates, and praying that Prelacy might be rooted out, according to the prayer of the Root and Branch Petition formerly presented. Similar petitions were also got up in the country, in which the ignorant labourers, whose names were signed for them by the Nonconformist ministers, were made to declare that the bishops were a common nuisance.

Agitation and circulation of false rumours

Petitions for abolition of bishops

But mobs soon grow tired of pelting with words,

CHAP IX
A.D. 1641

and at Christmas-time the doughty apprentices were set on to pelt the bishops with stones, under the leadership of Sir William Wiseman, a knight from the county of Kent, who thus sought to distinguish himself by preventing them from landing as they went by water to the House of Lords. The mob at the same time made an attempt to sack Westminster Abbey, tempted by the great prize of the costly church plate and the regalia. When Archbishop Williams, who was Dean of Westminster, caused the doors of the Abbey to be closed, a skirmish took place between the mob and a small party hastily organized for its defence from among the Westminster boys, the choristers, and the vergers, and in this skirmish Sir William Wiseman was mortally wounded by a stone thrown from the Abbey leads.

Attack on Westminster Abbey

These riotous acts of violence occurred on December 27th, and as the bishops found it was impossible for them on the following day or the next to get to their places in the House of Lords, twelve of them drew up a protest, under the presidency of the Archbishop of York, declaring that they were not properly protected in performing their Parliamentary duties, that they were kept from resuming their seats by mob violence, and that all the proceedings of Parliament since the 27th of the month were null and void, on account of their enforced absence. This protest was read before the Lords on December 20, 1641, and was sent down by them to the Commons with a message that it was an interference with the privileges of Parliament. After half an hour's debate, the House of Commons determined to impeach the twelve bishops for "endeavouring to subvert the fundamental laws and being of Parliament," and the impeachment was

Second impeachment of the bishops

CHAP IX
A.D. 1641

at once carried up by Mr. Glynn to the bar of the House of Lords. They were brought to the House in custody of the Usher of the Black Rod, and then all of them, except the aged Bishops of Durham and Norwich, who were left in his custody, were sent to the Tower, where they remained in prison for more than four months, that is, until May 27, 1642. At that time they were all liberated on bail, but were never called to trial, it being too obvious that the accusation on which they were imprisoned was not one which could be sustained.[6]

Imprisonment of the bishops

Most of the bishops—for five sees were vacant—being thus put out of the way, a Bill for their expulsion from the House of Lords was introduced into the House of Commons the very next day, December 31, 1641. It passed the House of Lords on February 6, 1642, the London apprentices lighting bonfires and ringing church bells to celebrate the successful result of their political labours. The Queen was informed that if the King did not give his assent to it she would be detained in England, instead of being permitted to leave the country and seek safety in Holland, and thus she persuaded the King to sign the Bill on February 14, 1642. Thus, by a combination of Puritan and Roman Catholic influence, the following Act [16 Carol. c. 27] was foisted into the Statute-Book, where it remained for twenty years, and it is reprinted here as a warning precedent. It was entitled "An Act for the disenabling all persons in Holy Orders to exercise any temporal jurisdiction or authority:"—

The bishops expelled from the House of Lords

"Whereas bishops and other persons in Holy Orders ought not to be entangled with secular jurisdiction, the office

[6] Wren, Bishop of Ely, was sent back to the Tower a few months afterwards and remained there until the Restoration, without trial or accusation.

of the ministry being of such great importance that it will take up the whole man. And for that it is found by long experience that their intermeddling with secular jurisdictions hath occasioned great mischiefs and scandals both to Church and State, his Majesty, out of his religious care of the Church and souls of his people, is graciously pleased that it be enacted, and by authority of this present Parliament be it enacted, that no archbishop or bishop, or other person that now is or hereafter shall be in Holy Orders, shall at any time after the 15th day of February, in the year of our Lord 1641, have any seat or place, suffrage or vote, or use or execute any power or authority in the Parliaments of this realm, nor shall be of the Privy Council of his Majesty, his heirs or successors, or justices of the peace of Oyer and Terminer, or gaol delivery, or execute any temporal authority by virtue of any commission: but shall be wholly disabled and be uncapable to have, receive, use, or execute any of the said offices, places, powers, authorities, and things aforesaid.

The Act for their expulsion

"And be it further enacted by the authority aforesaid, that all acts from and after the said 15th of February which shall be done or executed by any archbishop or bishop, or other person whatsoever in Holy Orders, and all and every suffrage or voice given or delivered by them, or other thing done by them, or any of them, contrary to the purport and true meaning of this present Act, shall be utterly void to all intents, constructions, and purposes."

The defence of Episcopacy was greatly weakened by this enactment, which was not, like all later enactments concerning the Church, an "Ordinance" of the Houses of Lords and Commons alone, but a constitutional Act of Parliament, which had received the assent of the Crown. After a vigorous struggle, the small end of the wedge of destruction had been inserted, and it was driven home with comparative ease. The General Assembly of Scotland sent a letter to the English House of Commons on August 3, 1642, urging that there should be "one Confession of Faith, one

The advice given by the Scotch

CHAP IX
A.D. 1642

directory of worship, one public Catechism, and one form of Church government in the two kingdoms." The Assembly is encouraged to write "by the zeal of former times, when their predecessors sent a letter into England against the surplice, tippet, and corner cap, in the year 1566, and again in the years 1583 and 1589. . . . They therefore advise to begin with an uniformity of Church government; for what hope can there be of one Confession of Faith, one form of worship and Catechism, till Prelacy be plucked up, root and branch, as a plant which God hath not planted."[7] They then add words which are very significant as regards the want of faith which had been shown then, as shown in more recent times, by some bishops in respect to their own office. "The reformed kirks hold their form of government by presbyteries to be *jure Divino* and perpetual, but Prelacy is almost universally held by the prelates themselves to be a human ordinance, and may therefore be altered or abolished in cases of necessity without wronging any man's conscience. For the accomplishing of which they promise their best assistance."

Bishops accused of not believing in their own office

The reply of the English Parliament to this communication expressed the same desire for uniformity; "for the attaining whereof they intend an assembly of godly and learned divines as soon as they can obtain the royal assent." They then sound the coming downfall of Episcopacy in the following words:

[7] The Scotch preachers of the time said that the wrath of God would never leave the kingdom until all the bishops were hanged up before the Lord like the seven sons of Saul. And Leighton, the father of Archbishop Leighton, addressed a book called "*Sion's Plea*," etc., to the House of Commons, in which he exhorted them "to kill all the bishops, and smite them under the fifth rib." [Whitelock's *Mem.*, 14.] The Scottish Covenanters were cruel persecutors, and ever "swift to shed blood" in pursuit of their fanatic object.

CHAP IX
A.D. 1642

"We have entered into a serious consideration what good we have received by the government of bishops, and do perceive it has been the occasion of many intolerable burdens and grievances by their usurping a pre-eminence and power not given them by the Word of God. . . . We find it has also been pernicious to our civil government, insomuch as the bishops have ever been forward to fill the minds of our princes with notions of an arbitrary power over the lives and liberties of the subjects by their counsels and in their sermons. Upon which account and many others, we do declare, That this government by archbishops, bishops, their chancellors and commissaries, deans and chapters, archdeacons, and other ecclesiastical officers depending upon the hierarchy, is evil, and justly offensive and burdensome to the kingdom, a great impediment to reformation and growth of religion, very prejudicial to the State and government of this kingdom; and that we are resolved that it shall be taken away."[8]

The English Parliament's opinion of Episcopacy

A few days afterwards, on September 1st, a Bill was introduced into the House of Commons "for the utter abolishing and taking away of all Archbishops, Bishops, their Chancellors and Commissaries," etc. It halted in the House of Lords until January 26, 1643, and though the assent of the Crown[9] was sought with considerable energy when the King was at Oxford, it was never given. In the first clause it ordains "that after the 5th of November 1643 there shall be no arch-

Bill to abolish bishops

[8] Rushworth's *Hist. Coll.*, v. 387-390.

[9] Five years afterwards, when the King was at Carisbrook, endeavours were made to obtain his sanction to the establishment of Presbyterianism, when two of the preachers sent to him by the House of Commons told him plainly "that unless he consented to the utter abolition of Episcopacy, he would be damned." [Collier's *Ch. Hist.*, viii. 344.]

CHAP IX A.D. 1643

bishop, bishop, chancellor or commissary of any archbishop or bishop, nor any dean, sub-dean, dean and chapter, archdeacon, nor any chancellor, chaunter, treasurer, sub-treasurer, succentor, or sacrist, of any cathedral or collegiate church, nor any prebendary, canon, canon residentiary, petty canon, vicar choral, chorister, old vicars or new vicars, of or within any cathedral or collegiate churches in England or Wales."[1] It is also ordained "that their names, titles, jurisdictions, offices, and functions, and the having or using any jurisdiction or power by reason or colour of any such names and titles, shall cease, determine, and become absolutely void." Other clauses were added making provisions for the disposal of the estates, tithes, etc., belonging to the bishops and their cathedrals, vesting them for the time in the Crown, apparently in the hope that by this means the King's assent might be secured for the Bill. The revenues were, however, used by the House of Commons for carrying on the war with the King. On October 9, 1646, another Ordinance was passed "for the abolishing of archbishops and bishops, and providing for the payment of the just and necessary debts of the kingdom, into which the same hath been drawn by a war mainly promoted by and in favour of the said archbishops and bishops, and other their adherents and dependents." After September 6th the names and titles were to be "wholly abolished and taken away," together with all

Disposal of episcopal revenues

[1] In the House of Commons Journals for July 9, 1652, there is a resolution, "That it be referred to the Committee to consider what cathedrals are fit to stand and what to be pulled down, and what part thereof; and how those cathedrals, or such part thereof as shall be pulled down, shall be applied to the payment of the public faith." It was found that the expense of pulling down the noble buildings would be greater than the value of the material, and so they were allowed to stand.

authority and jurisdiction; and all the possessions of the sees were to be placed in the hands of a commission of aldermen and others named in the Act—subsequent Ordinances defining the public uses to which they were to be applied.[2]

Thus the bishops were driven out of the House of Lords, the exercise of their jurisdiction was forbidden, and their very titles were abolished. The Archbishop whom "a strong north wind from Scotland had blown over to Lambeth" had made Puritanism arrogant, and given it the power of organization by his encouragement, and when the giant became full grown, he destroyed the successor of Abbott, and overthrew every episcopal throne throughout the land.

Puritanism triumphant over the bishops

Setting up Presbyterianism.

While the abolition of Episcopacy was thus being effected, the triumphant Puritan party were also preparing for the climax of their long labours,—the establishment of Presbyterianism in its place. Immediately after the despatch of their reply to the Scottish General Assembly, the House of Commons passed a Bill for calling together an English counterpart of that body, as promised in their letter. The Bill did not at that time pass in the House of Lords, but, by an Ordinance of June 12, 1643, that Assembly was authorized, and it was soon summoned to meet at Westminster to perfect the work of reformation which the Parliament had begun, and to settle the government of the Church in nearer agreement with that of Scotland and of other reformed communions abroad.[3]

The Westminster Assembly summoned

This Assembly met in Westminster Abbey on July

[2] Rushworth's *Hist. Coll.*, vii. 373. [3] *Ibid.*, vi. 327.

CHAP IX A.D. 1643

1, 1643, sat until the autumn of 1647, and did not finally vanish (it was never formally dissolved) until the dispersion of the Long Parliament by Cromwell in the year 1652. It originally consisted of 121 clergy, most of whom were Puritans, and of 30 lay assessors. Of the few clergy belonging to the moderate section of the Church party who were summoned (including Archbishop Ussher, Bishops Brownrigg, Westfield, and Prideaux), most refused to attend because a Royal Proclamation had been issued forbidding the Assembly, and the rest fell off after the first meeting. The permanent part of it was entirely Presbyterian in colour, though a few "Independents"—half political and half religious in their independency—subsequently came to light in the body. The divines of whom the Westminster Assembly finally consisted are spoken of with great severity by Milton:—

Composition of the Westminster Assembly

"And if the State," he writes, "were in this plight, religion was not in much better, to reform which a certain number of divines were called, neither chosen by any rule or custom ecclesiastical nor eminent for their piety or knowledge above others left out; only as each Member of Parliament in his private judgment thought fit, so elected one by one. The most part of them were such as had preached and cried down with great show of zeal the avarice and pluralities of bishops and prelates, that one cure of souls was full employment for one spiritual pastor, how able soever, if not a charge above human strength. Yet these conscientious men—ere any part of the work was done for which they came together, and that on the public salary—wanted not boldness, to the ignominy and scandal of their parsonlike profession, and especially of their boasted reformation, to seize into their hands, or not unwill-

Milton's description of the Divines assembled

ingly to accept (besides one, sometimes two or more of the best livings) collegiate masterships in the universities, rich lectures in the city, setting sail to all winds that might blow gain into their own covetous bosoms."[4]

Immediately after the Westminster Assembly had been opened, an official letter on its behalf was written to the General Assembly of the Scottish Kirk, requesting their assistance to "strengthen them in standing up against Antichrist," their letter accompanying the request for armed assistance which was sent by the Parliament. The Scottish Government and divines immediately proposed that the English nation should adopt the Scottish "National Covenant." The English commissioners objected to this, and proposed a civil "League" or treaty between the two nations. In the end a nominal compromise was effected, in which the astute Scotch easily got the better of the unstatesmanlike English rulers of the day, a new Covenant being framed and approved by the General Assembly on August 17, 1643, to which the double name was given of "a Solemn League and Covenant," but which related entirely to the abolition of the English system of Church government, and the establishment of Scottish Presbyterianism in its place. This Covenant was presented to the Westminster Assembly on September 1, 1643. It consisted of a preamble, six articles, and the enacting or covenanting clause, and was adopted by the Assembly and the House of Commons—with an explanatory parenthesis added after the word

The Solemn League and Covenant

[4] Milton's *Prose Works*, i. 130. Milton's statement is confirmed by Izaac Walton, who says, in his Life of Bishop Sanderson, that "as the visitors" at Oxford "expelled the orthodox," the Presbyterian divines, "these thriving sinners," as he calls them, "without scruple or shame possessed themselves of their colleges, so that, with the rest, Dr. Sanderson was, in June 1648, forced to pack up and be gone." [Walton's *Life of Sanderson*, sign. f. 3, ed. 1678.]

CHAP IX
A.D. 1643

"prelacy"—on September 25, 1643, in St. Margaret's Church, under the shadow of Westminster Abbey. All those present lifted up their hands to signify their assent to it; and then, going up in turn to the chancel, affixed their names to the parchment on which it was written.

The Covenant engages those who take it

The force of the "Solemn League and Covenant" was contained in the first, second, and fourth articles, of which the first two have been printed on a former page, but must be brought again to view, to show their bearing on the history of the period. They are as follows:—

"I. That we shall sincerely, really, and constantly, through the grace of God, endeavour, in our several places and callings, the preservation of the reformed religion in the Church of Scotland, in doctrine, worship, discipline, and government, against our common enemies; the reformation of religion in the kingdoms of England and Ireland, in doctrine, worship, discipline, and government, according to the Word of God and the example of the best reformed churches; and shall endeavour to bring the churches of God in the three kingdoms to the nearest conjunction and uniformity in religion, confession of faith, form of Church government, directory for worship and catechizing; that we and our posterity after us may as brethren live in faith and love, and the Lord may delight to dwell in the midst of us.

to support Presbyterianism,

"II. That we shall in like manner, without respect of persons, endeavour the extirpation of Popery, Prelacy (that is, Church government by archbishops, bishops, their chancellors and commissaries, deans, deans and chapters, archdeacons, and all other ecclesiastical officers depending on that hierarchy), superstition, heresy, schism, profaneness, and whatever shall be found to be contrary to sound doctrine and the power of godliness, lest we partake in other men's sins, and thereby be in danger to receive of their plagues, and that the Lord may be one, and His name one, in the three kingdoms."

to extirpate Episcopacy

"IV. We shall also, with all faithfulness, endeavour the discovery of all such as have been or shall be incendiaries, malignants, or evil instruments, by hindering the reformation

of religion, dividing the King from his people, or one of the kingdoms from another, or making any faction or parties amongst the people, contrary to this League and Covenant; that they may be brought to public trial and receive condign punishment, as the degree of their offences shall require or deserve, or the supreme judicatories of both kingdoms respectively, or others having power from them for that effect, shall judge convenient."

CHAP IX
A.D. 1644

This new Covenant was ratified by an Act of the Scottish Parliament on July 15, 1644, and again in 1649. It was sent to the justices of the peace and other influential persons in every parish in England, and during the reign of terror which followed multitudes were forced to subscribe to it. Copies of it are still to be found here and there in the parish registers, —*e.g.*, at Houghton-le-Spring, near Durham, and at Over, near Cambridge—to which the names and marks of the parishioners are affixed, and which are a standing witness to the industrious energy of the Presbyterians when endeavouring to carry their Scottish innovations into every corner of England. In later times this energy has been applied to commercial pursuits, and not to religious proselytism.

Subscription to the Covenant enforced

The next work undertaken by the Westminster Assembly was the preparation of a "Directory for Public Worship" to supersede the Book of Common Prayer. This is a book of rubrics and canons, directing how "Public Worship" shall be carried on, and not a Book of Services, the very few forms which are given being only given as examples of the kind of prayer to be used by the minister. It was some time in passing through Parliament, being strongly opposed in the House of Lords. At length, however, on January 6, 1645, it received the sanction of both

The Directory for Public Worship

CHAP IX
A.D. 1644

Houses, and was issued under the title of "A Directory for the Public Worship of God throughout the three Kingdoms of England, Scotland, and Ireland. Together with an Ordinance of Parliament for the taking away of the Book of Common Prayer, and for establishing and observing of this present Directory throughout the Kingdom of England and Dominion of Wales."

The Prayer Book "abolished"

This Ordinance was in the following terms: "The Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, taking into serious consideration the manifold inconveniences that have arisen by the Book of Common Prayer in this kingdom, and resolving, according to their covenant, to reform religion according to the Word of God and the example of the best reformed churches, have consulted with the reverend, pious, and learned divines called together for that purpose, and do judge it necessary that the said Book of Common Prayer be abolished, and the Directory for the Public Worship of God, herein-after mentioned, be established and observed in all the churches within this kingdom."[5]

and its use made penal

But as this first Ordinance was not so generally obeyed as was expected, a second, "for the more effectual putting in execution of the Directory," was passed on August 23d of the same year, and by this second Ordinance the use of the Prayer Book by clergymen or laymen was made penal. After reciting the Ordinance of January 4th abolishing its use, this Ordinance goes on to enact that the Directory shall be delivered to the parish constable of each parish by the Members of Parliament for the county or town in which such parish is situated, to be paid for by the parishioners, and to be used by the ministers on the next Sunday. "And it is further hereby ordained

[5] Rushworth's *Hist. Coll.*, vi. 839.

CHAP IX
A.D. 1645

by the said Lords and Commons, that if any person or persons whatsoever shall at any time or times hereafter use or cause the aforesaid Book of Common Prayer to be used, in any church, chapel, or publick place of worship, or in any private place or family within the Kingdom of England, or Dominion of Wales, or port and town of Berwick, that then every person so offending therein shall for the first offence forfeit and pay the sum of five pounds of lawful English money; for the second offence the sum of ten pounds; and for the third offence shall suffer one whole year's imprisonment, without bail or mainprize." At the same time those who refused to use the Directory were to be fined forty shillings for every offence, and those who wrote or preached against it were to be similarly fined, not less than five or more than fifty pounds, while all Prayer Books were to be delivered up to the authorities, under a fine of forty shillings.[6]

The penalties for using the Prayer Book

The final establishment of the Puritan "Discipline" took place under similar Ordinances. On August 19, 1645, directions were given by "the Lords and Commons (after advice had with the Assembly of Divines) for the election and choosing of ruling elders in all the congregations, and in the classical assemblies for the cities of London and Westminster, and the several counties of the kingdom, for the speedy settling of the Presbyterial government." On November 8, 1645, an Ordinance was passed, declaring that "the word 'Presbyter'—that is to say, 'Elder'—and the word 'Bishop' do in the Scripture intend and signify one and the same function;" and that it being an usurpation

Presbyterial government organized

[6] That these fines were strictly exacted is shown by many instances of their exaction which are recorded in the State Papers, in Bishop Kennett's *Register*, and in Walker's *Sufferings of the Clergy*.

CHAP IX

A.D. 1646-60

on the part of bishops for them alone to ordain, henceforth ordination was to be given by presbyters, under certain rules respecting examination and trial which were laid down in the Ordinance; and then it was enacted that all persons who shall be ordained presbyters according to this Directory "shall be for ever reputed and taken to all intents and purposes for lawful and sufficiently authorized ministers of the Church of England." On June 5, 1646, an Ordinance was passed "for the present settling (without further delay) of the Presbyterial government in the Church of England." On August 28, 1646, there was an "Ordinance of the Lords and Commons for the Ordination of Ministers by the Classical Presbyters within their respective bounds, for the several Congregations in the Kingdom of England;" and one on January 29, 1648, "for the speedy dividing and settling of the several Counties of the Kingdom into distinct Classical Presbyteries and Congregational Elderships." On August 29, 1648, another Ordinance was passed, prescribing the "Form of Church Government" which was henceforth to be adopted. This ordered "that all parishes and places whatsoever in England and Wales (except the chapels or places in the houses of the King and his children, and of the peers of the realm) be brought under the government of congregational, classical, provincial, and national assemblies." [7]

Ordinances for establishing the Presbyterian system

The "platform" of Calvinism and Presbyterianism, for the establishment of which the Puritans had worked so energetically for a century, was thus fully established; or, to use their own language, "Christ was set up in His Kingdom in these countries." It was established on the ruins of the Church and of the

[7] Rushworth's *Hist. Coll.*, vii. 205-214.

Monarchy. The Archbishop of Canterbury had been put to death; the bishops and the great body of the clergy were driven from their duties and their benefices; the use of the Prayer Book had been made severely penal; and the King, who loved the Church of England so dearly that he was ready to suffer for it, was awaiting that last sad scene which has been not inaptly called his "martyrdom" within sight of the places where the Assembly and the Parliament were sitting by whom this ruin had been effected. It seemed for a time as if the defence of the principles of the Reformation had altogether failed, and as if the Church of England was being extinguished. For a few years Churchmen could think of it, speak of it, and write of it only with sighs and tears, for "it pitied them to see her in the dust." But many, even while they went on their way weeping, looked forward yet to a bright future, and could say in faith and hope, "Thou shalt arise and have mercy upon Sion; for it is time that Thou have mercy upon her; yea, the time is come."

CHAP IX

A.D. 1646-60

The ruin effected to set up Presbyterianism

§ 3. The Restoration of the Church under Charles II.

The Church of the Reformation lay in the dust for twenty years, its place being usurped by a Presbyterian system, which was modelled first on the system of the Scottish Kirk, and then on a modified form of Independency or Congregationalism. But when the Republican form of government collapsed after the death of Oliver Cromwell, on September 3, 1658, and the abdication of his son Richard in July 1659, and when the restoration of the Monarchy had been effected

The collapse of the "Commonwealth"

CHAP IX A.D. 1660

in May 1660, the return to the old lines of the English Constitution involved, as a matter of course, the revival of Episcopacy, which had always formed part of the Constitution from the earliest existence of the English nation.

Before Charles II. left the Castle of Breda, in Holland, where he had resided for some years, he wrote a "Declaration" in the form of a letter to the Speaker of the House of Commons, in which there was a paragraph relating to religion which promised "a liberty to tender consciences, and that no man shall be disquieted or called in question for differences of opinion in matters of religion which do not disturb the peace of the kingdom." Emboldened by this, a deputation of Presbyterian ministers—taking time by the forelock, as their predecessors had done in the case of the Millenary Petition to the King's grandfather nearly sixty years before—went to meet the King at the Hague for the purpose of drawing from him a promise that he would not disturb the Puritan system which had been established. They prayed especially that the King would not restore the use of the Prayer Book and of the surplice in the royal chapels. The King resented this interference, and declared that, as he had given them liberty of conscience, he would not give up his own. He had never discontinued the use of the Prayer Book, and he would have no other form of public devotion used in his chapel than that which it prescribed. There might be irregularities in Divine Worship which he must needs tolerate, but he would never in the least degree, by his own practice, discountenance the good old order of the Church in which he had been bred.[8]

Charles II. and the Puritan ministers

[8] Clarendon's *Hist. Rebell.*, iii. 990.

The Restoration of Episcopacy

CHAP IX
A.D. 1660

Charles II. landed in England on May 26, 1660, the Holy Communion having been celebrated on board the "Naseby," probably by Cosin, the King's domestic chaplain, at a very early hour. On the next day the Prayer Book Services were used in Canterbury Cathedral, when the King returned thanks there; and as soon as the Court had settled at Whitehall, Divine Service was restored in the Chapel Royal, the example being followed in many parish churches,[9] and in all but three of the colleges at Oxford.[1] When the restoration of the Monarchy had put an end to the ecclesiastical tyranny of the Puritan government, and brought back liberty of conscience for Churchmen, it quickly became evident that a large proportion of the English people were longing for a restoration of the Church of England. A number of Presbyterian ministers had petitioned Cromwell, on December 18, 1654, that they might have some State guarantee for the permanency of their incumbencies, because of the disfavour in which they were held by their parishioners, because "we do not officiate by the Service Book, which divers of them so much doat upon, that we fear it would offend them more to be deprived of it than if the Bible were taken from them;" and there can be no doubt that this feeling had grown stronger during the six years that had intervened, whatever attempts might be made by the Puritans near the Court to conceal it from the King.

The use of the Prayer Book revived

Popular discontent with its disuse

At length the matter came before Parliament, where a debate began on July 6, 1660, respecting the settle-

[9] Evelyn's *Diary*, ii. 152, the entry being dated July 8, 1660.

[1] State Papers, Dom., Charles II. xi. 27.

CHAP IX
A.D. 1660

ment of religion. It seemed to be the opinion of the majority that the proper course to take was to restore the "old religion" of the Elizabethan settlement, thus taking up the thread of the Laudian movement; but in the end it was agreed to petition the King that he would be pleased to call together an assembly of divines for the purpose of considering the subject.

Meanwhile, an important legislative step towards such a restoration was taken by the passing of an "Act for the confirming and restoring of Ministers." For at the time when the "Covenant" was imposed upon the clergy and laity of England by the House of Commons, the parochial clergy were rapidly and very generally driven away from their parishes. Many of them were notoriously loyal to the Crown and to Episcopacy, and had to fly for their lives, because they refused to take the Covenant, and to acknowledge the authority of the House of Commons as greater than that of the Crown and the three estates of the realm. Many were imprisoned (some with circumstances of great cruelty, as when twenty were kept under hatches in a ship on the Thames), and it is believed that not a few were "sent to the plantations" to slavery, as the early Christians were sent to the mines. There were also "committees for enquiry into the scandalous immoralities of the clergy," and as the least taint of loyalty to Church or King, the use of the Prayer Book, or the refusal of the Directory, was scandalous and immoral in the estimation of these committees, they turned out most of those clergy who were not got rid of by other means. The consequence of all these rigid measures was that nearly the whole of the Episcopal clergy were turned out of their benefices during the early years of the Great Rebellion.

The old parochial clergy

A few temporized, a few were protected by influential laymen, and a few escaped notice; but the number of those who thus retained their places was very small, and it is probable that the popular estimate which put down the number of the clergy ejected by the Parliamentary party at from 8000 to 10,000 was correct.

The non-Episcopal incumbents of benefices

As the episcopally ordained clergy were thus driven away from their churches, their parsonages, their tithes, and their glebes, the Presbyterians and Independents stepped into the vacated benefices, and were settled in them securely by the authority of an Ordinance of Parliament. Thus it came to pass that between the years 1643 and 1660 most of the parishes throughout England and Wales had for their incumbents men who had not received episcopal ordination, the number of such amounting to about 10,000 at the time of the Restoration.

This "Act for the confirming and restoring of Ministers" [12 Car. II. c. 17] was intended to *confirm* in their positions those who were occupying benefices which had, through death or otherwise of the displaced incumbents, become vacant, and to *restore* those displaced incumbents who maintained their claim to the benefices from which they had been ejected. It enacted [1] That every priest of the Church of England who had not deserted his benefice, but had been ejected from it by the authority of the House of Commons, should be restored to it on or before Christmas Day 1660, provided he had not written or preached in justification of Charles I.'s murder, or in any way declared against Infant Baptism. [2] It also enacted that every minister in possession of a benefice which had become vacant by death or resignation was to remain in possession, provided that he had been

An Act to deal fairly by both

CHAP IX
A.D. 1660

"ordained by any ecclesiastical persons before the" preceding Christmas, that he was four-and-twenty years of age, and that he had not renounced his ordination. Under this Act many of the non-episcopal ministers had to retire from the livings into which they had been intruded, that the old, persecuted, poverty-struck clergy who had been turned out of them fifteen or sixteen years before might be restored to their homes and their flocks. Some even of those who had been episcopally ordained had also to retire; and thus Richard Baxter had to make way for the return of the old and rightful Vicar of Kidderminster, whose place he had not unworthily held for half a generation. But half a generation of exile, war, persecution, poverty, and hardship had greatly diminished the number of the ejected clergy, and not a few were unwilling to displace the existing possessors where they were men whom they respected. Hence a very considerable proportion of the parishes of the land were still served by ministers who had not been episcopally ordained, until the imperative call of public opinion in the Church pressed the necessity of episcopal ordination for their ministers, thus leading to the Act of Uniformity of 1662, when numbers of them were thus ordained, though many preferred rather to give up their benefices.

The effect of the Act

Of the twenty-seven bishops who had occupied the sees of England and Wales at the time when the Rebellion abolished their jurisdiction, eighteen had died before the Restoration. The nine surviving bishops returned to their sees at once, as a matter of course, when the King returned to his throne, no legislation being required in the case of the bishops, since no persons had usurped their functions and their positions,

The revival of the Episcopate

CHAP IX

A.D. 1660

as was the case with the parochial clergy. So, too, with the Cathedral clergy, the survivors at once returning to their deaneries and canonries, and beginning to reorganize the services and other duties of their churches.

As soon, also, as the proper persons could be selected and the necessary formalities gone through, the eighteen vacant sees were filled up; Juxon and Frewen, two of the elder bishops, being translated to the archbishoprics, sixteen new bishops being consecrated in Henry VII.'s Chapel on October 28, 1660, December 2, 1660, and January 6, 1661; the new Bishops of Ely and Sodor and Man completing the number on March 22 and December 22, 1661.[2] Thus the episcopal

Consecration of new bishops

[2] The following table gives a view of the Episcopate from the date when the last bishop, Howell of Bristol, was consecrated [August 1644], during the Rebellion, until the Restoration in 1660:—

Sees.	Eighteen Bishops who died during Great Rebellion.	Nine Bishops surviving, and Eighteen Sees vacant at Restoration.	Eighteen Bishops consecrated at Restoration.
Canterbury,	William Laud, 1645.	Vacant.	—
York,	John Williams, 1650.	Vacant.	—
London,	—	William Juxon [translated to Canterbury].	Gilbert Sheldon.
Durham,	Thomas Morton, 1659.	Vacant.	John Cosin.
Winchester,	Walter Curll, 1647.	Vacant.	—
Bangor,	—	William Roberts.	—
Bath and Wells,	—	William Piers.	—
Bristol,	Thomas Howell, 1646.	Vacant.	Gilbert Ironside.
Carlisle,	James Ussher, 1656.	Vacant.	Richard Sterne.
Chester,	John Bridgman, 1652.	Vacant.	Brian Walton.
Chichester,	—	Henry King.	—
Ely,	—	Matthew Wren.	—
Exeter,	Ralph Brownrigg, 1659.	Vacant.	John Gauden.
Gloucester,	Godfrey Goodman, 1656.	Vacant.	William Nicolson.
Hereford,	George Coke, 1646.	Vacant.	Nicolas Monk.
Lichfield,	—	Accepted Frewen [translated to York].	John Hacket.
Lincoln,	Thomas Winniffe, 1654.	Vacant.	Robert Sanderson.
Llandaff,	Morgan Owen, 1645.	Vacant.	Hugh Lloyd.
Norwich,	Joseph Hall, 1656.	Vacant.	Edward Reynolds.
Oxford,	—	Robert Skinner.	—
Peterborough,	John Towers, 1649.	Vacant.	Benjamin Laney.
Rochester,	—	John Warner.	—
St. Asaph,	John Owen, 1651.	Vacant.	George Griffith.
St. David's,	Roger Mainwaring, 1653.	Vacant.	William Lucy.
Salisbury,	—	Brian Duppa [translated to Winchester].	Humfry Henchman.
Worcester,	John Prideaux, 1650.	Vacant.	George Morley.
Sodor and Man,	Richard Parr, 1643.	Vacant.	Samuel Rutter.

CHAP IX A.D. 1661

staff of the Church of England was entirely reconstituted within a few months after the return of the King, and during the time that intervened there were nine bishops already exercising their full spiritual functions. Had the Commonwealth lasted ten years longer, the whole of the old episcopate would have died out; Skinner, Bishop of Oxford, the last survivor of them all, dying on June 14, 1670.

The Bishops restored to their seats in the House of Lords

The bishops did not at once return to their constitutional position and duties in the House of Lords, for they were still lawfully excluded by the "Disenabling Act," which had passed both Houses and received the royal assent.[3] This Act was therefore repealed, as it affected other clergy as well as the bishops, by 13 Car. II. c. 2: "An Act for the repeal of an Act of Parliament, entitled An Act for disenabling all persons in Holy Orders to exercise any Temporal Jurisdiction or Authority." This Act passed through the House of Lords on June 20, 1661, and received the royal assent at the adjournment of Parliament on July 30th. When Parliament was reopened by the King in person on November 20, 1661, the bishops were all in their places, and prayers were read by the Bishop of Gloucester, the junior bishop, according to the custom of former days.[4] Thus the restoration of Episcopacy as part of the English Constitution was completed, as well as its restoration in respect to spiritual functions.

The Savoy Conference

Meanwhile the King issued a long "Declaration . . . concerning ecclesiastical affairs" on October

[3] See p. 536.

[4] Down to July 30th they had been said by Dr Hodges, afterwards Dean of Hereford. The Presbyterian minister had been "excused from attendance" on the House of Commons on October 7, 1660.

25, 1660, which he commenced by saying, "How much the peace of the State is concerned in the peace of the Church, and how difficult a thing it is to preserve order and government in civil, whilst there is no order or government in ecclesiastical affairs, is evident to the world; and this little part of the world, our dominions, hath had so late experience of it, that we may very well acquiesce in the conclusion without enlarging ourself in discourse upon it, it being a subject we have had frequent occasion to contemplate upon and to lament, abroad as well as at home." Referring to the Breda letter which he had written to the Speaker, in which he had promised toleration to all opinions, the King goes on to speak of the high estimation in which he had found the Church of England to be held by the Protestant communities abroad, and to the persuasion among learned men that it is "the best fence God hath yet raised in the world against Popery," so that, he adds, "We are persuaded they do with great zeal wish it restored to its old dignity and veneration." The King refers to the deputation of Presbyterians which had been sent to him while at the Hague, "many grave and learned ministers from hence, who were looked upon as the most able and principal asserters of the Presbyterian opinions." Since that time, however, the King complains, seditious pamphlets had been "scattered abroad to infuse dislike and jealousies into the hearts of the people and of the army; and some who ought rather to have repented the former mischief they have wrought than to have endeavoured to improve it, have had the hardiness to publish that the doctrine of the Church, against which no man with whom we have conferred hath excepted, ought to be reformed as

The King's Declaration respecting ecclesiastical affairs

CHAP IX
A.D. 1661

well as the discipline." He complains also of the intolerant spirit which is being shown towards himself by the Presbyterians in wishing to deprive him of the services in the Chapel Royal, and in much misrepresenting his words, acts, and motives. The King expresses himself willing that concessions should be made to the prejudices of the Puritans, on condition that the liberty of others who have no such prejudices is not interfered with, and after sketching out a scheme for such concessions and for reformations in the Church, he gives a solemn exhortation to all parties to study peace and forbearance.

The King enjoins forbearance and toleration

This Declaration had reference to the Synod of Divines which the King had proposed to call together, immediately after his arrival, for the settlement of religion. But the "passionate and turbulent" proceedings of some, with "the impatience of many for some speedy determination in these matters," has convinced him that it is better to postpone the proposed synod until it could assemble without passion or prejudice, for, "till all thoughts of victory are laid aside, the humble and necessary thoughts for the indication of truth cannot be enough entertained." [5]

A Conference intended but postponed

The Synod was only postponed, however, till the spring of the following year. About six weeks before the meeting of Parliament, on March 25, 1661, a Royal Commission was addressed to forty-two bishops and other divines, twenty-one of whom represented the Church opinions, and twenty-one those of the Presbyterians, each side submitting its own representatives, and the Crown appointing them. From the place in which the divines assembled, the Master's

It meets at the Savoy

[5] Cardwell's *Conferences*, 286.

lodgings at the Savoy Palace or Hospital in the Strand, the Master at that time being Sheldon, Bishop of London, the Commission acquired the historical name of "The Savoy Conference." The following are the names of those who sat on this Commission :— CHAP IX A.D. 1661

On the Church side.	*On the Presbyterian side.*
Accepted Frewen, Archbishop of York.	Edward Reynolds, Bishop of Norwich.
Gilbert Sheldon, Bp. of London, afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury.	Anthony Tuckney, D.D., Master of St. John's, Cambridge.
John Cosin, Bishop of Durham.	John Conant, D.D., Reg. Prof. Div., Oxford.
John Warner, Bishop of Rochester.	William Spurstow, D.D.
Henry King, Bishop of Chichester.	John Wallis, D.D., Sav. Prof. Geom., Oxford.
Humphry Henchman, Bp. of Salisbury, afterwards of London.	Thomas Manton, D.D. [offered Deanery of Rochester].
George Morley, Bp. of Worcester, afterwards of Winchester.	Edmund Calamy [offered Bishopric of Lichfield].
Robert Sanderson, Bishop of Lincoln.	Richard Baxter [offered Bishopric of Hereford].
Benjamin Laney, Bp. of Peterborough, afterwards of Lincoln and of Ely.	Arthur Jackson
Brian Walton, Bishop of Chester.	Thomas Case.
Richard Sterne, Bp. of Carlisle, afterwards Archbishop of York.	Samuel Clarke.
John Gauden, Bp. of Exeter, afterwards of Worcester.	Matthew Newcomen.

Members of the Savoy Conference

CHAP IX
A.D. 1661

Coadjutors.

John Earle, Dean of Westminster, afterwards Bp. of Worcester and of Salisbury.
Peter Heylyn, D.D., Sub-Dean of Westminster.
John Hacket, D.D., afterwards Bp. of Lichfield.
John Barwick, D.D., afterwards Dean of St. Paul's.
Peter Gunning, D.D., afterwards Bp. of Chichester and of Ely.
John Pearson, D.D., afterwards Bishop of Chester.
Thomas Pierce, D.D.
Anthony Sparrow, D.D., afterwards Bp. of Exeter and of Norwich.
Herbert Thorndike, D.D.
Thomas Horton, D.D.
Thomas Jacomb, D.D
William Bate.
John Rawlinson.
William Cooper.
John Lightfoot, D.D.
John Collings, D.D.
Benjamin Woodbridge, D.D.
William Drake.

Few of the Puritan Divines men of eminence

One cannot but be struck by the fact that when the Presbyterians selected, as they of course would, the best men they had for their representatives, there were so few among those selected who were to leave their mark upon their own age, or to acquire any fame among later generations.

The work assigned to the Conference by

The Letters Patent authorized the Commissioners "to advise upon and review the said Book of Common Prayer, comparing the same with the most ancient liturgies which have been used in the Church in the primitive and purest times; and to that end to assemble and meet together from time to time, and at such times within the space of four calendar months now next ensuing, in the Master's lodgings in the Savoy, in the Strand, in the county of Middlesex, or in such other place or places as to you shall be thought fit and con-

venient; to take into your serious and grave considerations the several directions, rules, and forms of prayer, and things in the said Book of Common Prayer contained, and to advise and consult upon and about the same, and the several objections and exceptions which shall now be raised against the same. And if occasion be, to make such reasonable and necessary alterations, corrections, and amendments therein, as by and between you, the said Archbishop, Bishops, Doctors, and persons hereby required and authorized to meet and advise as aforesaid, shall be agreed upon to be needful or expedient for the giving satisfaction unto tender consciences, and the restoring and continuance of peace and unity in the churches under our protection and government; but avoiding, as much as may be, all unnecessary alterations of the forms and liturgy wherewith the people are already acquainted, and have so long received in the Church of England."[6]

CHAP IX
A.D. 1661
the Letters Patent

The Commissioners met on April 15th, and their sittings ended on July 24, 1661; the session of Parliament and Convocation commencing on May 8th of the same year. "The points debated," writes Izaak Walton, "were, I think, many; some affirmed to be truth and reason, some denied to be either; and these debates being then in words, proved to be so loose and perplexed as satisfied neither party. For some time that which had been affirmed was immediately forgot or denied, and so no satisfaction given to either party. But that the debate might become more useful, it was therefore resolved that, the day following, the desires and reasons of the Nonconformists should be given in writing, and they in writing receive answers from the confirming party." The "several objections

The character of the discussions

[6] Walton's *Life of Sanderson*, ad init.

CHAP IX

A.D. 1661

and exceptions" raised against the Prayer Book were thus presented to the bishops in writing, and they are all on record in two or three contemporary reports of the Conference, as well as in modern works.[7]

Some of these "exceptions" were of importance, one requiring that the whole of the responsive system of the Prayer Book should be abolished, even the Litany being to be made into one long prayer, and nothing said in Divine Service by any one except the minister, unless it were Amen. Another required the abolition of Lent and Saints' Days. But most of the exceptions were of a frivolous kind, and the remarks which accompanied them were singularly bitter and uncharitable, as well as diffuse and unbusiness-like. It seems almost incredible that grave divines should make a great point of "the Epistle is written in" being an untrue statement of the case when a portion of a prophecy was read and technically called "the Epistle;" or that they should still look upon it as a serious grievance when the alteration conceded went no further than "for the Epistle;" or, again, that they should spend their time in writing a long complaint about the possibility of their taking cold by saying the Burial Service at the grave. Yet sheets after sheets of their papers were filled with objections of this kind, and with long bitter criticisms of the principles of the Prayer Book. The bishops replied to them in the tone in which Sanderson's Preface to the Prayer Book is written, but they seem to have keenly felt what Sanderson himself expressed

The Puritan "exceptions" to the Prayer Book

[7] Cardwell's *Conferences*, 257-368. "Grand Debate between the most Reverend the Bishops and the Presbyterian Divines. . . . The most perfect copy," 1661. See also Heywood's *Documents relating to the Settlement of the Church of England by the Act of Uniformity of* 1662, published in 1862, but without the compiler's name.

—mild and gentle as he was—when he long afterwards said of his chief opponent at the Savoy, "that he had never met with a man of more pertinacious confidence and less abilities in all his conversation."[8] Perhaps, too, they were reminded of Lord Bacon's saying respecting his friends the Nonconformists of an earlier day, that they lacked two principal things, the one learning and the other love.

When the Conference was brought to an end, it was found that the results of it were by no means in proportion to the magnitude of the expectations which had been formed before its meeting. As time went on the demands of the Puritans showed that there was little probability of reconciling them to the use of the Book of Common Prayer, and that they had on wish for its revival, whether in its original form or in one modified by the changes which they required to be made. Baxter, their leader in the Conference, presented to the Commissioners a prayer book of his own composition, a work which he says that he composed in "a fortnight's time," which he was vain enough to think would prove an efficient substitute for the book that represented the devotional traditions of a thousand years or more, but which took its rank at once among the Curiosities of Literature, and has there remained ever since, for no Nonconformist except himself seems ever to have thought of using it.[9] It is not probable

The poor results of the Conference

[8] Walton writes, Bishop Pearson "told me very lately that one of the Dissenters (which I could, but forbear to name) appeared to Dr. Sanderson to be so bold, so troublesome, and so illogical in the dispute as forced patient Dr. Sanderson, who was then Bishop of Lincoln and a Moderator, with other bishops, to say with an unusual earnestness that he had never met with a man of more pertinacious confidence and less abilities in all his conversation." [Walton's *Life of Sanderson*, sign. l, 3.]

[9] It is said that Lord Burleigh challenged the Puritans to bring him a prayer book made to fit in with their own principles; but that, when this had been done by one party of Puritans, another party of them offered six hundred objections to it, which were more than they had offered to the old Prayer Book.

CHAP IX A.D. 1661

that any one else could have persuaded the Nonconformist deputies to a unity of liturgical opinion if Baxter could not do so; but those who cannot agree in the construction of formularies of their own can generally agree in the destructive criticism of other people's formularies, and the untiring controversial pens of the Puritan divines set forth a large number of "exceptions" to the Prayer Book, which had to be considered and replied to by the bishops' side. In the end, some degree of compromise was proposed by the bishops, which involved the following changes: "1. We are willing," they wrote, "that all the Epistles and Gospels be used according to the last translation. 2. That when anything is read for an Epistle which is not in the Epistles, the superscription shall be 'for the Epistle.' 3. That the Psalms be collated with the former translation, mentioned in the rubric, and printed according to it. 4. That the words 'this day,' both in the Collects and Prefaces, be used only upon the day itself; and for the following days it be said, 'as about this time.' 5. That a longer time be required for signification of the names of the communicants; and the words of the rubric be changed into these, 'at least some time the day before.' 6. That the power of keeping scandalous sinners from the Communion may be expressed in the rubric according to the xxvith and xxviith canons; so the minister be obliged to give an account of the same immediately after to the ordinary. 7. That the whole preface be prefixed to the Commandments. 8. That the second exhortation be read some Sunday or Holy Day before the celebration of the Communion, at the discretion of the minister. 9. That the General Confession at the Communion be pronounced by one of the ministers, the

Changes in the Prayer Book assented to by the bishops

people saying after him, all kneeling humbly upon their knees. 10. That the manner of consecrating the elements be made more explicit and express, and to that purpose these words be put into the rubric, 'Then shall he put his hand upon the bread and break it,' 'then shall he put his hand unto the cup.' 11. That if the font be so placed as the congregation cannot hear, it may be referred to the ordinary to place it more conveniently. 12. That these words, 'Yes, they do perform these,' etc., may be altered thus: 'Because they promise them both by their sureties,' etc. 13. That the words of the last rubric before the Catechism may be thus altered, 'That children being baptized have all things necessary for their salvation, and dying before they commit any actual sins, be undoubtedly saved, though they be not confirmed. 14. That to the rubric after confirmation these words may be added, 'or be ready and desirous to be confirmed.' 15. That these words, 'with my body I thee worship,' may be altered thus, 'with my body I thee honour.' 16. That these words, 'till death us depart,' be thus altered, 'till death us do part.' 17. That the words 'sure and certain' may be left out."

Changes assented to by the bishops

It will be observed that these suggestions were mostly adopted in the revision of the Prayer Book which followed, but that they do not include the main points at which the Puritans aimed—the disuse of the surplice, the abolition of kneeling in the reception of the Holy Communion, and the alteration of the responsive system of prayer into that of prayer by the minister alone. In respect to these points the Church party were immoveable, and there is good reason to think that their firmness was backed up by public opinion, there being a strong national yearning for a return to

None of these touched the main controversy

CHAP IX A.D. 1661

the use of the Prayer Book in its integrity, or at least without any alterations that would affect its fundamental principles.

The Revision of the Prayer Book

But as a great break had occurred in the continuous use of the Prayer Book, it was felt by those in authority in Church and State that a good opportunity had arisen for reviewing its details, and for the introduction of improvements where they seemed to be desirable and practicable. Such a course was also made the more expedient, because the House of Commons was, with some of that impatience of which the King's declaration had spoken, pushing forward a new Bill for "the Uniformity of Public Prayers and Administration of Sacraments and other Rites and Ceremonies," the Commons being now as eager for the revival of the Prayer Book system as they had formerly been for its destruction.

The opportunity taken to revise the Prayer Book

In effecting the revision which was thus suggested by the circumstances of the times, there can be little doubt that the precedents of Edward VI.'s time were followed, much care being taken that the fullest authority should be given to the revised book by the co-operation of the Crown in Council, the Convocations of Canterbury and York, and the Houses of Lords and Commons. It will be convenient to show separately the part taken by each of these, especially by the Convocations and the Parliament.

How authority given to the revised book

The Prayer Book in Convocation.

Before the close of the Savoy Conference, preparation was made for enabling the two Convocations to take

CHAP IX
A.D. 1661

up the work of revision on the lines which were expected to be laid down by that Conference. Licenses were issued by the Crown to the two Archbishops on June 10, 1661, empowering the Convocations respectively under their presidency "to debate and agree upon such points as were committed to their charge."[1] A fresh license was issued to Archbishop Juxon on October 10th, by which the Convocation of Canterbury was definitely directed to review the Book of Common Prayer and the Ordinal,[2] under the authority of the commission sent to them on the 10th of June:[3] and on November 22d a similar license was sent to Archbishop Frewen for the York Convocation. These letters enjoined the Convocations to review the Prayer Book, and then to present it to "us for our further consideration, allowance, or confirmation."[4] The work of revision was, however, entirely carried on in London, four bishops and eight proxies being appointed to act for the Convocation of York, five of whom were members of that Convocation, the others being the Prolocutor of Canterbury and the Deans of St. Paul's and Westminster.

Convocation licensed to undertake the revision

The revision was actually made by a committee formed of the following eight bishops:—

The actual revisers

Matthew Wren,	Bishop of	Ely.
Robert Skinner,	„	Oxford.
John Warner,	„	Rochester.
Humphry Henchman	„	Salisbury.
George Morley,	„	Worcester.
Robert Sanderson,	„	Lincoln.
William Nicolson,	„	Gloucester.
John Cosin,	„	Durham.

[1] State Papers, Dom., Charles II., xliii. Oct. 10.
[2] Kennett's *Regist.*, 503.
[3] State Papers, Dom., Charles II., xliii. Oct. 10.
[4] Kennett's *Regist.*, 564.

CHAP IX A.D. 1661

They met at Ely House, and Dr. Sancroft, at that time chaplain to Bishop Cosin, but afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury, acted as their secretary. Their work was greatly facilitated by a tentative revision which had been made by Cosin, the most learned ritualist among them,[5] and it was thus completed by December 20, 1661. As it proceeded, the completed portions were sent down to the Lower House of Convocation, but it does not appear that any further revision took place there, and it may be assumed that its members and the proxies from York were able to give their ready assent to the work of the bishops, as the Archbishops and the other bishops undoubtedly did. On the day last named a form of subscription was agreed upon, and this, with the signatures of the members of Convocation, still remains in the manuscript Prayer Book which was originally attached to the Act of Uniformity, and which is in the custody of the House of Lords.

Their revision submitted to Convocation

The changes which were thus introduced into the Elizabethan or Edwardian Prayer Book were reckoned up as six hundred in number, but many of these were simply verbal alterations, which had no influence upon the substance of the services. But many important alterations were made, six new "Occasional Prayer and Thanksgivings" and four new Collects were introduced, the Epistles and Gospels were altered to agree with the Authorized Version of 1611, an office for the baptism of adults was added, and also a form of prayer for use at sea. The general tendency of the alterations was what would now be called High

The extent of the revision

[5] The volume which he had prepared is still preserved in his library at Durham, being a folio Prayer Book of 1619 [Cosin's Lib., D. III. 5], with the alterations which he proposed written in the margins of the pages.

Church, but alterations in the Communion Service which would have brought it to a nearer conformity with that in the First Prayer Book of Edward VI., and which were proposed by Bishop Cosin, were not adopted.

CHAP IX
A.D. 1661

When Convocation had subscribed a fairly written copy of the revised Prayer Book, it was sent to the King "for our further consideration, allowance, or confirmation," as had been directed in the Letters Patent under the authority of which the Convocations were sitting for business. With that manuscript was also sent a printed Prayer Book of 1636, in which the changes and the new portions were officially entered by Dr Sancroft. A separate schedule of "alterations" and "additions" was also sent for facility of reference, at the end of which is written, "These are all y^e^ materiall alterations, y^e^ rest are onely verball, or y^e^ changeing of some Rubricks for y^e^ better performing of y^e^ Service, or y^e^ new moulding some of y^e^ Collects." [6]

The revised book sent by Convocation to the Crown

The Prayer Book in Parliament.

While Convocation was thus preparing a Revised Book of Common Prayer, Parliament was preparing a Revised Act for Uniformity of Worship, to which it was to be attached as the book to which the enactments of the statute referred.

The Act of Uniformity in preparation

The Journals of the House of Commons record that on June 25, 1661, it was ordered "That a Committee

[6] Both these volumes and the accompanying schedule were lost sight of shortly after the burning of the Houses of Parliament, but in 1867 it was discovered that they had been all the while safely reposing, first, in the chamber where the original Acts of Parliament are preserved, and secondly, in the Library of the House of Lords. The printed volume was photo-zincographed and published by order of the Treasury in 1871.

CHAP IX
A.D. 1661

be appointed to view the several laws for confirming the Liturgy of the Church of England; and to make search whether the original book of the Liturgy annexed to the Act passed in the fifth and sixth years of the reign of King Edward the Sixth be yet extant; and to bring in a compendious Bill to supply any defect in the former laws; and to provide for an effectual conformity to the Liturgy of the Church for the time to come." The Bill was brought in on June 29th, and read a second time on July 3d, a Prayer Book of 1604 being temporarily annexed to it. When the Bill was committed on the latter day, an instruction was given to the Committee—a very large one—that "if the original Book of Common Prayer cannot be found, then to report the said printed book, and their opinion touching the same; and to send for persons, papers, and records." The search for the original Prayer Book proved fruitless, and when the Bill was read a third time, on July 9th, "a Book of Common Prayer, intituled 'The Book of Common Prayer, and Administration of the Sacraments and other Rites and Ceremonies of the Church of England,' which was imprinted at London in the year 1604, was at the clerk's table annexed to the said Bill, part of the two prayers inserted therein before the reading Psalms being first taken out, and the other part thereof obliterated." On the following day the Bill with the book annexed was sent up to the House of Lords, and was not again sent back to the House of Commons until April 10, 1662, the delay being caused by the proceedings, first of the Savoy Conference, and afterwards of the Convocation.

The Commons annex to the Act a Prayer Book of King James' reign

This sent up to the Lords

The Bill was read a first time in the House of Lords as long afterwards as January 14, 1662; and on the

17th it was read a second time and committed. A message was brought from the House of Commons on the 28th urging the Lords to expedition, but on February 13, 1662, the Earl of Dorset reported "That the Committee for the Bill for Uniformity of Worship have met oftentimes, and expected a book of Uniformity to be brought in; but, that not being done, their Lordships have made no progress therein; therefore the Committee desires to know the pleasure of the House, whether they shall proceed upon the book brought from the House of Commons, or stay until the other book be brought in. Upon this the Bishop of London signified to the House 'That the book will very shortly be brought in.'"

The Lords wait for the revised book

The book had been placed in the hands of the Crown several weeks before, but it was not until after this announcement that it was formally brought before the King in Council. But a Privy Council was now summoned, at which four bishops were required to attend, and it met on February 24, 1662, the bishops present who were not Privy Councillors being Cosin of Durham, Morley of Worcester, Henchman of Salisbury, and Walton of Chester, the first three being members of the Revision Committee, and therefore able to offer explanations respecting the alterations and additions which had been made. "At which time the Book of Common Prayer, with the amendments and additions, as it was prepared by the Lords Bishops, was read and approved, and ordered to be transmitted to the House of Peers, with this following recommendation, signed by his Majesty:—

The revised book submitted to the King in Council

"CHARLES R.

"His Majesty having, according to his declaration of the 25th of October 1660, granted his commission under the

CHAP IX
A.D. 1662

Great Seal to several bishops and other divines to review the Book of Common Prayer, and to prepare such alterations and additions as they thought fit to offer; afterwards the Convocations of the clergy of both the provinces of Canterbury and York were by his Majesty called and assembled, and are now sitting. And his Majesty hath been pleased to authorize and require the presidents of the said Convocations, and other the bishops and clergy of the same, to review the said Book of Common Prayer, and the book of the form and manner of making and consecrating of bishops, priests, and deacons; and that, after mature consideration, they should make such additions or alterations in the said books respectively as to them should seem meet and convenient; and should exhibit and present the same to his Majesty in writing, for his Majesty's further consideration, allowance, or confirmation.

The revised book sent to Parliament by the King in Council

Since which time, upon full and mature deliberation, they, the said presidents, bishops, and clergy of both provinces, have accordingly reviewed the said books, and have made, exhibited, and presented to his Majesty in writing some alterations which they think fit to be inserted in the same, and some additional prayers to the said Book of Common Prayer, to be used upon proper and emergent occasions.

"All which his Majesty having duly considered, doth, with the advice of his Council, fully approve and allow the same; and doth recommend it to the House of Peers that the said Book of Common Prayer, and of the form of ordination and consecration of bishops, priests, and deacons, with those alterations and additions, be the book which, in and by the intended Act of Uniformity, shall be appointed to be used by all that officiate in all cathedral and collegiate churches and chapels, and in all chapels of colleges and halls in both the universities, and the colleges of Eton and Winchester, and in all parish churches and chapels within the kingdom of England, dominion of Wales, and town of Berwick-upon-Tweed, and by all that make or consecrate bishops, priests, or deacons, in any of the said places, under such sanctions and penalties as the Parliament shall think fit.

"Given at our Court, at Whitehall, the 24th day of February 1661" [1662 New Style].

The Journals add, "The book mentioned in his Majesty's message was brought into this House, which is ordered to be referred to the Committee for the Act of Uniformity." Lord Clarendon mentions that the revised book, that is, the MS. which the members of Convocation had subscribed, was "confirmed by his Majesty under the Great Seal of England;" and as, being Chancellor at the time, the seal would have been affixed by his direction, it seems impossible that he should have been mistaken, though no trace of the Great Seal is now to be found in connection with the volume.

Said to have been confirmed by the Great Seal

A few days afterwards, on March 3, 1662, a conciliatory explanation of the delay was given by the King himself to the House of Commons, as is shown by a characteristic Royal Speech entered in its Journals:—

"[The King having commanded the Commons to attend him in the banqueting-house, Whitehall, on Saturday, 1st March, they did so; and the Speaker read his Majesty's speech to the House on the following Monday. In the course of it his Majesty said:—]

"'Gentlemen, I hear you are very zealous for the Church, and very solicitous, and even jealous, that there is not expedition enough used in that affair. I thank you for it, since, I presume, it proceeds from a good root of piety and devotion; but I must tell you I have the worst luck in the world, if, after all the reproaches of being a Papist, whilst I was abroad, I am suspected of being a Presbyterian now I am come home. I know you will not take it unkindly, if I tell you that I am as zealous for the Church of England as any of you can be; and am enough acquainted with the enemies of it on all sides; that I am as much in love with the Book of Common Prayer as you can wish, and have prejudice enough to those that do not love it, who, I hope, in time will be better informed, and change their minds; and you may be confident I do as much desire to see a uniformity settled as any amongst you; I pray,

The King explains the delay to the House of Commons

CHAP IX
A.D. 1662

trust me, in that affair; I promise you to hasten the despatch of it with all convenient speed; you may rely upon me in it.

"'I have transmitted the Book of Common Prayer, with those alterations and additions which have been presented to me by the Convocation, to the House of Peers with my approbation, that the Act of Uniformity may relate to it; so that, I presume, it will be shortly despatched there; and when we have done all we can, the well settling that affair will require great prudence and discretion, and the absence of all passion and precipitation.'"

The revisions read in the House of Lords

Parliament now proceeded to the completion of the Act of Uniformity without any further delay. The Lords' Committee reported to the House on March 13, 1662, and on that and the following two days the "alterations and additions" were read;[7] "which being ended, the Lord Chancellor, in the name and by the directions of the House, gave the Lords and Bishops thanks for their care in this business, and desired their Lordships to give the like thanks, from this House, to the other House of Convocation for their pains therein." On the 17th the "House took into consideration the Bill concerning Uniformity in Public Worship formerly reported from the Committee. And upon the second reading of the alterations and provisos and considerations thereof, it is ordered that this House agrees to the preamble as it is now brought in by the Committee. And the question being put, 'Whether this book that hath been transmitted to this House from the King shall be the book to which the Act of Uniformity shall relate?' it was resolved in the affirmative."

The revised book annexed to the Act

[7] In the original rough minutes of proceedings taken by the clerks, it is stated that "after debate it was resolved that the amendments and alterations in the printed book should be read, which was this day begun accordingly, and so the preface was read." This shows the purpose for which the "printed book" sent with the "fairly written" MS. was prepared. Both books are mentioned subsequently as being sent down to the House of Commons.

After the Act had been carefully considered, clause by clause, it was read a third time, and passed on April 9, 1662; and before holding a conference with the Commons on the following day, "the House directed that the Book of Common Prayers, recommended from the King, shall be delivered to the House of Commons as that being the book to which the Act of Uniformity is to relate, and also to deliver the book wherein the alterations are made, out of which the other book was fairly written; and likewise to communicate to them the King's message, recommending the said book; and lastly, to let the Commons know, 'That the Lords, upon consideration had of the Act of Uniformity, have thought fit to make some alterations, and add certain provisos, to which the concurrence of the House of Commons is desired.'"

The Act with the Revised Book annexed sent down to the Commons

Some alterations in the Act

The "book wherein the alterations are made" was the black letter Prayer Book of 1536, which has already been mentioned; "the other book" which had been "fairly written" out of it was the manuscript volume to which the members of Convocation had appended their subscriptions, and which was afterwards "joined and annexed" to the Act of Uniformity, both volumes being still preserved in the House of Lords.

On April 11, 1662, the Act of Uniformity was again in the House of Commons, and on the 14th "the amendments in 'The Book of Common Prayer, and Administration of the Sacraments and other Rites and Ceremonies of the Church of England,' sent from the Lords; the transcript of which book, so amended, therewith sent, they desire to be added to the Bill of Uniformity, instead of the book sent up therewith, was, in part, read."

The revisions read in the House of Commons

CHAP IX
A.D. 1662

The reading was finished the same afternoon, and on the following day a committee was appointed "to compare the Books of Common Prayer sent down from the Lords with the book sent up from this House; and to see whether they differ in anything besides the amendments sent from the Lords, and already read in this House, and wherein; and to make their report therein, with all the speed they can. And, for that purpose, they are to meet this afternoon, at two of the clock, in the Speaker's chamber."

The revised book compared with that of 1604

The Committee sat late and early, and reported to the House on the afternoon of the 16th, receiving the special thanks of the House for their expedition. The question was then put, "Whether debate shall be admitted to the amendments made by the Convocation in the Book of Common Prayer, and sent down by the Lords to this House?" when ninety members voted for and ninety-six against a debate. Afterwards the question was put, "That the amendments made by the Convocation and sent down by the Lords to this House, might, by the order of this House, have been debated, and it was resolved in the affirmative." Notwithstanding this theoretical resolution of the House of Commons, the Journals contain a remarkable illustration of the constitutional exactness with which, in practice, they remitted all questions respecting the Prayer Book to Convocation, instead of attempting to make alterations or additions themselves. A strong desire had been expressed in the House of Commons that a proviso should be introduced into the Act of Uniformity, enjoining reverent gestures during the time of Divine Service. This proviso was twice read, "but the matter being held proper for the Convocation," it was ordered that those members who managed the

The revisions not debated, but the Commons reserve their right to debate them

conference with the Lords should intimate the desire of the House. This was done, and the following entry appears in the Journals of the House of Lords on May 8th :— CHAP IX A.D. 1662

"Whereas it was intimated at the conference yesterday, as the desire of the House of Commons, 'That it be recommended to the Convocation to take order for reverend and uniform gestures and demeanors to be enjoined at the time of Divine Service and preaching:' Proposition for a Canon respecting reverent gestures

"It is ordered by this House, and hereby recommended to the Lords the Bishops, and the rest of the Convocation of the clergy, to prepare some canon or rule for that purpose, to be humbly presented unto his Majesty for his assent."

Much further debate took place on the many clauses of the Act of Uniformity, and on the various amendments made or proposed, but the only other incident specially connected with the Prayer Book itself was the formal correction of a clerical error, which is thus recorded in the Journals of the House of Lords on May 8, 1662 :—

"Whereas it was signified by the House of Commons, at the conference yesterday, 'That they found one mistake in the rubric of Baptism, which they conceived was a mistake of the writer, "persons" being put instead of "children."' A clerical error in the revised book corrected

"The Lord Bishop of Durham acquainted the House, that himself, and the Lord Bishop of St. Asaph, and the Lord Bishop of Carlile, had authority from the Convocation"—an order for making it having passed Convocation on April 24th[8]—"to mend the said word, averring it was only a

[8] Kennett's *Register*, 666.

A more curious slip of the pen is said to have been corrected, with a somewhat daring readiness, by Lord Clarendon. "Archbishop Tenison told me by his bedside on Monday, Feb. 12, 1710, that the Convocation Book, intended to be the copy confirmed by the Act of Uniformity, had a rash blunder in the rubrick after Baptism, which should have run [*It is certain by God's word that children which are baptized dying before they commit actual sin are undoubtedly saved*]. But the words [*which are baptised*] were left out, till Sir Cyril Wyche, coming to see the Lord Chancellor

CHAP IX

A.D. 1662

mistake of the scribe. And accordingly they came to the clerk's table and amended the same."

The amendments proposed by the House of Commons in the Act of Uniformity all tended to raise the tone in which the Prayer Book was to be used, and to make the provisions of the Act more strict. They especially required, as has already been mentioned, that the surplice and the sign of the Cross in Baptism should continue to be used. These amendments were all agreed to by the Lords on May 10th; and thus the Prayer Book, as amended by Convocation, and the Act of Uniformity, as amended by Parliament, both received the royal assent on May 19, 1662.

Amendments in the Act of Uniformity

With this authoritative revival of the Book of Common Prayer in a carefully revised form the restoration of the Church may be said to have been completed. With it also the recovery of the Reformation Settlement was brought to a successful termination.

The Secession of the Nonconformist Ministers.

One result of the Act

But one consequence of this national recurrence to the Catholic principles of the Anglican Reformation was the formal secession of many Presbyterian and Independent ministers who had occupied the parsonage houses and ministered in the churches of the Church

Hyde, found the book brought home by his Lordship, and lying in his parlour window, even after it had passed the two Houses, and happening to cast his eye upon that place, told the Lord Chancellor of that gross omission, who supplied it with his own hand" [*Ibid.*, p. 643]. This story was fifty years old when it reached Bishop Kennett, but it has an air of probability, and such strange accidents in the most important matters have not unfrequently occurred. So the word "not" was once omitted from the Seventh Commandment in a whole edition [A.D. 1631] of the Holy Bible, the printers being heavily fined for the mistake. But there is no trace of the error in either the black letter copy or the manuscript. If it ever existed, it was probably in the copy prepared for the printers, of which nothing is now known.

of England while the latter lay in the dust, and who refused to accept the conditions on which alone the secular legislature of the land would permit them to continue in the positions which they had assumed. Parliament was determined that episcopal ordination should be an essential qualification of all who ministered in the Church of England, this being in fact the very first principle of its ministerial system, and the House of Commons, as its Journals show, was especially urgent in pressing forward the Act by which this qualification was to be enforced.

Parliament now required Episcopal Ordination

This Act of Parliament [13 and 14 Car II. c. 4] was no novelty, for it was the fourth Act of Uniformity which had been passed since the Reformation, and such an Act was considered so necessary by all, that during the time of the Commonwealth several Ordinances of Parliament, intended to be equivalent to Acts, were passed with a similar object, defining the mode of ordination which was to be adopted after the abolition of Episcopacy. It was, moreover, very necessary to guard against the danger of men occupying the pulpits of the Church of England, and preaching against her principles as set forth in the Prayer Book, an evil inconsistency which had attained formidable dimensions between the accession of Queen Elizabeth and the outbreak of the Great Rebellion. And, lastly, that most iniquitous oath which had been taken under the name of "The Solemn League and Covenant," an oath distinctly opposed to the restored order of things in Church and State, was still considered to be binding on their consciences by some of the Puritan ministers. It was thus absolutely necessary to the quiet government of the country that some enactment should be made by Parliament which should bring these matters

This Act necessary for the safety of the restored Church

CHAP IX

A.D. 1662

under the control of the law, and that the clergy should promise, by act and word, to be loyal to the Church and the State in the religious principles which they held and taught. To ensure such loyalty, therefore, the Act of Uniformity imposed the following conditions on all who claimed to be ministers of the Church of England:—

Conditions imposed on Incumbents

1. "Each parson, vicar, or other minister whatsoever, who now hath and enjoyeth any ecclesiastical benefice or promotion within this realm of England, . . . shall openly and publicly, before the congregation there assembled, declare his unfeigned assent and consent to the use of all things in the said book contained and prescribed, in these words, and no other: 'I, *A. B.*, do hereby declare my unfeigned assent and consent to all and everything contained and prescribed in and by the book intituled The Book of Common Prayer,'" etc.

Assent and consent to the Prayer Book

2. Every such incumbent, or any one to be admitted to an incumbency thereafter, was required to subscribe the following declaration: "I, *A. B.*, do declare that it is not lawful, upon any pretence whatsoever, to take arms against the King; and that I do abhor that traitorous position of taking arms by his authority against his person, or against those that are commissionated by him; and that I will conform to the Liturgy of the Church of England, as it is now by law established. And I do declare that I do hold there lies no obligation upon me, or on any other person, from the oath commonly called 'The Solemn League and Covenant,' to endeavour any change or alteration of government either in Church or State: and that the same was in itself an unlawful oath, and imposed upon the subjects of this realm against the known laws and liberties of this kingdom."

Repudiation of the Covenant and its principles

3. It was also provided that "no person who now is incumbent, and in possession of any parsonage, vicarage, or benefice, and who is not already in Holy Orders by Episcopal Ordination, or shall not before the feast of St. Bartholomew be ordained priest or deacon according to the form of

Episcopal Ordination

Episcopal Ordination, shall have, hold, or enjoy the said parsonage, vicarage, benefice with cure, or other ecclesiastical promotion within this kingdom of England, or the dominion of Wales, or town of Berwick-upon-Tweed; but shall be utterly disabled, and *ipso facto* deprived of the same; and all his ecclesiastical promotions shall be void as if he was naturally dead."

CHAP IX
A.D. 1662

The effect of these provisions of the Act of Uniformity was that a large number of the non-episcopal incumbents accepted the conditions imposed—that they should be episcopally ordained, accept the Prayer Book system as now set forth, and renounce the obligations into which they had entered for the destruction of Episcopacy, and for opposing the Crown by force of arms. These incumbents thus legalized their position, and qualified themselves to carry out the system of the Church of England according to its long-established principles.[9] Those ministers who declined to accept these conditions and to "conform" to the Church system, and who were hence called "Nonconformists," amounted in number to about eight hundred;[1] and on August 24, 1662, they were obliged by the provisions of the Act to vacate their benefices. Some of these established themselves as ministers of separate congregations of Presbyterians or Indepen-

Some Puritans conformed and retained their positions

Others refused to conform, and seceded

[9] But in fact a large number, "several hundreds" it is said, of the Puritans were ordained by Thomas Sydserf, Bishop, first of Brechin and then of Galloway, in the year 1660, as soon as ever it was seen how strongly the tide was turning in favour of Episcopacy. Among those so ordained in that year was Dr. John Tillotson, afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury. [*Notes and Queries*, III. vii. 22.]

[1] The number has been reckoned as high as two thousand on the authority of Calamy's *Abridgement of Baxter's Life and Times*, published in 1702. But a critical examination of this work and of its "continuation," published in 1721, shows that he greatly overstated the case. See Blunt's *Dictionary of Sects, Heresies, and Schools of Thought*, *Art.* NONCONFORMISTS.

CHAP IX

A.D. 1662

dents, or of some of the many other sects which were gradually formed among the remnant of the Puritans; but contemporary authorities state that some were men of property, that some made wealthy marriages, that some returned to the trades which they had given up for the pulpit, and that great kindness was shown to those who were poor by the bishops and the nobility.[2] Among those who thus refused to accept the terms offered by the Act of Uniformity, there was also a large number who continued to attend the ministrations of the Church, and thus came to be designated as "Episcopal Nonconformists."[3]

What became of the Seceders

[2] Kennett's *Register*, 888, 919.

[3] Baxter's *Life and Times*, App. 71, ed. 1696.

CHAPTER X

THE PRINCIPLES OF THE REFORMATION

HAVING followed up the series of events and the legislation in Church and State which are included in the convenient term "Reformation," tracing their course through the reigns of Henry VIII. and Edward VI., and through the two epochs of re-settlement which arose from the successful attacks of the Roman Catholics in the sixteenth century, and the Puritans in the seventeenth, it now remains to show in what respects that Reformation impressed its abiding character upon the Church of England. This will be best done by showing what were and are "the principles of the Reformation" and "the Reformation Settlement" as regards the Independence of the English Church, its Organic Continuity, its Relation to the Civil State, and its Devotional and Doctrinal system.

The Reformation character impressed on the Church

§ 1. The National Independence and Catholic Unity of the Church of England

When the Reformation movement began, it found the Church of England part of an imperial system of which the Pope was the head, over which he claimed to possess authority *ex jure Divino* in civil as well as

CHAP X

in ecclesiastical matters, and over which, as regards the English portion of his Church Empire, he exercised exactly as much authority as he was permitted by the Crown and the bishops to exercise. After a long contest, during which the Pope regained his supremacy for a few years under Philip and Mary, the principle was at length firmly established that the Church of England has within itself all the elements of jurisdiction and government in matters of Faith, of Worship, of Discipline, and of Organization.

The Church independent of the Pope's jurisdiction,

The formal assertion of this independence at the period of the Reformation was first suggested by the clergy in a petition which Convocation presented to the Crown in the year 1531, and the suggestion was carried out by legislation which deprived the Pope, who alone had interfered with such independence, of all jurisdiction over the Church of England. This legislation was confirmed in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, and remains in full force upon the Statute Book to this day; Church and State having ever since 1531, except during the reign of Queen Mary, co-operated in maintaining the independence of the Church of England as an absolute freedom from the control of any foreign power, ecclesiastical or civil.

but not separated from Catholic Christendom

But the assertion and maintenance of this principle of ecclesiastical *independence* have been carefully guarded from implying ecclesiastical *isolation*. This was expressed in an Act of Parliament, which is still in force, respecting the jurisdiction of the Pope, in the words that there was no intention of King, Lords, or Commons "to decline or vary from the Congregation of Christ's Church in any things concerning the very articles of the Catholick Faith of Christendom." It was expressed in a more elaborate form in a work

which was compiled by Convocation, and published by the Crown as an exposition of Reformation principles in the years 1537 and 1543, "The Institution of a Christian Man."[1] In this exposition of the Creed, etc., there is a long explanation of the article "The Holy Catholic Church," and in the course of it occur these admirable statements of the Anglican position: "This unity of the Holy Church of Christ is not divided by distance of place, nor by diversity of traditions and ceremonies, diversely observed in divers churches, for good order of the same. For the Church of Corinth and of Ephesus were one Church in God, though the one were far distant in place from the other; and though also in traditions, opinions, and policies there was some diversity among them, likewise as the Church of England, Spain, Italy, and Poole" [*i.e.* Russia] "be not separate from the unity, but be one Church in God, notwithstanding that among them there is great distance, diversity of traditions, not in all things unity of opinions, alteration in rites, ceremonies, and ordinances, or estimation of the same, as one church peradventure doth esteem their rites, traditions, laws, ordinances, and ceremonies to be of more virtue and efficacy than another church doth esteem the same. . . . But such diversity in opinions, and other outward manners and customs of policy, doth not dissolve and break the unity which is in one God, one doctrine of Christ and His Sacraments, preserved and kept in these several churches, without any superiority or preeminence that one church by God's law may or ought to challenge over another. And therefore the Church

An official statement of the Anglican principle on the subject

[1] A summary of this noble work will be found in vol. i. pp. 444-469. See also the author's *Doctrine of the Church of England as stated in Ecclesiastical documents set forth by authority of Church and State in the Reformation period between* 1536 *and* 1662. 1868.

CHAP X

of Rome, being but a several church, challenging that name of *Catholic* above all other, doeth great wrong to all other churches, and doth only by force and maintenance support an unjust usurpation: for that Church hath no more right to that name than the Church of France, Spain, England, or Portugal, which be justly called Catholic Churches, in that they profess, consent, and agree in one unity of true faith with other Catholic Churches. . . . And I believe also that the said Church of Rome, with all the other particular churches[2] in the world, compacted and united together, do make and constitute but one catholic church or body. And that like as our Saviour Christ is One Person, and the only Head of His mystical Body, so this whole Catholic Church, Christ's mystical Body, is but One Body under this One Head, Christ."

The Church of England in unity with other churches

Nothing has been said or done by the Church or the State of England to disavow the principle here asserted; and it must be regarded as a true Reformation principle, that while the Church of England is perfectly free from the jurisdiction of the Pope, and is a "particular Church," having within itself all the elements of government and discipline, it has never forfeited its place in the unity of the One, Holy, Catholic, and Apostolic, Church, nor has it ever claimed to be spiritually separated from any other particular church which continues therein.[3]

This principle never disavowed by Church or State

[2] At the Conference which was held between Marian and Elizabethan divines in Westminster Abbey at the opening of Queen Elizabeth's reign, the following definition of a "particular church" was given by Cox, Grindal, Jewell, and the rest of the Anglican representatives: "By these words, 'every particular Church,' we understand every particular kingdom, province, or region, which by order make one Christian society or body, according to the distinction of countries, and orders of the same." [Cardwell's *Conf.*, 72.]

[3] When the epithet "Protestant" is applied to the Church of England in any official documents, it must be limited, as the whole history of the Reformation period shows, by this consideration.

§ 2. The Organic Continuity of the Church of England

The Reformers never for an instant professed to be abolishing the old Church of England and founding a new one. By the good hand of Divine Providence guiding the course of the Reformation, it was always recognized by her rulers in their official dealings with her structure and formularies, and has always been so recognized since that period, that the vital organism of a church consists of three things—[1] an Apostolically descended Episcopate, [2] a Sacerdotal Ministry, and [3] Valid Sacraments. In these three particulars the Church of England has always been conspicuously distinguished from every Protestant community, English or foreign; and in these three particulars the Reformed Church of England is as entirely identical with the pre-Reformation Church of England as a man who is at one time in sickness and at another in health is the same man, or as a vine which has been pruned is the same vine that it was before it was pruned.

Three essentials of a Church

An Apostolically descended Episcopate.

It is a constantly maintained principle of the Reformed Church of England that the spiritual power and authority of the ministry has been handed down direct from the Chief Shepherd and Bishop of souls Himself through the Apostles, and through a succession of bishops historically continuous with them. "Thus by succession from the Apostles hath order continued in the Church," are the words of the work before quoted. More fully is the principle stated in a sermon on the "Apostolical Succession and Power of the Keys,"

The Apostolic Succession

CHAP X

published by Archbishop Cranmer in the same year in which he superintended the compilation of the Prayer Book. "The ministration of God's Word, which our Lord Jesus Christ Himself at first did institute, was derived from the Apostles unto others after them, by imposition of hands, and giving the Holy Ghost, from the Apostles' time to our days. And this was the Consecration, Orders, and Unction of the Apostles, whereby they at the beginning made Bishops and Priests, and this shall continue to the Church even to the world's end."[4] So also at the Westminster Conference the divines representing the Church of England declared, "The Apostles' successors had the same authority" respecting the use or disuse of ceremonies "that the Apostles had. . . . But all Bishops be the Apostles' successors, and have like power."[5]

maintained by Cranmer,

and by the Elizabethan divines

In accordance with this Reformation principle the greatest possible care has always been used to keep the episcopal succession unbroken. The Mediæval Church held its title to that succession by several lines of spiritual ancestry, but most distinctly of all by one line which descended from the Apostles to Archbishop Theodore [A.D. 668-690] through the earlier bishops of Rome, all of whose names are historically known, and by another line which descended from the Apostles through the bishops of France to Archbishop Berthwald [A.D. 693-731].[6] From the Mediæval Church the suc-

The ancient course of the Succession

[4] *Tracts of the Ang. Fath.*, i. 19.

[5] Cardwell's *Conf.*, 79.

[6] It was a very early custom to keep a record of the succession of bishops. Irenæus, Bishop of Lyons, writing about A.D. 185, says, "We are able to reckon up the lists of bishops ordained in the churches from the Apostles to our own times; . . . but as it would," he adds, "be very tedious in such a work as" he was writing "to reckon up the successions of all the churches," he will indicate only that of the Church of Rome. After naming the twelve bishops who had ruled that Church from the Apostles' time to his own, Irenæus then writes, "In this order, and by this succession, the

cession descended to Archbishop Cranmer and his contemporaries through nearly a thousand bishops, of whom the names, together with the names of their consecrators, are mostly preserved in original records and in printed books.[7] A crisis involving some danger arose in the beginning of Queen Elizabeth's reign, when most of the Marian bishops refused to take part in the consecration of others; but this crisis was safely passed by the consecration of Archbishop Parker, Bishops Grindal, Cox, Meyrick, and Sandys, at the hands of Bishops Barlow, Hodgkins, Coverdale, and Scory, all of whom had been bishops before Queen Mary's accession, and the first two of whom had been consecrated long before the death of Henry VIII.[8] From that time no similar danger has arisen, and the regular succession having been kept up without any break, it follows that the present bishops of the Church of England have the same episcopal descent as their predecessors and spiritual ancestors of mediæval times, a ministerial genealogy which can be historically traced up to the Apostles, and through them to the Head of the Church, the Great High Priest, the Fountain of ministerial power and authority.

The modern course of the Succession

It may be added that this principle of episcopal succession has been so carefully guarded in practice, that of the six hundred or so of Anglican bishops who

The principle carefully maintained

ecclesiastical tradition from the Apostles and the preaching of the truth have come down to us" [Irenæus *Against Heresies*, iii. 3]. Materials for such lists remain in great abundance in the pages of Eusebius and later ecclesiastical historians; and a most extensive collection of such lists as relate to the Church of France may be found in the noble national work entitled *Gallia Christiana*.

[7] See Stubbs' *Registrum Sacrum Anglicanum*, in which the names as above stated are given, with references to the Records, from A.D. 597 to A.D. 1857. They are also given, with fuller particulars, in Le Neve's *Fasti Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ*, edited in 1854 by Sir Thomas Duffus Hardy, then Assistant Keeper of the Public Records.

[8] See Frontispiece and p. 388.

CHAP X

have been consecrated since Cranmer [A.D. 1533], there are not more than five or six cases in which there is the least suspicion that any one was consecrated by fewer than three bishops, the number of consecrators being most frequently four, but sometimes as many as six or eight, or even nine.

A Sacerdotal Ministry.

It is also a distinctly Reformation principle that the second order of ministers in the Church of England are "priests," in the same sense in which they were "priests" before the Reformation.[9]

The ancient Order of Priesthood continued, and no new form of ministry instituted

This continuity of a Sacerdotal Ministry is authoritatively stated in the preface to the Ordinal, which declares, "It is evident unto all men diligently reading the Holy Scripture and ancient authors, that from the Apostles' time there have been these Orders of Ministers in Christ's Church: Bishops, Priests, and Deacons. . . . And, therefore, to the intent that these Orders may be continued . . . in the Church of England," the Ordinal is set forth. That the continuation of the ancient priesthood was intended, as distinguished from the institution of a new form of ministry, is also shown by the proviso which is added that "no man shall be accounted to be a lawful . . . priest" unless he is ordained according to the form

[9] The word "Presbyter" is frequently used as if it indicated some different character of ministry from that indicated by "Priest;" but it is obvious that, in the words of Milton,

"New Presbyter is but old Priest writ large."

And in the pre-Reformation services for the ordination of priests the words "sacerdos" and "presbyter" are used interchangeably.

The Greek form "Presbúteros" was Latinized in the form "Presbyter," and the latter has been naturalized in all European languages, in such forms as the Spanish "Presbytero," the French "Prestre" or "Prêtre," the Italian "Prete," the German "Priester," and the English "Prest" or "Priest." It is hardly necessary to add that the English word thus derived from the Greek is the only one which represents the Latin "sacerdos."

provided, "or hath had formerly episcopal . . . ordination." Strict provision was thus made for the continuation of the ancient sacerdotal order as well as for the continuation of the ancient episcopal order. And it is to be remarked that as Cranmer, Latimer, Barlow, and other bishops of the post-Reformation Church were accounted bishops because of their pre-Reformation consecration, so the parochial and other clergy were accounted priests because of their pre-Reformation ordination. The same principle has been constantly acted upon in all later days, bishops of the Eastern Church, and Antonio de Dominis, Archbishop of Spalatro, having acted as bishops in the English Church by reason of their foreign consecration to the episcopate, and priests ordained by foreign bishops having become cathedral or parochial clergy because of their ordination by foreign bishops. The strictness with which the principle has been adhered to is also shown by the fact that no minister of any Protestant community, British or foreign, has ever been received as, or permitted to act as, a priest of the Church of England, whatever form of ordination he may have gone through, until he had been ordained at the hands of a bishop.

Old priests continued to act as priests after the Reformation

Protestant ordination not accepted as priesthood

The service for the ordination of the second order of the ministry also shows that the Reformers had no thought of any distinction between those who were to be ordained by it and those who had been ordained by the Latin form previously in use. It is entitled "The Form and Manner of Ordering of Priests;" the first rubric directs that there shall be a sermon or exhortation "declaring the duty and office of such as come to be admitted Priests, how necessary that Order is in the Church of Christ, and also how the people

CHAP X

ought to esteem them in their Office;" in the second rubric and in the words of presentation "the Order of Priesthood," and in the bishop's warning to the congregation, "the holy Office of Priesthood" is spoken of; in the exhortation to those about to be ordained much is said about the "dignity" and responsibility of the priest's office; and lastly, after solemn invocations of the Holy Ghost, it is said to each, as the bishop's hands are laid upon his head, "Receive the Holy Ghost for the Office and Work of a Priest. . . . Whose sins thou dost forgive they are forgiven, and whose sins thou dost retain they are retained,"—a translation of the ancient words, "Accipe Spiritum Sanctum: quorum remiseris peccata, remittuntur eis; et quorum retinueris, retenta erunt."

The phraseology of the Ordination Service

It is obvious that such language as this could not possibly have been used without any explanation whatever if it had been intended to use it in a sense different from that in which it had been used for centuries: and it is equally obvious that any attempt to give a non-natural sense to the words "priest" and "priesthood" as used in the Prayer Book and elsewhere in the official documents of the Church is utterly at variance with their language. Nor is there any ground whatever for the assertion which has sometimes been made, that the Reformation idea of the priesthood was different from that of elder days. It was a matter-of-course principle of the Reformation that by the designation "bishop" a bishop or *episcopus* was intended, and that by the designation "priest" a priest, *presbyter*, or *sacerdos*, was intended.[1]

A non-natural sense at variance wih the whole Prayer Book

[1] In the Latin translation of the Prayer Book set forth by Queen Elizabeth the word "sacerdos" is frequently used, and, of course, the word "minister" for the person ministering; but "presbyter" only appears once, when it is used to designate the clergy of cathedrals and collegiate churches.

An efficient Sacramental System.

Sacraments are the special means of spiritual life to individual Christians, and it thus becomes a very important question whether they were so retained in their integrity in the Reformed Church of England that its members have suffered no loss.

Before the Reformation the English Church had adopted the classification of sacraments which had originated with Peter Lombard [A.D. 1164], and which had been authoritatively affirmed by the Council of Florence [A.D. 1439]. In this classification the number of sacraments was reckoned as seven, namely, Baptism, Confirmation, the Holy Eucharist, Penance, Extreme Unction, Holy Orders, and Matrimony. But as the Council of Trent in A.D. 1547 had decreed, "If any one shall say that these seven sacraments are equal to each other in suchwise as that one is not in any way more worthy than another, let him be anathema," so in A.D. 1537 the Church of England had declared in the "Institution of a Christian Man" that the three sacraments of Baptism, Penance, and the Holy Eucharist were different from the other four—*First*, As being instituted by Christ to be instruments or remedies necessary for salvation; *Secondly*, As having outward signs commanded by Christ; and *Thirdly*, As having spiritual graces annexed to and conjoined with their visible signs. A later Reformation document on the subject, the twenty-fifth of the Thirty-nine Articles, still more exactly distinguishes between the two classes, declaring that "there are two sacraments ordained of Christ our Lord in the Gospel—that is to say, Baptism and the Supper of the Lord," but that the other five "have not like

The Anglican theory of sacraments

CHAP X

nature of sacraments, . . . for that they have not any visible sign or ceremony ordained of God." Still later, in the latter part of the Catechism [A.D. 1604], it is stated that the number of sacraments "generally," that is, universally, "necessary for salvation" is "two only —that is to say, Baptism and the Supper of the Lord."

Although the enumeration of sacraments as seven dates from very early times, perhaps from the fifth century, the same seven were not always named, and there were divines of the highest authority in the Mediæval Church who used language which substantially agrees with that of the Article and the Catechism.

No novelty in the Anglican theory

It cannot be said, therefore, that the Reformation principle which makes five of the sacraments subordinate to the other two, putting them in the category of sacramental ordinances rather than of sacraments, in any way restricted the sacramental system of the Church of England within narrower limits. It was retained in its full integrity, but by a careful definition precaution was taken against the error of supposing that all were equally essential to spiritual life.

At the same time that the sacramental system was retained in its efficiency as a whole, so in regard to particular sacraments effective provision was made for securing their administration in a valid form. But this point need not here be followed up in detail. It

Careful provision made for sacramental validity

is enough to say that while on the one hand certain forms and substances were made to be as absolutely necessary in the post-Reformation Church of England as they had been in the pre-Reformation Church, so on the other the sufficiency of those forms and substances would be fully allowed by controversial opponents if once the validity of the Anglican priesthood were admitted.

§ 3. The Doctrine and Worship of the Church of England

CHAP X

In respect to doctrine, all the official documents by which its standard is determined rest entirely upon the Reformation Settlement. It was shown at the beginning of this work[2] that so much corrupted tradition had crept in among the Catholic truths which were always extant in the formal beliefs of the Mediæval Church of England as to render a restatement of those truths very necessary. But this authoritative re-settlement of doctrine occupied a comparatively small space of time, beginning with the Ten Articles of A.D. 1536,[3] and ending with the Thirty-nine Articles of A.D. 1563,[4] the doctrines embodied in the latter remaining unaffected either by Prayer Book revision or by ecclesiastical legislation to the present day.

Corrupted traditions of the Middle Ages

Throughout the whole course of this re-settlement of doctrine two principles pervaded every authoritative movement, and these are expressed at the very beginning in the first of the Ten Articles. As there stated they are—[1] That the Scriptures contain "the most holy, most sure, and most certain and infallible words of God," such as cannot be altered "by any contrary opinion or authority;" and [2] That the Articles of the Faith contained in the Three Creeds are "necessary to be believed for man's salvation." As these principles appear in the very earliest of our reformed statements of doctrine, so they do also in the latest; for in the Sixth Article of Religion it is declared that "Holy Scripture containeth all things necessary to salvation; so that whatsoever is not read therein, nor may be

Principles of re-settlement of doctrine

[2] See vol. i. pp. 29-36.
[3] *Ibid.*, 437-443.
[4] See pp. 381-385.

CHAP X

proved thereby, is not to be required of any man that it should be believed as an Article of the Faith, or be thought requisite or necessary to salvation;" in the Eighth Article it is declared that the Three Creeds, Nicene Creed, Athanasius's Creed, and that which is commonly called the Apostles' Creed, ought thoroughly to be received and believed, for they may be proved by most certain warrants of Holy Scripture."

The earlier document also sets forth two other principles which were constantly kept in view during the whole of the Reformation movement, namely, that the most trustworthy expounders of the Scriptures and the Creeds are to be found in the "holy approved Doctors of the Church"—the great Christian writers of East and West, from St. Clement [c. A.D. 100] to St. Leo [A.D. 390-461]—and in the decrees of "the four holy Councils" [A.D. 325-451]. Every reader of the Homilies, or of the works of great Church authors like Cranmer, Ridley, Jewell, Hooker, Laud, Hammond, and Pearson, knows how frequently they quote and refer to the Fathers, and how entirely they submitted themselves in respect to any article of the Creeds to the authority of the first four General Councils.

The authority of the Primitive Church recognized

The devotional system of the Church of England was also reformed with a strict regard to the principle of preserving all that was good and that was practically useable in its ancient system. If some short-sightedness was shown as to the useable character of portions of the old services which were discarded, yet on the whole the contents of the Book of Common Prayer fairly represent the contents of the mediæval Service-books. Hence, when it was set forth, the compilers could write in their preface, "Here you have an order for prayer, and for the reading of the

CHAP X

Holy Scripture, much agreeable to the mind and purpose of the old Fathers." Notwithstanding many free excisions, they preserved the substance of the daily offices arranged for more popular and congregational use; the Collects, Epistles, and Gospels of the Communion Service, together with the ancient hymns, Ter Sanctus and Gloria in Excelsis, the words of Consecration and of Administration, and some other important parts of the Latin Liturgy; and the Occasional Offices for Baptism, Confirmation, Matrimony, etc. And it is very observable that throughout the whole Prayer Book the reformation of the old offices was carried on with the strictest regard to the principle of worship or adoration as the principle by which Divine Service had been characterized in the past, and by which it was to be characterized in the future.

The substantial portions of devotional

A similar principle is to be observed in the reformation of ritual, whether as to the fabrics or to the customs of Divine Service, or the utensils and vestments which were to be used in the performance of it. There was no synodical act on the part of the Convocations by which any variation whatever was enjoined, either from the ancient form of the fabrics of churches or the application of its various parts. The destruction of altars and the disuse of chancels must not be attributed to the Church, but to individual persons in authority, whose rule as to such authority was "sic volo sic jubeo," and the same may be said with regard to changes which took place in the number or magnificence of sacred utensils or vestments. The ancient devotional usages of the country were vigorously assailed by the Puritans for more than a century, and their assaults were at length so successful, that even the memory of those customs was

and ritual systems preserved

CHAP X

beginning to fade away. But when the authorities in Church and State were called upon to define what ritual customs should be observed when Church worship was restored, they at once fell back upon the Reformation Settlement, reviving the Elizabethan law that "the Chancels shall remain as they have done in times past," that the ministrations of the clergy in Divine Service shall be carried on there, and that the "Ornaments of the Church and of the ministers thereof, at all times of their ministrations," should be such as had been used between January 28, 1548, and January 27, 1549, that is, during that part of Edward VI.'s reign when the Latin Mass was still used, with the addition of an English form for communicating the laity.[5]

Similarity of ancient and modern services

To the eye of one thoroughly imbued with Reformation principles of ritual, there would be little difference in appearance between a well-appointed mediæval and a well-appointed modern Church. Wickliffe, who ministered for many years in the fourteenth century at Lutterworth, or Latimer, who ministered for many years at Kington in the first half of the sixteenth century, would be quite at home in a church of the Victorian type, or even in one of our restored cathedrals, though no monks would be there; and Sir Thomas More, who attended upon the Rector of Chelsea at the altar of old St. Luke's, near his mansion by the waterside, would have little difficulty in resuming his duties there or elsewhere under the rule of the English Book of Common Prayer.

§ 4. The Relations between the Church of England and the State

There was long an idea which found occasional expression among persons not too well informed, that

[5] See p. 88.

at the Reformation the State selected a religion from among several, and established it as a new Church of England in the place of the old one which the Reformation had destroyed; and that, hence, the State, by which Parliament is generally intended, can do what it sees good with the Church and all belonging to it. This notion has not the slightest foundation either in the laws or the history of England;[6] and, in fact, the idea of the Church as one body and the State as another is comparatively modern, and the only distinction that was known at the Reformation was between "the estate of the clergy" and "the estate of the laity." In later times, however, many sects have been formed, the clergy and laity of the Church of England thus becoming one among many religious bodies, and as the legislative and executive authorities are not necessarily of its communion (with the exception of the Sovereign and a few high officials), the distinction has become more clear and definite.

No foundation of a new religious community by the State

Yet most of the constitutional relations between Church and State are relations between the clergy and the State, and they are founded upon the Reformation Settlement of the reigns of Henry VIII. and Queen Elizabeth. It is necessary, therefore, to observe what that settlement settled.

1. It established in a statutory form the principle always recognized by the English Constitution, but much encroached upon by the Popes, that the Crown has jurisdiction over all its subjects, whether clergy or laity. Thus the laity of the Church of England stand in the same relation to the Crown that members of

The proper jurisdiction of the Crown re-established

[6] It is a true idea in respect to Scotland, the Presbyterian religion having been established as "the Church of Scotland" by Scottish Acts of Parliament, which were taken over by the Imperial Parliament at the Union of the two kingdoms in 1707.

CHAP X

any other religious community do. The case of the clergy is rather different, as the Crown is entitled to exercise some special authority over them—it is difficult to define exactly what—on account of its visitatorial jurisdiction,[7] a jurisdiction which was anciently claimed by English sovereigns as the founders of bishoprics and of many benefices, and which seems to have received some increments of authority when the jurisdiction of the Pope was abolished.[8]

The legislative power of the clergy restrained

2. It also defined certain limits for the clergy in respect to their legislation for the Church, forbidding them to discuss any proposal for new canons, whether in the Convocations or in any other synods, except under the authority of special license from the Crown, and making even canons that should be passed under such authority inoperative until they were published or "promulgated" by the Sovereign. In this manner the Canons of 1604 and 1640 were enacted, as has been shown in the previous chapter, and in the same manner some new canons were enacted respecting the subscription of the clergy to the Prayer Book and the Thirty-nine Articles in the year 1865. But it has become an established principle from the time of Henry VIII. that all ecclesiastical legislation which affects the laity at least (whether previously arranged by Convocation or not) must have the consent of their representatives, and be embodied in Acts of Parliament; and thus the Book of Common Prayer itself was embodied in the Act of Uniformity. And in practice it may be said that all ecclesiastical legisla-

[7] See p. 365.

[8] It is apparently by right of this visitatorial power that, under 1 and 2 Vict. c. 106, § 52, papers of questions are issued to the clergy every year through the bishops similar in character to the papers issued by the bishops before their visitations.

tion has been in the hands of Parliament for the last two centuries, a vast body of statutes relating to the Church having been accumulated since the middle of the eighteenth century. The custom has no doubt grown with the growth of the principle that Parliament is the supreme power in the English Constitution; but while the Royal Supremacy has always been accepted without dispute, Parliamentary supremacy has never been acknowledged by any representative body of the Church of England, and has often raised a serious danger of conflict between Acts of Parliament and fundamental principles of Church authority. It is much to be desired, especially now that Parliament is composed of persons of all denominations, that some measure of return to Reformation principles should be devised, and Church experts intrusted with at least the initiation of Church legislation, as in the case of the Prayer Book.

Parliamentary supremacy over the Church never acknowledged

3. The Reformation Settlement likewise established the principle that the Sovereign is the supreme judge of appeal in all ecclesiastical causes. In mediæval times these could be carried successively from the court of the archdeacon to that of the bishop, and thence to that of the archbishop. If the archbishop declined or delayed to accept an appeal, he could be compelled to accept it by a mandamus, and with the consent of the Crown a further appeal could be made from the court of the archbishop to that of the Pope. This last appeal was abolished in A.D. 1533, and in A.D. 1534 there was substituted for it an appeal to the King in Chancery, the actual judges being a Court of Delegates acting under a special commission. After lasting for three hundred years the Court of Delegates was abolished in A.D. 1832, its jurisdiction being

Position of the Crown as supreme judge re-established

CHAP X

transferred to the King in Council. In the next year a "Judicial Committee of the Privy Council" was appointed for the reception of appeals from secular courts to the Crown; and, by an oversight, appeals from ecclesiastical courts were also included in the Act of Parliament by which this change was enacted.

Bishops appointed as in mediæval times

4. The appointment of bishops by the Crown is sometimes supposed to have originated at the Reformation, but although during the reign of Edward VI. direct nomination by the Sovereign was substituted for the *congé d'élire*,[9] this innovation was quickly abolished, and the ancient method of appointment settled in the fourteenth century[1] is that still in force.

The Reformed Church not spiritually isolated

From the preceding summary of Reformation principles, as they have been elucidated in detail in these volumes, it will be seen that they consist chiefly in the maintenance of independence on the one hand, and catholic character on the other. The Church of England has never disavowed its ancient lineage nor separated itself from other branches of the Catholic Church, all that it disowned and separated itself from being the ecclesiastical tyranny usurped by the Bishop of Rome and his court. The most difficult times and circumstances have not deprived it of an Episcopate as clearly descended from the Apostles as that of any Church in Christendom. Through all the long conflict respecting its ministerial system the old principle of a true and real priesthood was carefully defended, and at the end of the conflict was carefully handed on to future generations in the pages of the Prayer Book and the Ordinal. In its doctrinal system there has

[9] See p. 39.

[1] See vol. i. pp. 263-268.

been no deviation from Catholic truth, in the administration of its sacraments it has retained the full vigour of spiritual life, and in its devotional system it has put away nothing which prevents the clergy and laity from giving expression to their acts of mental adoration in a ritual full of meaning, touching in its appeal to the feelings, and satisfying in its beauty.

The Reformation Settlement maintained through great difficulties,

The principles thus indicated were the outcome of a struggle which began before the middle of the sixteenth century, and was not over until after the middle of the seventeenth; but notwithstanding all opposition they have been maintained in formularies, in practice, and in legislation during more than three centuries; and since the last reassertion of them in 1662, they have remained unaltered in the authoritative documents by which the doctrine, the worship, and the government of the Church of England are regulated.

and is not now antiquated or obsolete

Nor have those principles grown obsolete or antiquated. For if any justification of the Reformation movement of the sixteenth century were needed, it might be found, could it be found nowhere else, in that revival of Church activity in the nineteenth, which may almost be called a new Reformation. For fifty years that revival has been led, to say the least, by a body of clergy and laity whose efforts have always tended towards making the practical life and work of the Church—its Doctrine, its Discipline, and its Worship—consistent with Reformation principles in their integrity. Never before has any revival of Church activity met with such success, and never before has the practical wisdom of the Reformation

CHAP X

Settlement been so fully illustrated; for it has developed itself as a system which can be exceedingly well adapted to a new order of things, while firmly maintaining its hold upon Catholic principles and venerable customs. During the half-century indicated, the population of the country has increased in a very remarkable degree, so that the England and Wales which in 1831 contained fourteen millions of inhabitants contained twenty-six millions in 1881, yet the Church has fairly kept pace with this vast and rapid increase.

Practical value of Reformation principles shown by modern Church revival

During the same period the general education of the young, but especially of those belonging to the middle and working classes, has been called for by public opinion, and enforced, as far as it has been possible to enforce it, by legislation; but the Church has been able to meet this call to an extent far beyond that which has been accomplished by any other body, religious or secular, and continues to be, as it has been from the earliest period of our national existence, the chief educator of the country, both in grammar and primary schools. During the same fifty years there has been a long, lasting assault on revealed religion, and the strongest resistance to it has come from those who followed the principles of the Reformation, by applying "themselves in the first place to the reading of the Scriptures, next the Councils and ancient Fathers, and then the Schoolmen."[2] In a similar way Roman Catholic encroachments have been resisted on the principles of the Catholic Reformation of the Church of England; and the Roman Catholics are driven to acknowledge that they were never so effectively opposed before. And, lastly, there has been developed during the same period an intellectual as well as devotional knowledge of

[2] See p. 495.

religion, a greatly increased love of Divine Worship, and a widely spread advance in personal godliness. CHAP X

Looking back, in conclusion, on the History of the Reformation as it has been told, with every desire to tell it fully and honestly, in these volumes, it must be acknowledged that while some of the adjuncts of the movement can only be regarded with regret and pain, the movement itself was substantially carried out on Catholic and Constitutional principles, and as compared with other attempts at reformation elsewhere, was one which may be regarded on the whole with satisfaction, if not pride. The existing constitution of the Church shows that the movement had in it wonderful elements of stability. And the present condition of the Church of England, arrived at after a persevering revival of true Reformation principles, gives proof that the blessing of Providence attends their developement in the nineteenth even as it attended their inception in the fifteenth century.

General conclusion respecting the Reformation

THE END.

INDEX

ABBOTT, Archbishop, appointed Archbishop of Canterbury, 478; his flattery of King James, 479, n.; "blown across the Thames by a strong north wind," 479, n.; leader of the Puritans, 479; his severity to the High Church clergy, 481; his severity in the High Commission Court, 482; his patronage of Puritan lecturers, 483; his unfortunate homicide, 484; left a difficult work for his successor, 485; his bitter hostility to Laud, 492

Abbott, Robert, his influence at Oxford, 481; his definition of Popery in High Churchmen, 492, n.

Absolution, the form used by Pole when pardoning Parliament, 212

A'Castro, Alphonsus, his works on heresies and the punishment of heretics, 253; his flattery of King Philip, 256; his duplicity, 256; his influence on the Marian persecution, 256; his visit to Bradford in prison, 257; leaves England on being appointed Archbishop of Compostella, 258

Acts of Parliament, 27 Hen. VIII. c. 15, 112; 35 Hen. VIII. c. 16, 112; for dissolution of Chantries, 37 Hen. VIII. c. 4, 1 Edw. VI. c. 14, 61; against irreverent speaking of the Sacrament of the Altar, 1 Edw. VI. c. 1, 87; for appointment of bishops, 1 Edw. VI. c. 2, 10; against beggars, 1 Edw. VI. c. 3, 272; for communion in both kinds, 1 Edw. VI. c. 1, § 7, 87; repeal of Six Articles, 1 Edw. VI. c. 12, 74; for Uniformity, 2 and 3 Edw. VI. c. 1, 92; abolishing slavery in case of convicted beggars, 3 and 4 Edw. VI. c. 16, 272, n.; for Uniformity, 5 and 6 Edw. VI. c. 1, 102; to legitimate Queen Mary, 1 Mar. sess. 2, c. 1, 202; for repealing Acts of Edward VI., 1 Mar. sess. 2, c. 2, 202 and n.; against molesters of priests during Divine Service, 1 Mar. sess. 2, c. 3, 203; repealing Act for direct appointment of bishops, 1 Mar. stat. ii. c. 2, 42; for revival of statutes against heretics, 1 and 2 Ph. and M., c. 6, 215; to repeal all Acts against Rome, 1 and 2 Ph. and M., c. 8, 213; against praying for Queen Mary's death, 1 and 2 Ph. and M., c. 9, 263; those relating to religion which were revived by Queen Elizabeth's first Parliament, 341, n.; restoring Royal Supremacy, 1 Eliz. c. 1, 340, 342; for Uniformity, 1 Eliz. c. 2, 349; reviving Visitatorial power of Crown, 1 Eliz. c. 1, § 17, 45; abolishing High Commission Court, 16 Car. I. c. 11, 353, 536; for expulsion of bishops from House of Lords, 16 Car. II. c. 27, 536; for confirming and restoring ministers, 12 Car. II. c. 17, 553; for restoring the bishops to their seats in the House of Lords, 13 Car. II. c. 2, 556; for Uniformity, 13 and 14 Car. II. c. 4, 579; for abolishing the Writ *De Hæretico comburendo*, 29 Car. II. 9, 269

Ainsworth, George, a serving-man, compelled to take Orders, 153

A'Lasco, John, some account of, 163; made superintendent of foreign Protestants in London, 163; his Prayer Book, 163; his influence, 164; his opinion respecting the Blessed Sacrament, 407, n.

Allen, Cardinal, his enmity towards the Church of England, 455; he establishes Douay and other colleges for "missionary" or "seminary" clergy, 455

Altar Lights, the Edwardian Injunctions on, 82; retained in Edward VI.'s reign, 97

Altars, Hooper calls them "altars of Baal," 408; destroyed by Ridley's order, 407; Ridley's "Reasons" for their destruction, 409; their general destruction ordered, 410; their abolition resisted by Bishop Day, 118; the tables which were intended to be substituted for them, 411; the tables which were set up by the Puritans, 411; Eliza-

bethan directions respecting them, 363 and n.
Anabaptists, Hooper's language respecting them, 225; their strength in the eastern counties, 225; Bishop Jewell on them, 226; probably provoked the Marian persecution, 226; eleven sentenced to be burned in Queen Elizabeth's reign, 269, n.
Andrewes, Bishop, contemporary regret that he was not made Archbishop, 478; his chapel, 501; his Visitation Articles, 501
Anti-Sacramentalism of the Puritans, 394
Apostolical Succession in the Reformed Church, 587
Apprentices, London, their violence, 153; ill-treating the clergy, 154, n.
Armada, the Spanish, blessed by the Pope, but signally failed in its object, 445
Articles of Enquiry issued for Visitation of Church under Edward VI., 49
Articles of Religion, their origin, 108; the Forty-two, of Edward VI., 109; seven which were omitted at the last revision, 111, n.; the bishop's Eleven of 1559, 380
Articles of Religion, the Thirty-nine as now extant, 381; their Canonical authority, 383; subscription of clergy to, 384; their comprehensive character, 384; Calvinistic interpretation of them forbidden, 497; the Declaration respecting literal and grammatical sense prefixed, 498
Articles, Lambeth, some account of, 497, n.

Bacon, Sir Nicolas, adviser of Queen Elizabeth in Church matters at her accession, 336
Bainham, his belief that burning to death was painless, 276; killed by a train of gunpowder, 278
Bale, his ribald tracts opposed by Bishop Gardiner, 128
Bancroft, Bishop, his exposure of the Puritans, 420
Baptism, the Puritan opinion respecting, 395
Barlow, Bishop, his account of the Hampton Court Conference, 469
Beard, an informer against heretics, 218
Becon, his blasphemous language respecting the Mass, 400
Beggars, the severe laws against them in Tudor times, 271; punished with slavery in Edward VI.'s reign, 272
Bell-ringing, Puritan dislike to, 100, 167, n.
Berington on the sectarian position of the Roman Catholics, 453, n.; on the disingenuousness of the Seminary priests, 459, n.
Bible, the propriety of burning heretics proved from, 255; revision of the English, under James I., 472
Bickley, afterwards Bishop of Chichester, his wicked insult to the Blessed Sacrament, 402
Bidding Prayer, the form ordered in Queen Elizabeth's Injunctions, 365
Bill, one of Edward VI.'s chaplain's, 110
Bilney, his belief that burning to death was painless, 276
Bishops, Letters Patent issued to them by Edward VI., 34; their appointment by writ of *Congé d'élire*, 37; their appointment by the Crown absolutely under Edward VI., 39; directly appointed by the Crown, 43; inhibited by Crown during Royal Visitation, 47; the Marian, refused to take the Oath of Supremacy and Allegiance, 367, 386; were deprived, 387; their secession caused no break in the Succession, 390; did not consecrate other bishops or ordain priests, 454; they rapidly died out, 386, 387, 454; those who were responsible for the Laudian movement, 502; thirteen impeached by House of Commons, 533; expelled from House of Lords, 536; accused of not believing in their own office, 538; their abolition by Long Parliament, 539; disposal of their revenues by the Long Parliament, 540; restoration of, after the Rebellion, 554; restored to their seats in the House of Lords, 556; English, descended from the Apostles, 587, frontispiece; Tulchane, 507, n.
Blachford, Lord, representative of John Rogers, 279
Black Rubric, the, 106
Bland, John, his profane language respecting the Mass, 401; his substitution of a table on trestles for the altar of his Church, 412
"Bloody Bonner," the epithet in early use, 240
Boiling to death, punishment for poisoners, 273
Bonner, Bishop, his hard treatment under Edward VI., 119; his compliance with all legalized changes, 119, 121; his protest against the Injunctions and Homilies of Edward VI., 120; is brought before the Council, 120; charges trumped up against him, 121; committed to the Fleet, 121; set free by general pardon, 121; ordered by Privy Council to preach at Paul's Cross, and "skeleton sermon" given him, 122; his sermon not satisfactory to the Council, 122; his brave conduct before the Council, 123; a Royal Commission

appointed by Edward VI. to excommunicate and deprive him, 122; deprived, and sent to the Marshalsea in his robes, 123; made to lie on straw, 123; popular idea of his share in the Marian persecution, 228, 229; his popularity at Queen Mary's accession, 245, n.; his official duty as Bishop of London in examining heretics, 230; how his judicial office was put in action against heretics, 230; accused persons forced on him for examination by Privy Council, Commissioners, and Magistrates, 230-232; his kind treatment of accused persons sent to him, 237-239; was considered too lenient to those brought before him, 241; he and other bishops reprimanded by the Crown, 242; repudiates the charge of cruelty, 240, 244; shows his indignation publicly, 243; tries to save Hooper from death, 286; Philpot's account of him, 241; his secret burial, 245, n.
Books, destruction of, by Puritans, 392
Bourn, Canon, of St. Paul's murderously attacked while preaching, 281
Bradford, John, originally clerk in the Paymaster's employment, 294; his fraud on the revenue, 294 and nn.; became a student of the Inner Temple, 295; became a student at Cambridge, 295; ordained when forty-five years of age by Bishop Ridley, 296; made Canon of St. Paul's when only one year in Orders, 296; his association with the attack on Bourn, 281; his conduct in the Bourn case spoken of severely by Gardiner and Bonner, 296; sent to prison as a seditious preacher by Queen Mary, 296; Lord Derby and other Councillors speak severely of his conduct while in prison for sedition, 296; is accused of heresy, 297; endeavours made to obtain his recantation, 297; his execution in Smithfield, 297; his shocking language respecting the Mass, 400
Branch, or Flower, William, his wicked insult to the Blessed Sacrament, 404
Bristol, its large churches destroyed at the Reformation, 77
Broad Churchmanship, old and new identical in the main principle, 481
Brooks, Bishop of Gloucester, acts as Pole's delegate in the last trial of Ridley and Latimer, 301; acts as Pope's delegate in last trial of Cranmer, 324
Bucer, Martin, some account of him, 166; his "Censure" of the Prayer Book, 100; his book "Concerning the Kingdom of Christ," 167; his influence on the Prayer Book, 168; his theory of Church discipline, 168; on the Puritan nobility, 406; on the Zwinglian theory of the Holy Communion, 407; his body burned by Carranza, 250
Bullinger, urging the execution of Servetus for heresy, 273
Burleigh, Lord, adviser of Queen Elizabeth in Church matters at her accession, 335, 336
Burnet, Bishop, on the immorality of the Puritans, 151
Burning to death, alleged proofs that it was painless, 276; the sufferers killed by gunpowder or otherwise before they were much burned, 277; a punishment for other crimes than heresy, 269, n.
Burning of heretics, Alphonsus A'Castro's experience of it in various countries, 255; modern and contemporary feeling on the subject compared, 270; contemporary belief that no pain was felt, 275
Butcher, Joan, denied the Incarnation, 220; burned in reign of Edward VI., 216; after sentence by Cranmer, 269, n.
Butter not melting in the mouth, 128

Calvin, his distinctive opinions, 414, n.; his letters to the Duke of Somerset, 27, n.; his contempt for the Prayer Book, 98, n.; his letter to Cecil ignored by that statesman, 340; calls the Mass "The Table of Demons," 399
Calvinism dominant at Oxford in James I.'s reign, 480
Cambridge, Martin Bucer's evil influence there, 166
Canons, Reformation settlement as to legislation by them, 369, 600; ancient, retained where not clashing with Royal Supremacy, 369, 373; Episcopal, of 1571 not ratified by Crown, 370; of 1575, 370; of 1585, 371; of 1597, 371; of 1603, 371; of 1640, 529, 530; of 1865, 372; how far binding on the laity, 372, n.; one respecting reverent gestures proposed by House of Commons, 577
Canterbury Cathedral, its altar plate confiscated, 67; French Protestants in, 164
Canterbury, See of, administered by Dean and Chapter after Cranmer's treason, 195, and n.
Canterbury, the large number of sufferers in the diocese during the Marian persecution, 258
Cardmaker, his conversation with Beard the informer, 218
Carranza, his share in the Marian persecution, 249; his connection with Cranmer's end, 250; his visit to Bradford in prison, 257; died a prisoner of the Inquisition, 251
Catena's account of Pius V.'s plans for recovering England, 438, 442

Chancel steps and stalls, retention of, ordered by Queen Elizabeth, 363, n.
Chantries, what they were, 60; their endowments often educational endowments, 61, 64; their probable number and revenues, 65; their endowments the last dish of the land hungerers, 60, 66; their lands sold for carrying on war with Scotland, 63, n.
Charles I., his early training that of an English Churchman, 485; disadvantages under which he laboured, 486; his letter respecting his wife's chaplains and suite, 487, n.; the ecclesiastical reverses of his reign a prelude to lasting victory, 488; his quarrel with the House of Commons, 500; a sufferer for the Church, 549
Charles II., restoration of Church under, 549; his Breda Declaration, 550; his Declaration respecting ecclesiastical affairs, 557; his speech to the House of Commons respecting the Prayer Book, 573
Charles V., Emperor, on English heretics, 247; dirge and Requiem Mass for, at Westminster Abbey, 335 and n.
Chedsey, Dr., hardly treated by Edward VI.'s government, 117
Chertsey, Communion of the Prayer Book revisers there, 91
Chester Cathedral, its altar plate confiscated, 67
Church goods, care taken to replace those confiscated in Edward VI.'s reign, 203, n.
Church plate melted down by Edward VI., 68
Church, the Reformed, its national independence and catholic unity, 583; the Reformed, in unity with other Churches, 586; and State, 598
Church of England, endeavour to make it a department of the State, 32; its plunder by the Privy Councillors on Edward's accession, 9; General Visitation of, under Edward VI., 43; List of Visitors, 48; probable course of their proceedings, 49; its property confiscated by Edward VI., 59
Churches, their spoliation under Edward VI., 66; diminution of their endowments at the Reformation, 77; the large ones that were made useless at the Reformation, 76; defaced in reign of Edward VI., 47, n.; their desecration by the Reformation laity, 160; their desecration noticed in the Homilies, 161
Cities and towns where persons were burned in Queen Mary's days, 224
"Clawed feet" of Bishop Gardiner, 124
Clergy, the Reformation resumed by them under Edward VI., 73; duties and discipline of, Edwardian and Elizabethan
Injunctions on, 55, 359; of the old school hardly treated under Edward VI., 116; scarcity of, in Queen Mary's reign, 209; their marriage prohibited by Queen Mary, 209; deficiency of, in Queen Elizabeth's reign, 367, n.; most of the Marian clergy took the Oath of Allegiance to Queen Elizabeth, 367; subscription of those who took Elizabethan Oath of Allegiance, 368; ill-treated by London apprentices, 154; their persecution under the Puritans, 552; restoration of some to their benefices after the Rebellion, 553, 580
Cloth-racking, Latimer on, 156
Coke, Lord Chief-Justice, his testimony respecting Pope Pius IV. and the Prayer Book, 430; on attendance of the Roman party at Church, 449, 452
Commissioners, Ecclesiastical, of Queen Elizabeth, 351
Committees of Religion of the House of Commons, 499, 513
Commons, House of, sides with the anti-Ritualist mobs, 518; attempts to suppress ritual innovations by a resolution, 523; called "The House of Gods" by the Puritans, 525, n.; impeaches thirteen bishops, 533; impeaches bishops a second time, 535; its Committees for Religion, 499, 513; its vow respecting the Thirty-nine Articles, 499; proposes a canon respecting reverent gestures, 577
Communion, the Order of, 86; in both kinds, a canon passed for, 87; in both kinds, an Act passed for, 87; the ancient custom of England, 140; the Puritan opinion respecting it, 396
Conference, in Westminster Abbey at beginning of Queen Elizabeth's reign, 376; the Hampton Court, 467; the Savoy, 556
Confirmation, the Puritan opinion respecting, 395; of bishops, its effect, 37
Confiscation of Church property by Edward VI., 59
Congé d'élire, the, temporarily abolished, 10; revived and still in use, 43
Conservatives of the Reformation, 117
Convocation, recovers power to reform the Church under Edward VI., 73; petitions for continued reformation in the Church, 74; petitions that the Revision of the ancient Service may be continued, 86; its Ultramontane propositions at accession of Queen Elizabeth, 374; not trusted to revise the Prayer Book at Queen Elizabeth's accession, 347; may not discuss new canons without license from Crown, 369; its canons of no force until ratified by the Crown, 369; not suppressed by the Tudors, 351

Cornwall and Devonshire insurgents oppose the English Services, 95, n.
Coronation of Edward VI. with ancient rites, 80
Cosin, Bishop, Smart's attack upon him, 517
Council, Privy, Minutes of Queen Elizabeth's reign, 335, n.
Counties in which persons were burned in Queen Mary's reign, 222
Courts, Episcopal, temporarily acting in name of the King, 41
Covenant, the Solemn League and, 419, 543; subscription to it enforced, 545
Covenanters, they invade England, 511
Cowper's absurd lines on Bishop Bonner, 229
Cranmer, Archbishop, a chief supporter of the Duke of Somerset, 23; his Erastian tendencies, 32; probably did not suggest that bishops should receive jurisdiction from the Crown, 34; wished to retain the Chantry endowment for Church purposes, 62; used the Latin Mass until 1549, 89; his professed deference to Edward VI.'s opinions, 101; his indignant reply to proposal for abolishing kneeling at Communion, 103; his remarks on standing, sitting, and lying down at Communion, 105; undue influence of foreigners upon him, 162; his sudden visits to St. Paul's, 157, n.; forbids the use of organs at St. Paul's, 101; his violent temper led him to challenge the Duke of Northumberland to a duel, 194, n.; his overbearing and insulting conduct towards Bonner, 123; the relish with which he deprived his literary opponent Gardiner, 148; receives a large sum for suppressing Gardiner, 150; his estimate of Hooper, 104; one of the judges of Joan Butcher and Van Parr, 216; strange opinions expressed by him, 320; his treachery to "Queen" Jane, 189; signed first to the Council's insulting letter to Queen Mary, 187; ceases to be Archbishop on account of his treason, 193, 195; condemned for high treason, 193; his protest against the Mass, 194; is brought before the Council, 194; is committed to the Tower, 195; reasons why his treason should not be at once pardoned, 196; begs for an interview with Queen Mary, 196; reasons for sparing his life at that time, 197; possibility of his restoration to his archbishopric, 197, n; his divorce of Henry VIII. annulled by Act of Parliament, 202; Pole's conduct towards him, 259; said to have been pardoned of his treason, 316 and n.; hence still regarded as Archbishop, 317; is proceeded against for heresy, 317; application made to the Pope for his deprivation, 317; sent to Oxford for the "disputations," 318; his gentle demeanour at the disputations commended, 320, n.; his first excommunication and condemnation for heresy, 321; his long imprisonment in Oxford, 321; begs the Privy Council to intercede with the Queen for his pardon, 321; his singular reason for appealing to a General Council, 322; his trial before the Pope's delegate, 323, cited to Rome for his trial while imprisoned in England, 324; refuses to acknowledge the Pope's jurisdiction, 324; his gallant and patriotic remonstrance with Queen Mary, 325; his trial and condemnation at Rome in his absence, 325; his appeal to a General Council, 326; is degraded by the Pope's authority, 326; great efforts made to obtain his recantation, 327; royal warrant for his execution, as one condemned by the Pope, 327; his six recantations, 327; his unhappy duplicity at the last, 328; recants his recantations, 329; summary of his character, 330; his execution at Oxford, 330; is led away to use shocking language respecting the Mass, 401; his seals, 35, n.; his descendants are all Roman Catholics, 101, n.
Crown, the, its right to visit the Church, 44
Culmer, Richard, and the window at Canterbury, 526, n.

Day, Bishop, his courage before the Council, 119; deprived and long imprisoned in the Fleet by Edward VI., 119
Dennum or Denham, his account of the Papal plans for recovering England, 434
Devil's dust, origin of designation, 156
Devonshire and Cornwall insurgents oppose the English Services, 95, n.
Directory for Public Worship, Puritan, 545
Disciplinarians, a name given to the Puritans, 397
"Discipline," Puritan, 396; finally established, 547
Disputations with Cranmer, Ridley, and Latimer at Oxford, 318
Divine Service, the ancient "Uses," 79; silent changes in customs of, during Henry VIII.'s reign, 76; Edwardian Injunctions on, 54; its grandeur diminished by disendowment and destruction of large churches, 77; its ancient usages not known to the young clergy of Edward VI.'s reign, 78; diversity of forms arising among the Reformers, 79; caution of first Reformers in mak-

ing changes, 80; in English suppressed by Queen Mary, 202 and n.; in English, revived by Queen Elizabeth, 338; restored by Queen Mary to form used in Henry VIII.'s later days, not to mediæval form, 203; Edwardian and Elizabethan Injunctions on, 54, 356
Dod on the occasional conformity of the Roman party, 453
Dominis, Antonio de, acted as Bishop in the Church of England, 591
Dudith, his statement respecting Pole's conduct towards Cranmer, 260, n.
Durham Cathedral, its treasures concealed, 67
Dursley, Quarter Sessions order about scourging beggars in 1678, 272

Ecclesiastical laws. See Canons, Laws
Ecclesiastical tyranny of Edward VI.'s government, 116
Edward VI., his arrival at the Tower, 5; crowned with the ancient ceremonies, 34, n.; assists at the Benediction of Ashes, 81; his confession of Lord Seymour's dealing with him, 16; his consent to Seymour's execution, 18; his death intended by the Duke of Somerset, 25; his self-confidence, 101; his discourse on the reformation of abuses, 168; his intentions respecting his successors, 187; opinion of contemporaries that he died by poison, 30, n.; discredit brought on the work of his reign by the rebellion against Queen Mary, 198; his reign prolific in severities, as that of Henry VIII., 213, n.; heretics burned during his reign, 269; heretics who bore faggots at St. Paul's in his reign, 269, n.; beggars punished with slavery in his reign, 272
Elizabeth, Queen, Lord Seymour's design of marrying her when Princess, 15; her letter when Princess to Queen Mary, 20, n.; Northumberland's endeavour to expatriate her when Princess, 29; declared a bastard by Ridley at Paul's Cross, 189; her arrival in London with Queen Mary, 191; a politician and a stateswoman, 334; her popularity at her accession, 334; careful regard to precedent at her accession, 337; crowned with the ancient Sarum rite, 335; her relations to the Reformation at her accession, 333; her first Parliament opened with a solemn Mass, 336; leaves her chapel when the Elevation is made, 337, 338, n.; her dislike to the title "Supreme Head of the Church of England," 342, 352, and n.; high-handed use of the prerogative in Church matters, 350, 368; revives the Prayer Book, 346; her Injunctions, 354; her General Visitation of the Church, 366; canons of her reign, 368; settlement of law respecting heresy, 378; settlement of Articles of Religion, 380; resettlement of the Episcopate, 385; refuses to send deputies to the Council of Trent, 432; excommunicated and deposed by Pius V. and other Popes, 446; her subjects forbidden to obey her by the Pope, 448; the Papal plan for recovering England, 433; her saying when the news of the Armada's fate reached her, 445; her ideas on the subject of extirpating heretics, 274; severities of her reign, 213, n.; heretics burned during her reign, 269; her death, 462
England for the English, 171
Episcopate, the, its resettlement at Queen Elizabeth's accession, 385
Erasmus, his paraphrase, 51, n.
Executors of Henry VIII., 6, 12
Exornatorium Curatorum, the book so called, 70, n.

Fagius, his body burned by Carranza, 250
Ferrar, Bishop, pensioned off by Henry VIII. as Prior of an Augustinian Monastery, 292; appointed Bishop of St. David's by Edward VI., 292; preaching without episcopal robes, 157; imprisoned on charges of covetousness, etc., by Edward VI., 293; condemned as a heretic, 293; his execution at Caermarthen, 293; actually killed by the blow of a staff, 278, 293
Firstfruits, what they were, 75, n.
Flower, William. See Branch.
Fonts, continued use of, and not of basins, ordered by Queen Elizabeth, 363, n; their removal ordered by the Long Parliament, 525; their general removal and destruction, 527
Foreigners, causing dissension in the Church, 79; influence of, on Cranmer, 162
Fowler, John, an attendant of Edward VI., 16
Foxe, doubtful character of his narratives, 394, n.; details of his narratives not to be trusted, 287; evidence of tampering with inconvenient documents, 315, n.; doubts respecting his reports of controversies between learned men and labourers, 221, n.; his grudging narrative respecting some acquitted heretics, 236; his cankered mind in telling his stories, 291, n.; his true and touching words respecting the deaths of Ridley and Latimer, 305; his touching language on the degradation of Cranmer, 328; some of his martyrs exceedingly profane persons, 405; his opinions about Cardinal Pole's leniency and Lutheranism, 258, n.; on the influence of the tracts against Queen Mary, sent

from abroad, 262, n.; his credulity about Gardiner's personal appearance, 124; misprints a document so as grossly to misrepresent Gardiner, 146; his false account of Gardiner's share in the Marian persecution, 227; his remonstrances against burning Protestants to death, 276; some began "even to adore him," 96
Francis I., a Requiem Mass offered up for him by Cranmer, 81
Friars, Spanish, the number that came to England with King Philip, 248
Fuller's rhetorical language respecting Gardiner's share in the Marian persecution, 228; on the dizziness of Oxford, 480; his account of the importation of drunkenness into England, 480; on Archbishop Abbott, 481, 482

Galloway, Patrick, his account of the Hampton Court Conference, 469
Garcina, or Villagarcia, his connection with Cranmer's end, 251
Gardiner, Bishop, and the will of Henry VIII., 126, n.; and his party averse to new legislation while Edward VI. still a minor, 80; deprecates a Visitation of Church during Edward's minority, 46; and the Duke of Somerset, 127; his correspondence with the Duke of Somerset, 27, n.; his advice to the Duke of Somerset, 14; his aversion to innovations, 126; determination to crush him, 129; summoned before the Council, 130; his good-humoured complaint of Cranmer's overbearing disposition, 131; sent to the Fleet, 120; set free by general pardon, 132; his submission to authority, 129; his disgust at the profane treatment of a crucifix, 128; summoned again before the Council, 133; required to preach a sermon to order, 134; has a private interview with Somerset, 135; his bold independence, 134, 135; expects to be sent to the scaffold, 136; he preaches, but not to order, 436; his loyal declaration of the Royal Supremacy, 137; his repudiation of the Papal Supremacy, 137; his idea as to the utility of the Pope as a centre of unity, 138; his opinion respecting the Holy Eucharist, 139; declares that Communion in both kinds is the ancient English practice, 140; on prayer for the dead, 141; sent to the Tower after preaching his sermon, 142; twenty more Articles offered to him for signature, 147; a misrepresentation of Foxe in printing them, 146, n.; refusing them, he is deprived by Cranmer, 148; the exceedingly harsh treatment of him in the Tower, 143, 149; asserts his constant loyalty to the Crown, 144; offers made for his release after long imprisonment, 145; subscribes the six Articles offered to him, 146; his reception by Queen Mary on her entrance to the Tower, 192; opposed to restoration of Papal authority, 198; stops Cardinal Pole's entrance into England as Nuncio, 206; opposed Queen Mary's marriage to Philip of Spain, 207; the only occasion when he sat on the trial of heretics, 217; Foxe and Fuller on his share in the Marian persecution, 228; none burned for heresy till long after his death, 230; tries to provide a way of escape for Rogers and others, 282, 283, 289; his proposition to Queen Mary respecting Cranmer, 316; his plain-spokenness, 128; contemporary testimony to his learning, virtue, and wisdom, 125, n.; called a Catholic Protestant or Protesting Catholic by Harrington, 125; Foxe not sure whether he was a Protestant or a Papist, 125; Poynet's caricature description of his person, 124; his approval of the first Prayer Book, 95, n.; greatly misrepresented in slipshod histories, 124; his character like that of Bishop Phillpotts of Exeter, 126
Gardiner, William, his wicked insult to the Blessed Sacrament, 403
Garnet, on attendance of Roman party at Church, 450
Gipsies, convicted as such, to be put to death, 272
Glastonbury Abbey, French Protestants in, 164
Goodman, Christopher, his bitter writings against Queen Mary, 262
Goodman, Bishop, his description of the irreligion that arose during the Commonwealth, 527
Green, Bartlet, his kind treatment by Bonner, 238
Grey, Lady Jane, table of her descent from Henry VII., 187, n.; her marriage to Duke of Northumberland's son, 30; substance of the Proclamation, 188; collapse of her pretended reign, 189; her execution after Wyatt's rebellion, 193, 207, n.
Grey Friars' Chronicle, on death of Edward VI., 30, n.; on introduction of Prayer Book, 107, n.; on proclamation of Lady Jane as Queen, 188; on Bonner's release from the Marshalsea, 245, n.; on changes in St. Paul's, 157, n.; on frays there, 160, n.
Griffin, Sir T., makes his serving-man take Orders, 153
Grindal and others appointed to report on the Forty-two Articles of Religion, 110; his attempt to bring Puritan "prophesyings" under Church rule

417, n.; suggests the use of the file on Foxe's documents when inconvenient, 315
Guelders, Duke of, how he punished heretics, 255
Guildhall Library, the books taken possession of by Duke of Somerset, 22
Guilds, the trade, oppose dissolution of Chantries, 62

HACKET, Bishop, on Archbishop Abbott's severity, 482
Hall, Bishop, his description of anti-Ritualist doings at Norwich, 526
Hammond, burned in Queen Elizabeth's reign, 269, n.
Harington, Sir John, his anecdotes of Bishop Bonner, 245, n.
Harley, one of Edward VI.'s chaplains, 110
Harpsfield, Archdeacon of Canterbury, his activity in the Marian persecution, 259
Hawkes, Thomas, alleged that he suffered no pain while burning to death, 277
Heath, Bishop, long imprisoned in the Fleet by Edward VI., 118
Heath, a Jesuit, passing himself off as a Puritan, 457, n.
Henry VIII., arranged for the government after his death, 1; plans under his will, 2; his death, 4; his funeral performed with the ancient rites, 80; character of his will, 6; custody of his will, 10, 11; his authority entirely discarded by his son's Privy Council, 13; the Masses ordered under his will offered, 81; ordered Cranmer to pen a form for altering the Mass into a Communion, 89, n.; squaring with Bishop Gardiner, 128
Henry, Prince, the "darling of the Puritans," 485
Heresy, laws against, 215, n.; severity of opinions regarding it in former days, 273; statutory definition of, at Elizabethan settlement, 378
Heretic burnings of King Philip in Spain, 248
Heretic, the name recklessly used on both sides in Tudor times, 273, n.
Heretics, burned in reigns of Edward VI., Queen Elizabeth, and James I., 269 and n.; who bore faggots at St. Paul's during his reign, 269, n.; process of condemning them to burning by writ, 216; form of procedure against them under Queen Mary, 216; social condition of the sufferers in the Marian persecution, 220; the Articles offered to them for subscription, 219; form of submission provided in Marian persecution, 237; persons in prison as such released by Queen Elizabeth, 339; sentenced to be burned, but not executed, in Queen Elizabeth's reign, 269, n.; the last burned in England in 1612, 269, n.; Alphonsus A'Castro's work on their punishment, 253; Englishmen not accustomed to burn them in large numbers, 227; modern and contemporary feeling as to burning them compared, 270, 274; Bullinger urging the execution of Servetus, 273; Queen Elizabeth's opinion about extirpating them, 274; opinion that burning to death caused little or no pain, 275; gunpowder and other means used to put them out of their sufferings, 277
Hertford, Lord. See Somerset, Duke of.
Hickman, Mrs., her consultation of Cranmer when in prison respecting the baptism of her infant, 322, n.
High Commission Court, its establishment by Queen Elizabeth, 351; its powers, 352; its jurisdiction often disputed by the judges, 353; its abolition, 353
History, Cowper's poetical, 229
Holgate, Archbishop, sent to the Tower for marrying another man's wife, 151
Holyman, Bishop of Bristol, acts as Pole's delegate in last trial of Ridley and Latimer, 301
Homilies under Edward VI., 50, n.
Hooker, his work on Ecclesiastical Polity written in opposition to the Puritans, 419
Hooper, Bishop, a Cistercian monk, 285; on accession of Edward VI. became leader of Puritans, 285; described by Fuller as a "ringleader" of the Nonconformists, 280; leads the Puritan attack on the Prayer Book, 95; "worshipped as a deity," 96; his austere and contentious disposition, 285; becomes Bishop of Gloucester, 98; his refusal to wear episcopal robes, 158, 285; consecrated in episcopal vestments, 99; his "Aaronic habits" described by Foxe, 99, n.; his revenge on Bonner for censure respecting false doctrine, 122; his tyranny in punishing, 158, n.; his bitterness in preaching, 158, n.; cautioned by Peter Martyr about his "too bitter sermons," 97; his wreck of sacred things in his two dioceses, 159; sent to preach against the Anabaptists, 225; his contempt for the "ungodly pity" of his times, 274; his opinion respecting absolution, 397, n.; deprecates the observance of Lent, 97; desires to abolish kneeling at the Holy Communion, 98; considers the Ordinal to be Antichristian, 98; his dreadful language respecting the Mass, 399; his fierce opposition to the Eucharistic Sacrifice, 158; calls Church altars "the altars of Baal," 408; preaches that altar lights, vestments, crosses,

and altars are devil's goods, 98; on continued use of altar lights and vestments, 82, n.; exceedingly distasteful to Cranmer and Ridley, 100, n.; Cranmer's estimate of him, 104; sent to the Fleet early in Queen Mary's reign, 286; his quarrels in prison, 286; is convicted of heresy, 286; endeavour made by Bonner to save his life, 286; his bravery and last pious prayer, 287; his execution at Gloucester, 287; actually killed, after much suffering, by explosion of gunpowder, 278, 287
Horne, one of Edward VI.'s chaplains, 110.
"Hours," the, always in use in some form, 94, n.
House of Gods, a profane name given to the House of Commons by the Puritans, 525, n.
Huggard, Miles, on the lawlessness and irreverence of young people, 154; on the irreverence of the laity in St. Paul's, 160
Hunter, William, his kind treatment by Bonner, 238

Injunctions to bishops and deans and chapters issued by Edward VI., 50; of Edward VI., 52; of Queen Mary, 209; of Queen Elizabeth, 354
Ireland erected into a kingdom by a Papal Bull, 200
Ireton's saint, 527, n.

Jackson, Dr. Thomas, on the evil produced by "Prophesyings," 418
James I., his dislike of Presbyterianism, 463; the Millenary Petition presented, 465; summons the Hampton Court Conference, 467; his opinion respecting the Church of England, 468; his letter respecting the Hampton Court Conference, 472, n.; his objection to the Geneva version, 473; his Injunctions respecting the study of Divinity at Oxford and Cambridge, 495; his Injunctions respecting preaching, 496; his revival of Episcopacy in Scotland, 507; his death, 485; heretics burned during his reign, 269, n.
Jesuits, some of the earliest in England, 457, n.; their early influence in England, 453; were traitors to Queen Elizabeth, and suffered as such, 458
Jewell, Bishop, on the Anabaptists, 226; assisted Foxe in compiling his *Acts and Monuments*, 320, n.; on the pomp and insolence of bishops, 336; thinks more of Zurich than of England, 339, n.
Jurisdiction, Ecclesiastical, the principles of, 37; assumed for the Crown, 34

Kett, Francis, burned in Queen Elizabeth's reign, 269, n.
Kneeling at Communion opposed by Hooper, A'Lasco, and the Puritans, 98; endeavour to abolish it in 1552, 103
Knights of St. John, their church demolished to build Somerset House, 21
Knox, John, in great favour with Edward VI. and his Council, 169; and others appointed to report on the Forty-two Articles of Religion, 110; his bitter sermon against Queen Mary, 262, 264

Laity, duties and discipline of the, Edwardian and Elizabethan Injunctions on, 57, 360
Lambeth Articles, some account of them, 497, n.
Laski. See A'Lasco
Latimer, Bishop, his early career, 306; doubts about his age, 306 and n.; appointed Bishop of Worcester by Henry VIII., 307; resigns his see and never resumes it, 307; his pungent political sermons before Edward VI., 307; his biting sarcasm about the coinage of Edward VI., 307; money given him by Edward VI., 17, n.; his judgement respecting Lord Seymour, 20; his opinion of the Puritans, 393; on the misuse of Church patronage by the laity, 152; on the lawlessness of the people in Edward VI.'s time, 154; on frauds on the revenue, 155; on growing untruthfulness, 155; on cheating by farmers, 155; on cheating by weavers, 156; is led away to use shocking language respecting the Mass, 401; on prayer for the dead, 141, n.; one of the judges of Joan Butcher and Van Parr, 216; sent to the Tower again by Queen Mary as a seditious preacher, 308; his reluctant appearance at the Oxford "disputations," 309; the short time during which he had held his new opinions, 310; his long imprisonment in Oxford, 311; his trial before the Pope's commissioners, 311; his fine burst of eloquent self-defence, 311; his condemnation as a heretic, 312; his execution at Oxford, 312; actually killed by explosion of gunpowder, 278, 312; confused with Dean William Latimer, 122, n.
Latimer, William, his revenge on Bonner for censure respecting false doctrine, 122
Laud, Archbishop, his early career, 491; the hostility of Archbishop Abbott to him, 492; probably influenced the Injunctions issued by James I., 495; becomes chief minister to Charles I., 493; his consistency, 493; his description of the Church of England and her relation to Roman Catholics and Puritans, 493; his life threatened, 500, n.;

and other bishops revive Reformation ritual, 501; his restoration of reverent usages in cathedrals, 503; his restoration of reverent usages in parish churches, 504; the attack of the Long Parliament upon him, 513; his long imprisonment, 515; his trial, 515; impeachment of, 532; his attainder and death, 516
Laudian movement, principal features of the, 489; not Popish, 505, 506; its permanent effects, 506
Lawlessness and irreverence of young people, 153, 154
Laws, Common and Statute, proposed codification of, under Edward VI., 112; Ecclesiastical, attempted codification of, 112; Ecclesiastical, Commissioners appointed, 113; against heresy, 215, n.; their cruel character in Tudor times, 268; severity against beggars and gipsies, 271, 272
Lead, thirst of the Reformers after, 66, n.
Le Blas, Bertrand, his wicked insult to the Blessed Sacrament, 403
Lecturers, Puritan, 483; described, 496
Legate, Bartholomew, burned in reign of James I., 269, n.
Lessons in Latin and English, the Edwardian Injunctions on, 82
Licenses to the bishops from the Crown, 36
Lisle, Lord. See Northumberland, Duke of
Litanies, Processional, forbidden by Edwardian Injunctions, 84
Litany, English, its use and suppression in Queen Mary's reign, 202, 204 and n., 210; its use revived by Queen Elizabeth, 338
London, its loyal demonstrations at Queen Mary's accession, 191
Long Parliament, putting down Ritualism, 516, 525; its opinion of Episcopacy, 539; putting down Episcopacy, 528
Lords, the House of, its intervention on behalf of order in Divine Service, 518; attempts to conciliate the Puritans, 519; its Committee on Ritual, 520; bishops resume their seats in, 556

Machyn, his description of Princess Mary's entry into London, 176, n.; on the Princess Mary's visit to her brother, 184; on Lady Jane's proclamation as Queen, 188, n.; on Queen Mary's arrival at the Tower, 191, n.; on the uproar at Dr. Bourn's preaching, 296; on the accession of Queen Elizabeth, 334, n.; on the funeral of Cardinal Pole, 335, n.; on the dirge and requiem for Charles V., 335, n.
Map of chief localities where the Marian victims suffered, 223
Marian clergy, toleration shown to them, 457
Marriage, the Puritan theory respecting it, 395
Marriages, degrading, of the Puritan clergy, 151
Martin Marprelate, an account of his ribald tracts, 425
Martyr, Peter, some account of him, 165
Mary, Princess, her early life, 171; insulted and wronged by Henry VIII., Cranmer, and Edward VI., 172; her view of Henry VIII.'s will, 174, 175; her preference for the old rites of the Church, 173; her use of them forbidden, 173; suspicions of her on account of her Spanish relatives, 171; resists Privy Council tyranny, 174; brought before Edward VI. and his Council, 176; the Emperor takes her part, 177; cruel message of the Council, 178; Commissioners sent to her, 180; her contemptuous reception and dismissal of them, 182; reiterates her objection to Privy Council government, 181; attempt to control her through her officers, 178; her officers imprisoned, 177; touching loyalty of her officers to her, 179; her indignation at the treatment she received, 179; precautions taken against her leaving the country, 183; her courage and spirit preserve her from further molestation, 183; visits her brother in his latter days, 184
Mary, Queen, Northumberland's endeavour to destroy her when Princess, 29; declared a bastard by Ridley at Paul's Cross, 189; her accession, 186; informed of the conspiracy against her, 186; orders the Council to proclaim her, 186; joy of the populace at her accession, 190; the great army that rallied round her, 191; her arrival at the Tower, 191; her touching reception by the State prisoners, 192; her merciful treatment of those who had conspired against her, 192; refuses to see Cranmer, 195; her early leniency, 214; two stages of retrogression in Church affairs, 204; her earlier attitude towards Rome, 199; ignores the Pope's authority on several occasions, 202; exercises the Royal Supremacy, 201; declares her intention of being tolerant, while maintaining her own opinions, 201; did not at once give up the Royal Supremacy, 200, 208; changes style of sovereign, 200; sends an agent to the Pope, 206; her marriage with Philip, 208; prayed for in an English Litany, 204; she and her husband intercede with Cardinal Pole for the pardon of her own subjects, 211; a letter from her and King Philip to magistrates ordering them to

deal with heretics, 235; she and her husband act as the Pope's executioners in Cranmer's case, 327; her conference with Carranza about Cranmer's execution, 250; naturally gentle, 261; causes of the change in her disposition, 261; the provocations she received, 262, 264; habitually called Jezebel by the Puritans, 263; praying for her death put down by Act of Parliament, 263; her directions respecting heretics, 265; evidence of Noailles as to the bitter state of her mind, 266; general conclusion respecting her responsibility for the persecution, 267; buried with the ancient Sarum rite, 335
Mass, the Latin, used by Cranmer and other Reformers until 1549, 89; a true and valid sacrament, 405; strange misbelief that it was not a true sacrament, 398; a name given to the Communion Service in the First Prayer Book, 408, n.
Matthew, evidence that this name was an *alias* of John Rogers, 281
Matthew, Bishop of Durham, his account of the Hampton Court Conference, 469
Meteren, Jacob van, employed John Rogers to edit "Matthew's" English Bible, 279
Millenary Petition, 465
Milton on the word "Priest," 590, n.; his description of the Long Parliament, 512; his description of the Westminster Assembly of Divines, 542
Ministry, a Sacerdotal, the principle of the Reformation, 590
Mourning clothes forbidden by the Privy Council of Edward VI., 70
Musselburg. See Pinkey

Nag's Head, Roman Catholic fiction of Archbishop Parker's consecration there, 389
Nicknames a favourite weapon with anti-Church party, 415
Noailles, the French ambassador, on Queen Mary's state of mind, 267
Nonconformist ministers, their secession from the Church, 578
Non-natural interpretations, 426, 490
Northampton, Marquess of, 9
Northampton, its loyal demonstrations at Queen Mary's accession, 191
Northumberland, Dudley, Duke of, 2, n.; his bear and ragged staff on coins, 28; challenged to a duel by Cranmer, 194, n.; his design upon the Crown, 28; his rise on the fall of Somerset, 28; freed from Gardiner's opposition by imprisonment of latter, 29; his rebellion on death of Edward VI., 184; sets up Lady Jane Grey as Queen, 188; proclaims Queen Mary, 189; sent to Tower, 190; his execution, 193
North wind, the, which blew Bishop Abbott from London to Lambeth, 479, n.

Oath of Allegiance, the, 343; refused by Marian bishops and taken by many clergy, 367
Ochinus, Bernardine, account of, 162
Oglethorpe, Bishop, refuses to obey Queen Elizabeth's order respecting the rite of Elevation, 337
"Order of Communion," the, 86
Ordination, Puritan view of, 395
Organs, Cranmer forbids the use of, at St. Paul's, 101, n.
Ornaments, Rubric, added in Elizabethan Prayer Book, 349 and n.
Oxford, its large churches destroyed at the Reformation, 77; the influence of Peter Martyr at, 166; its joy and loyal demonstrations at Queen Mary's accession, 190; leavened with Ultramontanism by Garcina and Peter de Soto, 251, 252; disputations with Cranmer, Ridley, and Latimer, at, 318; its Calvinism under the influence of the Abbotts, 480; "dizzy" with German theology, 480
"Oyster-table," the nickname given to trestle-tables substituted for altars, 412

Paget, Sir W., his character, 9, n.; trained under Bishop Gardiner, 10; his conference with Somerset at Henry VIII.'s death, 3; his remonstrance with Somerset respecting his haughtiness, 14
Papal Supremacy, Edwardian and Elizabethan Injunctions on, 52, 355; finally abolished by 1 Eliz. c. 1, 341; penal enactments respecting, 344
Parker, nominated Archbishop of Canterbury, 387; his election, confirmation, and consecration, 387, 388; his direct succession from the old Episcopate, 388, and table opposite title-page; record of his consecration published in facsimile, 390, n.; ordered wafer-bread to be used at Holy Communion, 364, n; his estimate of Cardinal Pole, 260
Parliament, the two Houses of, petition the King and Queen to intercede with Pole for their pardon, 211; undoes the work of the Reformation, 212; graciously pardoned by the Pope, 212; the Short, 511; the Long, 512; the Prayer Book in, 569
Parpalia, the Pope's agent to Queen Elizabeth, 428; not allowed to enter England, 431
Parr, Queen Katharine, her marriage to Lord Seymour, 15; her provocation by Somerset, 14

Parr, Van, burned after sentence by Cranmer, 269, n.
Pastoral staff, "not to knock down" a wandering sheep with, 482
Patronage in the Church, misuse of by Reformation laity, 152
Paul's, St., innovations at, by Bishop Ridley, 157; Cathedral despoiled to build Somerset House, 21; Huggard on irreverence of laity in, 160; frays and violent deaths in, 160; Cathedral, an ancient frontal and cope belonging to, still known, 68, n.
Penning, Henry, an agent of Cardinal Pole, 206
Perne, one of Edward VI.'s chaplains, 110
Persecution, of clergy by Edward VI. resulted in reaction, 123; principle and practice of it not entirely repudiated by any religious body, 268
Persecution, the Marian, began shortly after the Queen's marriage, 214; the course of procedure adopted against the accused, 216; districts in which most of the burnings took place, 222; map of the chief localities, 223; a phenomenon in English history, 226; those who were responsible for it, 226, 230, 245, 249, 251, 252, 258, 261; popular ideas as to the persons responsible for it, 227; accused persons shielded by bishops and magistrates, 235, 236; partly brought about by the spirit of the times, 267; social condition of those who suffered, 220; stimulated by seditious writings of Knox and others, 264; the ends of the chief sufferers, 278; its end on the death of Queen Mary, 332; entirely suppressed on Queen Elizabeth's accession, 338; exiles for religion return home, 339; improbability of Foxe's narratives, 393, n.
Persons, Robert, some account of him, 460; on attendance of the Roman party at church, 451; represents the object of the Jesuits to be that of founding a *new* Church in England, 459
Peter Martyr, assented to Bucer's censure of the Prayer Book, 100
Philip, King, his devotion to the Papacy, 246; the injunctions he received from Charles V. respecting heretics, 247; his fanatical cruelty, 248; not inclined to marry Queen Mary, 207; his marriage to Queen Mary, 214; and Mary prayed for in an English Litany, 204; endeavoured to invade England to recover it for the Pope, 445
Philpot, Archdeacon, his early career, 312; his passionate intolerance, 313; justified the burning of Joan of Kent for heresy, 274, 314; took Orders late in life, 313; his arrogant violence in Convocation led to the charge of insanity, 314; his admissions respecting the Mass, 398; his account of Bonner, 241; sent to prison for sedition after Wyatt's rebellion, 314; after long imprisonment is accused of heresy, 314; great efforts made by the bishops to save him, 314; his many examinations, 315; found guilty of heresy, 315; his execution in Smithfield, 316
Pilkington, Bishop, on profanation of St. Paul's, 161
Pinkey, battle of, 15
Pius IV., concessions offered by him to Queen Elizabeth, 430
Pius V., his plans for the recovery of England, 434, 438; encourages the northern rebellion, 441; his excommunication and deposition of Queen Elizabeth, 446; canonized, 445
Plots, the "Surprise" and the "Bye," 467, n.; the Gunpowder, 467, n.
Pole, Cardinal, second cousin once removed of Queen Mary, 205; table showing his relationship to Queen Mary, 205, n.; sends a secret messenger to Queen Mary, 205; his profane language respecting Philip, Mary, and Charles V., 207, n; his address to the two Houses of Parliament, 211; his attainder reversed, 211; reconciles England to the Pope, 212; Foxe's opinion of his leniency towards heretics, 258, n.; his opinions respecting the punishment of heretics, 259; issues a commission against heretics shortly before his death, 259; his conduct towards Cranmer, 260; was consecrated Archbishop of Canterbury the day after Cranmer was burned, 261; ordained priest the day Cranmer was burned, 261; his death, 261; his burial at Canterbury, 335
Pollanus, Valerandus, 164, n.
Pope Julius III. sends Cardinal Pole to England as Legate, 205
Poynet, Bishop, his bitter and treasonable writings against Queen Mary, 262; his profligacy, 151
Prayer Book, the, High Church and Low Church forms of it, 27, 31; that of 1549, 90; names of the divines intrusted with its construction, 90; and Convocation, 92; soon taken into use, 93; the Ordination Services, 93, n.; Bucer's "Censure" of, 100; its revision in 1550, 102; Edward VI.'s personal influence used for its revision, 101, 102, n.; the revision of 1552, 94; of 1552, copy used by printers, 103; of 1552, copy sealed with Great Seal, 103; of 1552, doubtful if it ever superceded that of 1549, 106; the "Black Rubric" of 1552, 106; of 1552 depraved the Eucharistic Sacrifice, 107; sup-

pressed by Queen Mary, 202 and n.; Bucer's influence on, 163; its general adoption at Queen Elizabeth's accession, 350; the revision of 1559, 346; list of the revisers' names, 347; Pope Pius IV. offers to sanction it if received on his authority, 430; its use forbidden during the Commonwealth, 546; popular discontent at its disuse, 551; the use of it revived, 551; changes assented to by the bishops at the Savoy Conference, 564; its revision at the restoration of the Church under Charles II., 566; no revisions made in Parliament, 576; the Scottish, 508, 510
Prayer for the dead, Gardiner and Latimer on, 141 and n.
Presbyterianism, established in England, 547; the ruin effected by it in England, 549
Priest, origin of the word, 590, n.; the use of the designation since the Reformation, 591
Privy Council, arranges for burial of Henry VIII., 34, n.; its Registers of Edward VI.'s reign, 7, n.; Edward VI.'s divided into two parties, 10; its members bribed with titles and lands by Somerset, 8; its action against the Duke of Somerset, 24; overstrained the authority of the Crown, 33; rapacity of its members, 60; illustrations of its government, 69; forbids the wearing of mourning, 70; its intolerance, 71; tyranny resisted by Princess Mary, 174; ordered to proclaim Queen Mary, 186; proclaims Lady Jane Grey queen, 189; letter to Bonner sending him a heretic for examination, 230
Proclamations, against innovators in religion, 84; inhibiting preachers, 85
Prophesyings of the Puritans, 416; temporarily suppressed by Queen Elizabeth, 417, n.
Protestant Jesuitism, 170
Protestants, French, in England, 163
Prynne, his training-school for witnesses, 515, n.
Pullain, superintendent of Glastonbury French Protestants, 164, n.
Punishments, cruel, awarded to beggars in Tudor days, 272
Puritan divines, their covetousness, 542, 543, n.
Puritans, name explained, 391, n.; the older, 390; Cranmer's and Latimer's opinion of them, 393; the origin of their principles, 396; causes of their rapid increase, 392; their political influence, 424; their vigorous opposition to the Reformation Settlement, 425; their venomous provocation of Queen Mary, 262; their public prayers for Queen Mary's death, 263; their hopes from Queen Elizabeth, 339; their hopes from James I., 463, 464; their Millenary Petition, 465; their triumph over Episcopacy, 541; their non-natural interpretations, 426, 490; their secret organization, 420; their "Prophesyings," 416; their depravation of the Prayer Book of 1549, 107; their opposition to the objective character of Divine worship, 397; their theories respecting Church ordinances, 395; their anti-Sacramentalism, 394; their fanatical hostility to the Mass, 398; their profanation of the Blessed Sacrament, 402; their profane language respecting the Mass, 399; their degradation of all acts of worship, 413; their hatred of Church customs, 415; their aversion to bell-ringing, 167, n.; their theories looked to the worship of the congregation, 413; their desire to make the Church a department of the State, 32; Episcopacy one of their grievances, 416; their ideal of the ministry, 418; their "Classes" of ministers, 421; the "trial" of ministers, 421; their disingenuousness about Holy Orders, 422; their clerical representatives in merchants' gowns at the Hampton Court Conference, 470, n.; their "Lecturers," 483; their "Discipline" for the laity, 423; their Directory for Public Worship, 545; what they pledged themselves to in the Covenant, 419; some nicknames that they used, 415; their immorality, 150; were broken up into sects, 426
Pym, the Parliamentary leader of the Puritans, 499, 513; reports the discord raised by the anti-Ritualist Order of the House of Commons, 524, n.

Quiddities of Bishop Bonner, 120
Quixada, Louis, ambassador of Charles V., 247

Rapin, his testimony respecting the alleged Popery of Laud and his followers, 505
Reactionary party of Edward VI.'s reign, 117
Rebellion, the Great, a religious war, 506
Reformatio Legum, 114; a bigoted and severe code of new laws, 115; its failure a warning, 115
Reformation Settlement, rites and ceremonies of, stated in Letters Patent of Charles I., 529
Reformation, the principles of the, 581
Registers of Privy Council, 7, n.
Revolutionary movements against the Duke of Somerset, 22
Rich, Sir Richard, 9
Ridley, Bishop, his Erastian tendencies,

32; his innovations, 157; orders altars to be destroyed, 407; his Injunction against altars, 409; his superstitious "Reasons" for using tables instead of altars, 409; wrecks St. Paul's Cathedral, 410; preaches at Paul's Cross that the Princesses Mary and Elizabeth are bastards, 189; goes post-haste to get Queen Mary's pardon, 189; his rapid fall, 298; some account in his letters of his imprisonment in the Tower, 299, n.; his "disputation" in the Divinity School, 300; his opinionativeness charged against him, 302; his long imprisonment in Oxford, 298, 301; kind treatment of, by London friends, and neglect by Oxford, 299; his first condemnation as a heretic, and his brave retort, 301; his subsequent trial before the Pope's delegate, 301; repudiates the Pope's delegate's jurisdiction, 302; the bishops try to obtain his recantation, 303; his execution at Oxford, 304; killed, after much suffering, by explosion of gunpowder, 278, 305; his treatise on Vestments, 159, n.; his inconsistency about the same vestments at his degradation, 304

Ritual, Laudian, return to that of the Reformation, 501

Ritualism, putting it down under the Long Parliament, 517; mob law and, 518, 524

Rogers, John, *alias* Matthew, his early career, 279; his English Bible, 279; regarded as a controversial and pugnacious man in Edward VI.'s reign, 280; described by Fuller as a "ringleader" of the Nonconformists, 280; his preferments, etc., in reign of Edward VI., 280; refused to rescue Joan of Kent from burning for heresy, 275; believed that burning caused little pain, 275; his association with the attack on Bourn, 281; accused of heresy a year afterwards, 282; committed to Newgate on outbreak of Wyatt's rebellion, 282; the Queen's mercy offered to him, 282; his provocative and ribald language, 283; opinions for which he was found guilty of heresy, 283; his execution in Smithfield, 284; no sufficient reason for his death, 284

Roman Catholic Sect, the, Manning's language respecting the schismatical action of Rome at the Reformation, 426; Pope Pius endeavours to win over Queen Elizabeth, 429; concessions offered to Queen Elizabeth by the Pope, 430; the Roman party attended church till the Queen was excommunicated, 449; the excommunication of the Queen made reconciliation of the Roman party almost impossible, 453; no bishops consecrated or priests ordained by the Marian bishops, 454; separation of the Roman party from the Church of England, 453; the Seminary priests, 456; dominated over by the Jesuits, 459; Blackwell, George, appointed Archpriest, 461; formed into an Episcopal sect, 461; Bishop, William, appointed Vicar-Apostolic, under title of Bishop of Chalcedon, 461; its later organization, 462

Rood screens, retention of, ordered by Queen Elizabeth, 363, n.

Root and Branch Petition, 532

Royal visitation of Church, names of Commissioners, 48

Royal Supremacy, restored by first Parliament of Queen Elizabeth, 340; but in a limited form, 342; "Admonition" of Queen Elizabeth explaining it, 362; high-handed use of, 350, 368; as settled at Reformation, 343, 599; the title now associated with it, 352; its visitatorial function, 365, 600

Rubric, the Black, 106

SACERDOTAL Ministry, a principle of the Reformation, 590

Sacramentaries, who they were, 208, n.

Sacraments, the Anglican theory of, 593

Sanders attributes the Northern rebellion to Pius V., 441

Sandoval, his account of Charles V.'s injunctions respecting English heretics, 247

Sarum Use retained for two and a quarter years under Edward VI., 85; the Service-Books called in by Privy Council in 1549, 95

Savoy Conference, the, 556; its poor results, 563

Schools, Grammar, founded by Edward VI., 63; some ruined by confiscation of Chantry endowments, 64

Scotland, temporary revival of the Episcopate in, 507; conspiracy against Episcopacy, 509

Scottish Prayer Book, the, 508, 510

Scottish preachers, their invectives against bishops, 538, n.

Seal, Royal, for ecclesiastical causes, 35; an ecclesiastical, with Royal Arms, 41, n.; ecclesiastical, Royal Arms declared by judges not to be necessary, 42, n.

Seditious preaching in Queen Mary's reign, 214, n.

Seditious writings against Queen Mary, 262; their effect on the persecution, 264

Seminary priests were traitors to Queen Elizabeth, and suffered as such, 458

Settlement, the Reformation, as to a Sacerdotal Ministry, 590; retained an efficient Sacramental system, 593; its

system of doctrine and worship, 595; as to relations of Church and State, 598
Seymour, Lord, 9; married to Queen Katharine Parr, 15; made Lord-Lieutenant of the South of England, 15; his attempts to gain over the young King, 16; charges against him, 17; condemned to death, 18; his execution, 20
Sheffield, Sir Edward, 9
Sherrington, Sir William, his account of Lord Seymour's designs, 16, n.
Shoddy, Latimer on, 156
"Side" used for the length of the altar, 410 and n.
Sitting at Communion advocated by Bishop Hooper and A'Lasco, 98; posture adopted by A'Lasco, 163
Slavery, beggars punished by, under Edward VI., 272
Smart, Peter, his invective against Durham ritual usages, 502; his attack on Cosin, 517; receives £400 a year from the Puritans, 518
Smectymnuus, origin of the word, 520, n.
Smith, Sir Thomas, Secretary to Edward VI. and Queen Elizabeth, almost certainly a priest, 347, n.
Somerset, Seymour, Duke of, his origin, 2, n.; his plans for assuming supreme power, 3; gets Edward VI. into his power on his accession, 4; his authoritative letter to the Privy Council on Edward's accession, 5, n.; made Protector, 6; his proposed share of Church plunder, 9; his haughtiness and tyranny, 14; his expedition against the Scots, 15; his brother's alleged plots against him, 16; his alleged unwillingness to execute his brother, 20, n.; builds Somerset House with spoils of Church property, 21; pretends to be the champion of the lower classes, 22; his broadside for the common people, 23; sent to the Tower the first time, 23; his alleged intention to put Edward VI. to death, 25; his Regency brought to an end, 26; released from imprisonment, 26; and Gardiner, 127; his correspondence with Bishop Gardiner, 27, n.; his letter to Gardiner on the use and abuse of images, 128; has a private interview with Gardiner before the latter's imprisonment, 135; his fall brought about by the Earl of Warwick, 28; his second imprisonment and his execution, 29
Soto, Peter de, his connection with Cranmer's end, 252
Southampton, Wriothesley, Earl of, 9; appoints four Vice-Chancellors on his own authority, 10; dismissed from office and fined, 11; his bigamy, 11, n.
Spain the home of heretic burning, 246
Spaniards, their share in the Marian persecution, 245
Spoils of abbeys and churches secured to the spoilers by Queen Mary's Parliament, 213
Standing or sitting at Communion called a contempt of the Sacrament by Cranmer, 105
Strafford, Lord, the attack of the Long Parliament upon him, 513; his trial, attainder, and death, 514
Subscription of clergy to Thirty-nine Articles, 384
Superstitious practices, Edwardian and Elizabethan Injunctions on, 53, 355
Supremacy, Papal, the, Edwardian Injunctions on, 52
Sydserf, Bishop, his ordination of Puritan ministers, 581, n.

TABLE showing the vacancies in bishoprics during the Rebellion, 555, n.
Table, the Lord's. See Altar
Tables on trestles substituted for altars, 412
Taylor, Rowland, his early career, 288; his altercation with a Popish sacrificer, 288; is sent to Queen's Bench, 289; is condemned as a heretic, 289; accuses his judges as heretics, 273, n.; threatens Bishop Bonner with violence, 289; his touching farewell to his family, 290; his strange behaviour on his journey back to execution, 291; his last kindnesses to his parishioners, 291; his execution at Hadleigh, 291; actually killed by explosion of gunpowder or blow of a halbert, 278, 292; contemporary memorial of his execution, 292; his shocking language respecting the Mass, 401
Ter Woort, burned in Queen Elizabeth's reign, 269, n.
Thomas, clerk of the Council to Edward VI., his plot for assassinating Queen Mary, 264
Thornden, Suffragan Bishop of Dover, his activity in the Marian persecution, 259
Toleration not known at the period of the Reformation, 269, 313
Tomkins, Thomas, kind treatment of by Bonner, 237
Transubstantiation, Council of Trent on, 233, n.; disbelievers in, anathematized by Council of Trent, 277; the doctrine used as a test during the Marian persecution, 234; Church of England on, 234, n.; declaration against, under 25 Car. II. c. 2, § 9, 233 and n.
Travers, his "Book of Discipline," 418
Tremellius, some account of him, 165
Trent, Canons of, operative during Queen Mary's reign, 233

Tulchane bishops, 507, n.
Tunstal, Bishop, long imprisoned in the Tower by Edward VI., 118
Tyranny of Edward VI.'s government, 116

Udall, Nicolas, sent to report Bishop Gardiner's sermon, 136
Ultramontanism, its principles, 375; triumphant during Queen Mary's reign, 212; finally suppressed under Queen Elizabeth, 376
Universities, the, Puritan influence of foreign professors at the Reformation, 164

Van Parr burned in reign of Edward VI., 216
Vernacular, the, its use in Divine Service generally assented to by the learned, 78
Vestments, their retention in Edward VI.'s time, 82, n., 97, n.
Vice-Chancellors, antiquity of the office, 10
Villagarcia. See Garcina
Visitation, Royal, of secular lands, 22; Articles of Enquiry issued by the Crown, 49, 367, 600 n.
Visitatorial power of the Crown, 600
Vow of the House of Commons respecting the Thirty-nine Articles, 499

Wafer-bread, its continued use ordered by Queen Elizabeth, 364 and n.
Warwick, Lord. See Northumberland, Duke of
Weston, Dr. Hugh, hardly treated by Edward VI.'s government, 117
Westminster Abbey, Conference in, 376; attacked by a Puritan mob, 535
Westminster Assembly, 541; its composition, 542; its correspondence with the General Assembly, 543
White, Bishop of Lincoln, acts as Pole's delegate in trial of Ridley and Latimer, 301, 311
White, Warden of Winchester, hardly treated by Edward VI.'s government, 117
Wielmacker burned in Queen Elizabeth's reign, 269, n.
Wightman, Edward, burned in reign of James I., 269, n.
Williams, Archbishop, his defence of Westminster Abbey, 535
Willoughby, Sir William, 9
Willow-courtier, Marquess of Winchester a, 12
Winchester, St. John, Marquess of, held custody of Great Seal for nine months, 12
Wiseman, Sir William, killed in an attack on Westminster Abbey, 535
Women, the last burned in Spain in 1781, in England in 1789, 270, n.
Worship of the congregation substituted for worship of God, 413
Wren, Bishop, his long imprisonment without trial, 536, n.
Writ *De Hæretico comburendo* not abolished till reign of Charles II., 269

York, Injunctions for Diocese of, 83, n.

Zwinglian opinions, 95, n.; danger of their introduction into Prayer Book, 95

Printed by T. and A. Constable, Printers to Her Majesty,
at the Edinburgh University Press.

LIBRARY
Perkins School of Theolog
Southern Methodist Univer
Southern Methodist Univ. br
[redacted]
3 2177 00929 7910

12

186560

DATE DUE

FEB 26 1986

GAYLORD

PRINTED IN U.S.A

LIBRARY
Perkins School of Theology
Southern Methodist University